SPIRIT REALM

BOOK 03

Ni Cang Tian

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Spirit Realm

(灵域)

by

Ni Cang Tian

(逆蒼天)

Synopsis

Thirty thousand years ago, the Heaven Fighting Race who called themselves “Gods” invaded the Spirit Realm. Hundreds of races rose up in resistance, but ultimately suffered a crushing defeat. The Human Race was the first to concede, and the rest of the Hundred Races soon followed in succession.

During the subsequent ten thousand years, all of the races were enslaved by the Heaven Fighting Race. They were cruelly treated, and lived beneath the shadow of terror.

The Heaven Fighting Race’s march of conquest did not stop there. With the Spirit Realm as the starting point, they invaded other secret dimensions, and spread war to all corners of existence. After greatly exhausting their combat strength, they were finally defeated by the Hundred Races who took advantage of this opportunity. With no other choice, they fled to the starry skies outside the realm.

Thirty thousand years later, in an era where the Heaven Fighting Race has already faded to become ancient legend, an amnesiac youth possessing the Heaven Fighting Race’s bloodline is being fostered in an insignificant household. Whilst struggling to live on, he silently awaits the day of the bloodline’s awakening.

Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

First Edition: October 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Alyschu&Co @ Wuxiaworld

Translation Edit by alyschu, OverTheRanbow, thepolarwife, ColdMeteor, Dabuyu, Craxuan, wyhcwe, doom @ Wuxiaworld

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 201: Old Demon

Xue Li had been sealed for over a thousand years. During this long period of time, he had been thinking about leaving at every moment.

He was willing to sacrifice everything to escape this place. That was why, even though he knew that by surrendering a portion of his soul he might be controlled by Qin Lie, he was still unable to turn Qin Lie down.

Qin Lie knew very well that this thousand-year-old demon would definitely agree to his terms.

Anyone who had been sealed for a thousand years would sacrifice anything for their freedom. For Xue Li, to surrender only a portion of his soul really wasn't an unacceptable price.

"I can give you a portion of my soul, but do you have the ability to accept it?" Xue Li said coldly.

"This is not something you need to worry about. As long as you let go of your soul, put down all of your defenses, and send that piece into my brain, you can leave the rest of the process to me," Qin Lie answered.

"My soul cannot slip out of this space. The only way to do this is for your corporeal body to come in," Xue Li yelled.

“I will never have my body enter this place, ever! I have no intentions of being captured by you instantly.” Qin Lie pondered for a moment. “It will still be best if you send your soul out of the spirit pattern pillar and slip into my corporeal body’s brain. Then I can be assured.”

“The seal is still here. I cannot separate my soul from the spirit pattern pillar unless you help me break through three seals and unlock three chains first.” Xue Li’s scarlet eyes shone with a bloody light. He looked down at the long chains connecting to the bones all over his body and said, “If three chains are unlocked, then I will be able to split a portion of my soul outside and fulfill your request.”

Qin Lie grew quiet.

He didn’t know if what Xue Li said was true or false. What if... What if after unlocking three spirit pattern pillars, this Xue Li could then escape the spirit pattern pillars? Who else could resist him?

He was slightly afraid of taking this risk.

“Kid, if you are unwilling to attempt this, then I will not be able to split my soul. If you want to control my soul, then you must try it. Otherwise, we may as well go back to the first method: I’ll teach you Blood Fiend Sect’s secret arts, and in exchange, you will release me. How about it?” Xue Li suggested scornfully.

There was turmoil in Qin Lie’s heart. He felt a bit of a headache

coming on when going up against this thousand-year-old demon. He didn't know which of his statements were real and which were not.

But he knew very well that a single misstep might cause him to be doomed eternally, and he instead would be controlled by this old demon.

He could feel no reassurance at all going up against such a demonic level character. That was why he was hesitating.

"If you're afraid, if you're unwilling to take even the slightest risk, then you will never be successful in your entire life!" Xue Li taunted.

"I'll think it over."

Qin Lie got out. He still had his eyes closed beneath the spirit pattern pillar.

He gathered his mind consciousness to swim at the Soul Suppressing Orb at the center of his forehead. He was quietly channeling Heavenly Thunder Eradication.

"Rrmmb!"

The deep rumble of thunder roared out from inside his bones. He slowly channeled the power of thunder and pulled it little by little to his head.

He then opened his eyes.

There were streaks of densely-packed, snake-like electricity shooting inside his pupils, and there was rumbling in his head that could shatter his eardrums.

“I heard thunder, and it looks like it’s about to rain. How strange,” Tang Siqi said doubtfully beside him.

Qin Lie did not answer. Thunder flashed in his eyes. He was sensing the shockwave of Heavenly Thunder Eradication inside his head, and with it, his confidence slowly grew firmer.

Thunder and lightning were the nemesis of all soul type beings. It could destroy all evil spirits!

During that year, at the natural stone forest outside Icestone City, Gao Yu had summoned the Demon God’s shadow, and that destructive aura had terrified every person around.

However, even that Demon God’s shadow was incredibly wary of his Heavenly Thunder Eradication.

From that, it could be seen that the thunder and lightning energy of Heavenly Thunder Eradication should have an incredible effect in destroying a soul.

Once he thought about it, Qin Lie finally made up his mind, entered the pillar once more, and directly said, “Okay! I will unlock three shackles first!”

The bloody light in Xue Li’s eyes abruptly brightened.

Qin Lie immediately concentrated his mind on the spirit pattern pillar beside him. After a series of copying and depicting, he had reached the end of the spirit pattern pillar’s chain with his wisp of mind consciousness. Just as Xue Li had said, he attacked the clump of bright energy with his mind consciousness.

Surprisingly, his rather tame mind consciousness was able to pierce through the energy clump without resistance.

It was as easy as popping a balloon with a sharp needle.

“Bang!”

Bits of odd sparks flew out as the remaining energy exploded outwards along with the end of the chain.

“The first chain!” Xue Li’s expression was crazy as he looked towards the sky and laughed terribly. His left arm abruptly pulled back.

The thick and long rusty chain folded back towards Xue Li like a gray dragon. He abruptly pulled back the long chain and entangled it firmly around his arm.

The bloody color in his eyes grew more and more shocking.

He looked towards Qin Lie with a surprisingly pale face. “Continue. Two more chains and my soul can tear a hole through the seals.”

Qin Lie could feel that Xue Li’s aura was stronger than before. He knew that the release of a chain had caused a layer of the shackling seals on Xue Li to be destroyed.

He grew more worried as time passed, but he still decided to continue.

Therefore, his wisp of mind consciousness fell onto the second spirit pattern pillar to remove the seal within.

His mind energy was rapidly depleting. He slowly entered into the spirit pattern pillar and saw yet another ball of energy. That ball of energy was the critical node needed to break the chain.

Qin Lie attacked it again with his mind consciousness.

The energy clump exploded like a balloon. Yet another layer of seal had been released, and this chain was also pulled back by Xue Li until it winded around his waist.

“The second chain!” The bloody light in Xue Li’s light grew

stronger. “Good, very good! There is one more. If one more chain breaks, then I’ll be able to surrender a portion of my soul to you!”

Qin Lie paused for a moment.

“I’ve used too much of my mind consciousness. I need time to recover. I will leave for a moment.” His wisp of consciousness returned.

Taking out a mind focusing pill and swallowing it, he began pondering with a frown while digesting the pill’s power.

“This fierce and evil aura on this old demon’s body was already extremely shocking. The moment the third chain is released, he will definitely attack me.” Qin Lie saw it very clearly. “I need to recover as much as I can and compete with that portion of soul later. He will do anything in his power to control me, but if his soul dares to enter my head, then he may not be able to gain an advantage!”

During that year, the main soul of the Soul Devouring Beast was so powerful that even Xie Jingxuan was almost controlled by it.

But even such a powerful Soul Devouring Beat’s soul was still obediently absorbed by the Soul Suppressing Orb’s light and refined not long after…

“Soul Suppressing Orb, the Soul Suppressing Orb. Any soul type evil energy that enters my mind is just walking themselves into a

trap!” Qin Lie thought quietly.

First, he recovered his energy with the pill and planned a bunch in his mind. He thought through every aspect carefully before he finally entered the world inside the spirit pattern pillar once more.

He cracked the third spirit pattern pillar straight away.

Xue Li waited beneath the twelve spirit pattern pillars with two rusty, snake-like chains surrounding his waist and one of his arms. The bloody light in his eyes grew more frightening as he never moved his gaze away from Qin Lie.

“Kid, you’re still a little too naive,”Xue Li snorted coldly on the inside.

Qin Lie concentrated on cracking the third spirit pattern pillar.

“Pwack!”

The energy clump inside this spirit pattern pillar was pierced by his mind consciousness. When the light clump exploded, so did the chain.

“Whoosh!”

Xue Li’s eyes brightened. He lifted and waved his arm, and the chain coiled back in midair, resembling a iron dragon.

“The third chain! Good!” Xue Li chuckled in a strange tone.

“Your soul!” Qin Lie’s mind shook as he flew outside immediately.

“Here you go!” Xue Li pointed a finger at the center of his own forehead.

A strand that was as crimson as blood flew out from between his brows. This strand of blood was truly formed from his soul and carried an incredibly powerful wave of memories within it!

This strand of blood also rushed towards outside the spirit patter pillar following the direction Qin Lie’s mind consciousness had left!

A terrifying aura devoid of humanity that would destroy all creation was contained within that strand of blood. Its aura alone was enough to cause Qin Lie’s wisp of consciousness to nearly shatter.

“Kid, do nicely accept a quarter of my main soul!” Xue Li laughed madly towards the sky.

On the outside, Qin Lie abruptly opened his eyes and stared straight at the spirit pattern pillar before him with an expression as cold as ice!

Like a steel needle, the crimson blood strand stabbed out of the spirit pattern pillar with an extremely terrifying destructive aura.

Its target was the center of Qin Lie's forehead!

"W-what is that?" Tang Siqi cried out.

Qin Lie did not say anything. He did not channel Heavenly Thunder Eradication immediately either because he was afraid that Xue Li would grow wary.

All he did was focus his mind consciousness into one point within the Soul Suppressing Orb, quietly awaiting that crimson strand's arrival.

"Zzzt!"

The strand of blood stabbed into the center of his forehead, causing a single drop of blood to appear. Then, he shook.

The instant the strand of blood entered his mind, he suddenly had the feeling that he was pulled into a bloody hell. Everywhere he looked, there was only an endless amount of blood!

He felt as if he was being dragged into a sea of blood. He couldn't feel the slightest trace of life, and his mind collapsed almost instantly.

A bloody aura had even entered straight into the inner depths of his soul, as if it had grasped his soul completely!

He had a terrifying feeling that his soul was about to suffocate.

This was the moment that he realized that he was wrong. He had underestimated the terror that was a quarter of Xue Li's soul. There was no way he could resist at all!

All of his schemes were shattered the instant the strand of blood had entered him.

That was because he was unable to resist Xue Li's soul attack for even a single moment.

His soul, his mind, and all of his tenacious willpower were literally no different from paper under the assault of the bloody sea. They were destroyed at the moment of contact.

It was as if his soul was being wrapped up by a ball of blood, as if he was being pulled into an endless sea of blood which corroded his soul one bit at a time.

He had a strong feeling that this thick, fresh blood would slowly seep into his soul and change him, one tiny fragment of his personality after another. At the end, he would become Xue Li's blood puppet.

He could not gather his consciousness, nor could he activate

Heavenly Thunder Eradication; he could not even feel the condition of his own body.

Slowly, he falling into the depths of the blood sea...

However, at the moment of despair, he saw a ray of light. It was a light that had once absorbed the Soul Devouring Beast's soul!

It was the purifying light from the depths of the Soul Suppressing Orb!

He suddenly realized that the blood sea was like a bloody curtain being torn apart under the ray of light. It evaporated in an extremely short amount of time!

He realized that he had returned into his own mind.

And so, he channeled Heavenly Thunder Eradication, gathered his mind consciousness, and saw that single strand of blood!

That strand had turned into a blood-colored remnant soul inside the Soul Suppressing Orb.

"Thunderblitz!"

Qin Lie then immediately gathered the power of thunder and lightning to strike Xue Li's remnant soul. When the thunderbolt had struck the blood-colored remnant soul, it began to ferociously

twist as a bloody mist came out from it.

It was as if he could hear the terrible screams of Xue Li's soul.

Chapter 202: Soul Seal!

Just as Qin Lie had wanted to control Xue Li through his soul, Xue Li also wanted to turn Qin Lie into his soul slave.

Blood Fiend Sect had a secret art that tempered blood slaves. The caster would infuse their own soul's fiendish energy into the victim's, thereby eroding it away. Afterwards, they would slowly gain control of their blood slave. In the end, their victim would become a bloodthirsty heretic, losing themselves completely.

The technique unleashed by Xue Li putting a quarter of his soul in Qin Lie's head was exactly this secret art!

Once the secret art started working, Qin Lie's mind would slowly succumb to the bloody world and Xue Lie would take control of him slowly over time. He would end up as Xue Li's bloodthirsty slave.

In his opinion, he should have no issue controlling a minuscule martial practitioner like Qin Lie with only a quarter of his soul.

Unfortunately, not only did he not expect Qin Lie to cultivate a technique that specialized in destroying souls, like Heavenly Thunder Eradication, he also did not expect his mind to hide such a fantastic treasure like the Soul Suppressing Orb.

Soul suppressing, soul suppressing. The Soul Suppressing Orb was its name, and its existence was to suppress a soul!

The purifying light unleashed from within the Soul Suppressing Orb was fatally suppressive to all soul type energies!

The moment the light had started shining, Xue Li already noticed that something was wrong. He instinctively felt fear and was ready to evacuate immediately.

However, just as he was about to escape the Soul Suppressing Orb, he realized that this treasure hidden inside Qin Lie's mind was definitely not as simple as he thought.

The orb's space had closed the exit and bound him inside!

He even had the illusion that the orb's binding powers were far more terrifying than the shackles formed by the spirit diagrams inside the spirit pattern pillars!

He struggled continuously, but in the end, he was unable to escape the orb's world, his soul only growing weaker under the purifying light.

At this moment, the corruptive force he was using on Qin Lie was rapidly fading away.

At long last, Qin Lie had finally escaped the world of the blood sea.

The moment he regained his mind, the first thing Qin Lie did was to activate Heavenly Thunder Eradication and attack this portion of Xue Li's soul.

The thunder and lightning of Heavenly Thunder Eradication could destroy all evil. It would destroy vile souls and tormented spirits, and it was a fatal threat towards all soul type heretics.

"Rrmmb!"

Amidst the thunder's roar, a bloody fog appeared from the shadow of that quarter of Xue Li's soul. It was crying terribly.

Xue Lie turned shocked and fearful for the first time.

He could never have imagined that not only did Qin Lie cultivate a very rare power of thunder, he even had an awesome treasure like the Soul Suppressing Orb inside his head.

The bloody wisp of his remnant soul was now trapped inside the Soul Suppressing Orb's world. It had no way to escape at all, and now he was being assaulted by the thunder and lightning. It was only a matter of time before he would be extinguished completely...

"Kid! Stop! Stop it!" Xue Li's remnant soul cried out terribly.

With a thought, Qin Lie caused those bolts of thunder and lightning to instantly freeze.

In his own world, Qin Lie's soul consciousness had formed into a blurry, white shadow. The white shadow was in the shape of his own appearance. In addition, lines of lightning surrounded him as the thunder remained hidden overhead.

Qin Lie's soul shadow was now right beside Xue Li's bloody shadow. He coldly looked at him and said, "Old senior, it seems that you did not obey our promise of obediently surrendering your soul. It seems you are not worthy of my trust. In that case, I can only exterminate this portion of your soul. Why don't we have your true body be sealed inside the spirit pattern pillar forever."

"I admit my defeat! Kid! I surrender!" Xue Li's remnant soul twisted. "I will relinquish this portion of my soul and surrender completely. I will let you seal and imprison me!"

"Even if you surrendered now, the situation has already changed." Qin Lie controlled the thunder and lightning and launched it at the bloody wisp. "This is a quarter of your soul, but it was so strong that I nearly collapsed. Hmm, I think that this portion isn't too safe..."

"Brat, when you're given an inch, don't take a foot!" Xue Li howled.

"Senior, I am now giving you two choices." Qin Lie said without any emotion whatsoever, "Either you surrender another quarter of your soul and merge it with your current one, so I can seal them together. Or, I can destroy this soul of yours and have your

remaining soul and true body be sealed inside the spirit pattern pillar. Just wait. Perhaps in a thousand or maybe even several thousand years later there will be another person like me who can unlock all of your seals."

"You dare!" Xue Li's remnant soul twisted wildly.

Qin Lie said nothing and restarted Heavenly Thunder Eradication once more. He then used the lightning to attack the blood colored remnant soul once more.

"Rrmmb! Clap clap clap!"

Amidst the blasting thunder and shooting lightning, Xue Li cried out horribly as wisps of blood mist spewed out of his soul.

That blood mist was his soul's energy. Once they faded, they were immediately absorbed by the Soul Suppressing Orb's inner space before disappearing into the pitch black orb at the center of his forehead. Afterwards, it slowly blinked with a tint of scarlet luster.

Qin Lie was deeply shocked on the inside.

He realized this quarter of Xue Lie's soul was even scarier than the entire soul of the Rank Four Soul Devouring Beast. The Soul Devouring Beast's soul was gone the instant it entered the Soul Suppressing Orb and was absorbed into the deeper space inside.

The Soul Devouring Beast's main soul seemed to have no ability to resist at all inside the Soul Suppressing Orb.

But this Xue Li—even though it was just a quarter of his soul—was able to exist inside the Soul Suppressing Orb for so long!

"This old demon's true realm may be scarier than I had expected." As he thought this, Qin Lie grew increasingly cautious and focused his entire mind to call down Thunderblitz.

After a while, the cries of Xue Li's blood colored, remnant soul grew weaker. He might be brutal and fearsome without bounds, but inside the Soul Suppressing Orb's world and without a corporeal body, he also couldn't bear Heavenly Thunder Eradication's attacks upon his soul.

—And this was the result when Qin Lie's realm was not powerful, when his Heavenly Thunder Eradication had yet to be cultivated to a truly superb state.

If Qin Lie could directly attract the thunder from Ninth Heaven to fall down, then Xue Li's remnant soul would probably dissipate with a single strike.

"You've won, kid, you've won! I'll surrender the other portion of my soul to you!" Xue Li cried out in agony.

He had no choice but to bend his back.

After just a short amount of time, he could feel that his soul was about to disintegrate. If this soul fragment was to disappear, he would need at least a few hundred years to fully recover!

“Isn’t this nice, now?” Qin Lie did not go overboard and stopped his attack right then. He had even decreased his pressure slightly. “Senior, I do not plan to shackle half of your soul forever. I only need you to follow me for thirty years. I can swear right now that I will return your soul to you and will give you your freedom after thirty years!”

“Thirty years? Just thirty years? Kid, are you for real?” Xue Lie exclaimed in an odd tone.

“That’s right, thirty years of time!” Qin Lie confirmed.

“Why didn’t you say that earlier!” Xue Li yelled angrily, “If it’s just thirty years, then I can still afford to wait!”

While he said this, his true body inside the spirit pattern pillar also let out a relieved expression. “It’s just thirty years…”

Yet another crimson wisp flew out of the center of the forehead of his true body, out of the pillar and into Qin Lie’s head, entering the Soul Suppressing Orb inside.

“Zzzt!”

The moment the strand of blood had entered the Soul

Suppressing Orb, it immediately turned into yet another bloody remnant soul. The two souls slowly merged into one another, and after a while, they took upon Xue Lie's appearance.

This soul was the equivalent of half of Xue Li's soul. With half of his soul imprisoned, Xue Li would not dare to act carelessly. It would also truly reassure Qin Lie.

"Put down all of your defenses," Qin Lie said.

This half of Xue Li's soul slowly turned invisible, becoming fainter by the second...

Then, Qin Lie changed his spirit art.

Inside the Soul Suppressing Orb, an ice crystal ball was formed.

Then, the outer layer of the wall of ice was covered with an earthen yellow halo. This was the power of the earth.

Next, small streaks of lightning surrounded the outer layer of the halo with the rampaging energy of thunder, forming the third layer of the seal.

Once all of this was finished, a finger-sized hole appeared at the center of the rumbling and crackling light ball. "Go on in."

Xue Li's invisible soul looked once at the light ball before

obediently flying inside the hole.

Once his soul had entered into the light ball, the hole fused as the light ball became complete once more.

The inner layer was made of frigid ice, which was harmless to Xue Li's soul. The second layer was composed of the power of earth, and the outermost layer possessed the power of thunder and lightning.

This three layered seal would not be able to trap even the tiniest fragment of Xue Li's soul in the outside world. He would be able to go in and out of it any time he wanted.

But inside the world of the Soul Suppressing Orb, Xue Li's soul was suppressed, as if there was a huge mountain on top of him. He could not escape the orb at all, and if he tried to do anything, Qin Lie would notice the very next moment.

In that case, the three layered seal he had applied inside the Soul Suppressing Orb was enough to stop Xue Li from acting carelessly.

"Now, I can unlock your seal without worry." Qin Lie opened his eyes and swallowed a Mind Focusing Pill. He stared straight at the spirit pattern pillar ahead of him.

"Qin Bing, d-did a strand of blood just enter your forehead?" Tang Siqi quickly asked when she saw him opening his eyes.

“I’m fine. Don’t worry. If the sect master and three great reverends came over, just tell them that I’ve figured out the final magic of the spirit pattern pillar and am researching it now. Tell them to give me some time.” Qin Lie notified her once and closed his eyes once more.

Tang Siqi had a whole stomach of doubts she wanted to ask, but she couldn’t find an angle to go at it.

It was already noon.

Shadows began to approach Armament Sect’s outer sect entrance from every angle.

Seven Fiends Valley’s Shi Jingyun, Cloud Sky Mountain’s Wu Tuo, Dark Shadow Tower’s Liang Yangzu, and Dark Asura Hall’s Yuan Tianya had all appeared.

“Hall Master Yuan, was Lang Xie killed?” Wu Tuo immediately asked the matter he was most concerned about when he walked forward before Yuan Tianya.

Shi Jingyun’s expression was heavy as he also looked towards Yuan Tianya. It was obvious that he was also very concerned about the matter.

“Lang Xie escaped with severe injuries.” Yuan Tianya’s expression was indifferent. Following behind him were his subordinate commanders. “Lang Xie should not have the ability to

fight for the time being. He should not be able to interfere with our next operation against Armament Sect."

"Lang Xie will always be a hidden threat as long as he isn't dead!" Liang Yangzu interrupted with a dark face, "He is the most terrifying person in Armament Sect. If this man is alive, even if we eliminate Armament Sect, we will not enjoy any peaceful moments in the future."

"No, Lang Xie cannot threaten us. No matter how strong he is, can he be stronger than the people above us?" Yuan Tianya looked towards the sky and said cooly, "The operation against Armament Sect was ordered by people from above. If we really cannot take down Lang Xie, then naturally the higher-ups will send their own men to take care of things."

The moment he said this, everyone's expressions had relaxed. Suddenly, they thought that Lang Xie was no longer a threat.

Chapter 203: Five Forces Gathered

At Armament Sect's entrance.

Many figures began to gather from every district inside the city. These were the people of Dark Asura Hall, Dark Shadow Tower, Seven Fiends Valley, Cloud Sky Mountain and Purple Mist Sea.

Liang Yangzu, Yuan Tianya, Wu Tuo, and Shi Jingyun waited leisurely at the front entrance, waiting for people from Purple Mist Sea to arrive before entering Armament Sect.

At a tall tower not far away from Armament Sect, Yi Yuan scowled at a graceful lady, watching her changing her spirit arts continuously and pressing many spirit energy marks that looked like tree leaves onto Lian Rou's body.

Every time the leaves entered Lian Rou's body she would shake a little. After the process was repeated at least a dozen times, Lian Rou's body shook strongly before her eyes brightened.

"Alright." Faint sweat appeared on top of Su Ziying's forehead. She wore a navy blue dress, and the sides of her dress were wrinkled like waves. Her beautiful hair was tied up tall, causing her to look extremely graceful and rich.

At the middle stage of the Netherpassage Realm, she was Purple Mist Sea's commander in Armament City, and second wife of Purple Mist Sea's leader.

“Thank you, Second Aunt.” Seeing that Lian Rou’s seal had been unlocked, Yi Yuan’s expression relaxed slightly as he thanked her with sincere respect.

“Yi Yuan!” Lian Rou’s expression was still somewhat pale, but the moment she realized that her blood was circulating, she fiercely glared at him and yelled, “Look at what you’ve done!”

“I’ll leave this girl to you. I should be meeting up with Yuan Tianya and the others right now.” Su Ziying glanced at Lian Rou and spoke with an indifferent tone, “Girl, just accept your fate. This time, no one can save Armament Sect.” Once finished, Su Ziying brought a number of Purple Mist Sea’s martial practitioners and headed towards Armament Sect’s entrance.

“I want to go back to the sect!” Lian Rou’s expression was icy.

“Lian Rou, I am sorry, but I can’t let you go.” Yi Yuan sighed. Then, he suddenly took out a silver rope and, while Lian Rou had not recovered completely and ignoring her scolding and struggling, tied her up tightly.

Yi Yuan stood on top of the tower. From here, he could see Armament Sect’s entrance from afar. When he looked however, he took on a complicated expression as he solemnly said, “It is not the first time the five great forces wanted to take action against Armament Sect. Regardless of Qin Bing’s appearance, Armament Sect would still walk the path of destruction.”

“Lord Lang Xie and Lord Feng Rong will definitely be able to protect Armament Sect!Yi Yuan, I will not forgive you! I will never forgive you!” Lian Rou cried out.

“As long as you survive, I don’t mind letting you hate me,” Yi Yuan said softly.

“You betrayed Armament Sect, lured Lord Lang Xie and Lord Feng Rong, and brought Senior Brother Qin into a trap just for me? You are overturning the entire Armament Sect!” Lian Rou reprimanded angrily.

“Do you know what you and Tang Siqi are in the eyes of the sect master and the three great reverends?” Yi Yuan’s expression was stern. “I didn’t want to do this either! When I heard that you and Tang Siqi were captured by Blood Shadow, I went to look for Sect Master. But he did not give me hope! He forbade me to notify Qin Bing about this and gave Lang Xie and Feng Rong the authority to take direct control of the situation. Do you know what this means?”

Yi Yuan hmphed coldly. “In their eyes, you, Tang Siqi, and I are nothing more than insignificant pawns! We can be sacrificed at any moment!

“They planned to sacrifice you. What else can I do? Watch you die with my own eyes while doing nothing?!” Yi Yuan’s eyes had turned red.

Lian Rou suddenly grew silent.

……

“Sister Su, you’ve come. Everyone is waiting for you.” Wu Tuo’s fat face let loose a brilliant smile, appearing completely harmless.

“Fatty Wu, aren’t you guys a little too early?” Su Ziying had brought the martial practitioners of Purple Mist Sea and arrived at Armament Sect’s entrance. After glancing at the crowd, she asked, “Where is Di Shijiu?”

“He is still chasing after Lang Xie,” Liang Yangzu replied.

“And Blood Shadow?” Su Ziying asked again.

“He should be with him,” Liang Yangzu’s eyes flashed.

Su Ziying nodded and asked, “Do we need to wait for them?”

“No!” Liang Yangzu snorted and said solemnly, “I can take charge for Dark Shadow Tower.”

“Alright.” Su Ziying looked at the entrance and said, “Then let’s go in and talk with Ying Xingran.”

“Hehe, let me open it, let me open it.” Cloud Sky Mountain’s Wu Tuo cheerfully arrived in front of the door, and like a human-shaped stone, he rammed his head into the steel door.

“Bang!”

Armament Sect’s thick steel door shattered into pieces, just like that.

Wu Tuo led the way in and said loudly, “Cloud Sky Mountain’s Wu Tuo pays his respects to the sect master.”

“Dark Asura Hall’s Yuan Tianya pays his respects to the sect master!”

“Seven Fiends Valley’s Shi Jingyun pays his respects to the sect master!”

“Dark Shadow Tower’s Liang Yangzu has arrived for a meeting!”

“Purple Mist Sea’s Su Ziying pays her respects to the sect master!”

One after another, the loud voices rang throughout the entire foot of the mountain of Flame Volcano and resonated around Armament Sect’s entrance.

With these five loud cries, the people in charge of their respective forces entered Armament Sect’s outer sect one after another.

Halfway up Flame Volcano.

Ying Xingran, the three great reverends, and the seven great elders had swiftly descended the mountain in unison, heading to the foot of the mountain.

Every single one of their faces was filled with thick despair, as if they could see their future fate.

As a result, Ying Xingran's face had lost all of its blood. He walked at the front, and from time to time, he would nervously turn around and ask Luo Zhichang, "Is there still no news from him?"

Chief Reverend Luo Zhichang had contacted the expert that watched over Armament Sect, using the instructions that had been left behind. Unfortunately, whether it was because it had been so long that the other party had forgotten about them or they had passed away, there was no response at all.

This was the equivalent of cutting off Armament Sect's remaining hope.

"There is no news, not even the slightest reaction. Perhaps he is already gone," Luo Zhichang sighed deeply.

'Then we can only put our hopes on Qin Bing!" Ying Xingran finally lost all hope and led them to the plaza. He rushed towards Tan Dongling and instructed, "Pass the three spatial rings to Qin Bing!"

At the plaza where the twelve spirit pattern pillars were, Qin Lie had his eyes tightly closed while a powerful wave of mind energy emanated from his body. He was doing his utmost to unlock the sealing art that was imprisoning Xue Li.

He did not realize that Ying Xingran and the others had arrived.

“Sect master, Se-Senior Brother Qin cannot be disturbed right now.” Tang Siqi hurriedly stood up and told them what Qin Lie had instructed her to, “Senior Brother Qin has finally learned the final magic of the spirit pattern pillar. He is now going through it and needs a little bit more time.”

“...Time. Time is not something Armament Sect has anymore. We can no longer give him time.” A trace of blood flowed down Ying Xingran’s lips. His eyes were like dying candles amidst the wind; it was like it could be extinguished at any moment.

“The commanders of the five great forces have already entered the sect. We no longer have any time.” Luo Zhichang said with a slightly unsteady voice and a face full of despair, “Wake Qin Bing up. Have him carry the three spatial rings filled with the sect’s final hope and swiftly leave through the underground path. Don’t come back anymore!”

“Go!” Fang Qi and Jiang Hao also cried out.

“Sect Master! What should we do, Sect Master?” The cries of the outer sect disciples all rang out from the big yard in front of

Armament Sect.

“Cheng Ping! Take Qin Bing, Tang Siqi, and the three spatial rings to the underground passage!” Ying Xingran abruptly cried out.

However, after the yell, he looked around and did not see any trace of Cheng Ping.

Just as Ying Xingran was about to yell once more, he saw a stumbling and bloody figure walking out in the direction of the artifact forging room not far away—it was the outer sect elder, Cheng Ping.

A blood-colored, short spear was stabbed in Cheng Ping’s chest. That was Cheng Ping’s own spirit artifact.

“I know about the underground passage that leads outside as well. That is where I came in from. I have come to crush all of Armament Sect’s hope!” Blood Shadow’s voice suddenly rang out from the artifact forging room.

While the crowd had turned ashen white, he looked at the sky and laughed as he appeared. “Ying Xingran! Luo Zhichang! Fang Qi! Jiang Hao! You four scumbags! You poisoned my master and joined forces with Lang Xie and Feng Rong—those two traitors—and murdered him while he was cultivating. You killed my master! I, Yan Chi have not forgotten this grudge. The reason I have lingered in this world until now was to kill you with my own hands and take revenge for my master!”

“Tong Jihua!” Ying Xingran yelled fiercely.

“Send in the men!” Chief Reverend had also cried out.

The moment Blood Shadow showed up, a bad premonition appeared inside their hearts. This Blood Shadow was different from the others. Even if Yuan Tianya, Shi Jingyun, Su Ziying, and Wu Tuo reached Armament Sect, they would not eliminate the sect master and three great reverends.

They would be captured alive and would allow Ying Xingran and the three great reverends to live so they could help them forge artifacts and refine high ranking spirit artifacts.

In Ying Xingran and the three great reverends’ eyes, as long as they didn’t die instantly, the hope that they might live long enough to see the sect’s resurgence would still exist. That was why they still had a single prayer for luck and hope in their hearts.

However, Blood Shadow’s appearance from the underground path had extinguished their hopes entirely.

The exposure of the underground passage meant that Qin Lie and Tang Siqi would not be able to leave with the sect’s secret scriptures, whereas they would be all killed by this madman.

If that happened, then how could Armament Sect possibly still have any hope remaining?

Therefore, he loudly cried out for help, hoping that Tong Jihua and the other sect elders could rush over.

Unfortunately, it would seem that Tong Jihua and the others at the front yard could not hear his desperate pleas.

“Yan Chi! Do you really want to destroy Armament Sect?!” Chief Elder Mo Hai yelled sternly, “Armament Sect raised you, and you grew up in Armament Sect since you were young. Can you really be this ruthless?”

“Elder Mo Hai...”

For the first time, there was a trace of complication in Blood Shadow’s eyes. “You are the only person I respected in Armament Sect. Every single one of my spirit artifacts were forged by you back then. This was also the reason why Junior Sister Feng Rong is still alive. The reason I didn’t kill her wasn’t for her sake, it was because I respected you!”

Beside Mo Hai, Feng Rong snorted with scorn in her eyes. “You can’t kill me!”

“I will not hurt you, Feng Rong, and the inner sect elders.” Blood Shadow’s eyes glittered with murderous intent. “But Ying Xingran and the three great reverends must die!”

“Boom!”

A thick, bloodthirsty aura exploded from Blood Shadow's body. His fresh blood formed into many bloody snakes. They suddenly crawled out of Blood Shadow's body and charged towards Ying Xingran and the three great reverends', attempting to bite them.

Each one of these blood snakes were formed from Blood Shadow's lifeblood essence. They were tinged with his thoughts and were like an extension of his four limbs, so he could nimbly move them as he pleased.

Seeing the numerous blood colored snakes agilely slithering over with a terrifying and ruthless aura, Ying Xingran and the three great reverends were filled with despair.

It was at this moment that Qin Lie suddenly opened his tightly closed eyes.

A bizarre color, red as blood, gleamed within their depths.

That very moment, he turned to Blood Shadow.

Chapter 204: Blood Progenitor

Numerous blood snakes cruised through the air, heading for Ying Xingran and the three great reverends. Blood Shadow's eyes glittered with a bloody light as he controlled the blood snakes remotely with his mind.

"You dare, Yan Chi!"

Feng Rong's expression was cruel as she ignored her severe injuries and spat out a mouthful of blood essence.

The blood essence exploded and formed innumerable crystalline blood droplets. They shone with a glamorous light and rammed towards the blood snakes.

"Ungrateful fool!"

Blood Shadow yelled before the bloody light in his eyes converged at a single point. A thick, bloody and fiendish aura was directly blasted at Feng Rong while carrying a tidal wave of mind energy.

"Splat splat splat!"

The blood droplets exploded, and whatever little color Feng Rong had just regained disappeared in an instant.

Traces of blood flowed slowly out of her eyes, nose, mouth, and ears.

Her soul was extremely weakened, and this time she had truly injured her heart and soul. She no longer had the ability to fight.

“Rong’er!” Mo Hai’s expression changed greatly as he grabbed Feng Rong right after she was injured. He hurriedly slipped a blood colored pill into her mouth.

“Sss sss! Sss sss!”

The blood snakes that were stopped temporarily by the droplets began to move again. One of them charged at Ying Xingran’s neck with its jaws ready to clamp down.

“Blood Change!”

Suddenly, a voice as cold as ice yelled out from the crowd.

That voice belonged to Qin Lie!

A strange energy wave that caused the crowd to feel their blood was boiling emanated from Qin Lie’s body. Before they realized what had happened, they saw that the blood snakes Blood Shadow had formed with his lifeblood essence suddenly started melting.

They dissolved and splashed everywhere!

After the life-like blood snakes had all melted, they were now simply just tiny pools of blood and lost all the brutality they had only moments ago.

Ying Xingran and the three great reverends stared at Qin Lie with great shock after escaping the maws of death. Each of the nearby inner sect elders and Tang Siqi was were shocked to the core as they turned to look at Qin Lie.

It was at this moment that a fountain of blood flew out from the spirit pattern pillar beside him.

Under the sun, the bloodwater shone with a terrifying crimson color. It poured down onto Qin Lie's body in front of everyone's eyes.

In an instant, Qin Lie had turned into a bloody man, a bloody man boiling with a bloody, fiendish aura!

A strange bloody light appeared in his eyes, and his body was even giving off an old and cruel aura. That aura mingled together with the bloody stench, giving rise to great fear within the depths of everyone's hearts.

"Blood Change! It's actually Blood Change!" As soon as Feng Rong saw it, she screamed, "Qin Bing, h-how could you possibly know Blood Change?"

Even Blood Shadow's entire body spasmed. After a momentary shock, a light of understanding flashed across his crimson eyes.

While everyone was still worried that Blood Shadow would renew his attacks, he suddenly bowed down before Qin Lie to everyone's amazement. He raised his head with madness shining in his eyes as he rasped, "Blood Progenitor... You're the Blood Progenitor, aren't you? I am the first disciple of You Hongzhi. My master told me about you once. The reason I came today was to release you from the spirit pattern pillar and return your freedom!"

Blood Progenitor?

In their great confusion, Ying Xingran and Luo Zhichang froze for a moment as they stared at Blood Shadow.

Even Feng Rong was a little befuddled. She did not understand why Blood Shadow had reacted so oddly to the current turn of events. Just slightly, she felt like laughing when she saw him bow before Qin Lie.

Tang Siqi was the only person out of everyone there who had a faint idea of what was going on. Strange light brimmed in her eyes as she looked at Qin Lie.

Qin Lie's eyes shone with a bloody light as he indifferently looked at Blood Shadow and said, "I am not him."

He was still cracking open the remaining seals inside the spirit pattern pillar just now. When Blood Shadow arrived and was about to commit mass murder, he still had two seals that he hadn't unlocked.

Since the seals were not completely broken, Xue Li could not exit with his true body and thus could not leave the spirit pattern pillar.

However, seeing that Blood Shadow had acted, out of helplessness, Qin Lie had no choice but to borrow Xue Li's power.

Therefore, Xue Li had summoned his lifeblood essence out of his body and poured it into Qin Lie's. The lifeblood essence of Blood Fiend Sect was the fountain of power, and the lifeblood essence in Xue Li's body was the essence of his whole life of cultivation!

After his lifeblood essence had coated Qin Lie's skin, he immediately gained the near infinite volume of blood energy. And since he had half of Xue Li's soul sealed inside the Soul Suppressing Orb, he could even channel this power with that half.

It was the equivalent of him turning into Xue Li, this thousand year old demon, for a short period of time!

How could Blood Shadow possibly fight him?

"The Blood Progenitor isn't possessing you?" Blood Shadow frowned and immediately climbed back up from his kneeling

position. “Then why could you use Blood Change?”

While speaking, the bloody color on Blood Shadow’s body faded bit by bit. Under the sun, his shadow grew clearer as the stench of blood grew thicker!

“Blood Arts: Materialization! Be careful Qin Bing!” Feng Rong exclaimed.

The shadow of Blood Shadow formed from his blood shot out and attacked Qin Lie, carrying with it a mad, bloodthirsty aura.

“If you aren’t the Blood Progenitor, then you can go to hell!” Blood Shadow laughed sharply, “Other than killing Ying Xingran and the three great reverends, the reason I came here today was to personally meet the Blood Progenitor. I wish to cultivate a higher rank of the Blood Fiend Secret Arts!”

“Boom!”

Qin Lie’s mind suddenly shuddered.

The instant the blood colored shadow rushed towards him, an extremely terrifying soul attacking energy had invaded first.

It reached deep into his soul!

“Blood Arts: Cocoon!” Xue Li’s evil voice came out from inside

the Soul Suppressing Orb as a wave of energy rippled out while he circulated blood essence and applied it around his body.

Amazingly, Xue Li's blood essence that was solidifying around Qin Lie's body shrunk.

Then, it turned into a blood cocoon that completely covered Qin Lie.

The countless scarlet threads on the blood cocoon looked like human nerves. Fresh blood even gushed from it.

At first glance, it was as if the blood cocoon was alive. It was an incredibly terrifying and impactful sight.

The shadow formed by Blood Shadow's lifeblood essence splashed onto the blood cocoon. Like a stream flowing into a river, it actually merged directly into the blood cocoon without even a splash.

Blood Shadow's soul connection with his blood essence was sliced away in an instant. At least seventy percent of his power was gone just like that.

"Senior Blood Progenitor, I-I am here to save you!" The moment that Blood Shadow saw that something was wrong, he yelled at the spirit pattern pillar.

He was the only person other than Qin Lie who knew the secret

of the spirit pattern pillar. He knew that You Hongzhi's bloody spirit art came from the old man inside the spirit pattern pillar.

That old man who You Hongzhi had referred to as the Blood Progenitor was the source of all their blood arts.

Blood Shadow had heard from You Hongzhi that the bloody spirit art he was cultivating was not complete. When he had reached the late stage of the Netherpassage Realm, he would have to acquire a higher ranking bloody spirit art.

Otherwise, his fate would be the same as You Hongzhi's that year. You Hongzhi's spirit art had backfired at the late stage, and he had to consume fresh blood to be able to maintain his realm and avoid his entire body exploding and killing him.

That was how Xue Li had restricted You Hongzhi in the past.

Therefore, after reaching the late stage of the Netherpassage Realm, Blood Shadow had been thinking of a way all this time to meet Xue Li and ask for a higher ranking bloody spirit art.

His so-called revenge for You Hongzhi was only an excuse, and killing Ying Xingran and the three great reverends was but a small matter to be carried out along the way.

His true objective was to acquire a high rank bloody spirit art and break through his limits once more!

“Senior Blood Progenitor, please return my lifeblood essence. I am willing to take you as my master!” Blood Shadow faced the spirit pattern pillar and begged.

“Serve me as your master? You’re not qualified.” An eerie voice came out from the blood cocoon surrounding Qin Lie.

The blood essence Blood Shadow had released just now was split out of the blood cocoon once more. There was a terrifying soul energy inside this split blood essence—it came from the other part of Xue Li’s soul!

Once this bloody man reappeared, it no longer had any trace of Blood Shadow’s aura. It turned into a wisp of bloody light and abruptly flew forward.

Amidst Blood Shadow’s terrified cries, the bloody man slipped directly into Blood Shadow’s body from the top of his head.

An acutely wretched scream came out of Blood Shadow’s mouth. Droplets of blood began to surface on Blood Shadow’s skin and appeared exceedingly eerie.

Blood Shadow’s eyes struggled, seemingly with all he could as he clutched his head and roared in extreme pain, “Get out! Get out of my body!”

His voice grew weaker and weaker…

After a while, Blood Shadow's wretched cries had stopped, and even the struggle in his eyes had disappeared.

An transformed aura which became cruel was slowly unleashed from his body. Blood Shadow's crimson eyes shone with a light that would cause souls to shudder.

When Ying Xingran, Luo Zhichang, Feng Rong, and Mo Hai looked at him now, they all felt their blood run cold.

They knew very well that Blood Shadow was completely gone. This person who had taken over Blood Shadow's corporeal body was the Blood Progenitor he was talking about!

At this moment, it was as if Xue Li's true body inside the spirit pattern pillar had turned into a real corpse. There was no life energy in it, nor was there even a trace of a soul.

The seal had not been unlocked completely, and Xue Li's true body still could not slip out of the spirit pattern pillar. But his lifeblood essence and soul were not restricted.

Now, his lifeblood essence coated Qin Lie's body, and half of his soul was sealed inside Qin Lie's Soul Suppressing Orb. The other half of his soul had eliminated Blood Shadow and taken over his corporeal body.

"A body at the middle stage of the Netherpassage Realm and a body of blood that isn't pure enough. What garbage!" Xue Li took a

gander at his new body with eyes filled with dissatisfaction. “Trash like this wants to serve me as his master, what a joke.”

While saying that, the cocoon surrounding Qin Lie had melted into bloodwater. Qin Lie had appeared once more.

Xue Li suddenly looked at Qin Lie.

Qin Lie was also looking at Xue Li.

Xue Li then started to walk to Qin Lie, one step at a time.

Ying Xingran, the three great reverends, and the seven great inner sect elders all looked ashen and were shivering slightly.

No one dared to move even a muscle!

Even Feng Rong was frightened. She could only stare at Xue Li without looking away, without being able to come up with even the slightest thoughts of resistance.

The aura flowing out of Xue Li’s body alone was enough to cause their souls to quiver. It made even the act of standing in front of Xue Li somewhat difficult...

Amidst the crowd’s fearful gazes, Xue Li arrived beside Qin Lie and stared deeply at him. Then, he suddenly sat down beside Qin Lie and said reluctantly, “C’mon, say it. What do you want me to

do?”

“I want you to help me kill some people,” Qin Lie answered in a simple and straightforward manner.

Chapter 205: Bloody Backing

At the plaza, Qin Lie's body was coated with a robe made of blood. The corporeal body that was forcefully dominated by Xue Li sat beside him just like that.

While Qin Lie was speaking, he had already gathered his mind and guarded the other portion of Xue Li's soul inside the Soul Suppressing Orb tightly.

He was wary of Xue Li.

Right now, Xue Li's other half of his soul that was possessing Blood Shadow's body was putting great pressure on his mind.

Meanwhile, Xue Li's blood essence had also solidified on the surface of his skin. It was the equivalent of having his entire body controlled by Xue Li!

He could be killed by Xue Li at any second if Xue Li felt like it!

That was also why he had gathered all of his thoughts and channeled Heavenly Thunder Eradication at full power, gathering all thunder and lightning energy together. He was ready to eliminate the other half of Xue Li's soul in the Soul Suppressing Orb at any moment.

The second Xue Li dared to act a little differently, he would risk even the destruction of his soul to eliminate the other half of Xue

Li's soul at all costs.

"What are you afraid of, kid?" A hint of taunting appeared in Xue Li's scarlet eyes. "Are you afraid that I will kill you even at the risk of losing half my soul?"

Qin Lie did not say anything.

At the side, Ying Xingran, the three great reverends, and the seven inner elders did not dare to say a word. They simply stared fearfully at Xue Li and Qin Lie while listening to their conversation.

They could sense a power from Xue Li that could eliminate them in an instant, so they did not doubt that the moment Xue Li felt like it, none of them would be able to escape even a single hit from Xue Li whatsoever!

That was why they were all as docile as a lamb.

"I know that you didn't use all of your power when you blasted the other half of my soul. If I really wanted to kill you, you do have the ability to take the other portion of my soul with you." Xue Li chuckled strangely and said inside Qin Lie's mind, "One part of this ability came from that thunder spirit art you cultivated, and the other came from that precious treasure in your head. I can feel how terrifying that orb is. Its threat to my soul is even bigger than the soul seal the twelve spirit pillars had applied on me combined!"

As he said this, his voice came from the soul sealed by Qin Lie inside the Soul Suppressing Orb.

“If half of my soul is destroyed, I wouldn’t be able to recover even in three hundred years!” Xue Li hmphed coldly. “Which is the better deal between that and being controlled by you for thirty years? I know this far better than you do!”

Qin Lie still did not dare to let his guard down as he continued to gather his mind consciousness while saying, “Please stay a little further away from me. Also, please withdraw the lifeblood essence from my body.”

“Kid, aren’t you being a little too cautious?! If I really wanted to kill you, do you think this little distance would be of any use?” While saying this, the blood essence coated on Qin Lie’s body turned into a bloody light and flew back into the spirit pattern pillar.

“At any rate, I hope you can stay away from me a bit. I still need to unlock the seals trapping you inside,” Qin Lie expressed.

Once he said this, Xue Li glanced at him coldly before standing up again. He then sat down at the spirit pattern pillar furthest away from Qin Lie.

Ying Xingran and the others’ eyes were filled with terror as they watched him come and walk by. They still did not dare to move a muscle.

Once Xue Li sat down, Qin Lie then said under Ying Xingran's extremely curious gaze, "Sect Master. Allow the masterminds of the forces to come to this place. This senior will... help us solve our problems."

Ying Xingran shuddered in response.

At the same time, in Armament Sect's outer sect courtyard.

The leaders of all five forces, Yuan Tianya, Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo, Liang Yangzu, and Su Zhiyun were leading their subordinates and heading towards the plaza one step at a time.

Liang Yangzu had purposely walked at the head of the group. He purposely slowed his footsteps and watched the outer sect disciples of Armament Sect retreating little by little. He looked to Tong Jihua and said, "Bring me to Ying Xingran."

"Hall Master Liang, it won't take us too much time to kill everyone in the outer sect." Yuan Tianya frowned and suggested that because he felt that Liang Yangzu's plan was too slow.

His eyes scanned Tong Jihua and the others' bodies, and he looked like he would attack at any moment. This caused Tong Jihua and the others to feel fearful on the inside.

"We don't have to rush." Liang Yangzu turned and said darkly, "The secret arts Blood Spear is cultivating has their own unique properties. Only the outer sect elders would be familiar with these

secret arts. If we kill everyone in Blood Spear, then we will not be able to learn their cultivation method. We also need to acquire the training methods of Blood Spear's martial practitioners and the technique to prepare the blood pool's spirit blood this trip. That is why we must leave some of them alive."

When he said this, everyone's eyes lit up.

Shi Jingyun and Wu Tuo even hurriedly persuaded Yuan Tianya to be less hasty, that he must not kill all of Blood Spear's martial practitioners.

Everyone knew about the might of Blood Spear. Some of them had even experienced it personally.

They desired Blood Spear's training art and preparation method of the legendary blood pool's spirit blood very much. They wanted to increase their own strength using that knowledge.

That was why Liang Yangzu's suggestion was acknowledged by everyone.

They didn't know that the reason actual Liang Yangzu was delaying was because of Blood Shadow so that Blood Shadow could acquire the fruits of their labor first.

"Alright!" Yuan Tianya was also moved. "The secret arts that was able to turn Fire Spear into Blood Spear is something I am also very interested in learning as well."

And that was why they weren't in a hurry, nor was their speed particularly quick.

Their normal disciples had even caught up to them.

Lu Li, Ling Yushi, and Ling Xuanxuan had rushed over from the streets outside and entered Shi Jingyun's group.

Ouyang Jingjing did not have the courage to come.

Pang Feng had also arrived from outside Armament Sect and walked beside Wu Tuo. He was here to witness Armament Sect's fate.

His sister, Pang Shishi, did not have the courage to come either. She chose to stay at the Heart of the Great Earth.

At a faraway tower, Yi Yuan and Lian Rou looked in the direction of Armament Sect from afar. Just the same, they did not have the courage to step back into the sect and could not bear to watch the destruction of Armament Sect.

"Pang Feng?!" Tong Jihua exclaimed in a low tone.

Beside Wu Tuo, Pang Feng's expression was steady as he watched the familiar faces of the outer sect disciples. His eyes were a little complicated.

However, his tone was incredibly calm, “Elder Tong, I did not expect the sect to experience such a huge change either. I do not wish to see the sect walk towards destruction, but I do not have the power to change the sect’s future. The reason I came was to bear witness to the sect’s fate. If there is anything within my power that I can do, then I will do my best to accomplish it.”

A hint of pain and helplessness flashed across Pang Feng’s eyes.

“You just watch,” Wu Tuo interrupted. “But remember, you must not interfere!”

Pang Feng snorted once with a scowl.

“Very good. You have the courage to step back into the sect and watch Armament Sect walk towards its own destruction with your own eyes. Your heart is truly as tough as steel,” Purple Mist Sea’s Su Ziying praised once before saying, “You are unlike that brat, Yi Yuan. He only knows how to talk about love and would not even bother with what’s truly important!”

“I am Ying Xingran. I invite you all to come and talk at the plaza.” It was at this moment that Ying Xingran’s yell had come from the foot of the mountain of Flame Volcano.

He had actually invited them in.

Chapter 206: A Fiendish Aura That Reaches The Heavens!

Under the blazing sun and at the bottom of Flame Volcano, the spirit pattern pillars that were standing tall at the plaza caused the land to appear solemn in its silence.

Qin Lie's eyes were shut. A very clear wave of mind energy emanated from his body while he was still in the process of cracking open the seals inside the pillar.

Under the furthest spirit pattern pillar from him, Blood Shadow's body, which had been dominated by Xue Li, was sitting straight with his head lowered.

Ying Xingran, the three great reverends, and the seven great inner sect elders were all gathered at the back side of the plaza while looking sternly at the front.

go

After a while, Tong Jihua and many outer sect disciples, in addition to the Blood Spear martial practitioners all retreated from the front yard.

“Sect Master...” After Tong Jihua had arrived, he said in a low tone with shame, “I could not stop them.”

Ying Xingran waved his hands and motioned for Tong Jihua and the outer sect disciples to retreat.

“Sect Master Ying sure has courage!” Wu Tuo’s hearty laughter suddenly rang out from outside. His chubby body was the first to appear at the plaza.

Pang Feng and many other Cloud Sky Mountain martial practitioners, clad in gray, also followed closely behind Wu Tuo and appeared one after another.

Ying Xingran, Feng Rong, and the others all simmered with anger when they saw Pang Feng appear, giving him a furious glare.

There were even many outer sect and inner sect disciples who couldn’t hold back and began yelling angrily at him, calling him a traitor, cold-blooded, and ungrateful.

His face was incredibly heavy under the crowd’s accusations. However, he did not defend himself and simply stood as still as a rock.

“Ying Xingran! You ignored my questions and covered singlemindedly for a murderer like Qin Bing. Have you ever thought that such a day like this would come?” Liang Yangzu walked over with a dark expression. His eyes were like sharp blades that shot straight on Ying Xingran’s body.

“Liang Shaoyang had ambushed Qin Bing with Eclipse Insects, then ordered Gray Shadow and Black Shadow to kill Qin Bing and Tang Siqi from the shadows. He deserved to die!” Ying Xingran yelled.

“He deserved to die, you say?!” Liang Yangzu roared angrily, “Then everyone at this place today all deserves to die as well! You have only yourselves to blame for Armament Sect’s destruction!”

Yuan Tianya, Su Ziying, and Shi Jingyun led their subordinates and appeared at the plaza. The trio looked deeply at Ying Xingran and the three great reverends. Their faces appeared somewhat embarrassed.

“...Elder Mo Hai, I am very sorry, but this is what the higher-ups want. I am just following orders.” Shi Jingyun’s expression was bitter. He bowed before Mo Hai and said apologetically, “I have not forgotten the favor of you forging a spirit artifact for me. If this wasn’t the plan decided on by all seven valley masters, I would never have entered Armament Sect with such an identity, nor would I dare stand in front of you like this.”

“Elder Mo Hai, Purple Mist Sea will guarantee your safety,” Su

Ziying expressed solemnly.

“Before I came over, the higher-ups have specifically mentioned to not harm you no matter what.” Even Yuan Tianya appeared a bit embarrassed in front of Mo Hai. His words were tinged with fearful respect.

Mo Hai was now publically acknowledged as the number one artificer within Armament Sect. Every single spirit artifact he forged was incredibly rare and was desired by every martial practitioner.

It was rumored that Mo Hai was about to break through his current limits, soon being able to forge an Earth Grade spirit artifact.

An Earth Grade spirit artifact was a wondrous item that even Fulfillment Realm and Fragmentation Realm martial practitioners desired!

Even Eight Extreme Temple and Profound Heaven Alliance had specifically spoken up for Mo Hai, telling the mobilizing forces below to secure Mo Hai’s safety to the best of their ability!

Mo Hai’s reputation was just as well known in Eight Extreme Temple and Profound Heaven Alliance. He was a desired talent that both forces wanted to snatch for themselves and the only person who all five forces couldn’t touch!

This also meant that even with the destruction of Armament Sect today, Mo Hai was destined to rise even higher and would be fought over by Eight Extreme Temple and Profound Heaven Alliance. He would become one of the most respectable artificers within Eight Extreme Temple and Profound Heaven Alliance.

This was the treatment an excellent artificer would receive.

That was why Yuan Tianya, Su Ziying, Shi Jingyun, and the others had no choice but to restrain their arrogance in front of Mo Hai.

—It was because they might need to beg Mo Hai for a favor someday. In the future, when Mo Hai worked for either Eight Extreme Temple or Profound Heaven Alliance, a single word from him might affect their entire fate and future!

The reason Blood Shadow did not killed Feng Rong earlier was also because of Mo Hai. He did not want to offend Mo Hai and tear down his own path to request spirit artifacts for himself.

“Standing here today, do your words have any meaning at all?” Mo Hai said indifferently.

The crowd’s expressions were ones of slight embarrassment.

After a while, Liang Yangzu led the conversation, “Blood Shadow? What are you doing?”

Everyone looked at the body of Blood Shadow that had been dominated by Xue Li in unison.

With his head lowered, Xue Li let out a strange chuckle and did not answer.

The reason he was chuckling was because he could sense that Qin Lie had broken yet another seal. This caused him to grow happier by the moment.

He was inching closer to the moment where his true body could escape that terrible prison. After being imprisoned in such a lightless place for so many years, he could finally regain his freedom today. Of course he was happy.

“What are you laughing about? Have you finished... your business?” Liang Yangzu snorted coldly before questioning in a stern manner.

He had a secret agreement with Blood Shadow.

Xue Li raised his head. His scarlet as blood eyes focused on Liang Yangzu’s body, and he said, “More garbage! You secretly cultivated the spirit art of our Blood Fiend Sect and didn’t even realize that you have reached the state of fiendish rebound. How much human blood have you drunk recently? Do you feel upset and does your realm feel unstable if you don’t drink human blood everyday now?”

The moment he said this, Liang Yangzu's entire body shook violently. He exclaimed with shock and terror, "Blood Shadow! What nonsense are you spouting?"

"Drink human blood?" Ying Xingran and the three great reverends matched each other's eyes.

A jolt flashed through their minds as they pieced together the information , and they almost instantly realized that Liang Yangzu had also cultivated the bloody spirit art from Blood Shadow. He had become just like You Hongzhi at the late stage where he needed to drink human blood in order to stabilize his realm.

"No wonder Liang Yanzu and Blood Shadow had arrived first to ask for a high rank secret cultivation art from the Blood Progenitor. He had the same problem as Blood Shadow..." Ying Xingran and the three great reverends had already figured it out.

"Drink human blood? Liang Yangzu!" Su Ziying's face paled as she subconsciously took two steps backwards. She looked at Liang Yangzu as if she was watching a monster. "Is what Blood Shadow is saying is true? Do you drink human blood everyday now?"

Lu Li, Ling Yushi, Ling Xuanxuan, and other female martial practitioners were also shocked and terrified as they looked at Liang Yangzu as if they saw naught but a monster.

Even Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo, and Yuan Tianya were in dismay as they looked somewhat fearfully at Liang Yangzu. Yuan Tianya even asked directly, "Tower Lord Liang, are Blood Shadow's words

true? Do those who cultivate Blood Spear's bloody spirit art need to continuously feed on human blood to keep their realm stabilized at the late stage?"

Everyone's gaze on Liang Yangzu became filled with disgust. In an instant, they all now viewed Liang Yangzu as an abnormality.

"For the past two years, many brothers in Shadow Tower have died without a single drop of blood remaining on them." One of Liang Yangzu's subordinates backed away from Liang Yangzu, one step after another, with shivering lips and extreme fear. "So that's why. That's how it all happened…"

The moment he retreated, nearly every Dark Shadow Tower martial practitioner lost the color on their faces and subconsciously backed away from Liang Yangzu as well.

"Blood Shadow! What the hell are you doing?" Liang Yangzu had almost gone insane as he yelled angrily, "What nonsense are you spouting?"

"Hehe, you know what I'm talking about on the inside." Xue Li's eyes were taunting him as he continued to scornfully lay more insults. "At your current status, you have at most three years before you will lose your mind even if you suck human blood. Do you know what you will turn into three years later?"

"Blood Shadow!" Liang Yangzu exclaimed sternly.

He finally couldn’t control the irritation in his heart, and after a bloody light had flashed through his eyes, his shadow under the sun instantly turned into three blurry foreign figures that were like the shadows of demons and monsters. They suddenly charged forward, attacking Xue Li with great madness.

An eerie and bizarre aura leaked out from the three bloody shadow demons. These three foreign figures were about ten meters long and dragged long tails with them. Although their appearances were blurry, they looked to be feral beasts from the Nether Realm.

“Heh! You want to kill me with just three shadow fiends formed from the souls of Nether Giant Tail Lizards?” Xue Li grinned wickedly before lifting a hand to catch the mad demonic shadows as they pounced onto him.

The muscles of the left hand he raised abruptly contracted as if the essence of his flesh and skin had been completely sucked away.

It was merely an instant, but his entire left arm had already completely shriveled up and turned into a withered claw. It looked like the arm of a skeleton.

The fingertips of his five fingers were like five eerie, bone-white spurs that suddenly grew out like sharp blades!

Xue Li’s claw-like left arm was dripping with blood as if it was just scooped up from a pool of blood. The crowd looked incredibly frightened by it.

His bone claw made a tearing motion in midair!

But a moment later, terrible cries came from the three demonic shadows pouncing towards him.

Under everyone's gaze, the so-called shadow fiends were torn into pieces like huge rag cloths!

"Thump thump thump! Thump thump thump!"

Liang Yangzu's heartbeat abruptly increased. Even Yuan Tianya, Su Ziying, Wu Tuo and Shi Jingyun could hear his rapid heartbeat clearly.

"You're not Blood Shadow! You can't be him!" Liang Yangzu pressed his chest as if he was suppressing something. Struggle appeared on his face, "There is no way Blood Shadow can tear apart my shadow fiends! He did not have that kind of power yet!"

"Stop controlling yourself. Let loose all of the blood fiend aura in your heart." Blood Shadow chuckled strangely and tempted Liang Yangzu like a demon, "My fresh blood is incredibly tasty. Don't you want to try them? Come, come to me. I will let you drink my blood; I will give you power; I will grant peace to your heart..."

Xue Li chuckled continuously.

"Thump thump thump! Thump thump thump!" Liang Yangzu's heartbeat was so loud that even a martial practitioner the level of

Lu Li could hear it.

"You are not Blood Shadow!" Liang Yangzu pressed a hand against his chest like his life depended on it and cried out madly with a twisted face, "You are the Blood Progenitor! You are the source of all bloody spirit arts!"

Yuan Tianya, Su Ziying, Wu Tuo, and Shi Jingyun noticed that something was wrong and lost the color on their faces when they heard his words. The very next moment, they all looked at Xue Li.

It was at this time that Qin Lie opened his eyes. He glanced at Xue Li, then at Yuan Tianya and Liang Yangzu before saying indifferently, "Kill Liang Yangzu and this man first. Then I will break open your last seal." He pointed at Yuan Tianya.

Yuan Tianya's expression changed greatly.

Xue Li chuckled in a low tone and said, "Sure."

He slowly stood up.

His originally rather meaty body swiftly began to shrivel up as he gradually stood up.

In an extremely short amount of time, Blood Shadow's original body had been compressed into the form of a mummy. Its bizarre appearance caused everyone to feel a tingle on their heads at first glance.

“Thump thump thump!” Liang Yangzu’s heartbeat grew faster and faster.

Xue Li looked at him as a demonic, bloody light flashed from the depths of his scarlet pupils. “Blood Arts: Explode!”

“Bang!”

The second the words left Xue Li’s mouth, Liang Yangzu’s rapidly beating heart exploded. The madly erupting blood caused his body to burst open into smithereens.

It took only an instant for his body to turn into a bloody mush, resulting in his death. He didn’t even have a chance to truly unleash the bloody spirit art he had cultivated with painstaking effort.

“There is one more,” Qin Lie said in a low tone again.

Xue Li grinned and turned towards Yuan Tianya. Like an old demon inspecting delicious prey, he let out a strange chuckle, “If he wants you to die, then you have no choice but to die.”

Chapter 207: Turn The Tides!

In Qin Lie's mind, Yuan Tianya had always been his greatest enemy. The reason he didn't care to expose his identity was mainly to guard himself against Yuan Tianya.

Back at Icestone City, Yuan Tianya was humiliated by Li Mu and lost a subordinate commander. Since he could not see through Li Mu's true realm, Yuan Tianya had held himself back and endured it.

After that, Yuan Tianya sought out any news relating to Li Mu and him whenever possible. Yuan Tianya's intentions to kill Li Mu and him had never faded.

That was why he had no choice but to bury his name after entering Armament Sect. He did not dare to expose himself even in front of Ling Yushi.

This was all because of the pressure exerted by Yuan Tianya. The pressure was so strong that he did not dare to let himself go!

Now that he had come to an agreement with Xue Li, the first person he wanted to kill was Yuan Tianya!

"Who exactly are you?" Under Xue Li's bloody gaze, Yuan Tianya felt as if he was sitting on a carpet of needles. He almost instantly channeled every bit of energy in his body and took out the life-bound spirit artifact he cultivated.

A pair of green feathered wings tore through the clothes behind Yuan Tianya's back and appeared out of nowhere.

The wings were about one and a half meters long, and they were as wide as an eagle's. In addition, the numerous dark green feathers were forged from various special metals.

The feathers were light, but were as sharp as blades. It was a perfect match with Yuan Tianya's spirit art.

Cloud Zephyr Wings, a Profound Grade Five spirit artifact. Yuan Tianya had bought it from overseas.

After the Cloud Zephyr Wings had extended, Yuan Tianya's body suddenly flew into the air. As he danced about lightly like a huge bird, a terrific wind had also risen as if coordinating with his agile flying in mid-air.

"Zing zing zing!"

Suddenly, a large portion of the dark green feathers turned into life seeking blades that shot towards Xue Li.

The sharp blades formed from feathers had even combined into an awl-like shape in midair. Along with it, there were fierce winds blowing inside the awl until it started to faintly hurt everyone's eardrums.

Yuan Tianya also swooped down towards Xue Li like an eagle right behind the thin, rain-like feathers.

Xue Li's body shrunk into a mummy. His skin was light gray with not a bit of luster to be seen. He appeared dead and lifeless.

However, his pair of eyes shone with a terrific, bloody light.

Lifting his head, Xue Li chuckled nastily and said, "You've only managed to unleash the beauty of the spirit energy of the wind of the Wind Cloud Art you're cultivating. However, your cloud art is far from developed."

He suddenly looked towards the place where Liang Yangzu's body had exploded.

The crowd had followed his gaze as well.

"Blood Art: Materialization!" Xue Li exclaimed.

Liang Yangzu's smelly, fresh blood that had splashed everywhere suddenly began to wriggle. On the plaza's stone ground, it was as if the droplets of blood had turned into innumerable round blood pearls that rolled at a rapid pace before merging into one.

That scene was so bizarre that it caused cold chills to crawl up everyone's spines. The few droplets of blood that were splashed onto Wu Tuo and Shi Jingyun had also rolled down from their bodies and swiftly beneath their feet. It frightened those two so

much that the color on their faces had quietly changed.

In a very short period of time, the pools of blood formed after Liang Yangzu's death quickly writhed and formed into a person made of blood lying on the ground.

Suddenly, the blood man began to stand up slowly.

"Pwack pwack pwack!"

It was at this moment Yuan Tianya's green feathers shot down from the sky and stabbed into Xue Li's body like many sharp blades.

Xue Li had been turned into a porcupine, but there was not a single trace of pain in his eyes as he chuckled at the blood man and commanded, "Go."

The blood man's body twisted and actually began to take on the faint appearance of Liang Yangzu. Then, a pungent blood fiend aura was unleashed from it.

The blood man turned into a bolt of bloody light and flew straight into the air, beginning its assault on Yuan Tianya, who was dropping down from the sky.

A ball of brilliant, bloody light exploded in front of Yuan Tianya. As Yuan Tianya groaned dully, the blood light abruptly changed into a large blood sword and slashed, aiming at Yuan Tianya's

neck.

Yuan Tianya's Cloud Zephyr Wings flapped swiftly and circled around in midair. He seemed to be looking for an opportunity to kill Xue Li's true body.

However, as if the blood sword had a mind of its own, it chased after Yuan Tianya endlessly without ever giving up.

On the plaza, Shi Jingyun, Su Ziying, Wu Tuo, Lu Li, Ling Yushi, Ling Xuanxuan, Armament Sect's Ying Xingran, and the three great reverends were all looking up at the sky.

Countless shocked faces were colored blood red by the light of the blood sword in the sky. They actually looked a bit scary.

Even with dark green feathers piercing every inch his body, Xue Li never raised his head nor did he look at the sky. Instead, he turned to Qin Lie and asked, "Who else should I kill?"

"That person on the sky isn't dead yet," Qin Lie commented sternly.

"It is only a matter of time." Xue Li appeared careless. "Within two hours, the blood slave I've awakened will be a level stronger than even before it died. Before that person had exploded and died, his strength was already comparable to that foe in the sky. The blood slave formed from all of his blood essence would definitely be able to kill that person before the spirit energy within the blood

is exhausted.

Shi Jingyun and the crowd's attention had originally been in the sky. When they heard Xue Li asking who to kill next, their eyes turned cold as they quickly withdrew their gaze from Yuan Tianya and looked warily at Xue Li.

"In that case, that person in the sky is dead for sure?" Qin Lie asked.

"Absolutely dead," Xue Li chuckled strangely.

Qin Lie nodded before turning his gaze to glance at Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo, and Si Ziying. He began pondering in silence.

"Qin Bing..." Ying Xingran suddenly interrupted.

Qin Lie turned his head to look at him.

"They are different from Liang Yangzu and Yuan Tianya. As the tower lord of Shadow Tower, Liang Yangzu deserved to die after he had consumed human blood, whereas Yuan Tianya was not amiable with the grand hall master and second hall master, as Dark Asura Hall's first hall master. If he's dead, he's dead. It doesn't matter."

Ying Xingran's expression was heavy as he explained, "But Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo, Su Ziying are truly respectable characters of Seven Fiends Valley, Cloud Sky Mountain, and Purple Mist Sea. If

they die, then we must fight to the death against Seven Fiends Valley, Cloud Sky Mountain, and Purple Mist Sea…”

Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo, and Su Ziying were slightly surprised upon hearing Ying Xingran’s words.

They could not see through Xue Li’s realm and were still hesitating on the inside, wondering if they should take the plunge.

The truth was that they were already thinking about retreating. They thought of reporting the situation to the higher ups, so the higher ups would send someone else to handle this.

That was why they immediately grew somewhat relieved when they heard Ying Xingran’s words.

They all turned to look at Qin Lie.

At this point, they understood that Qin Lie was the only one who could influence Xue Li.

Neither Ying Xingran nor the three great reverends could do it.

“They have already cleaned out Armament Sect and murdered countless outer sect foreign delegates and Blood Spear’s men outside. It was obvious that they were planning to destroy Armament Sect. What else is there to worry about at this stage?” Qin Lie asked doubtfully.

“Er, this…” Chief Reverend Luo Zhichang said awkwardly.

What he wanted to say was that the profound character they were relying upon hadn’t answered them, and without that person’s protection, how could Armament Sect possibly resist Eight Extreme Temple and Profound Heaven Alliance?

That was why they did not dare to eliminate everyone. They still hoped that there was a chance at reconciliation.

Seeing Ying Xingran and the three great reverends’ distressed looks, Qin Lie slowly understood their worries and difficulties.

He suddenly looked at Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo, Su Ziying, then glanced once at Xue Li before closing his eyes.

His mind consciousness slipped into the Soul Suppressing Orb and communicated with the other half of Xue Li’s soul, “Senior Xue Li, how big of a problem can you help me resolve? Can you deal with two copper forces on your own?”

The difference between the ten great realms, the Refinement Realm, Natal Opening Realm, Manifestation Realm, Netherpassage Realm, Fulfillment Realm, Fragmentation Realm, Nirvana Realm, Imperishable Realm, Void Realm, and Genesis Realm, was unimaginable.

According to the rank differentiation in Spirit Realm, the forces

that reached Copper rank must have Fulfillment Realm martial practitioners. It was possible that they had some Fragmentation Realm martial practitioners as well. If the two great forces, Eight Extreme Temple and Profound Heaven Alliance, had sent out Fulfillment Realm or even Fragmentation Realm experts to destroy Armament Sect, then could Xue Li possibly resist them?

That was why he needed to clear this up before making an actual decision.

“Copper rank force? Are there any Fragmentation Realm martial practitioners assuming command?” Xue Li’s soul questioned.

“I don’t know. There may be, there may not be,” Qin Lie answered honestly.

“If there are only Fulfillment Realm experts, then it isn’t hard to deal with them with my current power.” Xue Li pondered for a moment before continuing his answer, “If it were Fragmentation Realm martial practitioners, then in the past I wouldn’t have been afraid either. However, the way I am now, it may be a little problematic... After being sealed for so many years, it takes more than a day or two for me to return to my previous strength.”

“If you can regain your full strength?” Qin Lie asked again.

“If I recover eighty percent of my true strength, then I would not fear those of the Fragmentation Realm.” Xue Li was quiet for a moment before he replied again, “But that will take at least twenty years. If I was able to use all kinds of pills and there is high rank

spirit blood for me to refine and fuse, then this time can be shortened to ten years."

Qin Lie immediately withdrew his mind consciousness.

"Spurt!"

The sound of flesh being penetrated came from the sky. In response, the crowd raised their heads to look and found a blood sword stabbed into Yuan Tianya's stomach.

It was only a palm-sized blood sword.

However, that blood sword was sucking out blood madly like the mouth of a fearsome beast!

All the blood in Yuan Tianya's body began pouring into the blood sword uncontrollably. Like a strange, blood sucking beast, the sword continued fiercely drain every drop!

Terrible cries came out of Yuan Tianya's mouth. His thick life force gradually left his body along with the mad outpour of his blood. Following it, the light in his eyes was swiftly dying out.

Everyone could see that Yuan Tianya was slowly wilting away. It was likely that he was going to die any moment.

Xue Li did not exaggerate the power of his blood slave. Formed

from Liang Yangzu's blood essence, it was able to kill Yuan Tianya even in the sky.

It did not even need two hours.

Very soon, Yuan Tianya's cries had stopped, and the Dark Asura Hall first hall master who was the master of Icestone City, with a high chance of becoming Dark Asura Hall's grand hall master in the future, was thrown down from the sky just like that.

Before he even reached the ground, his life force was already completely gone. There was not a trace of light remaining in his eyes.

The blood slave who was supposed to exhaust all of its blood essence within two hours actually gradually formed into the blurry appearance of Liang Yangzu after absorbing all of Yuan Tianya's blood. It stood beside Xue Li as if awaiting its next order.

"Kid, what do you want to do?" Xue Li asked.

Everyone suddenly looked at Qin Lie.

Qin Lie paused for a moment before saying, "Every outsider who steps into Armament Sect today will not leave! Imprison them all!"

"You dare!" Su Ziying exclaimed.

“Kid, you want to imprison all of us?” Wu Tuo chuckled, but his expression was slightly unfriendly.

“Kid, we can release Armament Sect today, but if you dare to act recklessly, hmph!” Shi Jingyun exclaimed coldly.

“First Hall Master! First Hall Master!” Dark Asura Hall’s commanders were mad with murder when they saw Yuan Tianya’s death. Someone cried out, “As long as we combine our powers and kill that evil man, Armament Sect won’t be able to resist at all!”

They stared at Xue Li.

However, Xue Li chuckled strangely and instructed the blood man, “Kill them.”

The blood man formed from Liang Yangzu’s fresh blood immediately charged towards the Dark Asura Hall subordinates and began a bloody slaughter.

“Do you think that you can overturn Armament Sect’s fate with just a single evil man?” Su Ziying frowned and said, “The plan to act against Armament Sect was the result of the two higher forces’ negotiations. Your fate was sealed long ago when they had decided their plans. You cannot change anything!”

“Sect Master Ying, I implore you to stop resisting,” Wu Tuo also said.

“You cannot resist!” Shi Jingyun exclaimed solemnly.

“Who says that Armament Sect cannot change their fate?” It was at this moment that Lang Xie’s voice suddenly came from outside, “Both Eight Extreme Temple and Profound Heaven Alliance elevated themselves to where they are now from Black Iron forces one step at a time. A thousand years ago, Scarlet Tide Continent did not even have a Copper rank force! Our Armament Sect was founded nine hundred years ago, and at the time, Eight Extreme Temple and Profound Heaven Alliance were only the same level as us; they were only Black Iron forces!”

Lang Xie walked in from the outside while carrying a short spear, still covered in blood. As he approached, the pungent smell began to spread out.

“If it wasn’t for the fact that Armament Sect had poured all their hearts into forging artifacts and wasn’t too willing to spend an excessive amount of effort on the martial way, Armament Sect would have become a Copper rank force a long time ago!” The drops of blood on Lang Xie’s body were like red diamonds. These blood pearls formed from them simply stayed on the surface of his skin without falling.

“So what if it’s the Profound Heaven Alliance? What if it’s a Fulfillment Realm martial practitioner?” Lang Xie exclaimed in a low tone and exclaimed, “Are they not mortal? Are they not beheaded by my hands?!”

A bloody head suddenly flew out from his spatial ring and was casually dumped at Shi Jingyun, Su Ziying, and Wu Tuo’s feet.

The bloody head rolled and created a long line of blood before finally stopping beneath Su Ziying's feet.

The eyes of the head was still opened wide with disbelief, and now, it was looking directly into Su Ziying's eyes.

"Lord... Lord Tu Xi!" Su Ziying lost control and screamed.

Shi Jingyun and Wu Tuo screamed out as well.

Tu Xi, an expert in the Fulfillment Realm had come from Eight Extreme Temple to deal with the most problematic person, Lang Xie.

But now, he had actually been killed by Lang Xie, and his head was rolling on the ground.

Chapter 208: A Word For Love

Lang Xie's strength was deeply imprinted into everyone's minds. Even Eight Extreme Temple and Profound Heaven Alliance were wary of him.

When those two forces decided to act against Armament Sect, they understood that Lang Xie would be a potential threat. They had to take care of Lang Xie before they would have a good chance of being able to invade Armament Sect .

Therefore, Lang Xie was lured to where Blood Shadow, Liang Yangzu, Di Shijiu, and Yuan Tianya were. Liang Yangzu, Di Shijiu, and Yuan Tianya were going to team up and kill Lang Xie together.

But Lang Xie actually broke free from the trap!

After that, Di Shijiu pursued Lang Xie to try to eliminate Lang Xie.

From Yuan Tianya and the others' point of view, with Eight Extreme Temple's Tu Xi and Di Shijiu, Lang Xie was fated to die.

But right now, Lang Xie was standing in front of them covered in blood, and the head of Tu Xi, who they were counting on, was rolling on the ground right next to their feet.

Tu Xi was in the early stage of the Fulfillment Realm, yet he had died such a horrific death even with Di Shijiu helping him. Just

how strong was Lang Xie?

The three masterminds, Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo, and Su Ziying, now had ugly expressions and became silent.

“So interesting! Haha! Interesting!” Xue Li, whose body was covered in green feathers, suddenly grinned at Lang Xie with a pleased expression. “Not bad, not bad! He is able to cultivate the incomplete blood spirit art to such a degree with such a heterogeneous mix of blood in his body, yet has not gone crazy and maintained his intelligence. Hah, commendable!”

He didn’t disguise his admiration of Lang Xie at all.

Lang Xie’s expression was dark, and he did not respond; instead, he walked next to Ying Xingran, bowed, and then said, “Greetings, Sect Master.”

“Good! As expected, you did not let us down, you’ve returned!” Ying Xingran exclaimed excitedly.

“Di Shijiu?” Feng Rong inserted.

“Di Shijiu was heavily wounded and fled.” As Lang Xie spoke, the beads of blood on him slowly merged back into his body.

Every time a bead of blood disappeared into his skin, a hint of blood would appear on Lang Xie’s face and the bloody light in his eyes would grow brighter.

When Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo, and Su Ziying looked at him, they felt the pressure increase even further. At this time, the martial practitioners that had come from Dark Asura Hall were being crazily massacred by a blood man.

A massacre in which they had no power to fight back!

Liang Yangzu had secretly cultivated the blood spirit art for more than three decades and reached the late stage of the Netherpassage Realm. In the last two years, he survived by drinking the blood of others and the level You Hongzhi's had reached in the past.

You Hongzhi had been ghastly and inhuman at his peak. Even though he had started to drink human blood and eat human flesh, his combat strength was the strongest of everyone around!

Lang Xie, Feng Yong, Ying Xingran, and the three reverends had to use a slow-acting poison to corrode his body and mind in order to kill him, and they also had to mount a surprise attack when he was cultivating and unguarded...

It was clear from this just how terrifying You Hongzhi had been at the time.

The present Liang Yangzhu had reached the terrifying level that You Hongzhi had been at and cultivated the incomplete blood spirit art to a twisted extreme!

The blood slave that was formed from his lifeblood essence could kill Yuan Tianya in a short period of time after being powered up by Xue Li. One could only imagine the damage that it could do to Yuan Tianya's commanders!

A streak of bloody light flew around those Dark Asura Hall martial practitioners. Wherever the bloody light passed, the Dark Asura Hall martial practitioners wailed and cried. Their blood was being pulled by what seemed to be a magnetic force which caused their bodies to explode.

They could not stop their own blood from going crazy!

As the martial practitioners exploded one after another, more fresh blood fell to the ground. That blood man swept over the bloody puddles and sucked up all the blood. Its bloody energy fluctuation did not decrease at all.

Xue Li laughed strangely, "As long as the blood slave continuously consumes fresh blood, it can absorb power from the blood and lengthen its existence."

He looked at Shi Jingyun and the others as he asked Qin Lie, "Capture or kill?"

"Lord Lang Xie, what do you think?" Qin Lie hesitated.

"Capture alive, and demand a high price in exchange!" Lang Xie's expression was dark, and a bloody light flashed in his eyes. "Our

Armament Pavilions are spread out in the cities of the five major factions, and many of our people are there. Right now, they are being imprisoned. I need a few people alive to trade for the safety of our members."

"Seize them!" Qin Lie announced.

Xue Li grinned widely.

"Whoosh whoosh whoosh!"

Thick, long chains marked with blood suddenly shot out of the spirit pattern pillars behind Qin Lie like bloody pythons.

Those were the chains that were imprisoning Xue Li's true body!

Eleven chains, dripping in blood moved through the air. It caused the air everywhere to be filled with the terrifying and thick fiendish aura of blood. Armament City seemed to have been swallowed up by a bloody serpent!

The blood fiend aura instantly covered the entire city and caused the sky to change color.

It was as though the clear blue sky had been dyed dark red. Even the strong light of the sun was blocked by the bloody color, unable to pierce through.

A restlessness, bloodthirsty, frenzied, and violent aura spread from the plaza into every corner of Armament City!

“Crack crack crack! Crack crack crack!”

The thick blood-stained chains coiled around Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo, and Su Ziying like enormous serpents and tied them to the spirit pattern pillars.

The moment the chains flew out, Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo, and Su Ziying paled and realized the enormous difference in power between them and Xue Li almost instantaneously.

So they did not try to resist.

“Leave Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo, and Su Ziying, you can kill everyone else,” Lang Xie said.

Once the words came out, the trio that was tied to the spirit pattern pillars started to shout furiously.

Lu Li, Ling Yushi, Ling Xuanxuan, Pang Feng, and the other people who came from the five factions had ashen faces as though they were seeing death just around the corner.

“Lang Xie?” Ying Xingran’s expression changed slightly.

Luo Zhichang and the other two reverends also frowned.

They didn't dare to be too harsh. They were still afraid of retaliation from Eight Extreme Temple and Profound Heaven Alliance.

"They have to pay a price." Lang Xie narrowed his eyes and said, "Sixteen Blood Knives, Seven Great Blood Spears!"

Nine martial practitioners dressed in blood robes came out of the shadows. These nine people were covered in blood, many of them without limbs, and had bloody holes in them that still had blood seeping out of them.

Lang Xie had personally picked the Sixteen Blood Knives and Seven Great Blood Spears and had trained them personally. All of them had experienced blood and battle and were strong people who climbed out of piles of corpses.

Yet there were only six of the Sixteen Blood Knives left and three of the Seven Great Blood Spears remaining.

"In this battle, almost seventy percent of Blood Spear' martial practitioners died!" Lang Xie stared hard at Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo, and Su Ziying with red eyes. "Should they not pay a price?"

Ying Xingran was silent.

The three great reverends sighed and shook their heads. They did not try to stop Lang Xie anymore.

“Kill! Kill these culprits!” Tong Jihua shouted angrily.

“Kill! Kill! Kill!” the remaining six Blood Blades and the three Blood Spears shouted together.

A thick smell of blood came from the bodies of these nine. They approached Lu Li, Ling Yushi, and the others.

“Woosh woosh woosh! Clang-clang-clang!”

The thick chains that were from Xue Li’s actual body swam in the air and slithered on the ground like enormous pythons on the prowl in search of a new target.

When the chains slithered near the five factions’ martial practitioners, those people had white faces and did not dare to move.

Xue Li looked at Qin Lie. “Kid, what do you think?”

Qin Lie’s expression was dark. He looked at Lu Li, Ling Yushi, Ling Xuanxuan, and Pang Feng.

Pang Feng’s face was dark. He stood as straight as a boulder, and when Qin Lie looked over, he chose to meet Qin Lie’s gaze.

He looked at Qin Lie and then looked at Ling Yushi and Ling

Xuanxuan. His gaze was very strange…

Of everyone here, he was the only one who knew Qin Lie's true identity. He knew of the connection between Qin Lie and Ling Yushi, so he was very curious what Qin Lie would do.

Because among the people that Lang Xie wanted to kill, there was Qin Lie's former fiancée, the person Qin Lie loved!

"What will you do?" Pang Feng thought inside.

"Kill or not?" Xue Li looked at Qin Lie and asked impatiently.

The only opinion he cared about was Qin Lie's.

Because Qin Lie had imprisoned half of his soul.

"Little sis, I had not expected something like this to happen. I just wanted to come watch," Ling Yushi suddenly gripped Ling Xuanxuan's hand.

The sisters' hands were trembling. They did not want to die.

But this kind of situation was not something they could prevent. Here, in the eyes of Lang Xie and the Blood Spear martial practitioners, they were just lambs—lambs to the slaughter.

“Sis, do you regret leaving Ling Town? Do you regret... leaving Qin Lie?” Ling Xuanxuan asked in a small voice.

“He was the one who sent us away. He said he would come find me, he promised me, but he didn’t come...” Ling Yushi’s eyes turned red. She started to feel hopeless. “I’m afraid that I cannot wait for him to find me.”

At this moment, she really felt regret. She regretted leaving Ling Town, regretted leaving Qin Lie.

If she could return to three years ago, she would have not listened to Qin Lie. She would have persisted in staying with Qin Lie in Ling Town.

“He has already done enough for our Ling Family,” Ling Xuanxuan said serenely.

“Mn, I owe him this entire life. I had thought to slowly pay him back, but now... I probably won’t have the chance. In the next life, I will repay what I owe him in my next life...” Ling Yushi’s expression was helpless.

“I don’t care about anyone else, but I want these two sisters alive!”

At this time, Qin Lie suddenly pointed at Ling Yushi and Ling Xuanxuan.

He looked at Lang Xie, looked at Ying Xingran, and looked at the three reverends and the seven great elders. He looked at the martial practitioners brimming with killing intent and shouted, “Whoever touches the sisters, no matter who he is, I want him killed on the spot!”

Everyone in the plaza changed expressions when those words came out. Even Shi Jingyun and the two others as well, as Ying Xingran’s group, were shocked.

The ones that wanted to kill Lu Li, Ling Yushi, Ling Xuanxuan was Lang Xie and those who belonged to Blood Spear.

Sect Master Ying Xingran and the three reverends had given their silent consent. This meant that all of Armament Sect had reached an agreement..

Yet, as the major player, Qin Lie suddenly said this. Why did he do this?

Many people were shocked but did not understand what Qin Lie was thinking.

Only Pang Feng understood.

But he did not say anything. Like a hard and stubborn rock, he was silent, but a light flashed through his eyes.

Xue Li didn’t understand either, but he knew he had to listen to

Qin Lie. He nodded and said simply, “Alright, I’ll kill anyone that dares to attack these two girls.”

Everyone looked at Ling Yushi and Ling Xuanxuan. They found that the two sisters suddenly shook, tears brimming in their eyes as they looked hard at Qin Lie.

Everyone only assumed the two were crying in joy and were grateful to Qin Lie. What the others did not know was that the two had heard from Qin Lie’s voice that had lost control in the end due to excitement and guessed his identity—Qin Bing was Qin Lie!

Chapter 209: I Am Qin Lie!

Ling Yushi's vision grew blurry as tears gathered in her eyes.

She just looked at Qin Lie, looking at his no longer unfamiliar face and at his extremely cold and decisive eyes. She watched as Qin Lie protected her once again...

At this point, all of the confusion in her heart completely disappeared.

At long last, she finally understood why she and her sister were able to receive preferential treatment from Armament Sect. She finally understood why this "Qin Bing" of Armament Sect was willing to supply all of the spirit materials without taking a single spirit stone and why he insisted on forging artifacts for her and her sister. She finally understood why he wouldn't stop until he succeeded!

She finally understood why Lu Li had been stopped outside the gate and why Lu Li wasn't allowed to take even a single step into Armament Sect!

She also now understood why she had constantly felt an inexplicable sense of familiarity when she had faced him.

...From the start, it had been the person she loved, her lover that she had dreamed of and searched so long for—it was the person who she had wanted to meet all this time!

So he was actually Qin Lie.

Ling Yushi pursed her lips, her fragrant shoulders trembling. Her beautiful,tear-filled eyes were both tightly fixated on Qin Lie.

Ling Xuanxuan's body incessantly quivered as an intense glow emerged within her clear eyes as she too stared at Qin Lie.

"It's him again, it's him again..." she thought in her mind.

During their time in Ling Town, when their family suffered the persecution of Du Haitian, it was Qin Lie who had come forward during their time of distress and helped their Ling Family escape from calamity.

After her father and family members had been killed, it had been Qin Lie once again as he, unafraid of death, stepped onto the street and, under everyone's gazes, killed Du Haitian. He then even eliminated Du Fei, Du Jiaolan, and Du Heng, taking revenge that not even the two sisters would have been able to carry out.

And today, as they were about to die, Qin Lie, who had mysteriously disappeared so long ago, was actually miraculously standing in front of them!

Qin Lie just stood there in front of everyone, not afraid at all of inciting the displeasure of Armament Sect, as he protected their lives!

As Ling Xuanxuan looked at Qin Lie, her eyes also gradually began to redden as tears started to fall from the corners of her eyes.

“The Ling Family, it owes you so much, so so much...” silently thought Ling Xuanxuan.

At the plaza, the Blood Spear martial practitioners who had originally desired to killed Lu Li, Ling Yushi, and their group immediately paused, their bodies becoming still as they didn’t dare act rashly.

Ying Xingran and the rest were also stunned.

Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo, and Su Ziying were also baffled as they all subconsciously looked towards Qin Lie. They couldn’t understand why he would act so perversely.

The plaza had become completely silent in an instant.

“Crack crack crack! Swish swish swish!”

Only the long, blood speckled chains were left as they drifted around in the sky and on the ground, striking fear into everyone’s minds.

“Qin Bing, why do you want them to live? Could it be that

between you and them...” asked Sect Master Ying Xingran, breaking the moment of silence. His brows were deeply furrowed, and his eyes were full of confusion.

He believed that Qin Lie had set his sights on the two sisters, and that Qin Lie was going to lock them up to vent his anger on them with obscene intentions in mind.

There were several others who had the same thoughts. For example, Wu Tuo, Su Ziying, and Shi Jingyun...

Upon realizing the meaning in Ying Xingran’s words, Shi Jingyun’s face immediately became frosty as he sternly shouted, “Brat, if you dare do anything reckless to Yushi and Xuanxuan, the forces of Seven Fiends Valley won’t stop until you die!”

As he said those words, all of the gazes towards Qin Lie suddenly became weird.

Even the expressions of the Blood Spear practitioners, Tong Jihua’s people, as well as Lang Xie, sunk.

Just so that he could indulge in his selfish desires, so that he could fulfill his evil desires, he was willing to ignore the great losses of the sect and not take revenge for the sect? Furthermore, he was even willing to impede their revenge?

The expressions of many of the Armament Sect members all became ugly as their gazes towards Qin Lie gradually became filled

with traces of coldness.

“Qin Bing, must you insist on protecting their lives? Are you actually going to ignore the hatred and animosity of the sect?” Lang Xie’s face was solemn as he walked out from beside Ying Xingran and moved closer to Qin Lie. “Blood Spear has lost a great deal, and even more outer sect foreign delegates have died. Many outer sect disciples also tragically died within the city. As for you, even though you are the future sect master, you actually don’t care about the losses and only care for your own selfish desires? Are you actually going to clash with the sect?”

Armament Sect had indeed suffered heavy losses. During this war, the outer sect had suffered a great number of casualties amongst its foreign delegates, elders, and disciples. Blood Spear had also lost a great number of practitioners.

Lang Xie wanted the enemy to pay a great price. He wanted to take the fresh blood of all of the young generations and retinues of the five forces to pay homage to the deceased. It was completely understandable.

At this time, even Ying Xingran and the three great reverends, who were originally not willing to truly offend Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple all silently agreed.

Did Qin Lie have to have an opposing opinion?

Lang Xie was unable to accept it!

“If I didn’t care about the sect, Armament Sect wouldn’t have survived till you returned,” silently though Qin Lie for a moment. Then, he coldly said, “If I didn’t care for the sect, I wouldn’t have returned. If I didn’t care for the sect, Sect Master and the three great reverends would have died long ago. If I didn’t care for the sect, Liang Shaoyang and Yuan Tianya wouldn’t have died!”

As he turned to Liang Xie and the sect master, as well as the three great reverends and the practitioners of Blood Spear, he continued, “What I have done is even more than what you have, Lang Xie. The reason that Armament Sect still hasn’t been exterminated is not due to you, Lang Xie, but because of me!”

As he made his remark, profound expressions emerged atop the faces of everyone within the plaza.

Even Ying Xingran and the three great reverends, along with the elders and disciples of the inner and outer sects, were all silenced.

At this time, their gazes, which had looked at Qin Lie so perversely before, all gradually returned back to normal.

Indeed, the person who had allowed Armament Sect to stand until now wasn’t Lang Xie, but Qin Lie!

As long as one wasn’t a fool, one would observe that Xue Li only listened to Qin Lie. If not for Qin Lie’s orders, Xue Li wouldn’t have killed Blood Shadow, Liang Shaoyang, or Yuan Tianya.

If Blood Shadow hadn't died, Ying Xingran and the three great reverends would have already been turned into corpses, and the blood flowing atop the plaza would have long since become a river!

The ones who died should have been the people of Armament Sect, but now, it was different. Instead, the ones who were dying were the practitioners of the five great forces!

This was entirely due to Qin Lie!

"You could have done better." Lang Xie was silent for a very long time, but didn't deny that Qin Lie had done a lot for the sect. Finally, he said, "You are the future sect master. For the sect, you could have done a lot more. If you can put down your selfish desires, our brothers who have died will be able to rest more peacefully down below!"

"To be honest, I am not quite enticed by the position of sect master of Armament Sect." Qin Lie furrowed his brows.

Under the intent stares of everyone in the plaza, he reached out with one of his hands and touched his left cheek. Afterwards, he suddenly pulled, pulling off a beautiful, skin-like mask.

A delicate, handsome face which was unfamiliar to the vast majority of the people atop the plaza unexpectedly appeared in front of everyone's eyes, one which was also reflected into their minds!

“I am Qin Lie.” He looked calmly at everyone within the plaza.

“QIN LIE!”

A shrill cry suddenly pierced through the empty air.

—The cry’s origin was Lu Li.

At this moment, upon seeing Qin Lie after he removed his mask, Lu Li, whose expression had been indifferent even at the time when her death seemed imminent, had actually begun involuntarily screaming.

“Qin Lie!”

“Icestone City’s Qin Lie! The Qin Lie who killed Du Haitian!”

“It’s actually Qin Lie! It’s actually him!”

“Heavens. To think that it was Qin Lie! No wonder, no wonder he wants to protect the Ling Family sisters. So that’s why, so that’s why!”

“……”

At the plaza, it was as if everyone had been placed into a deep frying pan as each and every one of them began to shout out in

shock. They all looked at Qin Lie, utterly flabbergasted.

At this moment, Qin Lie's perverse intentions suddenly became clear. Everyone instantly understood.

Even Lang Xie, upon recovering from shock, was no longer acting aggressively as he nodded and said, "I no longer have any complaints."

"This... this is how it should be." All of the Armament Sect's members inwardly nodded as the doubts within their minds were all completely cleared.

To protect one's own fiancee, to protect one's loved ones, who could say anything about that?

Thus, all of the people of Armament Sect calmly accepted this matter.

Everyone except one person—Tang Siqi.

Tang Siqi stood below one of the spirit pattern pillars. From the moment Qin Lie had made his request to protect Ling Yushi and Ling Xuanxuan, her eyes had become dejected, as if she had become incomparably lonely.

As for now, after Qin Lie revealed his true identity, her beautiful face had begun to show an even deeper sadness and helplessness. In addition, her eyes were filled with bitterness.

“So… so you already had someone you loved all this time. Your reason for coming to Armament Sect really did have nothing to do with me at all. To think, to think that it was always me misunderstanding you. It was me making something out of nothing this entire time…”

Within the group of people, Tang Siqi was still enticingly beautiful, and her figure was still as sexy and attractive as before… she normally would have been the focus of everyone.

And indeed, she was still the most eye-catching girl atop the plaza.

However, at this moment, standing in the midst of all of the Armament Sect practitioners, she seemed sad, lonely, and helpless.

She looked like someone who had been abandoned within the vast emptiness of the wild…

“Sect Master, I don’t feel so good so I’m going to return to the mountain first.” After standing there for a while, she suddenly felt an intolerable sourness within her heart and discovered that she no longer had the courage to stay here for even another moment. Tossing out this one sentence, she hurriedly turned around and left.

“Sigh…” The nearby Feng Rong sighed, shaking her head. She didn’t know what to say.

“Qi-Qin Lie…” Ying Xingran ignored Tang Siqi’s departure, and after thinking for a while, deeply stared in Qin Lie’s direction, saying, “Half a year prior, I said that Armament Sect didn’t care about your identity or origin, and that as long as you were willing to remain at Armament Sect, the sect would do everything it could to develop you! Right now, let me ask you again, are you willing to stay at Armament Sect? Are you willing… to bear the appropriate responsibilities as a disciple of Armament Sect?”

“If I didn’t, then I would not still be here during the sect’s crisis.” Qin Lie calmly said, “If I didn’t, I would be outside somewhere like Yi Yuan, Pang Feng, and Ouyang Jingjing.”

Ying Xingran’s body convulsed as he energetically nodded and said, “Good!”

“With your words, no matter what your past, you are still a member of our Armament Sect!” shouted Luo Zhichang.

As Luo Zichang’s remark fell, Qin Lie suddenly chuckled—this was the first time he had laughed while in Armament City!

He no longer had to deliberately use Frost Arts to protect his “Qin Bing” persona and thus was able to be himself again. Since he no longer had to hide, he was finally able to return to his normal self.

“We will not touch Ling Yushi and Ling Xuanxuan. As for the rest, can we kill them now?” Lang Xie once again looked towards Qin Lie.

This time, Qin Lie grinned and nodded his head.

Thus, Lang Xie waved his hand. “KILL!”

“Qin Lie, I beg you to find a means to let Senior Sister Lu live,” suddenly pleaded Ling Yushi.

“Shut up! I don’t want him to spare my life!” coldy shouted Lu Li.

“Qin Lie, during my time at Dark Fiend Valley, Senior Sister Lu constantly looked after us. She treated us very well, please!” also begged Ling Xuanxuan.

Qin Lie furrowed his brows.

At this time, Lang Xie, seemingly understanding the situation or perhaps understanding Qin Lie’s predicament, took initiative and said, “Lu Li can live.”

Afterwards, the nine experts of Blood Spear, along with even more Blood Spear practitioners, Tong Jihua, and the outer sect elders, as well as Lang Xie himself, all made their moves as they hunted down and killed all of the people of the five now leaderless forces.

Chapter 210: Things Are Different Now

Liang Yangzu and Yuan Tianya were eliminated. Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo, and Su Ziying were chained to the spirit pattern pillars. All the leaders of the five factions that entered Armament City had terrible outcomes.

Without the leaders present, Xue Li did not need to act. Just Blood Spear and Lang Xie, as well the blood man formed from Liang Yangzu's lifeblood essence was enough to dominate them all.

On the spirit pattern pillar plaza at the base of Flame Volcano, threads of fire criss-crossed as wails rose into the sky and living bodies became corpses...

"We need Pang Feng alive!" Ying Xingran shouted.

Lang Xie nodded in affirmation.

Xue Li sat down under a spirit pattern pillar. His original body did not manipulate the chains nor pursue the people from the five forces in the plaza.

He looked at Qin Lie and said, "The last seal!"

Qin Lie thought for a while and then waved his hand at Ling Yushi and Ling Xuanxuan to motion for them to come over.

“Senior Sister Lu…” Ling Xuanxuan said lightly.

Lu Li stood in the middle of the crowd. She watched as the martial practitioners from Seven Fiends Valley die as they were massacred by Blood Knives, with weakness spreading to every inch of her body.

Even though those people were not from Dark Fiend Valley, Lu Li still couldn’t accept watching them die before her!

So, Lu Li raised her sword.

“Rest!” Tong Jihua shouted coldly. He threw out a blue circle of light with his left hand, covering Lu Li with layers of light.

With this, Lu Li became unable to move at all.

“You can take her away.” Tong Jihua glanced at Ling Xuanxuan.

Ling Xuanxuan’s expression shook. She and Ling Yushi hurriedly supported Lu Li and dragged her out of the battlefield.

Under the strange gazes of everyone around, the sisters carried the restrained Lu Li to Qin Lie’s side.

The coldness on Qin Lie’s face disappeared. His expression became extremely complex, looking at the two sisters and saying, “It’s been almost four years…”

“Qin Lie…” Ling Yushi could only somewhat reign in her emotions. Her tears flowed, and she wanted to throw herself into Qin Lie’s arms, but she could only suppress the urge with everyone else’s watchful eyes.

“It is really good to see you again,” Ling Xuanxuan murmured.

“It’s best if you kill me!” Lu Li’s body was restrained, but her tone was still cold, just like her eyes.

Qin Lie’s brow creased. He looked at Lu Li, and after a moment of silence, he said, “Four years ago at Ling Town, you urged me to forget Yushi. You said from that day forward, she and I would be people of two different worlds. That year, I wasn’t even qualified to meet your master, and she never even stepped out of the carriage nor noticed such a small character like me.”

Lu Li snorted coldly.

“That year, I said that you and your master do not qualify to decide our matter. I said you do not have the qualifications,” Qin Lie’s eyes narrowed as he said lightly.

“What you rely on is the power of others!” Lu Li argued.

“Power of others?” Qin Lie faintly smiled and calmly said, “You dare to step into Armament Sect today, was what you relied on not the power of a valley of Seven Fiends Valley? Would you dare to

act against Armament Sect without the power of others, dare to come here without the instruction of Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple?”

Lu Li was unable to come up with an answer.

“Your master will come and beg before me. I want her to personally come to Armament Sect. I want her to come beg, beg for me to let you leave Armament Sect, beg me to spare Shi Jingyun’s life.” Qin Lie grinned, “Do you think she will come? Do you think… she will beg me for that?”

Lu Li’s expression became extremely ugly.

Before Ling Yushi and Ling Xuanxuan spoke, Qin Lie suddenly closed his eyes and said, “I still need to do something.”

He gathered his mind consciousness and once again entered the world inside the spirit pattern pillars to break the last seal.

On the plaza, Lang Xie led Blood Spear and the martial practitioners of the outer sect to kill the five forces’ retinue.

There wasn’t a large number of people that really stepped into the doors of Armament Sect. The only ones that did were just Liang Yangzu, Yuan Tianya, Su Ziying, Wu Tuo, and Shi Jingyun’s closest subordinates or juniors from the sect that had special identities.

These people, after having lost their five leaders, were unable to stand up to Lang Xie and Blood Spear.

They continued to fall, and wails rang out of the plaza while corpses piled up, one after another...

Outside of Armament Sect, on top of a tower, Yi Yuan jumped up high and gazed at the base of Flame Volcano.

He could see blurry figures, could the streaks of blood, and guess the situation within the plaza.

Especially half an hour ago when a bloody and fiendish aura suddenly exploded. Yi Yuan's heart shuddered when he felt it.

He didn't know the details of the situation, but he knew something had dramatically changed inside Armament Sect. He knew that the five forces had been defeated.

Therefore, Yi Yuan became silent, silent for a long time, so silent that Lian Rou felt uncomfortable.

Before, Yi Yuan had always been full of words when he faced her. The words would just spew out, greatly irritating her. Now however, him being silent to such an extent was just so awkward for her.

—He had tied her up with a silver rope, so she didn't know what was happening in Armament Sect nearby.

A long while later, Yi Yuan suddenly untied her, and under her puzzled gaze, he said, “You can return to the sect now.”

Lian Rou was shocked. “Why are you suddenly letting me go?”

Yi Yuan bitterly smiled and explained, “Because the situation has changed. Starting now, you should be safe, and I will possibly be hunted down by Armament Sect…”

As soon as those words were spoken, he jumped off the tower and headed off. As he moved, he said, “Forgive my nonsense. Everything I did was for you to live. Now though, I am leaving, I need to return to Purple Mist Sea. Please remember me, even if it it’s only because you hate me… please remember.”

Gradually, Yi Yuan’s figure faded into the distance.

The moment he recognized the situation had changed, he adjusted himself and decisively made the wisest choice.

He needed to quickly leave Armament City before Blood Spear retook the city. He need to prioritize his own life.

Left on the tower by herself, Lian Rou was in a daze as she stared at Yi Yuan’s figuring growing further and further away. She felt conflicted. Considering what Yi Yuan had done, she wanted to hate him, but for some reason, she just couldn’t bring herself to.

“Armament Sect’s danger has been resolved? Is it as Yi Yuan says?” A long time later, Lian Rou silently descended the tower and walked to Armament Sect.

Dark Asura Hall, Seven Fiends Valley, Dark Shadow Tower, Cloud Sky Mountain, and Purple Mist Sea had all sent their experts to deal with Armament Sect together. How did the sect overturn such a situation?

Lian Rou didn’t dare believe it.

On the plaza.

Corpses could be seen lying in every direction. Those people were from the five forces and were the subordinates and closest confidants of Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo, and Su Ziying.

And those three were chained to the spirit pattern pillars. They could only watch as their subordinates were killed, sprouting a deep fire within their eyes.

“There are still many people from the five forces in Armament City. Those people need to be killed as well!” Feng Rong gritted out.

Lang Xie nodded and said with a dark expression, “I will take care of it now.”

He turned to Qin Lie. At this time, Qin Lie’s eyes were closed as

he was helping Xue Li break through the final seal.

Lang Xie froze and then looked at Xue Li. He asked with a creased brow, “Is there going to be problem here?”

Xue Li snickered. He snuck a look at Qin Lie, and said, “He said there is no problem, so there is no problem.”

So Lang Xie said nothing more; instead, he held his blood spear as he started to walk to the gates of the sect.

The remaining Blood Spear martial practitioners silently followed behind him without a word, brimming with murderous intent.

A short while later, Lang Xie came to the gate of the sect and saw Lian Rou.

Lian Rou was slightly shocked and hurriedly bowed, exclaiming, “Lord Lang Xie.”

Lang Xie nodded indifferently. “How come you are here?”

“I…” Lian Rou gave a brief narration of her encounter and then asked, “The sect, is the sect alright?”

“It is fine, you can go in.” Lang Xie walked past Lian Rou with a creased brow and then ordered, “Put everything into our

counterattack! If you find that boy called Yi Yuan, do not kill him immediately, I want him alive!”

To save Lian Rou, Yi Yuan betrayed Armament Sect, took him, Feng Rong, and Qin Lie into a place of certain death, and almost killed them all.

He would not spare Yi Yuan.

When Lian Rou heard the anger within Lang Xie’s voice, her heart sank. She strangely started to worry for Yi Yuan and silently prayed that he could quickly leave Armament City and avoid being captured by Blood Spear.

At this time, a vicious and terrifying omnipresent aura suddenly could be felt from within Armament Sect.

The fiendish, bloody aura instantly spread to cover even the outermost corners of Armament Sect. Everyone who could sense it found it difficult to breathe and found their souls had started to tremble.

A crazy and strange laughter came from the bottom of Flame Volcano. Along with the thick, bloody and fiendish aura, this laughter echoed all throughout Armament City.

Chapter 211: Seal Released

A figure as thin as an old corpse suddenly appeared out of nowhere on the plaza. This was Xue Li's true body.

Messy grayish-white hair that reached his waist, a body so skinny it was practically skin and bones, pale white skin, and eyes as scarlet as blood. The moment this old demon appeared, a bloody aura almost instantly covered all of Armament City.

At this instant, every Armament Sect martial practitioner shuddered on the inside. They all detected a powerful evil aura circulating above Armament City, causing them to feel terror in their very souls.

The twelve bloody chains abruptly erupted in a frenzy and twisted rapidly on the plaza when his true body had escaped.

The roots of every single chain were connected to Xue Li's skinny body. In addition, to being extremely thick and long, they were all also as thick as his waist, but the part that connected them to his body appeared thin and narrow, almost like a snake's tail entangled around his bones.

As he laughed in an evil fashion, all the chains other than the one shackling Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo, and Su Zhiyin actually disappeared into Xue Li's body.

In the blink of an eye, the chains disappeared. However, Xue Li's shriveled body still did not grow any bigger.

He looked the body of Blood Shadow which he had dominated and the blood man formed from Liang Yangzu's lifeblood essence. Suddenly, he made a grabbing motion towards the distance.

Blood Shadow and the blood man instantly fell beneath his feet like two bolts of bloody light. They knelt before him in unison.

"Heheh," Xue Li laughed strangely before pressing one hand each on Blood Shadow's corpse and the blood man's head.

A terrific wave of energy that caused everyone to feel irritated, as if their blood was boiling, had spread out from Xue Li's palms.

Under the crowd's gaze, Blood Shadow's corpse and that blood man began shriveling up at a visible rate. The wisps of crimson blood energy swiftly seeped into Xue Li's palms.

Before long, the blood man was the first to evaporate into blood vapor. The filth mingled within the blood vapor, and the little lifeblood essence remaining was all refined by Xue Li.

As if it had decomposed over thousands of years, Blood Shadow's corpse turned into a grayish-brown skeleton and dissolved into bone dust the moment the mountain winds blew through the area.

On the other hand, after absorbing Blood Shadow's corpse and the lifeblood essence of the blood man, Xue Li's waist-long, grayish-white hair gradually turned grayish-brown and gained a

hint of luster.

A hint of redness was also added to his pale white skin while the bloody light in his eyes grew more frightening by the second.

It was very obvious that, with the destruction of Blood Shadow and the blood man, he had gained quite a bit and replenished his own flesh, blood, and energy.

All of this was seen by everyone, and from it, deep fear spawned within them...

The faces' of Ying Xingran, the three great reverends, and the outer sect elders turned incredibly unnatural, subconsciously pulling away from Xue Li in response.

Even the three Netherpassage experts shackled by the spirit pattern pillars who had experienced many large scale events, Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo, and Su Zhiyin, also turned slightly pale as their eyes shone with deep seated fear.

At the same time, Xue Li turned around and looked at the trio. He licked the corner of his mouth like a feral beast that had just finished its meal. Suddenly, he said longingly, "The taste of your lifeblood essence should be pretty good as well..."

"Old demon! Just kill us if you want to! If you dare suck our lifeblood essence, then even as ghosts we would hound you!" Su Zhiyin lost her usual elegance and nearly screamed at the top of

her lungs. Fear and disgust was written all over her face.

Even the cool Lu Li had turned quiet at this moment. She felt nervous from the bottom of her heart.

There wasn't anyone who wasn't afraid of a demonic level character like Xue Li. No one wanted to have their lifeblood essence sucked dry by Xue Li; no one wanted to experience the same downfall that had befallen Blood Shadow and Liang Yangzu.

The only one who wasn't afraid was Qin Lie.

Qin Lie opened his eyes and said with slight tiredness, "Senior Xue Li, maybe you should stay at the back of the mountain?"

Xue Li chuckled and looked in the direction of Blood Spear's area at the back of the mountain. He nodded and said, "Hmm, I've always enjoyed places with blood pools. Heh, I did not expect that the incomplete blood spirit art I threw out carelessly would actually create a Blood Fiend Sect in this place!"

Once finished, Xue Li turned into a wisp of bloody light and instantly vanished from the plaza.

The moment he left, everyone let out a sigh of relief. All the numerous, pale faces, slowly regained their color.

"Qin Bing, no wait, Qin Lie..." Luo Zhichang recovered and asked with a serious expression, "Where... did this man come from?

What is your relationship with him?”

The sect master Ying Xingran and the remaining two reverends looked over as well.

“He was sealed inside the twelfth spirit pattern pillar...” Under Ying Xingran’s signal, Qin Lie retreated to a place at the back, where the outsiders would not be able to hear them, before explaining everything.

“The time this, this old demon spent inside the spirit pattern pillar is probably even longer than the existence of Armament Sect.” Once he finished explaining, Chief Reverend Luo Zhichang’s expression turned incredibly heavy, “He is most definitely not someone from our Scarlet Tide Continent.”

Luo Zhichang’s expression was bitter.

“An old, blood-sucking demon is now going to stay in our Armament Sect just like that. Aren’t we just giving Eight Extreme Temple and Profound Heaven Alliance more weaknesses to take advantage of?” Jiang Hao asked with great worry.

“Even without him, would Eight Extreme Temple and Profound Heaven Alliance have given us mercy?” Qin Lie frowned. “Without him, Armament Sect would have fallen by now. All of you would’ve been eliminated by Blood Shadow.”

The crowd was silent.

Qin Lie knew that Ying Xingran and the three great reverends would find it very difficult to accept such an old, bloody demon like Xue Li. They couldn't even accept You Hongzhi.

"We'll discuss whatever's in the future later. But right now, we need to depend on his power. Otherwise, we wouldn't even be able to deal with the five great forces, much less Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple. Am I wrong?" Qin Lie said seriously.

Ying Xingran and the three great reverends weren't stupid. They knew that even if they could not accept Xue Li from a moral standpoint, intellectually, they knew they must not act simply in accordance to their own preferences. Therefore, they all nodded and acknowledged—for now at least—Xue Li's existence.

"Sigh. Let's take one step at a time," Luo Zhichang sighed.

Outside Armament City, at Tiger Jump Hill, there were many camps scattered with unicorns and Profound Nether Beasts beside them.

This group was Dark Asura Hall's reserve force.

On two of the Profound Nether Beasts, Xie Jingxuan dressed in white clothes while Liang Zhong sat quietly and looked at Armament City from afar.

“I wonder what’s going on in the city,” Xie Jingxuan spoke to herself.

“I sent the Ghost Birds to scout ahead. There should be news before long.” Liang Zhong frowned and said, “If there are no surprises, then Armament Sect should have fallen by now. Sect Master Ying Xingran, the three great reverends, and the seven great inner sect elders should all be imprisoned at this moment...”

Xie Jingxuan nodded lightly.

A brawny man who was luxuriously dressed walked over from the side. Tu Mo, Tu Ze, Zhuo Qian, and the others followed behind him.

This was the second hall master of Dark Asura Hall, Cao Xuanrui. His relationship with Yuan Tianya had always been hostile in Dark Asura Hall, and he was also a strong contender for the position of Grand Hall Master.

Yuan Tianya was in the limelight previously in the battle against the spirit beasts at the Arctic Mountain Range. He had gathered an extremely powerful force and taken Icestone City for himself. This caused Profound Heaven Alliance to be rather satisfied.

This was also why Yuan Tianya was allowed to take charge in this operation against Armament Sect.

The ones who broke into Armament Sect first would be able to

acquire all sorts of precious spirit materials and high rank spirit artifacts from Armament Sect. Who wouldn't covet this opportunity?

"Miss Xie, I heard that the higher ups had also arranged for some men to come over. I heard that those men are from the Xie Family..." Cao Xuanrui walked forward, looked at Xie Jingxuan, and asked somewhat cautiously, "May I know where that lord is right now?"

"I am not too sure myself." Xie Jingxuan's tone was a little indifferent.

Eight Extreme Temple had sent Tu Xi, and Profound Heaven Alliance had sent a Fulfillment Realm martial practitioner as well. According to the information Cao Xuanrui had acquired, it seemed that this person came from the Xie Family.

Profound Heaven Alliance was composed by three great families. All three great families had Fulfillment Realm experts, and they took turns, competing to be the Alliance Chief.

The Xie Family was one such family in Profound Heaven Alliance.

This was also why either Yuan Tianya or the current Cao Xuanrui would act so cautiously in front of Xie Jingxuan.

Because Xie Jingxuan had been assigned to Dark Asura Hall to

sharpen herself by the Xie Family. They wished that Xie Jingxuan would slowly rise through the ranks and accumulate power and the experience in managing subordinates in combat.

“Lady Xie, has... has any news about Qin Lie come in?” Zhuo Qian, who had followed along with Cao Xuanrui hesitated for a moment before asking in a sudden and forced manner.

A commander beside Cao Xuanrui couldn’t help but shoot a glare at Zhuo Qian. He looked somewhat similar to Zhuo Qian, and he seemed to be reprimanding her for such a pointless interruption.

He was Zhuo Qian’s father, Zhuo Duo, and just like Tu Shixiong, he was a subordinate commander under Cao Xuanrui.

“No.” Xie Jingxuan looked at Zhuo Qian and paused for a moment before starting off again, “Ever since he walked out of Icestone City, he dropped off the face of Spirit Realm. Not even Yuan Tianya could find him despite spending a great deal of time searching for him. I have also been searching around for his whereabouts, but I failed to even find a lead.”

Both Tu Ze and Zhuo Qian’s eyes dimmed when they heard Xie Jingxuan’s words.

“The Ghost Birds are back.” Liang Zhong suddenly looked up into the sky.

A multitude of tiny, black dots gradually appeared and become

clearer, showing the appearance of a man-faced bird.

The Ghost Bird fell on Liang Zhong's shoulders and cried an unpleasant sound, seemingly telling Liang Zhong something.

Liang Zhong's originally calm expression abruptly turned serious, and it was turning uglier with every passing moment.

Noticing the great change in his expression, the crowd looked deeply at him and waited for him to speak.

"A massive change has happened in Armament City. Right now, Blood Spear's martial practitioners are hunting down all the martial practitioners of the five forces inside the city!" Liang Zhong exclaimed in a low tone.

The crowd was shocked.

"How is this possible?" Zhuo Qian cried out.

"Just this morning, it was the martial practitioners of the five great forces combining their strength to clean up Armament City, and now, the sky isn't even dark yet. What happened for it to turn out this way?" Second Hall Master Cao Xuanrui's expression also changed greatly.

Liang Zhong ignored Zhuo Qian and Cao Xuanrui and continued to listen.

Before long, Liang Zhong's expression grew uglier and uglier. He suddenly sucked in a deep breath and said with shivering lips, "Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo, and Su Zhiyin have been shackled to the spirit pattern pillar at Armament Sect's plaza. Liang Yangzu and Yuan Tianya are not among them. Corpses littered the stone ground of the plaza, and they are all men from our five forces!"

The moment the words came out, everyone's faces turned ashen.

Chapter 212: The Knot In Qin Lie's Heart

"A huge upheaval has happened in Armament Sect!"

"Something terrible has happened!"

"Our people are getting slaughtered!"

Outside the city, in the many villages, tall hills, and forests.

Right now, there were cries coming from every one of these regions.

The five great forces, Dark Asura Hall, Seven Fiends Valley, Dark Shadow Tower, Purple Mist Sea, and Cloud Sky Mountain, had sent their back up martial practitioners, and these people were scattered outside Armament City ready to support those inside.

Right now, through their own respective communication channels, they had learned that the situation inside Armament City had gone beyond their expectations.

There were many people who gradually lost their patience, grouped up and quietly headed for Armament City. They wanted to figure out exactly what happened, what managed to deal the five great forces a defeat.

Xie Jingxuan, Liang Zhong, and Second Hall Master Cao Xuanrui

also rushed towards Armament City, hoping to stabilize the situation inside the city as much as they could.

"Miss Xie, if that person of the Xie Family is still around, then please contact them... as soon as possible." Cao Xuanrui's expression was solemn as he sat on top of the Profound Nether Beast. "Lang Xie is inside the city, so this means that Liang Yangzu and the others have failed. Lord Tu Xi... and Di Shijiu has also gone missing. An accident must have occurred."

Liang Zhong's expression was dark. "Tu Xu is the Fulfillment Realm expert sent by Eight Extreme Temple. Who in Armament Sect could have caused him to go missing?"

"Lang Xie is very powerful! There was a time when I tried to probe his true strength, and as a result, before I could even start, I had nearly lost myself to his fiendish blood aura," Cao Xuanrui said unnaturally.

Xie Jingxuan and Liang Zhong stared at him in surprise.

Tu Mo, Tu Ze, and Zhuo Qian also wore looks of surprise. "Milord, you have fought against Lang Xie before?" Zhuo Qian exclaimed lightly.

Cao Xuanrui smiled bitterly, "It wasn't really a fight, it was just me testing out his strength a bit. I am sure that Lang Xie's true power exceeds that of the grand hall master and Cloud Sky Mountain's mountain master. There should not be anyone in the nearby forces who can match up to Lang Xie. Perhaps even Lord Tu Xi... may not necessarily be able to beat him for sure."

Xie Jingxuan's eyes shone with a strange light as she pondered for a bit. Suddenly, she pulled down the diamond-shaped accessory around her neck and pressed a white finger against it.

A sweet and clear ringing sound came out from inside the diamond-shaped accessory. Xie Jingxuan used her mind to listen to it.

"Jingxuan, come to the forest east of Armament City." A deep and low male voice rang out very clearly from the diamond-shaped accessory.

"We go to the city's eastern forest!" Xie Jingxuan withdrew the diamond-shaped accessory again. Then, she slapped the Profound Nether Beast beneath her, and it swiftly rushed out.

"Milord?" Zhuo Qian turned to Cao Xuanrui.

"Follow her!" Cao Xuanrui softly exclaimed.

Under the evening light, the group from Dark Asura Hall, riding on Profound Nether Beasts and unicorns, swiftly ran towards the forest to the east of the city.

An hour later.

Xie Jingxuan and Liang Zhong were the first to arrive at the

forest. “Second Uncle? Where are you?”

“Jingxuan, come over here,” a person greeted from inside the forest.

Before long, Xie Jingxuan and Liang Zhong had arrived at where the source of the voice was. There, they saw a handsome-looking, middle-aged man wearing a long blue robe.

It was obvious that there were traces of intense battle at this place. Numerous ancient trees had been broken, and the leaves were like grass covering the ground. In addition, a great number of the leaves were tainted with blood.

A headless body lay right beneath the middle-aged man’s feet. He looked at the body beneath him and said, “This is Tu Xi.”

“Tu Xi? Eight Extreme Temple’s Tu Xi?” Liang Zhong exclaimed.

Xie Jingxuan’s expression turned slightly, “Second Uncle, who killed Tu Xi?”

“Who else? In Armament Sect, who else but Lang Xie could kill Tu Xi?” Xie Zhizhang countered.

“Lang Xie? Lang Xie should only be at the late stage of the Netherpassage Realm, he…” Liang Zhong was stunned.

“It may not be easy to take down someone beyond one’s realm, but it is not impossible. Lang Xie may only be at the late stage of the Netherpassage Realm, but the spirit art he cultivates is incredibly terrifying. Moreover, the spirit artifacts he owns are also of high grade, not to mention that Lang Xie values the tempering of one’s corporeal body greatly. The toughness of his body far exceeds that of an ordinary Netherpassage Realm martial practitioner’s.” Xie Zhizhang’s tone was calm and his expression serious, “He has all the requirements needed to challenge someone beyond his realm.”

Xie Jingxuan and Liang Zhong turned quiet.

“Armament Sect is truly not one to be underestimated. If they had a few more decades, it may be even harder for Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple to deal with them than it is now.

Once finished, he began walking slowly towards Armament City, as if he was going on his way normally. But in Xie Jingxuan and Liang Zhong’s eyes, his figure quickly turned blurry and unclear.

After Xie Zhizhang left, Cao Xuanrui and the experts from Dark Asura Hall finally caught up.

“Whose corpse is this?” Cao Xuanrui exclaimed.

“Tu Xi’s.” Xie Jingxuan threw down the name before driving the Profound Nether Beast to chase after Xie Zhizhang’s footsteps.

“Tu Xi! It’s actually Tu Xi!” Cao Xuanrui’s expression grew visibly agitated as he immediately ordered, “Notify all the forces and say that Tu Xi from Eight Extreme Temple has been beheaded! Have them all be careful!”

“As you wish!”

……

Armament Sect.

Halfway up Flame Volcano, Qin Lie and Ling Yushi stood on a cliff, facing the sunset.

The remnants of light filled the sky. Fire-burned clouds littered the sky and painted Flame Volcano in a layer of vivid red.

“Back at Herb Mountain, you and I would watch the sunset as well. Four years has passed in the blink of an eye. I never thought that we would be able to see the sunset together at Flame Volcano,” Qin Lie exclaimed.

When he recalled his life four years ago at Ling Town, all sorts of emotions bubbled up in Qin Lie’s heart. Now that he looked back, he realized that those days at Ling Town were so calm and cherishable…

He had come to Ling Town when he was ten years old, staying there with his grandfather and living together with him at Herb

Mountain.

During the first five years, he had lived in his own world. In the state of Thoughtless Tranquility, he worked hard in cultivating Heavenly Thunder Eradication and listened to his grandfather's rambling everyday, talking about all sorts of interesting things regarding artifact forging.

After that, his grandfather had disappeared, and he too had left the state of Thoughtless Tranquility.

Ling Yushi then came into his life and nagged him everyday inside the small house, speaking about some of the trivial matters she had encountered.

If Jiu Liuyu and Lu Li had not appeared, he would've been able to enjoy a very long time of peace. He would have been able to spend those amazing few years and months together with Ling Yushi.

"You said that you would come to Seven Fiends Valley to look for me. I waited for you for four years..." Ling Yushi said gently.

The red light shining on her added a hint of charm to her beautiful face, causing her to look incredibly attractive as of that moment.

"Meet you at Seven Fiends Valley as an insignificant martial practitioner at Nebula Pavilion?" Qin Lie looked down and said with a slightly bitter tone, "If I had really done that, then I may

not even have the qualification to step in Dark Fiend Valley. Even if I did struggle my way in, Lu Li would laugh at me, your fellow senior and junior sisters would scorn me, and that Li Zhongzheng guy... would sarcastically insult me."

"I should not have left Ling Town." Ling Yushi said quietly, "If I didn't leave Ling Town, then I would have been able to spend these four years with you. I would be together with my... father. Perhaps then father would not have died." Mist appeared in her bright eyes as the corner of her eyes slowly grew wet.

The death of Ling Chengye and the people of the Ling Family from Ling Town had always been on her mind. For the past few years, she had always been regretting the fact that she had left Ling Town for Dark Fiend Valley."

"It's not your fault. Whether or not you left, Du Haitian would still have committed that atrocity. Your father, Ling Xing, and Ling Xiao would not have been able to escape that danger. You don't have to blame yourself," Qin Lie consoled softly.

Not far away, Ling Xuanxuan was sitting on a rock. She seemed to have heard her sister's words and had grown teary as well, now softly crying.

"What are you going to do? The attack on Armament Sect was a joint decision made by Eight Extreme Temple and Profound Heaven Alliance. The five great forces are just the vanguard. They will still come and send an endless amount of experts. Armament Sect will not be able to deal with this."

Ling Yushi was very worried. “Qin Lie, why don’t we leave together? Let’s abandon Armament Sect and abandon Seven Fiends Valley. Why don’t we find a place where no one can find us and live there? We can cultivate on our own...”

Eight Extreme Temple and Profound Heaven Alliance were both Copper rank forces and the overlords of Scarlet Tide Continent. How could Armament Sect possible resist them when they single-mindedly sought for the destruction of Armament Sect?

“I’ll find my way one step at a time. Don’t worry, I have my own life-saving arts. Even if Armament Sect is destroyed, I would still be in danger.”

Qin Lie did not wish to run away before he was really pushed into a corner. He knew very well that there would always be terrible conflict on the land beneath him. There would never be true peace.

It was definitely not feasible to just run away time and time again. Furthermore, it would be bad for his growth and the ascension and tempering of his martial way.

Only through heavy pressure and responsibility could his potential be unleashed. It was only then he could truly let himself go and unleash his true self.

Armament Sect was but the first step in his life. He could not retreat from this step!

Nor did he want to!

“Qin Lie… are you serious when you say that you want my master to personally come to Armament City to beg for Senior Sister Lu and Uncle Shi’s release?” Ling Yushi bit her lip and asked.

“I am serious.” Qin Lie nodded.

“Master… master treats me and Xuanxuan very well, I…” Ling Yushi hesitated.

“Four years ago, she dissolved the engagement between you and me with but a word. Four years ago, she did not even look me in the eye and just had Lu Li give me a single Natal Ordering Pill!” Qin Lie scowled, “One of my motivations for working this hard is to have her see and grovel before me! The knot in my heart can only be untied by her. Otherwise, I would not be able to forgive myself!”

……

At the entrance to Armament City’s Wind District.

A row of martial practitioners wearing a valley logo on their chests stood at the city entrance. At this moment, the city entrance had been closed once more.

Tong Jihua stood above the walls and looked down on those

below. He was looking at the people from Seven Fiends Valley.

Gazing at a luxurious carriage, he frowned. “Are you the valley master of Dark Fiend Valley, Jiu Liuyu?”

“It is I,” the voice of an old woman came from inside the carriage. “How are my three disciples?”

“They are alive.” Tong Jihua said coldly, “Armament City has been closed once more. Before I receive any new orders, no one is allowed entry.”

“No one is allowed entry?” Jiu Liuyu laughed coldly, “The reason we have traveled a thousand miles to Armament City wasn’t to listen to your instructions outside the city. We have come to break the city and destroy Armament Sect!”

The moment she said this, the numerous martial practitioners from Seven Fiends Valley immediately took out their spirit artifacts and prepared to break into the city.

Almost at the same time, uninvited guests had appeared at every single one of Armament City’s main entrances. At each of them, a bloody war was about to break out.

Chapter 213: Taking Over Armament Sect!

The sky gradually darkened.

“Qin Lie, Sect Master has requested that these three spatial rings be passed on to you,” Cheng Ping spoke respectfully halfway up Flame Volcano at Qin Lie’s personal cavern.

Inside the cave, Qin Lie was still discussing about artifact forging with Ling Yushi and Ling Xuanxuan.

Qin Lie stood up and opened the stone door sealing the cave. Watching Cheng Ping’s pale face, he said, “Elder Cheng, your injuries haven’t stabilized yet. It’s not good for you to run around like this.”

Cheng Ping’s stomach was pierced by Blood Shadow, and he suffered a grievous injury. Right now, the wound had only received simple treatment. If the wound reopened again because he was walking around, then it would be even more troublesome to treat.

“Thank you for your concern, I’m okay. I can handle it.” Cheng Ping respectfully passed the three spatial rings to Qin Lie.

Inside the cave, strange light circled in Ling Yushi and Ling Xuanxuan’s eyes. They looked intently at the three spatial rings.

They knew what these three spatial rings represented...

Qin Lie did not extend his hand to accept them. Instead, he frowned and said solemnly, “Sect Master is still here, and the sect has not been destroyed yet. I will not receive these three spatial rings just yet.”

These three spatial rings definitely contained the wealth Armament Sect had accumulated over more than nine hundred years: the accumulation of spirit diagrams, spirit materials, spirit artifacts, spirit medicine, and all kinds of secrets!

Only the future sect master had the qualification to receive these three spatial rings. Those who had received them would definitely take over and become the next sect master of Armament Sect.

This was a responsibility. Once he received it, he had to bear the responsibility of revitalizing Armament Sect, and aim to grow it and have it make a comeback.

—He was not ready yet.

“This is the joint decision between the sect master and three great reverends after their discussion. They are the ones who asked me to pass this ring to you.” Cheng Ping’s expression was solemn. “Sect Master’s physical condition is extremely weak. He may not last more than a few days. Moreover, the sect may not be able to survive the attack of both Eight Extreme Temple and Profound Heaven Alliance. Therefore, Sect Master and three great reverends believe that it is best if you can carry the three spatial rings and leave.”

Qin Lie's expression was extremely ugly as he asked, "Do they lack this much confidence?"

Cheng Ping sighed, "Right now, the entrances to the four city districts of Earth, Fire, Water, and Wind are being sieged. Blood Spear has lost seventy percent of their men, and the outer sect elders, disciples, and foreign delegates have suffered similar devastating losses. It's really just too difficult to hold out against the five great forces by ourselves... there is almost no hope of victory."

"We still have Senior Xue Li," Qin Lie yelled.

"The experts of Eight Extreme Temple and Profound Heaven Alliance haven't truly arrived yet..." Cheng Ping's expression was bitter.

After keeping silent for a moment, Qin Lie said, "Return these three spatial rings to the sect master. Tell them that as long as the sect stands, I will never receive them!"

He turned back to look at Ling Yushi and Ling Xuanxuan before saying softly, "I'll be leaving for a moment. You stay here. Try not to roam around as much as possible."

"Qin Lie, promise me you won't kill Senior Sister Lu!" Ling Yushi begged.

“Alright, I will let her live.” Qin Lie nodded and left the cave. Under Cheng Ping’s gaze, he went alone to Blood Spear’s training area behind the mountain.

Cheng Ping was stunned for a moment. Later on he returned to the peak of Flame Volcano and explained the situation to Ying Xingran and the three great reverends.

He also ended up returning the three spatial rings to Ying Xingran.

Ying Xingran had lost all color on his face. He appeared incredibly cold and covered himself in thick animal fur, but he still couldn’t stop himself from shivering.

“Xingran…” Chief Reverend Luo Zhichang’s voice shuddered slightly.

“I can’t hold out much longer.” Ying Xingran’s voice was weak and lifeless, “Perhaps, if I die right away, Qin Lie would not have a reason to reject this. If my death can start a new chapter for Armament Sect… I wish to depart right away.”

“Why isn’t he willing to receive these three spatial rings?” Jiang Hao could not understand. “It’s not like we’re asking him to live and die together with Armament Sect. He just needs to receive these three spatial rings and leave Armament Sect. As long as he comes back and remakes Armament Sect, everything will be fine. Why is he unwilling?”

“Even if he took the items and didn’t revitalize Armament Sect, what can we do to him? When that happens, we may already all be dead. No one will be restricting him. Why doesn’t he want to?” Fang Qi was also perplexed.

“This Qin Lie… he is truly a responsible person!” Luo Zhichang exclaimed solemnly.

Everyone inside the room looked at him.

“It is because he is a responsible man that he would not easily make promises or assume a responsibility without thoroughly considering the situation!” Luo Zhichang’s continued, maintaining his solemn tone, “If it was someone like Liang Shaoyang, then they would accept the spatial rings right away and claim Armament Sect’s nine hundred years of wealth! The reason Liang Shaoyang had come to Armament Sect was to take all the items inside these three spatial rings!

“Qin Lie is different. He did not dare to casually accept this because he has truly thought this matter over. For him, accepting those three spatial rings means accepting the burden of revitalizing Armament Sect!”

Everyone’s expressions become ones of deep thought.

“Only a person like Qin Lie can truly be trusted! I believe that when he is willing to accept the three spatial rings, he will definitely assume the revitalization of Armament Sect as something he is obligated to carry out in the future!” Luo Zhichang

exclaimed.

The crowd quietly nodded, inwardly agreeing with his explanation.

“If he is unwilling to accept it now, then we will wait. We will wait until he accepts it!” Luo Zhichang expressed his opinion.

“Armament Sect can only regain their glory in his hands!” Ying Xingran said while coughing loudly.

“This is Qin Lie, requesting for a meeting!”

It was at this moment Qin Lie’s soft exclamation came from outside the Procedural Hall at Flame Volcano’s peak.

Luo Zhichang and Ying Xingran matched each other’s eyes before saying in unison, “Come in!”

Inside the great hall, the sect master, the three great reverends, and the seven inner sect elders were gathered together.

Qin Lie entered the great hall with a solemn look, and of course, the mummy-like Xue Li followed in tow.

The moment Xue Li appeared, everyone’s faces changed as they subconsciously retreated, wanting to avoid Xue Li.

“First things first, check out his condition,” Qin Lie said.

Xue Li chuckled and crossed a dozen-odd meters with a single step. He arrived directly in front of Ying Xingran.

Under the crowd’s shocked gaze, he pressed a hand on Ying Xingran’s head. With it, wisps of blood energy suddenly slipped from his palm and into Ying Xingran’s body.

“Qin Lie, what are you making him do?” Luo Zhichang cried out.

“I am fine.” Ying Xingran motioned for them to calm down. While he sensed the wisps of blood energy that had entered his body, he could feel that the almost depleted biomagnetic field seemed to have recovered a bit.

But he knew that it was an illusion. His mind and soul was what was damaged. It wasn’t something that could be healed through the mere replenishment of blood energy. If that were the case, the condition of his body wouldn’t have suffered such a state.

At this moment, they could more or less guess the reason Qin Lie had come over. That was why they had quieted down and looked expectantly at Xue Li.

After a while, Xue Li withdrew his hands and frowned for a moment. He said, “The depletion of his body’s biomagnetic field is due to the severe damage his mind and soul have incurred. It may be somewhat difficult to save him.”

“He can still be saved?” Luo Zhichang was overjoyed.

Even Ying Xingran himself greatly shivered as a heated desire appeared in his eyes.

“Can you start right away?” Qin Lie said solemnly.

“A period of time and some preparation is needed to save him. There are some ingredients that are required for the process as well, but won’t last that long.” Xue Li thought for a while and said, “I can use my blood energy to stabilize his biomagnetic field, then you can freeze him with your frost energy so that his body will not deteriorate and the collapse of his soul can be delayed. When you have overcome this crisis and made the preparations, I can heal him after he is unfrozen.”

Everyone’s eyes lit up.

“Let’s do it now then!” Qin Lie nodded.

Xue Li’s shriveled, claw-like right hand suddenly turned bloody as drops of fresh blood fell down from his fingertips.

It dripped right on top of Ying Xingran’s head!

Ying Xingran’s body violently shook as wisps of bloody mist seeped out of every pore on his body. His white-as-paper face

gradually regained some color.

A slow strengthening life force was gradually being released inside of Ying Xingran's body. Everybody could see that Ying Xingran's condition was slowly becoming better.

"Alright, your turn." Xue Li withdrew his hand, closed his eyes, and sat down to the side.

And so, Qin Lie went forward and began channeling Frost Arts. He combined the frost concept and frost energy to seep into Ying Xingran and slowly turn him into ice.

Two hours later, Ying Xingran had turned into a translucent ice sculpture. His entire aura had been frozen by ice, and his life and soul energy seemed to have vanished completely.

"Kid, I have expended some lifeblood essence again, and my combat capability will be lessened for a short time. Have you thought how to defend against the enemy's assault?" When Qin Lie had frozen Ying Xingran, Xue Li's eyes opened slightly as he coldly stared at Qin Lie.

"Reporting to the sect master and all seniors, the main four entrances of Earth, Fire, Wind, and Water are under heavy siege. The situation, the situation is looking extremely grim!"

"Where is Lang Xie?" Luo Zhichang yelled.

“Lo-Lord Lang Xie has been suppressed by a person called Xie Zhizhang. From the looks of it, Lord Lang Xie may… he may not be able to win against him!”

“Xie Zhizhang! Xie Zhizhang from Profound Heaven Alliance’s Xie Family! Middle stage of the Fulfillment Realm!” Luo Zhichang was shocked.

The crowd looked at Ying Xingran, but right now, Ying Xingran was currently a block of ice. There was no way he could lend anyone his opinion.

“What should we do?” was the thought currently on everyone’s minds.

The five forces were sieging rabidly, and Armament City was about to be broken apart. Lang Xie, who everyone had placed their expectations on, was being pushed back by Profound Heaven Alliance’s Xie Zhizhang.

How could Lang Xie possibly contend with Xie Zhizhang, who was at the middle stage of the Fulfillment Realm? Furthermore, if Lang Xie couldn’t beat him, then how could Armament Sect possibly survive?

Everyone subconsciously looked to Xue Li.

While closing his eyes, Xue Li hmphed once and ignored everyone’s gazes.

“Xingran is unable to lead us in our defense. We must choose a new leader right now, and this leader will make the decisions temporarily in Xingran’s place!” Jiang Hao suddenly said.

Everyone followed his words and looked towards Luo Zhichang.

However, Luo Zhichang suddenly exclaimed, “Qin Lie will temporarily take over the sect master’s position and make decisions for Armament Sect!”

“I agree!” Jiang Hao said.

“Agreed!” Fang Qi said.

“I concur,” Mo Hai nodded.

The remaining six great outer sect elders were dumbfounded for only a moment before they nodded unison and said, “Agreed!”

“Qin Lie! The sect is now at its darkest hour, and we are old and have lost our sharpness. Right now, Armament Sect needs a man like you to stand up! Since we have all elected you, please don’t turn us down any longer. Please take over Xingran’s position temporarily and make decisions for Armament Sect!” Luo Zhichang said.

“We believe in you!” Jiang Hao and Fang Qi said.

“Be it right or wrong, we will not hold you accountable!” the outer sect elders yelled.

Xue Li grinned and chuckled while looking tauntingly at Qin Lie. “Kid, do you dare to accept this responsibility? Your decision may lead Armament Sect past the point of no return. You may lead Armament Sect right into a dead end. Is this something you dare to take on?”

“Qin Lie!” Luo Zhichang yelled.

Qin Lie frowned deeply. After pondering for an extended period of time, he gradually nodded.

Chapter 214: Qin Lie's Counterattack!

In the Procedural Hall, everyone was looking at Qin Lie. At such a dangerous time, everyone hoped to see a sliver of hope.

But Qin Lie was too young and didn't have any experience in managing a sect. So while everyone was hoping for great things from him, they were also secretly worried...

Just as Xue Li had said, everyone was worried that Qin Lie's decision would cause Armament Sect to enter danger, to go on a road towards death.

"You have thought it through? To let me decide Armament Sect's future?" Qin Lie asked one more time.

With Luo Zhichang, Jiang Hao, and Fang Qi leading, everyone nodded with determined looks.

"At least, you can order about Xue Li..." some people thought.

Qin Lie took a deep breath, and then, his face turned cold. He said, "To the plaza!"

His first move was to talk towards the plaza at the base of the mountain with the spirit pattern pillars. Everyone was puzzled, but they all stood and followed behind him.

A short while later, Qin Lie and the higher-ups of Armament Sect returned to the plaza once more.

Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo, and Su Ziying were still tied to the spirit pattern pillars. Seeing the crowd come over, they stared hatefully at them.

Their subordinates, disciples, and closest confidants had been pursued by Blood Spear and the outer sect elders, and then, they would be executed in front of them.

There were still many traces of blood on the plaza that hadn't been cleaned up yet. How could they not be filled to the brim with hate?

"You think that Armament Sect can overcome this calamity with just an evil person? Armament Sect's fate had been determined long ago. No one can save it!" Su Ziying's eyes were frigid as she looked at the crowd. "Are the gates to the four districts being furiously attacked right now? We are just the first wave. There are many more outside Armament Sect. How will you withstand this?"

Shi Jingyun and Wu Tuo also had dark and disdainful expressions

"The people outside clearly know that you are being held here and dare to attack Armament Sect, do they not care about you? Or do they think that Armament Sect doesn't dare to act?" Qin Lie said with a frown.

Luo Zhichang's expression was bitter.

This was the crux of the problem.

The people outside understood that Ying Xingran wasn't a fanatic that would gamble it all. They were completely sure that Ying Xingran wouldn't dare to disregard everything to kill the trio, so they didn't think twice about attacking Armament City.

In reality, artificers like Ying Xingran who wholeheartedly forged artifacts were very pacifistic.

In the eyes of outsiders, Ying Xingran and Armament Sect, that was led by the artificers, did not have the resolve needed to offend the five forces.

So they did not pay it any mind.

"Dark Asura Hall, Seven Fiends Valley, Dark Shadow Tower, Purple Mist Sea, and Cloud Sky Mountain will only kill Blood Spear and outer sect disciples if they enter Armament Sect. The true artificers, even if Armament Sect does not exist any longer, will still live. Elder Mo Hai will enter Eight Extreme Temple and Profound Heaven Alliance while we five forces will divide the inner sect elders and disciples.

Shi Jingyun looked at the crown, and her expression turned cold as she shouted, "However, if something happens to the three of us, the five forces will not be so peaceful! If we die, you artificers will

most likely die with Armament Sect!”

“So you do not dare to act against us!” Su Ziying smirked coldly. “You are afraid, afraid of dying with Armament Sect, afraid of angering the five forces and being killed!”

“So they dare to attack Armament Sect because they know you do not dare to act rashly!” Wu Tuo also laughed.

The words of the three people caused the three reverends to have wavering expressions. Because Luo Zhichang and Ying Xingran still wanted to live... they did not dare to act rashly.

“Elder Cheng, give me a dagger,” Qin Lie suddenly said.

A tired Cheng Ping said with a shocked face, “I do not have a dagger.”

“I do.” Strangely, Mo Hai, the leader of the seven great inner sect elders, spoke.

He handed a dragon-shaped crimson red dagger to Qin Lie. “It is called Dragon Fang, Profound Fifth Grade.”

Feng Rong’s eyes shone with a curious light beside him as she said lightly, “A’Hai...”

“I have gotten to where I am today because of Armament Sect. It

has nothing to do with Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple." Mo Hai's expression was aloof as he said, "Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo, and Su Ziying have all received help from me. I have helped them forge artifacts, but now they want to destroy our Armament Sect, I cannot accept this."

When he said this, Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo, and Su Ziying were shamed and shocked.

Xue Li was sitting under a spirit pattern pillar. He narrowed his blood red eyes and snickered his strange laugh as he looked at Qin Lie.

Qin Lie held the dagger Mo Hai gave him and walked towards Su Ziying without a word.

"You dare touch me?" Su Ziying smirked coldly, "If I am damaged even a bit, Purple Mist Sea will bath Armament Sect in blood, have you thought about this?"

She was the second wife of the master of Purple Mist Sea and was deeply favored by him. Her status in Purple Mist Sea was above all. If she was harmed in any way, Purple Mist Sea would not rest.

The pupils of Luo Zhichang and the other's shrank while their hearts rose.

At this time, they felt slightly regretful. They regretted having Qin Lie decide the future of Armament Sect.

It was a pity that they could not take back what they said. No matter what Qin Lie wanted to do, they could only look on from the side.

Because Qin Lie was in charge of the present Armament Sect.

Qin Lie swung the dagger under everyone's disbelieving gaze. With one strike, he cut off Su Ziying's left pinky!

Su Ziying cried out.

Qin Lie carefully put away this finger and then looked at Wu Tuo and Shi Jingyun. Under these two people's shocked gazes, he cut off their left pinkies as well.

Wu Tuo and Shi Jingyun gave muffled grunts. Pain flashed across their faces, but they did not make a sound.

Still, their eyes were not disdainful as they looked at Qin Lie.

"Elder Cheng, take these three fingers and go to the gates that Seven Fiends Valley, Cloud Sky Mountain, and Purple Mist Sea. Tell them that if they continue to attack, every one hour, I will cut off another finger," Qin Lie said.

Cheng Ping was stunned. He respectfully took the three fingers as he shuddered, and with a respectful gaze, he said, "I will go now!"

The three reverends were astounded while the inner sect elders changed expressions but remained silent.

Qin Lie looked at them and said, “If you want Armament Sect to be destroyed but still want to live, then you better get rid of those thoughts right now.”

The three reverends and the elders nodded with bitter expressions.

Under a spirit pattern pillar, Xue Li snickered. When he looked at Qin Lie, his eyes had an additional a sliver of admiration.

“Good!” Feng Rong said loudly, not disguising her praise for Qin Lie.

On the plaza, many Armament Sect martial practitioners looked at Qin Lie with a thread of sincere respect.

“I need spirit materials with thunder attributes, best if the beast cores and spirit stones contain the power of lightning and thunder. I need to forge,” Qin Lie said.

Feng Rong’s eyes lit up again. “Is it what you used to attack Blood Shadow?”

Qin Lie nodded and said, “That is called the Terminator Profound

Bomb, the only thing that I know how to forge. It can only be used once, but it is strong."

"Terminator Profound Bomb!" Xue Li shrieked.

Everyone couldn't help look at him. Even Qin Lie was slightly shocked. "Elder Xue Li, you have heard of the Terminator Profound Bomb?"

"It really is the Terminator Profound Bomb? You didn't get the name wrong?" Xue Li's bloody eyes were slightly frightening.

"Yes, it is called the Terminator Profound Bomb," Qin Lie replied.

Xue Li inhaled and suddenly said, "...If it is really that, haha, if you can forge them in large numbers, it can heavily wound the other side. Terminator Profound Bomb, heh, how do you have the recipe?"

"An elder gave it to me," Qin Lie answered. After a moment of thought, he probed, "This Terminator Profound Bomb has a history?"

"This is a wondrous object that Forefather Terminator of Silent Heaven Continent invented and was famed in the nearby continents for its dominance and ferocity. It is terrifyingly powerful," Xue Li snickered. "Your elder must be very powerful to have gotten the method to making the Terminator Profound Bomb

that should only belong to Forefather Terminator. Heh, I'm not sure if it is real or not. From what I know, many people have recipes and say it is the Terminator Profound Bomb, but the things they forge aren't worth a shit...

"There are many thunder-oriented spirit materials in the spirit materials stores!" Fang Qi's shone brightly.

"I will go pick some out!" Qin Lie looked at Xue Li and said, "Please go into the city and help Lang Xie deal with that Xie Zhizhang. It would be best to capture him alive, but if that isn't possible, just kill him."

"Even in my present state, I don't need anyone helping me fight a martial practitioner in the middle stage of the Fulfillment Realm!" Xue Li snorted.

"That's even better. Just have Lang Xie move aside. Elder Luo, message Lang Xie?" Qin Lie said.

"Alright!" Luo Zhichang nodded.

"Do not send a message, I will go, and the boy will naturally step aside!" Xue Li smiled coldly and suddenly shot towards the edges of the city like a bloody rainbow.

He seemed to have known where Lang Xie and Xie Zhizhang were fighting already.

“Kid, seeing that you dare to kill and fit my tastes, when I come back, I will tell you a secret... a secret about the twelve spirit pattern pillars!” Xue Li’s strange laugh shot back from far away.

Qin Lie was astounded. He looked again at the twelve spirit pattern pillars on the plaza. Hesitating, he asked Luo Zhichang, “Elder Luo, where did these twelve spirit pattern pillars come from?”

Luo Zhichang suddenly became awkward and stammered as though he didn’t want to say.

Qin Lie understood and went somewhere where Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo, and Su Ziying could not overhear them. He asked again, “Xue Li is not from Scarlet Tide Continent, so does that mean that the twelve spirit pattern pillars are also from outside?”

The three reverends gathered together, and Luo Zhichang replied for them, “The sect founder got the twelve spirit pattern pillars... stole them from outside.”

Qin Lie was astounded.

“This, this...” Luo Zhichang smiled weakly, “the generations after slowly discovered it over time. Because it was stolen, even he didn’t understand the mysteries of the spirit pattern pillars. He didn’t even know that there was an old demon sealed in the spirit pattern pillars.”

“Where did he steal them from?” Qin Lie asked.

“It is unknown.” Luo Zhichang shook his head.

Armament Sect, which had a nine hundred year history, had a founder who was a thief?

Because he stole the twelve spirit pattern pillars, he founded Armament Sect at Flame Volcano, and the generations gradually developed into its current state due to that?

Qin Lie suddenly was torn between laughing and crying.

Chapter 215: The Might Of Three Fingers!

The five forces had gathered outside of the entrance to each of Armament's four great districts..

Blood Spear's martial practitioners, outer sect elders, disciples, and a portion of the remaining outer sect foreign delegates were scattered before those entrances, defending against the assault of the five forces.

Dark Fiend Valley's valley master, Jiu Liuyu, came down from her carriage in front of the Wind District's gate. She stood directly in front of it and watched the battle in front of the entrance, completely cold-eyed. It seemed she had no intention of interfering.

Jiu Liuyu looked to be about sixty years old, wearing a loose, long, and grayish-brown robe. The sleeves were sewn with the insignia of Dark Fiend Valley's valley, and she was speaking with Gold Fiend Valley's valley master, Jia Songlin.

Gold Fiend Valley's Li Zhongzheng was also beside Jia Songlin. He was Jia Songlin's younger disciple and was valued greatly by Jia Songlin.

At this moment, the martial practitioners of Dark Fiend Valley and Gold Fiend Valley had climbed up the city walls and started battling against the martial practitioners led by Tong Jihua.

Under the dark sky, countless exquisite spirit artifacts clashed

against each other while dragging behind them beautiful sparks, howling and unleashing torrents of spirit energy waves.

"Elder Tong, w-we can't hold out much longer!" an outer sect disciple cried out.

"We can't retreat even if we die!" Tong Jihua yelled.

Dark Fiend Valley and Gold Fiend Valley's forces obviously outnumbered Armament Sect's defending force. Even without Jiu Liuyu or Jia Songlin, Armament Sect was obviously overwhelmed and was on the verge of defeat.

"Old Shi will be fine, won't he?" Jia Songlin asked.

"What do you think? Do you think Ying Xingran would dare to kill Old Shi?" Jiu Liuyu said with a dark face, "In the end, they are just a sect formed by a bunch of artificers, not one of martial practitioners. Ying Xingran and the three great reverends weren't willing to fully commit to a fight. All they wanted was to develop Armament Sect in peace. What a foolish idea!"

Jia Songlin was shocked.

"Any sect's development is built on top of bloody conflict. It is utterly unrealistic to hope to build a sect without any difficulties!" Disdain leaked from Jiu Liuyu's eyes. "Armament Sect actually had their chance to exceed the five forces a long time back. When You Hongzhi was still around, no one could compare to Blood Spear's

momentum. If Blood Spear could have recruited disciples en masse back then and continued their development, then Armament Sect would be much bigger than it is currently!”

When Jia Songlin heard her words, he too nodded quietly and said, “That is correct. Back when Blood Spear was at its strongest, Armament Sect did not increase their numbers. It was very surprising.”

“That’s because Ying Xingran and the three great reverends are short-sighted!” Jiu Liuyu humphed coldly, “The growth of Blood Spear’s martial practitioners is sustained by massive amounts of materials and wealth. They require a continuous supply of spirit herbs, spirit medicine, and the blood of spirit beasts to temper their bodies. Ying Xingran had committed his entire life into artifact forging, and he wasn’t willing to spend too much on their martial force. That was why Blood Spear’s development was limited.”

“Yes. If Blood Spear had enough numbers, our trip this time would be quite troublesome,” Jia Songlin agreed.

“To put it bluntly, Ying Xingran and the others only wished for Blood Spear to be able to protect Armament Sect and nothing else. They never thoughts of expanding Blood Spear and improving Armament Sect’s martial force through plundering and combat.” Jiu Liuyu mocked, “Artificers are just artificers. They will never be true martial practitioners. By nature they do not have the fighting spirit of a martial practitioner nor their ambition or ability to draw blood!”

“That’s true. If Armament Sect had focused on the development of their martial force, they might have already become the third Copper force on Scarlet Tide Continent. It is rumored that their history is even lengthier than Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple’s. It is said that they had the chance to ascend into a Copper force a long time ago, but because they were too obsessed with artifact forging, they were not able to break through in the end…” Jia Songlin said.

“That’s why they are facing destruction today.” Jiu Liuyu’s expression was one of indifference.

It was at this moment when Cheng Ping’s voice came from above the city, “This is Shi Jingyun’s left pinky!”

Cheng Ping threw down a finger from the city walls so it would land right in front of Jia Songlin and Jiu Liuyu.

“If Seven Fiends Valley does not stop its attack on Armament City, we will slice off one of Shi Jingyun’s fingers every hour! ” Cheng Ping exclaimed before turning around and leaving.

‘It’s Old Shi’s finger! It’s Old Shi’s finger!” Jia Songlin’s expression changed greatly.

Jiu Liuyu only froze for a few seconds before she reacted and screamed, “Stop the attack. Retreat this instant!”

Fear was evident within her eyes .

“Elder Sister? Are we really going to stop?” Jia Songlin asked solemnly.

“I still have three disciples inside the city! If they are willing to hurt Old Shi, then who wouldn’t they be willing to lay their hands on?!” Jiu Liuyu said with a dark face and cold eyes, “These people have gone insane! How dare they touch Old Shi, could they be really looking to take us down with them?”

“Every one of you, stop and retreat!” Jia Songlin also cried out.

The Seven Fiend Valley martial practitioners that had almost cornered Tong Jihua’s group into a dead end jumped down from the city walls one after another after hearing the order. They returned to Jiu Liuyu and Jia Songlin’s side, standing at attention.

At Earth District’s city gate.

Cloud Sky Mountain’s martial practitioners were madly blasting the city walls under Ji Liu’s command.

Ji Liu, Wu Tuo, and Fu Chang were known as the “Three Stones” of Cloud Sky Mountain. The status of these three tough, stone-like guardians of the mountain were extraordinary, just beneath the mountain master’s.

They were similar to Dark Asura Hall’s five hall masters and Seven Fiends Valley’s seven valley masters. They were formidable

personnel of their own forces.

The three stones shared a great relationship. They often drank and had fun together, and though they might not be brothers, but they were closer than even blood brothers.

At this moment, the handsome Ji Liu was lifting a flagon and drinking wine while ordering his subordinates, “C’mon little bastards, break the city quickly and stop delaying me from having a drink with Wu Tuo!”

“If Cloud Sky Mountain continues to attack the city, then you may only be able to drink wine with Wu Tuo’s body.” Cheng Ping suddenly appeared and threw out Wu Tuo’s pinky. He yelled, “If Cloud Sky Mountain continues to attack the city, we will slice off one of Wu Tuo’s fingers every hour!”

Ji Liu’s handsome face instantly twisted. “How dare you harm Wu Tuo!”

“You have an hour. Remember, if you continue to attack, an hour later, Wu Tuo will lose another finger!” Cheng Ping did not bother with him and left the city walls.

“Lord, what do we do?” some of Ji Liu’s subordinates asked him.

Ji Liu’s expression was ugly as he angrily scolded them, “F*cking bastards, what do you think we should do? Get down from the walls right now! If anyone dares to continue attacking the city,

then I will be the first to slaughter him!”

The handsome looking, seemingly calm and collected Ji Liu exposed his true violent nature at this moment.

As soon as his subordinates saw him act in such a manner, their expressions all changed. No one dared to challenge him as they hurriedly jumped down from the city walls.

“Old Wu, when the other city gates are broken and you are safe, I will break the arm of those who harmed you and take revenge for you!” Ji Liu said fiercely.

At Water District’s city entrance.

A beautiful, voluptuous woman led a group of Purple Mist Sea’s martial practitioners and was also attacking the city gates.

She was Feng Ling, the first wife of Purple Mist Sea’s master.

Feng Ling and Su Ziying were both the wives of Purple Mist Sea’s master, Yu Dai. They might both serve the same husband, but they were on remarkably good terms with each other. It was said that their relationship was very good and that they had never argued with each other because of Yu Dai.

Feng Ling, dressed in long, purple skirt teased Yi Yuan smilingly, “You could have just tied up that Lian Rou and brought her back, couldn’t you? Even if there is an upheaval in Armament Sect, how

long can they hold out? Isn't their city going to be destroyed just the same? You came all this way to Armament Sect and stayed here for a year, yet you still failed to capture her heart. Yi Yuan, even your big aunt's gonna look down on you now."

Yi Yuan's expression was one of awkwardness and embarrassment. He changed the topic and asked, "Will second aunt be fine?"

"Don't worry, Ying Xingran is a coward. He wouldn't dare touch Ziying. He knows the weight of Ziying in Old Yu's heart very well. If he dares touch a hair on Ziying's head, Old Yu would definitely kill every artificer in Armament Sect. As long as Ying Xingran hasn't gone crazy, there's no way he would act recklessly," Feng Ling said off-handedly.

"This is Su Ziying's left little finger. Take a good look!" Cheng Ping appeared again and threw over a translucent finger, saying, "If Purple Mist Sea continues to attack the city, Su Ziying will lose a finger every hour!"

Once finished, Cheng Ping looked at Yi Yuan from afar before finally leaving with a cold expression on his face.

Yi Yuan immediately frowned upon seeing this.

Feng Ling's previous calmness had instantly disappeared. Gripping that finger, her face was green. "This is Ziying's finger!"

Yi Yuan smiled bitterly and sighed once in his heart. He knew that there was no longer any room for forgiveness between Purple Mist Sea and Armament Sect.

“Temporarily stop the attack on the city, every one of you, get your asses down here now!” Feng Ling exclaimed angrily before turning to look at one man and yelling, “Send out the notice this instant and say that one of Ziying’s fingers have been cut! Tell Old Yu to get his ass over here this instant!”

“As you wish,” the man quickly answered.

Yi Yuan’s expression grew bitter by the second.

He knew that Purple Mist Sea’s master, Yu Dai, would personally arrive any moment. He would be bringing Purple Mist Sea’s true elites.

With this, Armament Sect would most likely be fraught with only grim possibilities this time. Not even the inner sect elders might survive.

“Sigh…” Yi Yuan sighed deeply. He did not wish to see the current situation, but he was powerless to stop it.

Fire District.

A tall stone tower abruptly fell. The streets were wrought with a flurry of sand and stones and bore many deep marks.

Two figures could still be seen fighting intensely amidst the rubble.

Of course, it was Lang Xie and Xie Zhizhang.

Sword in hand, Xie Zhizhang's sword energy was like a rainbow. The rainbow light appeared domineering as it crushed the numerous pavilions surrounding them.

A bolt of bloody light slipped erratically through the sword rainbows, streaking across the roiling sand and stones to avoid the rainbow locked onto it.

"You can't hold out much longer. Your true realm is only at the pinnacle of the Netherpassage Realm. You are still one step away from breaking through to the Fulfillment Realm."

Xie Zhizhang's was calm and collected. While he was waving his sword, he still had the leisure to speak, "I may not know what kind of secret arts you used to increase your power to such a state in a short amount of time, but I am sure that it will leave you with severe side effects. Moreover, you can't maintain this state for long. Even now I can already feel that your life energy is subsiding. If you continue on like this, you will exhaust yourself and die."

Lang Xie's body continued to sparkle like a bloody light amidst the roiling wind and sand.

“If you are willing to surrender and live incognito for a while, the Xie Family is willing to recruit you.” Xie Zhizhang smiled and revealed his true objective.

The Xie Family and the two other families of Profound Heaven Alliance were different from Eight Extreme Temple.

Others wished to take in Mo Hai, whereas they wished to obtain Lang Xie.

The main reason Xie Zhizhang had come over today was for Lang Xie, to absorb Lang Xie into the Xie Family as a subordinate.

Chapter 216: Identity Exposed!

A ray of crimson, bloody light suddenly erupted from the direction of Flame Volcano and shot towards them. In the blink of an eye, it landed in front of them like a setting sun.

A heaven-shocking, earth-shaking, blood fiend aura seemed to instantaneously envelope Fire District. A feeling of fear emerged within all of the practitioners moving within Fire District as they suddenly felt as if they were drowning within a suffocating sea of blood.

Wielding his sword and startled, Xie Zhizhang looked in the direction of the ray of bloody light, his face filled with shock.

He could clearly sense that the ray of bloody light was coming for him!

“HEE HEE! HEE HEE!”

A strange, crazed laughter echoed around in every direction, nearly causing everyone’s eardrums to explode from the reverberations.

In the empty sky, a stream of bloodwater condensed into a long river. Carrying a crazed, bloodthirsty, and violent aura, it charged directly towards Xie Zhizhang.

The blood colored river was extremely wide, and bubbles would

occasionally erupt from within. Its intense stench of blood was enough to cause cowardly practitioners to suffer a mental breakdown on the spot.

A mind shattering, soul extinguishing, tide of spirit violently erupted from within the river of blood and directly entered Xie Zhizhang's spirit sea!

In an instant, Xie Zhizhang's mind felt as if it had been completely occupied by the blood colored water. Everything before him turned blood red.

He lost control for a moment.

And in that very moment, the river of blood converged atop his body, enveloping it in its entirety.

Xue Li's ear piercing cackles suddenly began to emanate out from within Xie Zhizhang's body. It shrieked out from within his mind and roared out from within every drop of blood in his body!

Lang Xie emerged from within the ruins, still wielding his short spear. His body was covered in blood, and his blood-red eyes looked directly at Xie Zhizhang.

"You want to use him to recover your blood energy?" Xue Li's cackle emanated out from within Xie Zhizhang, "You do know that once you truly taste blood, there is no turning back, right?"

Traces of struggle flashed within Lang Xie's scarlet as blood eyes as he hesitated.

During the time he hesitated, Xie Zhizhang had been wrapped into a Blood Cocoon, and Xue Li's figure had slowly condensed from the bloodwater.

Xue Li looked at Lang Xie and said, "You are different from You Hongzhi. After he walked astray, he discovered the path that he was now on also had quite the scenery so he deviated further and further. As for you, you have always been on the right path up till now..."

The struggle within Lang Xie's eyes became increasingly obvious.

"Consuming human blood can allow you to quickly recover and increase your strength. However, you will gradually lose your mind."

Xue Li's expression was indifferent as he continued, "Although your advancement will be slower if you concentrate on cultivating your own lifeblood essence, your lifeblood essence will be more pure and devoid of filth and impurities. It will allow you to always be able to realize yourself and always be in control."

"The reason my Blood Fiend Sect ended up splitting was because too many people gradually began to deviate onto the wrong path. They chose to walk on the path that You Hongzhi, Blood Shadow, and Liang Yangzu chose. It was because the vast number of them couldn't withstand the temptation of quickly increasing their

strength which consuming blood provided!”

Lang Xie continued breathing heavily, focusing on controlling himself.

His body was extremely weak, and he was very clear on the fact that if he were to consume the lifeblood essence of Xie Zhizhang at this time, not only would he quickly recover, there would also be a chance for him to directly breakthrough into the next realm.

With the current situation where Armament Sect was on the precipice between life and death, he needed the power! He needed to quickly become strong, and thus, he desired Xie Zhizhang’s fresh blood. Smelling the pungent scent of blood in the air, it was quite hard for him to resist.

“Whether or not you consume human blood, it is up for you to decide.” Xue Li watched Lang Xie. He suddenly waved his hand, and Xie Zhizhang’s blood cocoon encased body was thrown directly in front of Lang Xie.

Lang Xie’s breathing became more intense as his eyes became increasingly horrific, as if he had turned into a blood consuming beast.

However, after an extremely long period of time, Lang Xie gradually returned to his senses. He slowly closed his eyes and said, “Senior, please take this junior away.”

“Are you sure?” asked Xue Li, cackling.

“I am,” replied Lang Xie, gritting his teeth.

Xue Li silently nodded. He picked up Xie Zhizhang and seemingly turned into a ray of blood as his figure flew back towards Flame Volcano.

Armament Sect.

Within Tang Siqi’s cavern, stream after stream of lava leapt out like flame dragons from within the channel, releasing an extremely shocking heat.

Seven differently sized furnaces were currently being heated by lava. From within, the sound of bubbles popping incessantly echoed out.

Qin Lie’s body was covered in sweat, as if he had been drenched by rain. He was quickly moving in the center of these seven furnaces. One spirit material after another, he would take them from a mountainous pile and throw them into the various furnaces. His extremely rapid pace never slowed at all.

At the entrance, quite a few Armament Sect disciples were still delivering various spirit materials and spirit stones. They were all materials that were needed to forge Terminator Profound Bombs.

Tang Siqi and Lian Rou stood outside, blocking the entrance,

while also directing the outer sect disciples as they delivered their spirit materials. They also paid close attention to Qin Lie's movements.

In order to forge the Terminator Profound Bombs, Qin Lie had needed another cave as Ling Yushi and Ling Xuanxuan were currently occupying his. Furthermore, as the condition of his cave was slightly lacking, it wasn't suitable for forging multiple things simultaneously.

Tang Siqi's cavern had seven furnaces, and, as he had also smelted there before, he was very familiar with its layout. Thus, he had temporarily borrowed her cavern.

At this moment, an extremely strange luster emerged on Tang Siqi's alluringly red face which was illuminated by the flames.

—It seemed as if she had figured something out as she seemed to have cheered up again.

"Siqi, Qin Lie and Ling Yushi might not be able to truly get together again. Think about it, Ling Yushi is part of Dark Fiend Valley and the disciple of Jiu Liuyu. Furthermore, she greatly respects that old hag...

"Think about our Armament Sect's current clash with the five forces. Lu Li has been captured, as well as Shi Jingyun. Furthermore, Jiu Liuyu is still leading the attack on one of our city gates. With these kinds of conditions, many problems might arise between Qin Lie and Ling Yushi.

“Just patiently observe. There will definitely be some conflict between them. Daresay, they might not be able to get through it.

“Siqi, you can compete in these aspects. It’s not like you are lacking anywhere compared to Ling Yushi, are you afraid of losing?”

“……”

Tang Siqi thought back over Lian Rou’s advice. Looking in the direction of the busily smelting Qin Lie, her eyes gradually became firmer.

“We are the better pair. When we were forging, we had this kind of tacit understanding. This kind of tacit understanding could only have been reached if our hearts and souls were one!” Tang Siqi’s little hands crumpled into fists as she silently encouraged her self.

“Tang Siqi, I can’t manage by myself, could you come over and help?” suddenly asked Qin Lie.

“Sure!” Tang Siqi’s eyes brightened.

The sky became dark.

At the city gates to Armament Sect’s Fire District, Dark Asura Hall’s Xie Jingxuan, Cao Xuanrui, and the rest were scattered

around the gates.

Under Cao Xuanrui's command, his subordinates would occasionally attack the gates for a while before quickly withdrawing.

He had respected Xie Jingxuan's suggestion.

Xie Jingxuan had explicitly told him that Xie Zhizhang was currently fighting with Lang Xie in Fire District, implying that he should stay his hand for now.

Thus, Cao Xuanrui didn't invest too much energy as he patiently waited to see the results of the battle between Xie Zhizhang and Lang Xie. Only then would he decide on what to do next.

"If that terrifying, fiendish blood aura from earlier was from Lang Xie, then...." whispered Liang Zhong from atop the Profound Nether Beast.

When Xue Li had charged over from Flame Volcano, the terrifying, fiendish blood aura which exuded from his body had covered the greater half of the city. Even Liang Zhong, Xie Jingxuan, and Cao Xuanrui, who were outside the city, had felt it.

Currently, the blood fiend aura had disappeared. Liang Zhong pondered for a while, then said, "Miss, there's still no news. Could something have happened?"

Xie Jingxuan furrowed her brows. Under the gazes of Liang Zhong and Cao Xuanrui, she stroked the necklace atop her neck, trying to contact Xie Zhizhang.

She tried for quite a while. Xie Jingxuan's expression gradually became grim as she finally said, "Second Uncle hasn't replied."

The looks on everyone's faces simultaneously changed.

Also at this time, Ji Liu, Jiu Liuyu, Feng Lin, and the rest of the people belonging to Seven Fiends Valley, Cloud Sky Mountain, and Purple Mist Sea all gathered together.

They had all withdrawn from their respective gates outside of the Wind, Earth, and Water Districts. After withdrawing, they had come to the gate at Fire District because they had heard that the practitioner from Profound Heaven Alliance was here.

They hoped that Xie Zhizhang would be able to rescue their captured people so that they could boldly breakthrough the gates.

"The finger of our Seven Fiends Valley's Shi Jingyun has been cut off!"

"Wu Tuo's finger was cut off!"

"Su Ziying's finger was cut off!"

After Jiu Liuyu, Ji Liu, and Feng Lin arrived, they immediately explained their problems to Xie Jingxuan. Their expressions were all gloomy and cold.

“My second uncle hasn’t responded. I don’t know the situation within the city at all.” Xie Jingxuan’s expression slightly changed. She hadn’t expected that Armament Sect would dare make such vicious moves. At this time, she gradually began to feel something was off.

Also at this time, several more ghost birds returned from the direction of Flame Volcano. They landed on Liang Zhong’s shoulder.

Liang Zhong intently listened, then after a while, suddenly became shocked as he shouted, “Qin Lie is at Armament Sect! My birds recognized Qin Lie, and they saw him there!”

“Qin Lie?”

“Qin Lie!”

Upon hearing Liang Zhong’s words, Xie Jingxuan, Zhuo Qian, Tu Mo, Tu Ze, and the rest all became shocked, yet doubtful and uncertain.

“Who is Qin Lie?” asked someone.

“Qin Lie of Icestone City!” replied another.

“The fellow from Ling Town…” Jiu Liuyu snorted and said, “This brat is at Armament Sect, so what? He was originally my disciple’s fiance, so four years ago in Ling Town, I was able to glance at him from afar from within my carriage. He’s at most just an ordinary brat.”

“He killed Du Haitain and the entire Du Family!” Tu Ze shouted.

“He was just a Natal Opening Realm practitioner, what can killing him prove?” asked Jiu Liuyu with deep disdain.

“This Qin Lie isn’t much, and is not worth mentioning,” interrupted Ji Liu. “The important thing is where that owner of that Li’s Shop or whatever is. Is he currently at Armament Sect? As far as I know, in front of this fellow called Li Mu, not even Yuan Tianya dared to move recklessly at that time. This person is the true issue!”

“Mn, Li Mu will require our attention. As for a Nebula Opening Realm practitioner like Qin Lie, we don’t have to care about him at all,” said Feng Lin, emphasizing the importance of Liang Zhong’s words.

Everyone looked to Liang Zhong, all hoping to learn if there was any news of Li Mu. Outside of Tu Ze and Zhuo Qian, the rest didn’t care about Qin Lie and completely forgot about him.

Under everyone’s gazes, Liang Zhong’s expression became strange as he heavily said, “The ghost birds didn’t sense anyone

like Li Mu. Thus, I don't know whether or not he is at Armament Sect. However, there is something else that I have to tell you all. According to my ghost birds, the person who cut off the fingers of Wu Tuo, Shi Jingyun, and Su Ziying was Qin Lie!"

As these words resounded, everyone's expressions changed.

"Qi-Qin Lie? How could he dare to do such a thing? Just who is he?" shouted Jiu Liuyu in anger.

"How come he is the one calling the shots?" asked Xie Jingxuan, also confused.

Liang Zhong bitterly shook his head. "I don't know either. According to my ghost birds, he even did it in front of Armament Sect's sect master and three great reverends. I'm afraid that fellow has quite some status within Armament Sect. It's strange, quite strange..."

"Qin Bing is Qin Lie! In the eyes of Ying Xingran and the three great reverends, he is the future of Armament Sect," suddenly interrupted Yi Yuan. He had a complex look on his face.

Chapter 217: An Object Which Could Turn The Tide!

Seven metal balls that glowed with blue light were placed on the table in Tang Siqi's cavern. They gave off very obvious waves of thunder power.

Inside the cavern, Tang Siqi sweated. After her rose-red silk robes were soaked, it adhered onto her voluptuous body, causing her tempting curves to be revealed.

Her eyes were bright as she stared at the seven metal balls. Greatly interested, she inquired, "These are the Terminator Profound Bombs?"

Lian Rou was guarding the entrance to the cavern and also had an expression of interest on her face. "This little ball is what turned Blood Shadow into meat paste?"

Qin Lie's finger moved on the metal balls as he felt the ripples of thunder inside them. He replied, "Only after the spirit diagrams are engraved will they truly become Terminator Profound Bombs. Right now, they are still incomplete."

The intimidating ripples of thunder and lightning were sealed inside. With just the ignition from a bit of a spark, the lightning and thunder power inside would explode and release an astounding amount of force.

Qin Lie's eyes were slightly bright.

As expected of Armament Sect. They didn't just deliver a stream of materials needed for the Terminator Profound Bombs, they also managed to get many precious thunder-oriented beast cores.

The beast cores of six Thunder Sky Beasts and four Silver Winged Thunder Eagles were piled up beside him. Thunder Sky Beasts and Silver Winged Thunder Eagles were all Rank Three spirit beasts and even higher leveled than the variant Ice Soul Python.

Most importantly was that Thunder Sky Beasts and Silver Winged Thunder Eagles were spirit beasts that were truly thunder-oriented, and their power of thunder was much purer than the Ice Soul Python's who only attained the power of thunder after it mutated.

They were naturally more suited to being the primary materials for making Terminator Profound Bombs.

Other than this, he even saw the beast core of a Dark Moon Thunder Snake among the thunder-type materials that had been delivered!

The Dark Moon Thunder Snake was almost exactly as thick as three fingers and was about two meters long. Its entire body was covered in strange, crescent like patterns that could release shocking thunder and lightning!

It was a Rank Four spirit beast!

The Dark Moon Thunder Snake possessed power equivalent to a Netherpassage Realm martial practitioner. Furthermore, its beast core was extremely rare.

Even Qin Lie, who was in a hurry to forge the Terminator Profound Bomb, jumped in fright when he saw that beast core.

For him, using this beast core to forge Terminator Profound Bombs was too much of a waste.

Instead, he prepared to use it to further his own cultivation.

“Are there enough spirit materials?” Lian Rou looked outside and said, “First Reverend said that there are still a lot of spirit materials remaining in the storage room. If you need more, he will have people deliver more.”

“It’s enough! The materials that have already been delivered are enough for me to forge thirty Terminator Profound Bombs, there’s no need for anymore.” Qin Lie was astounded inside.

He finally realized that Armament Sect truly matched its rank of being a Black Iron force. As expected of a powerful sect which was famed for its wealth. Just a portion of its spirit materials was already far more than necessary.

He also realized that if he was willing to stay in Armament Sect,

he could use its resources to increase his skill in both the martial way and artifact forging!

"I will inscribe the spirit diagram. After it is imprinted inside the spheres, the Terminator Profound Bombs will be truly complete." Taking a deep breath, Qin Lie said, "Senior Sisters, please leave and guard the door for me. Do not allow anyone to disturb me at this time."

"Alright, just focus on inscribing." Tang Siqi smiled and then headed to the entrance of the cave. She exchanged a look with Lian Rou before standing at the door to guard the entrance for Qin Lie.

Qin Lie closed the entrance from the inside. Terminator Profound Bomb in hand and his fingertip bright with the light of spirit energy, he pointed above the thunder ball.

Anything that one had a lot of experience with would be simple to execute once more.

At Icestone City he had successfully made the Terminator Profound Bomb. With his accumulated experience, everything seemed so simple when he inscribed the spirit diagrams this time.

"Where is Qin Lie at?" Under the moonlight, the three reverends personally came. They were all curious about Qin Lie's progress.

"The objects have already been forged, and he is in the process of inscribing now," Tang Siqi said as she bowed.

“Inscription…” Luo Zhichang nodded lightly. “The inscription of spirit diagrams is the most important. Just the slightest flaw can cause all effort to be wasted. According to him, he has already forged Terminator Profound Bomb before. It seems he also has experience in inscribing spirit diagrams.”

“Mn, I just don’t know if this Terminator Profound Bomb is the one that Senior Xue Li spoke of. If it is true, then its true power will be extraordinary,” said Jiang Hao, speaking up.

“Ah, our perspectives need to shift. We should pay more attention to powerful one-use objects like this. If it can increase the power of the sect, we will also need to forge them in the future to increase the combat power of our disciples in all areas!” Fang Qi shouted.

The artificers of Armament Sect were usually profound and disdained making little one-time use consumables. They felt that it was a waste of their time and could not increase their forging experience.

“Purple Mist Sea, Cloud Sky Mountain, and Seven Fiends Valley have stopped their attacks.” Cheng Ping popped out like a ghost. He said, “These three are afraid, they are afraid that we will go crazy, so they have stopped.”

Luo Zhichang and the others exchanged looks, the expressions on their faces all changing.

“As expected, being a bit more vicious can intimidate those who come. Tolerating and moving aside will only make them demand more!” Fang Qi shouted.

“It seems that Qin Lie is right. His method is a bit bloody but effective,” Jiang Hao nodded.

“I just don’t know how that Xie Zhizhang is,” Luo Zhichang said worriedly.

“Where is Qin Lie?” Xue Li’s dark voice came from the plaza at the base of the mountain.

Everyone looked down, and from this angle, they found that Xue Li was carrying a ball of blood as he stood in the center of the spirit pattern pillars and asked the inner sect elders.

“He is forging the Terminator Profound Bombs,” Second Elder Tan Dongling answered.

“Hehe, if that really is the Terminator Profound Bomb, then it will be quite interesting,” Xue Li grinned. “If something like Terminator Profound Bombs can be made en masse, even if you want to take on two Copper forces, at the very least, they will come out with few benefits. Heh, there is even a possibility you can take them down with you.”

In Xue Li’s eyes, Armament Sect didn’t have any hope of defending against the two Copper powers if they did not obtain

anything new to use.

Even if he was added into the equation, Armament Sect didn't have a high possibility of victory when facing two Copper forces.

In his view, the Terminator Profound Bomb was a great weapon that could potentially turn the tide!

The condition was that the Terminator Profound Bomb Qin Lie was forging was really that thing that Forefather Terminator had invented.

Xue Li turned to a streak of bloody light and charged up Flame Volcano from the plaza. He also came to the entrance of Qin Lie's cave, seemingly showing a great interest in the Terminator Profound Bombs.

"I captured the martial practitioner sent by a Copper force," Xue Li looked at the bloody ball at the base of the mountain and explained.

Luo Zhichang and the two reverends bowed slightly with restrained expressions to express their gratefulness.

Xue Li did not care. He didn't spare them another glanced and only gazed at the sealed entrance.

"He does have some mannerisms of a great artificer..." A bloody light flashed through Xue Li's eyes. His gaze seemed to almost

penetrate the stone door, and it almost seemed like he could see Qin Lie inside.

"Senior, the Terminator Profound Bomb you speak of can really help Armament Sect?" Lian Rou suddenly asked.

"Girl, you are not afraid of me?' Xue Li looked sideways at her.

"I'm slightly afraid, but... it's alright," Lian Rou laughed lightly.

Xue Li nodded and answered her question, "If Terminator Profound Bombs can be produced in large quantities, it definitely has the potential deal heavy damage to the enemy. However, the power of Terminator Profound Bombs are closely connected to the grade of the spirit materials, how much thunder power the primary materials contain, the spirit diagrams inside, as well as the skill of the artificer. Even if these are the true Terminator Profound Bombs, the power would vary greatly because of these differences."

"How weak is weak, and how strong is strong?" Lian Rou asked.

"The weakest can only kill Natal Opening martial practitioners, the strongest..." a thread of terror flashed through Xue Li's eyes as he finished in a deep voice, "can destroy the souls of Nirvana Realm martial practitioners!"

"Nirvana Realm!"

The three reverends paled and exclaimed at almost the same time. They didn't quite believe Xue Li's words.

There almost wasn't even the existence of someone in Nirvana Realm in the enormous Scarlet Tide Continent. Could the strongest Terminator Profound Bomb really destroy the soul of one at the Nirvana Realm?

The three were thoroughly shocked.

"Let's talk about it this way. If it was a Terminator Profound Bomb personally made by Forefather Terminator, just one can turn those two so-called Copper forces into nothingness! The explosion of a single Terminator Profound Bomb can erase two Copper forces on its own!" Xue Li exclaimed in a somewhat casual manner. "All martial practitioners inside would be destroyed, and they wouldn't have a chance to be reborn! The heavenly thunder of that explosion will destroy every remaining shred of their soul, eradiating it in its entirety. If a person cannot gather the threads of their soul, they will not have the chance to reform it!"

At the doorway to the cavern, all the martial practitioners of Armament Sect were frightened by Xue Li's speech.

The very moment he finished, Qin Lie opened the stone door to the cavern. He came out with the Terminator Profound Bombs that he had just inscribed spirit diagrams onto. "Just finished making them. I don't know if they are the true Terminator Profound Bombs. Senior Xue Li, do you want to confirm?"

“Confirm?” Xue Li shook his head. “I am not an artificer, I cannot see its wonders. With my eyes and perception, I cannot confirm if they really are true Terminator Profound Bombs.”

“Then how will you confirm it?” Qin Lie was shocked.

“Through the power of its explosion of course!” Xue Li said in a matter-of-fact tone.

“The power of its explosion…” Qin Lie nodded and then glanced at Xue Li. He said, “That’s good, then we’ll have it explode and see if this really is the Terminator Profound Bomb you speak of.”

“The back! Go to the back! Try to stay far away from the sect!” Luo Zhichang suddenly shouted.

“Then let’s go to the back.” Qin Lie grabbed a Terminator Profound Bomb, and under Luo Zhichang’s ushering, he walked further past where Blood Spear trained.

Chapter 218: You Are Not Qualified!

Deep in the night and on a vast, expansive bog, threads of multi-colored poisonous miasma floated lightly on the horizon.

Under the light of the bright moon, the colors of the miasma dyed this bog with all sorts of bright colors.

This was the Poisonous Bog that was always shrouded in poisonous mist all year round. Much of the water inside the bog contained powerful poisons. Moreover, those poisons were ones that even martial practitioners of power could not withstand.

If a person did not cultivate a poison art or was special and could accurately recognize all kinds of poisonous objects, they would not dare to enter this place.

The balls of dark green, poisonous miasma seemed to be an eerie, green flower that floated above a bog that was filled with Poisonous Mucus Grass.

A spinning metal ball that seemed to echo with thunder suddenly shot into this bog.

It rolled into the inner parts of the bog.

“Boom!””

A terrifying shock wave that seemed to flatten the entire bog suddenly came from deep within the earth!

The bog in front of them roiled and rippled, with dragons of earth shooting up into the sky ferociously.

Poisonous liquid fell down like rain and filled the entire space.

The dark green poisonous miasma that remained regardless of the circumstances over the years slowly and miraculously dissipated after the shocking explosion.

The shallow bog became a wondrous deep lake, a lake multiple meters deep!

Numerous unnameable poisonous insects and other such beings surfaced from the moving mud. Every poisonous insect and animal was clearly dead without any signs of life.

Five hundred meters out.

Qin Lie, Luo Zhichang, Mo Hai, and the others looked at the impact area beside Xue Li in complete shock.

Luo Zhichang, Mo Hai, Tang Siqi, Lian Rou were inwardly astounded, unable to hide their shock. “This strength is something that even Netherpassage martial practitioners cannot endure!” Luo Zhichang said excitedly.

“Compared to the one that heavily wounded Blood Shadow, this is a step up in strength!” Feng Rong said confidently.

Qin Lie’s eyes narrowed. He was also extremely excited inside, having also been frightened by the destructive power of this Profound Terminator Bomb.

The power of this Profound Terminator Bomb far surpassed the three he had forged before. It definitely could kill Manifestation Realm martial practitioners and could teach Netherpassage martial practitioners a lesson they would not forget their for the rest of their lives!

Just as Xue Li had said, the materials to forge this Terminator Profound Bomb needed to be of a higher grade.

Especially the primary material!

The beast core of a Thunder Sky Beast was definitely higher than that of a Rank Two Ice Soul Python, so it had drastically increased the power of the Terminator Profound Bomb.

“The primary material is the beast core of a Rank Three thunder-type spirit beast?” Xue Li asked to confirm.

“Mn, the beast core of a Rank Three Thunder Sky Beast. And it was not a complete piece either.” Qin Lie said honestly, “It is just one third of the Thunder Sky Beast’s beast core.”

“Then you are not wrong, it should be the Terminator Profound Bomb!” Xue Li’s expression changed. “If this Terminator Profound Bomb explodes near a Netherpassage martial practitioner, it should be able to heavily injure and may even kill them. If the primary material is higher, your skill in artifact forging is high enough, and you can merge a Rank Four or Rank Five thunder-type spirit beast core into the Terminator Profound Bomb…”

Xue Li paused, then said, “Then with just the Terminator Profound Bomb, you can destroy the soul of a Fulfillment Realm martial practitioner. If you can successfully forge a Terminator Profound Bomb with Rank Six thunder-type spirit beast cores, then you can flatten a Copper force!”

Qin Lie’s eyes immediately lit up as soon as he heard this.

Luo Zhichang and the others also were excited as they saw the light of hope.

“Usually, a Terminator Profound Bomb that uses a Rank Three beast core as its primary material can kill a Rank Four spirit beast or a Netherpassage martial practitioner. A Terminator Profound Bomb made using a Rank Four beast core as its primary material can kill Rank Five spirit beasts or Fulfillment Realm martial practitioners and so on,” Xue Li said with great certainty. “Of course, this is assuming that the Terminator Profound Bomb explodes right next to them.”

Qin Lie suddenly started to chuckle.

“With your forging skills, you can at most forge this kind of Terminator Profound Bomb, do not be too optimistic,” Xue Li criticized.

Qin Lie continued to laugh. “If I can see hope, I will not worry. There will be a day when I am able to forge Terminator Profound Bombs that can exterminate a Copper force!”

“I’m afraid you won’t ever reach that day,” Xue Li grinned. “They will not give you so much time. After that Xie Zhizhang was captured, even I will most likely have to avoid the people who come in the next wave.”

Once this was spoken, everyone’s expressions darkened after their excitement.

“I will first go back to the cavern to continue forging Terminator Profound Bombs. Senior Xue Li, you can directly ask them for the spirit medicines and materials you need to recover your strength.” Qin Lie pointed at Luo Zhichang.

Luo Zhichang bowed slightly and then respectfully spoke, “Senior, please speak. You can use whatever Armament Sect has in the spirit material stores!””

Gratitude flashed through Xue Li’s bloody eyes. He nodded and said, “Good!”

Before Qin Lie left, Xue Li said, “After you forge the Terminator Profound Bombs, you should try to increase your strength. If you can step into the Manifestation Realm soon, maybe the danger to Armament Sect will be resolved...”

“Senior, what do you mean? What does the danger to Armament Sect have to do with reaching the Manifestation Realm?” Qin Lie was puzzled.

Xue Li snickered, “I said I will tell you a secret, a secret about the twelve spirit pattern pillars. Mn, do not be impatient. If you want to use those spirit pattern pillars, you should be at least in Manifestation Realm!”

Hearing this, everyone looked in shock at Xue Li.

“Those twelve spirit pattern pillars can resolve the danger threatening Armament Sect?” Qin Lie’s expression was one of excitement.

“With the Terminator Profound Bombs and the twelve spirit pattern pillars, it can make Armament Sect infallible. The condition is that you need to first be in the Manifestation Realm. You are the only one in your entire sect that can light up all twelve spirit pattern pillars. Only you can utilize its true wonders,” Xue Li nodded.

“Qin Lie!” Luo Zhichang shouted excitedly.

Qin Lie nodded and then turned to walk towards Flame Volcano. “I’m going back to the cavern!”

“Take me to your Armament Sect’s spirit material stores, let me see if there is anything good. Ha, if I can recover to eighty percent of my full power, I guarantee that your Armament Sect will come out of this unharmed!” Xue Li said arrogantly.

“Take the senior to the spirit material stores!” Luo Zhichang spoke.

……

At the city gates of Fire District.

Xie Jingxuan played with the decoration in her hand as she tried to communicate with Xie Zhichang and get a hold of the situation.

The people of Dark Asura Hall, Seven Fiends Valley, Cloud Sky Mountain, Dark Shadow Tower, and Purple Mist Sea had gathered in Fire District next to Xie Jingxuan. They were waiting for her information.

At this time, everyone knew that Tu Xi of Eight Extreme Temple had died horrifically by Lang Xie’s hands.

When Xie Zhizhang did not answer back, everyone’s mood darkened. They suddenly felt as though Armament Sect became mysterious.

—Li Mu was in the city!

That was what everyone was thinking at the same time.

Feng Lin, Ji Liu, Jiu Liuyu, and the others all assumed that since Qin Lie had appeared, Li Mu, who had disappeared along with him definitely was in Armament City.

One year ago, Li Mu had shocked everyone at Icestone City, and Yuan Tianya could only swallow his anger, not daring to move. At that time, a large number of people speculated that Li Mu was a powerful person above the Netherpassage Realm.

The rumor was that the Icestone Snow Wolfking, that was a Rank Five spirit beast, chose to follow Li Mu. This meant Li Mu was definitely very powerful!

This was everyone's judgement.

"We have already sent a message to Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple. They are having an emergency meeting and should take action soon," Ji Liu said.

"Li Mu is in Armament Sect, everyone, do not mess around. This person is definitely very powerful. If he also has the Icestone Snow Wolfking with him... experts from Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple have to start their assault before we can continue ours," Dark Asura Hall's Cao Yuanrui said.

The night passed without words.

The second day, a Ghost Bird landed on Liang Zhong's shoulder. Liang Zhong closed his eyes and listened for a while before his expression changed. He shouted at Xie Jingxuan, "Your Second Uncle has also been imprisoned in the plaza of Armament Sect. His entire body is wrapped in blood, and only his head is exposed!"

Hearing this, everyone was shocked and even more sure that Li Mu was in the city. Their bravery decreased even further.

A hint of anger suddenly descended upon Xie Jingxuan's cold face. She thought and then said, "I will go to Armament Sect."

"Miss!" Liang Zhong exclaimed.

"If Qin Lie is in charge of the present Armament Sect, I think he will not do anything to me." Xie Jingxuan's expression was complicated. "Speaking of this, I already owe him twice..."

In the stone woods outside Icestone City, Qin Lie had helped her kill the Soul Devouring Beast. Then, half a year ago he had helped her kill Liang Shaoyang.

"I will go meet Qin Lie," she said.

She then jumped off the Profound Nether Beast and walked

straight towards the gates. At the gates, she said, “This is Xie Jingxuan of Dark Asura Hall’s Department of Internal Affairs requesting to enter the city to see Qin Lie of Armament Sect. Please send a message.”

“Hall Master, we...” Zhuo Qian and Tu Ze looked hopefully at Cao Yuanrui.

Cao Yuanrui stilled and then nodded slightly. He said, “The present Qin Lie may not be the Qin Lie that you know. Be careful.”

“I thank Hall Master, for the concern.” Tu Ze bowed and came next to Xie Jingxuan. He shouted, “Tu Ze requests to meet Qin Lie! Please pass a message!”

“Just say that I, Zhuo Qian, also want to see him!”

“Sect Master Qin is in charge of our Armament Sect, who are you people? Is he someone you can meet at your whim?” Tong Jihua moved from the gates to Wind District to this place. At this time, he showed himself at the wall and said with a cold expression, “If you want to meet him, that’s not possible unless Yu Dai, the grand hall master of Dark Asura Hall, and the mountain master of Cloud Sky Mountain are all here!”

Tong Jihua snorted coldly. “As for you guys? You are not qualified!”

“Se-Sect Master Qin...”

Under the city walls, everyone who heard these words were utterly shocked.

One year ago, Qin Lie had been a normal martial practitioner in Icestone City's Nebula Pavilion. Now, in just a year, he had become the next sect master of Armament Sect, the true leader of a Black Iron force?

Upon hearing this, everyone felt a complex feeling well up in their hearts.

Chapter 219: Old Friend

“You are not qualified!”

Tong Jihua’s words caused Xie Jingxuan, Tu Z,e and Zhuo Qian to freeze up, and they surprised the entire group of people from the five forces outside the city as well.

He wasn’t wrong in terms of status.

Armament Sect’s status was extraordinary among the five forces. Be it wealth or the combat strength of Blood Spear, they were number one among the five forces.

If it was a one-on-one clash, then none among the five forces would dare to take on Armament Sect. They wouldn’t even been a match.

Not only did Armament Sect have a long standing history, it also had accumulated resources and potential that caused even Eight Extreme Temple and Profound Heaven Alliance to be wary of!

As the new sect master of Armament Sect, in terms of status and identity, Qin Lie was the equal of the leaders of the five forces.

Only Purple Mist Sea’s master, Cloud Sky Mountain’s mountain master, and Dark Asura Hall’s grand hall master would have the qualifications to speak with Qin Lie.

Xie Jingxuan was not qualified.

Tu Ze and Zhuo Qian were even less qualified.

“Please notify him. Whether or not he wants to meet me is his decision. If he refuses to see me, then I will definitely not force the issue either.” Underneath the city entrance, Xie Jingxuan frowned slightly with a cool face. “If I enter the city, you may capture me. I will not be a threat to you.”

“Miss!” Liang Zhong exclaimed.

Xie Jingxuan lifted her head and looked at Tong Jihua. She ignored Liang Zhong, and her eyes were firm.

Tu Ze and Zhuo Qian looked awkward. They too looked expectantly at Tong Jihua, hoping that he could accommodate them.

After a while, Tong Jihua nodded slightly and said in a cold voice, “Considering your past relationship with Sect Master Qin, I will arrange some men to report this matter. Whether or not he’s willing to see you all is still his decision.”

Xie Jingxuan returned a thanks and waited indifferently at the city entrance.

“Why do you want to see Qin Lie?” Tu Mo, the former pavilion master of Nebula Pavilion, said with a dark face, “The current Qin

Lie is no longer the insignificant Nebula Pavilion martial practitioner of the past. He is an overlord who rules over Armament Sect now. The fact that Armament Sect could... kill Tu Xi and capture Xie Zhizhang means that their powers are immeasurable, not to mention that Dark Asura Hall and Armament Sect have always opposed each other. What can you do even if you go there?"

Second Hall Master Cao Xuanrui had also turned around to look at the two of them. His eyes were a little strange.

"W-we don't really have any special thoughts. We just want to know if it's really him..." Zhuo Qian muttered.

"I just want to see him and know how he's doing right now," Tu Ze exclaimed.

Dark Asura Hall's second hall master, Cao Xuanrui, suddenly smiled and arrived beside Tu Ze and Zhuo Qian. After looking at them, he lowered his voice and said, "If you can convince Qin Lie to surrender, have him disclose how deep Armament Sect's power and resources run, and surrender to Profound Heaven Alliance..."

Cao Xuanrui's voice grew lower and lower, "Then not only will Qin Lie be able to live, I can even guarantee that he can enter Dark Asura Hall and acquire a pretty good position."

"Little Ze, Little Qian, you both know that it is Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple's intentions to eliminate Armament Sect. Armament Sect is fated not to survive this danger.

If you truly wish him well, then it will be best if you can convince him to surrender," Zhuo Duo also supported.

Tu Ze and Zhuo Qian wore bitter expressions on their faces. They neither expressed anything nor promised them.

This was because they knew Qin Lie. They knew that he would never surrender and that he wasn't someone who could betray his own sect just for his own safety. They knew very well that there was some kind of berserk blood inside Qin Lie, and the moment he turned crazy, he would be extremely terrifying and fearsome.

They could believe that it was him no matter how recklessly he acted. The one thing they wouldn't believe was that he would betray Armament Sect.

Therefore, they knew that they didn't even need to bother attempting to persuade him.

……

Hot sunlight shone down on Flame Volcano.

Halfway up the mountain, the shut cave was opened once more as Qin Lie appeared at the entrance looking quite tired.

"How is it? How much have you completed in one night's time?" Lian Rou asked curiously.

Qin Lie pointed behind him.

At the back of the cave, six Terminator Profound Bombs lay quietly on the jade table. Each one of these Terminator Profound Bombs carried incredibly obvious thunder and lightning energy, and a lightning-like pattern graced its surface.

“Have they all been inscribed?” Tang Siqi’s eyes were bright.

“Yes. I used an entire night to inscribe all of the spirit diagrams inside.” Qin Lie moved his neck and rolled his rigid limbs, slowly relaxing his tense body.

The six Terminator Profound Bombs were powerful enough to eliminate a Netherpassage martial practitioner and damage a Fulfillment Realm martial practitioner. But this alone wasn’t enough to completely overturn Armament Sect’s situation.

When daylight had been about to break, he had even forged a new Terminator Profound Bomb and attempted to merged a small Rank Four Dark Moon Thunder Snake beast core into the new artifact.

According to Xue Li, if he could use a Rank Four spirit beast core as its primary material, then the power of the Terminator Profound Bomb could destroy a Rank Five spirit beast and take down a Fragmentation Realm martial practitioner.

That was why he wanted to give it a test.

However, not long after the beast core was placed inside the furnace, all the supplementary materials could not endure the rampaging thunder and lightning energy and exploded into smithereens before they could complete the merging.

If it wasn't for the fact that Armament Sect's furnace was tough, that he hadn't used just a small piece of beast core for the experiment, and that he hadn't suppressed the thunder and lightning energy inside, it was likely that even the furnace would completely explode.

Xue Li wasn't wrong. With his current attainment in artifact forging, the best he could forge was a Terminator Profound Bomb with a Rank Three beast core as the primary material. He would only be making life difficult for himself if he tried to forcefully attempt a high grade Terminator Profound Bomb.

The enhancement of the main material had to be matched with an enhancement of supplementary materials, a better control of spirit energy, better skill in artifact forging, a higher realm, and must even be matched with a better compound spirit diagram!

He was lacking in all areas.

"Can I see the spirit diagram inside the Terminator Profound Bomb?" Tang Siqi stared eagerly at him.

Lian Rou's expression moved as she too suddenly chuckled and asked, "Qin Lie, can I see it as well? The compound spirit diagram you've made?"

Qin Lie frowned slightly.

The spirit diagram he inscribed inside the Terminator Profound Bomb was formed with basic spirit diagrams. However, the four basic spirit diagrams he mastered were different from the commonly used basic diagrams these days.

According to Ying Xingran and Mo Hai, the basic diagram inside the Spirit Gathering Board was an ancient diagram!

Tang Siqi had also seen the Spirit Gathering Board Xie Jingxuan had sent over as well and of course had seen the spirit diagram inside as well. So, she would immediately realize that the person who forged the Spirit Gathering Board wasn't Li Mu but him the moment she slipped a wisp of mind consciousness into the Terminator Profound Bomb.

The four ancient basic diagrams came from inside the Soul Suppressing Orb. His grandfather had once instructed him to let as few people as possible know that he owned the Soul Suppressing Orb.

That was why he hesitated.

After thinking for a moment, he said, "I'm sorry. The spirit

diagram inside the Terminator Profound Bomb was taught to me by a senior. He isn't too willing to show it to other people."

"It's Li Mu, right? The Li Mu who forged the Spirit Gathering Board?" Tang Siqi wore an understanding look. "The spirit diagram inside the Terminator Profound Bomb is an ancient diagram, right? We actually guessed that a long time ago..."

After being dumbfounded for a moment, Qin Lie nodded.

"I knew it." Tang Siqi appeared a little regretful but did not force the issue. She even reminded him in good will, "If you want to keep the arrangements of the spirit diagrams inside your spirit artifact a secret, you can package it. There should be a lot of packaging methods inside the secret scriptures you hold. To put it bluntly, this so-called packaging method is to lock your spirit diagrams so that other people's consciousness would not be able to peep at the interior spirit diagram and its unique frame."

"Packaging!" Qin Lie's eyes lit up.

He had heard about packaging spirit diagrams. He also knew that there were a lot of real master artificers who disliked other people attempting to discern the wondrous assemble of their spirit diagram. That was why the spirit artifacts they forged had interior spirit diagrams that were packaged to "lock" them.

A packaged spirit diagram would neither prevent the user from using it nor affect the spirit artifact's power. But it could prevent other people from slipping their consciousness inside the artifact

and seeing the core components of the spirit diagram.

In the world of artifact forging, this was the way the great artificers protect their own secrets. It was a very common practice.

“Sect... Sect Master Qin, Elder Tong has requested me to inform you that there are three people outside Fire District who wish to see you. They say they know you. They are called Xie Jingxuan, Tu Ze, and Zhuo Qian.” An outer sect disciple walked in with a humble look and bowed head, while informing him in an odd tone.

“Xie Jingxuan, Tu Ze, Zhuo Qian...” Qin Lie was shocked. After thinking for a moment, he asked, “Has my identity been exposed?”

“Yes. Now everyone knows that you are the one in control of Armament Sect.” The person still did not lift his head as he answered quietly.

Qin Lie looked at him in surprise, and after a moment’s hesitation asked suddenly, “Are you... Tian Jianhao?”

The man who had bowed his head all this time finally looked up with a bitter smile. It was Tian Jianhao.

More than a year ago, he, Yi Yuan, Liang Shaoyang, and Ouyang Jingjing had joined the exam and cut in front of Qin Lie. He was then kicked down onto the ground by Qin Lie.

After that, Tian Jianhao had wanted to take revenge on Qin Lie

several times, but realized that Qin Lie was chosen by Tang Siqi, then ascended into an inner sect disciple, and after a while, he then killed Liang Shaoyang in front of the entrance before causing all twelve spirit pattern pillars to react...

Qin Lie had risen in position all this way, and now he had become the current sect master of Armament Sect. Meanwhile, Tian Jianhao was still Tian Jianhao. He was still that outer sect disciple.

“I was blind in the past. I hope that Sect Master will forgive my petty sins,” Tian Jianhao smiled bitterly and saluted.

“You came from Dark Asura Hall previously. Why did Elder Tong... trust you?” Qin Lie asked.

“I am neither Liang Shaoyang nor Ouyang Jingjing. I do not have any backing in Dark Asura Hall, and there is no one who gave me special attention. In Dark Asura Hall, I am but an insignificant martial practitioner who has suffered quite a bit of anger. In fact, I have been doing quite well during my time in Armament Sect,” Tian Jianhao explained.

Qin Lie gained an understanding and nodded. He said, “Tell Elder Tong to invite them to the sect. Say that I wish to see them as well. Remember, they must be treated with respect. Do not put shackles on them!”

“Understood.” Tian Jianhao bowed again before finally leaving.

An hour later.

At the entrance of the Fire District, “Tong Jihua said coldly, “Sect Master Qin invites you to Armament Sect. Moreover, he has specifically instructed me not to shackle you and to treat you with respect.”

Tu Ze and Zhuo Qian matched each other’s eyes before letting out a sigh of relief.

“Qin Lie is still Qin Lie,” they both thought.

Xie Jingxuan simply nodded slightly before walking straight at the open city gate. Under Tian Jianhao’s guidance, they walked to Armament Sect’s entrance.

Chapter 220: Negotiation Breaks Down

At the outer sect reception room of Armament Sect.

“Sect Master Qin is right inside here. Please go in, the three of you.” Tian Jianhao led his men to the door before bowing and withdrawing.

Xie Jingxuan, Tu Ze, and Zhuo Qian immediately stepped into the reception room.

Armament Sect’s reception room was very wide. Many waist thick pillars of exquisite stone lifted the hall high up in midair.

Qin Lie was right beside one of the pillars. He wore black battlewear and stood still with a calm expression on his face.

“Qin Lie!” Tu Ze and Zhuo Qian cried out in unison.

“Big Brother Tu! Sister Qian!” Qin Lie’s eyes were filled with excitement as he couldn’t help but exclaim softly.

Tu Ze and Zhuo Qian swiftly moved forward, arms outstretched ready to hug Qin Lie. However, just when they were about to reach him, their footsteps suddenly stopped.

They recalled the extraordinary status and position Qin Lie now held.

Their hugging posture suddenly became rigid as a hint of awkwardness appeared on their faces as well.

It was Qin Lie who realized their thoughts after going blank for a moment, and with a grin, he himself stepped forward to punch Tu Ze strongly in the chest before hugging Zhuo Qian, yelling, “I am still me. I am still the same kid you met at the Arctic Mountain Range back then!”

Both Tu Ze and Zhuo Qian were secretly moved on the inside as they too hugged Qin Lie tightly to express the excitement in their hearts.

“You brat! Since when did you run to Armament Sect, and how did you become Armament Sect’s sect master?” Tu Ze cried out.

“Did you go Armament Sect after you left Icestone City a year ago? Your fake name is Qin Bing?” Zhuo Qian also asked.

“It’s a long story.” Qin Lie shook his head, and after thinking for a moment, he said, “Big Brother Tu, Sister Qian, we will reminisce later. Let me ask what Miss Xie’s intentions are first.”

“Alright.” Both Tu Ze and Zhuo Qian nodded before sitting obediently on one of the soft chairs to the side.

“Miss Xie.” Qin Lie suddenly withdrew the smile on his face as his expression slowly turned serious. He pointed at a chair at the

side and said, “Please have a seat.”

A hint of complication appeared in Xie Jingxuan’s clear eyes. She nodded slightly before sitting down indifferently at the side. Then she went right to the point. “Qin Lie, I did not expect that you are Qin Bing.”

Qin Lie smiled and did not answer.

“You helped me kill Liang Shaoyang and allowed Liang Zhong and I to escape smoothly. So I should thank you.” There wasn’t too much emotion on Xie Jingxuan’s cool face. Frowning, she asked, “I had asked Liang Zhong to deliver a letter to you to inform you about the disaster that was soon to befall Armament Sect and that Blood Shadow was going to kill you. So why have you still stayed at Armament Sect?”

While Eight Extreme Temple and Profound Heaven Alliance were laying down their plans, Xie Jingxuan had learned about Armament’s future fate as soon as they had come to a decision through the Xie Family’s network.

Before the five forces had decided to join forces, she had already asked Liang Zhong to send a letter to advise “Qin Bing” to escape as soon as possible, that he shouldn’t stay at Armament Sect.

The reason she did this was to pay Qin Lie’s back for killing Liang Shaoyang and to save Qin Lie’s life.

But not only did Qin Lie not leave Armament Sect, he had even become the newly appointed sect master.

"The reason I did not leave was because I thought I could escape easily. But something happened later on that I did not expect either." Qin Lie said honestly, "Regardless, I must thank you for asking Uncle Zhong to inform me."

Xie Jingxuan frowned.

After a long pause, she nodded and said, "Let's talk business."

"Okay." Qin Lie also nodded.

"If you can truly influence Armament Sect, I hope that you can release my second uncle, Xie Zhizhang. As long as my second uncle is unharmed, on the basis that you have helped me twice, I will return to the Xie Family and beg my father to change Profound Heaven Alliance's attitude towards Armament Sect with his influence..." Xie Jingxuan said seriously.

Through Great Reverend Luo Zhichang, Qin Lie already knew that Profound Heaven Alliance was formed by the three great families, the Xie, Song, and Nie families. The patriarchs of the three great families would be able to take turns to compete to become the chief of Profound Heaven Alliance. Right now the chief of Profound Heaven Alliance was led by Song Family's patriarch, Song Yu, and the Xie Family's current patriarch—Xie Yaoyang—was also Xie Jingxuan's father!

The Xie, Song, and Nie families worked together to conduct the operations of Profound Heaven Alliance. Any massive movements by Profound Heaven Alliance must have the consent of the patriarchs of all three great families.

As one of the three great families, the Xie Family had absolute power to influence Profound Heaven Alliance's decision.

So as long as Qin Lie released Xie Zhizhang, she would give Qin Lie face and willingly return to the Xie Family to meet her father. She would ask him to change Profound Heaven Alliance's attitude with Armament Sect with Xie Family's influence...

Even Tu Ze and Zhuo Qian were surprised. They didn't know what had happened between Xie Jingxuan and Qin Lie to deserve such diligence from her.

"In that case, what is the best outcome for Armament Sect after Profound Heaven Alliance has changed their attitude?" Qin Lie asked.

Xie Jingxuan thought carefully for a moment before answering, "Armament Sect's inner sect elders and disciples will be safe. Part of the outer sect martial practitioners will be safe as well. Elder Mo Hai will probably enter Eight Extreme Temple, and we, the Xie Family, can accept Lang Xie, although he must go into hiding for a period of time. The inner sect elders and disciples will be split among the five forces after they have been scattered, and Armament Sect's wealth and various spirit artifacts and spirit materials will be split among Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple. A portion of this will be taken out as a reward to

the five forces for their actions as well.”

“So Armament Sect will still perish, their wealth will still be divided, and the elders and disciples will still be divided among the other forces after they have been scattered?” Qin Lie’s expression turned dark.

“This is the treatment Armament Sect will get after the Xie Family has fought for them. Otherwise, Armament Sect’s outer sect elders and disciples will all be killed, and the inner sect elders and disciples will probably not survive either because you have harmed Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo, and Su Ziying.” Xie Jingxuan’s expression was serious. “Not only will the Armament Sect that has committed such acts will be eliminated, they will be also slaughtered to the very last man.”

Tu Ze and Zhuo Qian felt a frigid cold from the bottom of their hearts.

They might have guessed Armament Sect’s ending, but when Xie Jingxuan had laid it out so directly, they still felt that it was cruel.

“This is what you can offer as the representative of the Xie Family?” Qin Lie exclaimed softly.

“This is the best treatment Armament Sect can get after the Xie Family has interfered with Profound Heaven Alliance,” Xie Jingxuan said.

Barely a moment of thought passed before Qin Lie immediately said, “Thank you for your sincere offer. However, I cannot accept this offer, and Armament Sect will never accept this as well!”

Xie Jingxuan’s expression turned slightly.

“As long as the Xie Family does not interfere with the affairs of Armament Sect, I can guarantee your second uncle’s safety. Otherwise, he will be as Shi Jingyun, Yu Tuo, and Su Ziying!” Qin Lie exclaimed solemnly.

“Qin Lie, are you sure this will be the position you take, Armament Sect’s position?” Xie Jingxuan’s expression turned cold.

“I apologize, but Armament Sect does not wish to perish, have their outer sect elders and disciples slaughtered to the last man, or have their elders be imprisoned and kept alive as pitifully as a dog.” Qin Lie’s expression was stern. “Please tell the Xie Family that this is Armament Sect’s attitude! Please inform the Xie Family to avoid interfering with Armament Sect’s affairs. Whatever the other two families of Profound Heaven Alliance do are their businesses. As long as the Xie Family no longer sends anyone over, your second uncle’s safety will be guaranteed.”

“You are truly an unrepentant fool!” Xie Jingxuan exclaimed coldly.

Qin Lie kept quiet and said nothing.

“I have said whatever needs to be said. If you insist, and if Armament Sect insists as well, then I wish that you will be prepared for whatever fate will fall upon Armament Sect in the future.” Xie Jingxuan was obviously very disappointed, disappointed with the results of this trip and with Qin Lie.

After throwing down those words, she did not continue to persuade him. Instead, she turned around, left the reception room, and headed outside the city.

There was a moment of silence after she left the reception room.

After a long time had passed, Qin Lie sucked in a breath and let out a somewhat strained smile. “Big Brother Tu, Sister Qian, do you guys think me as an unrepentant fool as well?”

“We know how you are. We know that there was no way you would accept this, so the reason we came here wasn’t to convince you or anything.” Tu Ze smiled and said, “We are different from her. We are not here to see you on behalf of Dark Asura Hall or the Xie Family or whatever. We are here... to see a good friend, a good brother, because we are afraid that we will not be able to see you ever again in the future. That is why we came here in advance to avoid any regrets in the future.”

“You guys are not optimistic about Armament Sect’s fate either?” Qin Lie smiled bitterly.

“Isn’t it obvious?” Zhuo Qian threw him a glare. “The ones who want to eliminate Armament Sect are Eight Extreme Temple and

Profound Heaven Alliance. These two are both Copper rank forces, just how can Armament Sect possibly survive this crisis? Really, you too. Why the heck did you take up as the sect master? This position sounds pleasant to boast about, but is it really that easy to become one? The position of sect master in a sect about to be eliminated is only a joke in other people's eyes. Why can't you see that?"

Qin Lie continued to smile bitterly.

But there was some warmth in his heart. Tu Ze was still Tu Ze, and Zhuo Qian was still Zhuo Qian. Their words let him know that they still hadn't changed and that they had come purely because they were worried for him.

They didn't have any ulterior motives, and their thoughts were pure. They really were here just to see him.

Just as Tu Ze had said, they had assumed that he would die which was why they had come to meet him one last time.

Inside the reception room, Qin Lie and the duo talked about his experiences after he left Armament Sect. Other than his experiences beneath the Arctic Mountain Range and the land of profound ice, he had openly explained everything else.

Tu Ze and Zhuo Qian had also talked about their current lives at Dark Asura Hall, working under the second hall master as his subordinates. They were now undergoing special training and were preparing to venture to Nether Battlefield to sharpen their

martial way.

After that, the duo advised him to figure out a way to escape before Armament Sect was eliminated. They hoped to see him again in the future.

They said nothing about Cao Xuanrui's plans or his offer. They only told him that Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple were having an emergency meeting and would send experts over once more, cautioning him to be careful.

"Qin Lie, we hope you can survive this crisis, we hope to see you again!" Before Tu Ze left, he hugged him one more time and heavily said, "Live well!"

"Take care! Don't sacrifice yourself for Armament Sect. You must protect your own life!" Zhuo Qian instructed.

"Don't worry you guys. I will live, and I will even live very well!" Qin Lie grinned and sent the duo out of the reception room. He then instructed Tian Jianhao to send them safely out of Armament City.

After they left, he turned around and headed towards Blood Spear's training ground at the back of the mountain.

"Manifestation Realm. If I can break through to the Manifestation Realm, I will be able to channel the wonders of the spirit pattern pillars, and together with the Terminator Profound

Bomb, they will be enough to overturn the tides. I do not have much time left, so I must succeed as soon as possible!”

Chapter 221: Creating Another Natal Palace!

In the forest shrouded by blood colored smoke and mist.

There were bubbling blood pools of various sizes scattered across the area. The bloodwater seemed to boil under the heat from the flames underground.

There were exhausted Blood Spear martial practitioners in many of the pools. Some were naked with clear wounds, and some of those wounds had cut straight to the bone.

These were the Blood Spear martial practitioners who participated in the recent battles. They had come to the blood pools to heal.

The spirit blood inside the blood pools could help heal their wounds, could quickly replenish their energies, and would allow them to return to a battle-ready state more quickly.

In the deep part of the forest, Feng Rong wore black leather clothing and was soaking in one of the pools.

At this moment, shock became visible in here eyes as she looked at a blood pool near her that was filled with spirit blood of the highest concentration.

Blood Essence Stones, Enlivening Blood Grass, the berserker blood of the Bloodthirsty Blade Demon, the divine blood pills made from multiple types of spirit beast blood, and all kinds of rare items were thrown into the blood pool by Xue Li.

An extremely unstable blood fiend aura emerged from the blood pool and caused the blood inside Feng Rong to become uncontrollably restless. Her blood seemed as though it was going to combust and would start boiling any moment now.

“Hehe, not bad, your sect actually has some usable materials,” Xue Li laughed strangely. His entire body was immersed in the restless blood pool of two people’s fresh blood and with only his head exposed, carrying a pleased expression on his face..

“What percentage of senior’s peak strength is senior at now?” Qin Lie walked over and stood next to Xue Li as he looked at that blood pool.

The blood inside his body also started to shift uncontrollably even though he was just standing at the edge. The franticness of his blood had almost become uncontrollable.

“Kid, be more concerned for yourself.” Xue Li grinned, and his gleaming white teeth caused people to shudder. “You want to rely on me to defend against two Copper forces? You should quash those thoughts immediately. It’ll take at least ten years to reach eighty percent of my original strength, I cannot help you overcome this obstacle.”

“If I can break through to the Manifestation Realm, with the addition of the Terminator Profound Bombs, can I really turn the tides?” Qin Lie’s expression was grave.

“You do not believe my words?” Xue Li snorted coldly.

“Qin Lie!” Feng Rong shouted lightly.

Qin Lie’s brow creased, and he glanced at Xue Li. He did not speak and found a place to sit down.

He took out the Dark Moon Thunder Snake’s beast core.

A complete beast core would have six corners. Right now, there were only five left. There was a corner that he had cut down to try to forge higher grade Terminator Profound Bombs. However, he had failed horrifically.

The beast core possessing five corners now seemed to be a white, opaque watery crystal. It was warm in his hand and smooth to the touch.

When he channeled Heavenly Thunder Eradication, the opaque Dark Moon Thunder Snake beast core suddenly became clear!

When one looked closely, they would find that the source of the opaqueness had gathered into little bits of light. Each little bit of light contained a shocking amount of thunder energy.

That was pure thunder power!

What he needed to do now was to slowly extract the bits of thunder energy from the beast core and merge it into his Natal Palace.

There were seven Natal Palaces in his dantian's spirit sea. Three yellow earth balls that were formed from the power of the geocentric magnetism, two glowing balls of ice formed from frost power, and two burning thunder and lightning balls condensed from the power of thunder and lightning.

If he wanted to break through into the Manifestation Realm, he needed to first reach the peak of the Natal Opening Realm, which meant that he had to possess nine Natal Palaces in his spirit sea.

—He still lacked two Natal Palaces.

The beast core of the Dark Moon Thunder Snake was, in his eyes, a treasure that could help him make another thunder Natal Palace.

In the forest where the bloody mist spread and was shrouded in the tang of blood, Xue Li, Feng Rong, and Qin Lie cultivated by themselves in its depths.

They knew that the five forces would not move rashly before Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple sent more experts. They would not dare to attack Armament Sect.

Because Tu Xi had died and because Xie Zhizhang had been captured alive. The defeat of the two Fulfillment Realm experts was enough to intimidate the five forces!

So they still had time. They could try to recover and strengthen themselves before the stronger enemies arrived.

“Zzt zzzt zzt!”

Strands of blue electricity wrapped around his body like thin intelligent snakes. Accompanied by waves of muffled thunder, the lightning became even denser.

The thunder energy inside the Dark Moon Thunder Snake’s beast cores flowed as threads into his body and slowly gathered in his spirit sea.

Yet the thunder energy that didn’t enter his spirit sea directly entered his two thunder Natal Palaces.

When the two thunder Natal Palaces were filled up, the thunder energy spread to his bones, flesh, blood, acupoints, muscles, and veins but did not form a new Natal Palace in his spirit sea.

“Kid, if you want to make a new Natal Palace, you need to accumulate enough power in a short period of time. Slowly absorbing the power inside that beast core will probably not be enough to help you quickly form a Natal Palace. Do you want me to

help you?” Xue Li laughed from the blood pool.

Qin Lie looked at him. “How can you help me?”

“Give the beast core to me.” Xue Li reached a hand up from the blood pool.

Qin Lie creased his brow and thought for a moment before throwing the beast core over. “Rank Four Dark Moon Thunder Snake’s beast core, be careful, don’t shatter it.”

“Don’t worry, just a Rank Four beast core, not much at all.” Light flashed through Xue Li’s eyes. Grabbing the beast core, his fingers that seemed like withered claws suddenly started dripping with blood.

A furious and twisted power shot out of his fingertip and fused into the beast core.

“Clap clap clap! Boom boom boom!”

Lightning spilled from his fingertips, and the roar of thunder also came from the center of his hand.

“I have activated all the thunder power inside this beast core for you. It will save you from having to slowly absorb it over time!” Xue Li grinned. “However, you will have some hardship in absorbing it. I hope you can withstand it! Heh, sometimes, overeating is a good experience. Kid, savor it well!”

The beast core that was as bright as a sun released burning lightning and gave off deafening roars of thunder as it rolled towards Qin Lie.

Rank Four spirit beasts could compare to Netherpassage martial practitioners. The beast core was also the source of power for spirit beasts and was akin to the spirit sea of martial practitioners.

At this moment, all the power inside the beast core had been released. The astounding vibrations it gave off caused Qin Lie to pale.

“Martial practitioners that do not cultivate thunder power probably cannot withstand the destructive power of this beast core. But since you cultivate thunder and lightning energy, you should be able to tolerate it.” Xue Li laughed his strange laugh as though he was getting revenge.

The beast core that seemed like a sun landed at the center of Qin Lie’s chest. It was being pushed by a burst of bloody power and attached itself onto Qin Lie’s chest.

“Boom!”

Qin Lie seemed to be struck by a large hammer. His vision blurred and his body shuddered uncontrollably.

The furious and domineering thunder and lighting energy was

like the thunder from the nine levels of hell. The thunder and lightning energy furiously charged into every corner of his body.

Chapter 222: The Eighth Natal Palace!

It was naturally impossible for Xue Li to not feel any hatred towards Qin Lie considering half of his soul had been imprisoned.

While he felt hatred, he didn't dare to truly kill Qin Lie. He didn't dare to die together with Qin Lie.

So he could only bear it.

For him, it undoubtedly was a pleasing matter to find chances to make things difficult for Qin Lie.

The thunder and lightning power inside the Dark Moon Thunder Snake's beast core was ignited and flooded Qin Lie's body. Letting Qin Lie experience the pain of being attacked by thunder and lightning... he was clearly taking the chance to retaliate.

"Kid, you cannot form a Natal Palace just by slowly absorbing it. Only by infusing a vast amount of power into your body all at once will you accomplish your goal." Xue Li grinned and laughed his strange laugh, "You cannot afford to waste time. Do not blame me, I am helping you."

"Will Qin Lie suffer a backlash from the thunder energy?" In the blood pool next to them, Feng Rong was inwardly astounded as worry flashed through her eyes.

The burning lightning resembled thick electrical chains which

restrained Qin Lie's body. Roars of thunder emanated from his bones.

The lightning in that Rank Four spirit beast core was like a little sun that stuck to his heart and released wild and brutal thunder and lightning power.

"Boom boom boom! Boom boom boom!"

In Qin Lie's mind, thunder and lightning from the Ninth Heaven roared. He felt as though he was in a apocalyptic storm, and his mental world was being destroyed by the thunder and lightning.

Threads of fine electricity, similar to needles, shot chaotically through his muscles, blood, and flesh, vibrating in the cracks of his bones.

The pain spread to every bit of flesh. Every cell, every drop of blood.

This pain was multiple times more excruciating than being struck by lightning in a storm.

"AWOO!"

He could not suppress his roar. In this silent forest, it caused the expressions of all the Blood Spear martial practitioners to change.

The sound was like a vicious beast giving out its last reluctant howl as it was about to die.

It robbed people of their courage!

The lightning arced around Qin Lie as a net of dense electricity, dozens of meters in diameter, was formed.

Xue Li and Feng Rong were within its range.

“Heh, when the energy of a Rank Four spirit beast’s power source is released in a single instant, the power is concentrated enough to be seen.” Under the cover of the lightning, strands of bloody mist came out of Xue Li’s body. When the bloody mist came out, the lightning was scattered and unable to approach his thin body.

“Senior, is this... a bit too intense? The release of a Rank Four spirit beast core is akin to a Netherpassage martial practitioner exploding their spirit sea. He’s also in the Natal Opening Realm.” Feng Rong was worried.

She was inside a pool of blood and was unaffected by the lightning. But when she reached out with one of her fingers and lightly touched a blue bolt of lightning, her fingertip instantly turned black. This caused her to realize that every bolt of lightning held a significant amount of lightning power.

As the source, Qin Lie was shrouded by thunder and lightning, how could he tolerate it?

“It’s true he’ll have some hardship. But he won’t die.” Xue Li glanced at her and said indifferently. “You should be able to see the strength of his body. The boy’s body refinement surpasses most of the martial practitioners at his level. Also, he has soaked in the blood pools before and has extremely abundant energy. His vitality is also very strong. If a body as strong as his cannot tolerate this, it would be extremely strange.”

“Senior, with your great strength, how did you come to be imprisoned inside the spirit pattern pillars?” Feng Rong asked.

A light flashed through Xue Li’s eyes, and his face suddenly became twisted like a old, bloodthirsty demon. He hatefully stared at Feng Rong and viciously said, “Lowly servant! The next time you dare to ask this question, I’ll forge you into a blood demon!”

Being imprisoned was a shameful event that would remain forever within his heart. It was restricted, and he wasn’t even willing for others to mention a word about it.

Feng Rong’s face paled and she instantly went silent. She didn’t dare to speak even one more word.

She could only look at Qin Lie.

At this time, she found that Qin Lie was sitting with dignity on the ground, and his expression had turned to one of calm. Even the scalp-tingling howls had stopped.

Qin Lie seemed to have adjusted to the corrosion of the furious thunder and lightning.

What she didn't know was that the power from the Dark Moon Thunder Snake's beast core had gradually moved from Qin Lie's body into his spirit sea's dantian.

Within the spirit sea world of Qin Lie's dantian.

Thick bolts of lightning were like flying dragons that twisted through the spirit sea. They descended from the heavens like countless beaded curtains, seemingly connecting the spirit sea to the firmament above as they filled the world with the vibrations of destructive thunder.

In the dantian that was filled with spirit mist, the seven Natal Palaces were seven eye-catching suns that released yellow, white, and blue light illuminating the entire spirit sea.

"Zzt zzzt zzt! Clap clap clap!"

The electrical dragons rampaged, striking the yellow suns and wrapping around the ice suns which caused these five Natal Palaces to tremble and become brighter.

The other two blue suns seemed to be the core of the thunder and lightning. They also released burning lightning, roared with thunder, and merged with the already wild spirit sea.

Qin Lie's soul consciousness came into this world like a god, gathering the enormous lightning dragons and twisting them together.

"Lightning dragons gather!"

A blurry soul shadow floated like it was an enormous god in the sky above. The mental vibrations it released spread towards every corner of the spirit sea.

All of the lightning dragons that rampaged without regard for direction and all the pure lightning power seemed to hear the summons of the lightning god and proactively popped out of the corners of this world to gather in one location.

"Zzt zzt zzt!"

The long lightning dragons twisted. In Qin Lie's world, the world of his spirit sea, they were controlled by Qin Lie who was akin to the creator, restrained by the rules of the supreme principles. They were like long electrical rivers—

—that slowly gathered between the two hands of the blurry figure!

"Clap clap clap! Boom boom boom!"

The lightning dragons gathered on the enormous palm of Qin Lie's enormous soul figure, and a burning ball of lightning slowly condensed like the birth of a new world.

A completely new world with the thunder and lightning as its laws, with thunder and lightning as its core power, slowly took form between his hands.

"Zzt zzt zzt!"

As the lightning arced, this world of thunder and lightning became even more condensed. It gradually compressed and shrank.

In the end, it shrank into the stable form of a lightning ball.

His eighth Natal Palace had formed!

"Refine it again!" The enormous godly soul figure released a tide of mental power.

There were still many lightning dragons in the spirit sea that coiled around the other two thunder Natal Palaces as though they were increasing the light of the sun, and refined the two thunder and lightning balls.

In the forest shrouded by blood mist.

The enormous lightning net that was woven around Qin Lie slowly shrank. All the strands of lightning retreated into his roaring body.

The Dark Moon Thunder Snake beast core glued to his chest became dim. Many gray-white marks appeared on the glowing beast core. It became a normal stone and cracks started to appear.

“Bang!”

The beast core suddenly exploded. Before the fragments landed on the ground, they turned to powder and dissipated in the wind.

This meant that all the power inside the beast core had been extracted. The beast core that lost all power finally became stone powder that was worth even less than normal stone.

A day and night had passed. Lightning and thunder vibrations no longer came from Qin Lie’s body, and the aura of his soul had become extremely calm.

Xue Li had stopped paying attention to him long ago. His entire person was immersed in the blood pool. The pool of blood was boiling and gave off a great number of bubbles as the blood energy inside moved even more violently.

Only Feng Rong would occasionally open her eyes to look at Qin Lie, worrying that something would happen.

At the gates to Fire District in Armament City.

More and more people were gathering. People had arrived from the five forces and didn't even dare to attack Armament Sect after a full day had passed.

They were waiting, waiting for strong reinforcements. Waiting to take the city in one wave with an attack that would sink Armament Sect in its entirety.

Half a day ago, the Grand Hall Master of Dark Asura Hall, Fu Zhuohui, had arrived with his experts. Four hours ago, the mountain master of Cloud Sky Mountain, Jiang Heng, had come with Fu Chang of the "Three Stones." Two hours ago, the other valley masters of Seven Fiends Valley had arrived as well.

Right now, the master of Purple Mist Sea, Yu Dai, who was furthest from Armament Sect finally arrived.

Other than the tower lord of Dark Tower, Di Shijiu, all leaders of the five forces had arrived and come to the gates of Fire District.

"This is Ziying's finger." Feng Lin handed Yu Dai a jade bottle.

The jade bottle was made from Mystical Cold Jade and held a white finger. A finger that Yu Dai was very familiar with.

When Yu Dai had been young, he had been one famed for being a playboy. Now that he was a middle-aged man, his handsomeness

had not decreased, and he had the charisma of a mature man.

Due to this, Yu Dai at this age was still very handsome and popular, and he still had lovers everywhere. He was still a lover of many.

“Ying’er, Ying’er…” Yu Dai caressed the jade bottle, his handsome face gradually becoming dark and fearsome.

After a while, Yu Dai looked at Cloud Sky Mountain’s Mountain Master Jiang Heng, and at Dark Asura Hall’s Grand Hall Master Fu Zhuohui. He said, “No matter what your Dark Asura Hall and Cloud Sky Mountain think, my Purple Mist Sea will kill all the elders and disciples of Armament Sect! I will leave nothing behind!”

“Wu Tuo’s finger was also cut off, my Cloud Sky Mountain will use all of our strength to help Brother Yu achieve his desire!” Jiang Heng said coldly.

“Seven Fiends Valley also is the same!” Mystical Fiend Valley’s Valley Master Ouyang Sheng also expressed his position.

“Liang Yangzhu has died, Di Shijiu has also disappeared, Dark Shadow Tower will not rest.” Yu Dai nodded in satisfaction and then looked at Fu Zhuohui. “Brother Fu, what is your position?”

“You can make the decision.” Fu Zuohui smiled faintly.

Therefore, the five sides reached an agreement on their attitude towards Armament Sect—to kill all of them.

Chapter 223: Internal Strife

Inside Fire District, Lang Xie sat cross-legged without a hint of blood on his face on a tower that almost reached a hundred meters in height.

The two outer sect elders, Tong Jihua and Cheng Ping, and a few other elite Blood Spear martial practitioners were all standing quietly beside Lang Xie. They were looking down at the city entrance at Jiang Heng, Fu Zhuohui and Yu Dai.

“Other than the missing Di Shijiu, it appears that all of the leaders are here. It looks like they are determined to eliminate Armament Sect.” Cheng Ping just swallowed a medicinal pill earlier and regained some of his color, but his expression was still very heavy while his brows were tightly locked.

“From the moment we harmed Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo, and Si Ziying, Armament Sect and the five forces have become eternal enemies. The fact that Yu Dai and the others would personally come is within our expectations,” Tong Jihua said softly.

Lang Xie frowned and said solemnly, “From the moment the five forces attacked Armament Sect, they are the ones who became our eternal enemies! The only ones who haven’t made up their minds are the sect master and three great reverends. They are the ones who still hold hope and think that both sides can still make peace with each other.”

“But we, Blood Spear, have never thought of making peace from

start to finish. Either Blood Spear is slaughtered to the last man or someday, we will use the spears in our hands and stab them into the foreheads of everyone involved with the five forces if they give us even a moment of reprieve!”

The Blood Spear martial practitioners standing behind him felt their blood boil, and their eyes shined with fearless brutality when they heard his words.

“As long as Blood Spear stands, they will never have peace!” a man exclaimed and grinned, baring all his teeth. His dark red pupils were filled with the scarlet light of violence.

“Unless Blood Spear disappears, we will definitely inflict the invaders with sleepless nights!” someone exclaimed again.

“Either Blood Spear dies or every invader shall die in the end!”

These Blood Spear martial practitioners were all tough experts personally handpicked and trained by Lang Xie. They all saw Lang Xie as their mentor and their god in their hearts!

Once god had given his word, then they must cleanse this world with blood and stain all martial practitioners from the five forces with fresh blood.

“Lord Lang Xie, shouldn’t you return to the blood pools and recuperate? The spirit blood in the blood pools should be able to help you recover swiftly, right?” Cheng Ping asked.

“If I leave and allow outsiders to slip into the city to rescue Shi Jingyun and the others, then wouldn’t Armament City be breached immediately after?” Lang Xie turned around and looked at him. “With the cultivation level you and Tong Jihua possess, you still can’t see detect them, so I can’t leave it to you.”

When he said this, Tong Jihua and Cheng Ping both smiled bitterly and nodded in helplessness.

They truly did not have this capability.

“I am here so I can buy time for Feng Rong and Xue Li. If they can recover swiftly, then they will be able to greatly impact the situation,” Lang Xie said indifferently.

“Sect Master Qin…” Cheng Ping said softly.

“His abilities are minimal in this level of battle. He is just a Natal Opening Realm martial practitioner after all.” Lang Xie shook his head and frowned. “As long as he maintains a cool head, controls Xue Li, and does not issue commands recklessly, it will be sufficient. For the rest… we cannot expect too much.”

Cheng Ping, Tong Jihua, and many other Blood Spear martial practitioners all sighed on the inside. They knew what Lang Xie said was true.

Any one of them could easily kill a Natal Opening Realm Qin Lie.

How useful could he be in such a hopeless situation?

They did not think that Qin Lie could turn the tide once more.

……

“I just received news from Cheng Ping that Yu Dai, Jiang Heng, and Fu Zhuohui have all arrived. They are now gathering in front of Fire District.”

At the procedural hall of Flame Volcano, Meng Chen walked in with a face full of worry while informing the three great reverends about the latest news.

Meng Chen was the fourth inner sect elder. He was careful and timid and never dared to put himself in a dangerous situation. For so many years, Meng Chen had almost never gone out to search for spirit materials—he was worried that he would run into an accident.

They were actually a few more artificers who were just as cowardly as Meng Chen. They did not want to die, nor did they want to walk a dead end with Armament Sect.

“Yu Dai and the others have come to an agreement. They plan to murder everyone in Armament Sect, including artificers like us.” Meng Chen’s eyes shone with panic as he said worriedly, “Th-they’re not planning to capture us. They’re really planning to kill us straight away!”

“We are artificers! We are the most respectable people in this world! How do those damnable martial practitioners dare to treat us like this?” Fifth Elder Qi Zheng lost control and shouted.

Before they heard the news from Cheng Ping, every artificer in this place did not seriously believe that the five great forces would truly kill them.

There were countless forces in the vast Spirit Realm and even more martial practitioners than the stars themselves. Every martial practitioner needed a spirit artifact, and they required an artificer to forge them, repair broken ones, and temper spirit armor...

In nearly every territory and continent, artificers were the most respected. They enjoyed the respect of many forces and were desired by many martial practitioners.

It was exactly because artificers were too rare and important that most forces would choose to pacify them, treat them with respect, and serve them as guests when they had destroyed an enemy force and captured the enemy’s artificers.

There were very few people who would do something as wasteful as killing an artificer.

Therefore, in Meng Chen and Qi Zheng’s eyes, even if Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo, and Su Ziying had each lost a finger, the five great forces would only vent their anger on someone else. When

they had truly broken through the city, they would then vent their anger on Qin Lie.

They did not believe that they would die or think that the five great forces would kill them, because they were artificers, the rarest people in this world.

They believed it in their very bones that their lives were more important than Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo, and Su Ziying. Because of this, they thought their enemies wouldn't kill them considering how incomparably valuable their lives were.

When all these beautiful delusions had suddenly shattered in this very moment and they realized that the five great forces were ready to kill them all, these men of luxurious and privileged lives had become terrified for the first time—truly and completely terrified.

"We will die. We will actually die. Those lowly martial practitioners actually dare treat us like this!" Qin Zheng yelled out somewhat hysterically.

"It's all because of Qin Lie. If Qin Lie hadn't sliced off their fingers, why would the five forces have lost their cool?" Meng Chen also screamed, "I don't want to die! I can't die! I haven't become an Earth rank artificer yet, how can I possibly die at such a moment?"

"No one wants to die!" Luo Zhichang yelled sternly.

“This can’t be right. I need to go, I want to leave Armament Sect! I don’t want to die along with the sect. As long as I’m alive, I will be able to pass down my artifact forging skills. These are all Armament Sect’s core principles of artifact forging. I can help Armament Sect pass down their future!” Qi Zheng’s eyes showed great terror as he slowly lost control of the fear in his heart.

He was the first to fall apart.

“The sect definitely can’t be saved. How about we…” Meng Chen sighed and meekly suggested, “How about we just go our own separate ways? As long as we leave the Scarlet Tide Continent, with our status and skills as artificers, where can’t we gain a footing?”

“That’s right! As long as we leave Scarlet Tide Continent, we can find a random city and be respected by countless people and own everything we have now!” Qi Zheng nodded rapidly, “Let us go. I know that the poisonous bog at the back of the mountain is deserted. As long as we can pass through there, we will be able to escape this crisis and might be able to leave Scarlet Tide Continent. What do you say?”

The three great reverends, Luo Zhichang, Fang Qi and Jiang Hao, suddenly felt a surge of powerlessness. They hadn’t expected Meng Chen and Qin Zheng to lose control of themselves this much after confirming that the five great forces would kill them all.

“The reason the area covered in poisonous fog is deserted is because those who aren’t familiar with the making of poison or who don’t have a deep understanding of poisonous things cannot

survive in it at all." Jiang Hao was unusually calm as he said indifferently, "There are only three people who can walk through the poisonous bog and survive. Xingran can, Elder Mo Hai can, and Lian Rou can barely do it as well."

He turned towards Meng Chen, Qi Zheng, and the others who wore looks of uncertainty and said, "No other Armament Sect elders and disciples except the three of them would be able to survive the poisonous bog. Not even Blood Spear's Lang Xie and Feng Rong may have the ability to do that. Do you really want to try it?"

"Armament City is so difficult to breach, yet the five forces did not dare to send a team to attack us from behind due to the poisonous bog. Is that not proof enough that the place is dangerous?" Fang Qi said coldly.

Meng Chen and Qi Zheng looked ashen as their thoughts to escape slowly died off. After a while, the duo yelled out of nowhere, "It's all because of Qin Lie. What is a young brat doing commanding the sect carelessly about? If it weren't for his reckless actions, we would not have truly angered the five forces and have been confronted with such a fate!"

"Silence!" Luo Zhichang yelled angrily with a hot face. He said sternly, "How many years has Armament Sect raised you for? You only think to preserve your lives when the sect is met with danger. Have you really thought for the sect before?"

"You are truly incomparable to Qin Lie!" Fang Qi snorted with a cold face and said, "He had countless chances to escape while

carrying the three spatial rings with him, yet he did not and instead insisted on staying. Based on this fact alone, he is more qualified than all of you combined. Qin Lie has not even been a part of the sect for more than a year, but how many years have you stayed in Armament Sect? How much blood have you sucked from Armament Sect? Do you truly not have the slightest determination to defend the sect to the end?"

"We..." Meng Chen and Qi Zheng could not say anything.

.....

A bloody cloud covered the forest.

Qin Lie suddenly opened his eyes. Lightning appeared frequently from the depths of his pupils, and there were rumbles of thunder resonating inside his body.

Feng Rong was woken up as she asked with concern, "How are you doing?"

"The eighth Natal Palace has been formed," Qin Lie smiled slightly.

Feng Rong was overjoyed as she excitedly said, "This is great! As long as you can open the ninth Natal Palace, you can be considered to be at the peak of the Natal Opening Realm. You will be infinitely closer to Manifestation Realm!"

“Kid, you now have three thunder Natal Palaces, three earth Natal Palaces, and two ice Natal Palaces.” Xue Li’s voice came from an exploding bloody bubble inside the blood pool, “The balance between three powers will help you break through to Manifestation Realm. Therefore, it would be best if you form this final Natal Palace with the power of frost. Trust me, this distribution is the best choice for the martial path you’re cultivating.”

“Thank you for your guidance, senior.” Qin Lie stood up and headed towards the poisonous bog at the back of the forest.

“Where are you going?” Feng Rong cried out.

“I’m opening my ninth Natal Palace!”

Chapter 224: Astral Projection

At the border of the poisonous bog.

Qin Lie's steps were slow as he paid attention to his surroundings and avoided the patches covered in poisonous miasma.

Before this, it had been Mo Hai who had led everyone in avoiding these dangerous grounds to the border of the poisonous bog to set off the Terminator Profound Bomb.

This time, Qin Lie didn't plan on staying in the poisonous bog for long. He was only searching for a place without people so he could use the Eye of Frost to enter the underground area below the Arctic Mountain Range.

He came to this place and used his mind consciousness to feel around the surroundings to make sure there were no signs of life before he took out the Eye of Frost and activated its wonders.

The layers of glowing, icy light wrapped around him, and his figure gradually became smaller and, in the end, disappeared.

He once again took form in the ice and glacial world.

He landed on top of an icy mountain. Looking at the world made from ice, he turned his attention to the frozen ancient beasts and a cold expression gradually grew on his face.

He adjusted himself, then channeled Frost Arts. He tried to feel the frost concept inside the frost picture scroll to try to take in the ice energy here.

White cold mist gathered from all directions as he circulated his spirit art. They were absorbed into his body and caused him to turn into a glowing ice statue.

He appeared the same as the other vicious beasts sealed here with no signs of life. Even his soul gradually stilled.

But the cold energy still slowly flooded towards him and entered his body, flowing through him into his spirit sea.

Time passed in seconds.

An unknown time later, his spirit sea became icy and started glowing, becoming a glacial world of ice and snow…

Inside the world of his spirit sea, cold energy condensed into snowflakes and fell down. The cloud sea that was composed of pure spirit energy became denser and started to give off cold energy.

The two spherical ice Natal Palaces rolled and spun in this world. They worked together with Frost Arts to take in the frost energy from the outside.

“Clap clap clap! Clap clap clap!”

The three thunder and lightning Natal Palaces that burned like suns shot out domineering bolts of lightning. Those explosions caused the waves of coldness to scatter if it got close.

The other three earth-colored balls were the Natal Palaces that were made from the power of the great earth. They were peaceful in comparison and only released vibrations that would disrupt magnetic fields. Those vibrations would cause the cold energy to drop down and the glowing snowflakes to fall and sink into the spirit energy cloud sea.

“Open a new Natal Palace, open a new Natal Palace…”

With this thought in mind, he channeled Frost Arts and continued to pull in the cold energy in this area.

As more and more cold energy entered him, the spirit energy in his spirit sea started to shift. It seemed to be influenced by the cold energy and slowly became sluggish. The lump of cloud that was made of spirit energy was covered in a thin layer of ice…

The vast spirit sea seemed to gradually freeze to become a frozen world. Other than the two Frost Natal Palaces that were still active, everything else became sluggish, as though they were being frozen.

His body had already become a statue of ice with his blood, flesh, bones, and even his consciousness gradually freezing over as well.

All the activity in his body gradually stopped. While inside a frozen state, even the entire world seemed to be covered in a frosty white.

Other than his floating soul consciousness that could faintly feel his own existence, it seemed that everything else had stopped.

The next moment, he had a strange feeling—he gradually floated out of his physical body.

Like a cloud, he slowly rose. He flew from his body into the sky, and when he looked down, he could still see his body that was frozen in ice. He could see his closed eyes as though he had turned to stone.

He continued to float, becoming able to see even more. Able to see the icy peaks composed from the thirty eight glaciers, and even the fact that every glacier had an ancient beast frozen within it.

By then, he knew that his soul had left his corporeal body and he was having an out-of-body experience.

Astral projection was a wondrous cultivation experience for low level martial practitioners.

Experiencing this state would allow low level martial practitioners to truly recognize the existence of the soul and would allow them to experience the wondrous feeling of their soul

leaving their body.

Just like Qin Lie was right now. When his soul consciousness left his body, he felt cold. He felt as though he became a piece cotton floating that would move wherever the wind blew drifting a long ways away.

This feeling of being disconnected caused him to feel insecure. Danger welled up within him. It made him feel as though he was exposed, terrified as though he could be easily killed.

Just as he started to feel unsafe, he found that his soul perception had become extremely sensitive in this state!

He could clearly feel the flows of cold energy in the surrounding area and the degree of cold energy inside every glacier.

Extremely weak soul fluctuations suddenly emanated from his body, and then he felt them...

His soul suddenly started to shake.

Those were the auras that belonged to the ancient beasts. They were extremely miniscule soul vibrations. In spite of how minuscule they were, they felt vast and ancient and also gave him a sorrowful feeling.

“They’re not dead!”

Qin Lie understood. His soul felt even less safe, and he quickly grasped the reality.

The frozen ancient beasts were just being sealed by the ice. All of them were alive. They did not show any signs of life because they had been sealed for numerous years, so even the energies in their flesh and blood were frozen.

—Just like the present state of his body.

The weak soul auras meant that they had not turned into statues, they were alive!

If one day this world sealed in ice were to be unsealed or these ancient beasts could break through their seals of ice and walk onto the continent...

Qin Lie didn’t dare to continue that line of thought.

Because if that was true, it would be a calamity for all who inhabited Scarlet Tide Continent, it would be a disaster for all living beings.

Just as he was fearful and insecure, one of the soul vibrations of those below suddenly became strong!

He was shocked, and his soul consciousness instantly turned its

attention to the aura of the soul that had strengthened, paying attention to the ancient beast that it belonged to.

It was an enormous python that was coiled up and appeared like a little mountain. Its body was as thick as a river, covered in countless mysterious patterns. If he looked closely, those patterns seemed to made from criss-crossing lightning and seemed to contain the essence of thunder and lightning.

His soul consciousness looked down at the enormous python and had a strange feeling of familiarity—that aura was somewhat similar to the vibrations inside the beast core of the Dark Moon Thunder Snake!

“Dark Moon Thunder Snake? What connection did it have with the Dark Moon Thunder Snake?” Qin Lie was puzzled.

He tried to feel deeper and carefully savored the increasingly strong aura from this enormous python.

Quickly, he came to a conclusion—the Dark Moon Thunder Snake was most likely a descendant of this enormous python. The ancient blood of this enormous python flowed within every Dark Moon Thunder Snake.

This was a terrifying beast that innately understood how to use the power of thunder and lightning!

The lightning patterns on its body were the subtle manifestations

of thunder and lightning power. Its soul aura had gradually grown stronger because it had been attracted to the aura he gave off!

He primarily cultivated Heavenly Thunder Eradication, and his body had been repeatedly tempered by the thunder and lightning from the Ninth Heaven. Even his soul contained the power of thunder. Recently, he had used the Dark Moon Thunder Snake's beast core to create a Natal Palace, and a part of the Dark Moon Thunder Snake's aura still lingered within his soul. With all of these coincidences added together, it caused him to attract the aura of this extraordinary beast below!

"An ancient beast that is born knowing how to manipulate thunder and lightning, an existence that is the ancestor of the Dark Moon Thunder Snake, if I cause a change in this enormous python, if I wake it up..." Qin Lie's mind was shaking uncontrollably.

He urgently wanted his soul to go back into his body.

He didn't dare to maintain this state because didn't want this terrifying beast to wake up from its frozen state as a result of his actions.

When he tried to get his soul back into his body, it went smoothly. His soul consciousness quickly dropped down and entered through the top of his head.

He immediately woke up.

Within the thick ice, he opened his eyes and looked at the enormous python in the distance with trepidation. He tried to feel the fluctuations coming from that direction in this state.

Just like before, he couldn't feel any soul aura. After his soul entered his corporeal body, he was unable to feel weak wisps of soul auras, so in this state, it seemed his perception was clearly weaker.

Temporarily stopping his cultivation of Frost Arts, he took out the Eye of Frost and looked at the enormous python with a grave expression.

He was staring at it for any signs of movement. If the python showed anything that might signal that it was stirring awake, he was prepared to leave this place at any moment.

He didn't know what rank that ancient beast was. At this time, if it suddenly broke through its icy restraints, he didn't know whether or not it would destroy the Arctic Mountain Range in its entirety.

He had to be careful.

Yet after waiting for a long time, he didn't see any signs of stirring from the ancient beast, nor did he feel any unusual soul fluctuations.

He put his mind to rest and he put away the Eye of Frost. He sat

down again and started to cultivate Frost Arts once more.

This time, he was not able to enter the state of astral projection. Just like normal, he gathered cold energy and tried to construct the ninth Natal Palace inside his spirit sea.

His body once again turned to a statue of ice.

What he did not know was that when he was cultivating Frost Arts, an extremely faint diagram appeared on his neck.

Because the diagram was too faint and blurry, it wasn't possible to see the shape or what it was.

Yet as he focused on his cultivation and gathered his attention to form his ninth Natal Palace, the diagram on his neck started to become solid as time passed. It started to become clear...

Several hours later, the general shape of the diagram formed—something shaped like a snake.

It seemed like a snake tattoo.

A time later, the diagram became even clearer. The thing shaped like a snake now showed the shape of its body, the parts of its head, and the scale patterns.

It was the enormous python that was close by!

It was imprinted on Qin Lie’s neck in a size exponentially smaller and was an extremely life-like python tattoo.

But it only appeared for a few short minutes before it slowly faded away until it disappeared completely.

Chapter 225: Temple Envoy

“Where’s Qin Lie?”

Luo Zhichang, along with Fang Qi and Jiang Hao, arrived at the forest at the rear of the mountain, hoping to ask about the current situation.

In the midst of the forest pervaded by blood mist, quite a few exhausted looking Blood Spear martial practitioners were immersed within blood pools, recovering their strength. Even upon seeing the arrival of the three great reverends, they could only stiffly nod in salute.

“Instructor Feng probably knows about the whereabouts of Sect Master Qin,” replied one of them.

Thus, the three great reverends, enduring the pungent smell of blood, traversed further into the depths of the forest. They went directly to the area where Feng Rong and Xue Li were cultivating.

“Greetings, great reverends.” As Feng Rong soaked within the pool, color gradually returned to her face. “Qin Lie went over to the poisonous bog area. He said he was going to form his ninth Natal Palace and that he was going to break through into the Manifestation Realm as quickly as possible.”

“Breaking through to the Manifestation Realm isn’t that easy. Ah, to try and advance in just several days, isn’t that forcing it a little too much?” asked Fang Qi.

“It would have been better if he just simply forged a few more Terminator Profound Bombs,” agreed Jiang Hao.

After having seen the might of the Terminator Profound Bombs, the three great reverends had all agreed that this device which contained such explosive power could indeed inflict the enemy with a heavy blow. Thus, they all believed that it was worth it for Armament Sect to invest all of its resources into forging them en masse.

The reason they had come over to find Qin Lie was because they hoped he would be willing to reveal the creation process for the Terminator Profound Bombs so that the entirety of Armament Sect’s Artificers could work on creating them.

They had all since taken to heart Xue Li’s words—that if the grade of a Terminator Profound Bomb was high enough, it would be able destroy Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple!

In their minds, although Qin Lie’s artificing skills were absolutely shocking, he was still too young and his experience in artificing was still too little. In terms of attainment in artificing, he was definitely unable to surpass Mo Hai and other inner sect elders.

If... if Mo Hai and the other inner sect elders were able to forge Terminator Profound Bombs...

Such fantasies played themselves in the depths of the minds of the three great reverends. They were certain that the Terminator Profound Bombs forged by Mo Hai and the other inner sect elders would definitely be at least a grade higher than Qin Lie's and perhaps play a truly decisive role who had the final word.

"Heh, you want the forging methods for the Terminator Profound Bomb? You want the list of spirit materials and detailed configuration process, right?"

From within the pool from which fist sized bubbles of blood emerged, the cynical cackle of Xue Li emanated out. "The forging method of the Terminator Profound Bomb, from my point of view, is something which cannot be told to others. In the case this kind of overbearing, wondrous treasure, which is enough to transform a sect and even an entire continent, is leaked, I'm afraid it would give birth to many incidents."

The expressions of the three great reverends became solemn.

Luo Zhichang said, "Senior's words are very true. The power of the Terminator Profound Bomb is much too terrifying. If someone else were to acquire it, I'm afraid it would indeed cause numerous calamitous events to break out. For us to come over and make this request, we naturally will ensure that upon receiving the forging methods, we will treat it as the most important and most valuable secret of Armament Sect. We will definitely not allow it to be leaked!"

"As a nearly extinguished sect, all of your promises are fragile and weak, especially ones which deal with your own artificers.

Those are the least convincing." Xue Li's ghastly voice emanated out through the constant popping sounds of blood bubbles exploding. "The vast majority of artificers are ones who enjoy life and fear death. Even though there are occasionally one or two who have stronger willpower, their cultivation is not enough and are nonetheless unable to withstand being tortured.

"As for you all?" Xue Li cackled, "As soon as your sect is destroyed, if I wanted to seize the forging process of the Terminator Profound Bomb from your minds, I would have a hundred ways to do so. Do you believe me?"

As his words faded, a dense, fiendish aura engulfed the entire mountain forest and immediately entered the minds of the three great reverends.

After a moment, the three great reverends suddenly felt as if they had been pulled into a blood-filled purgatory. Numerous bloodthirsty demons and monsters had appeared in front of them and were charging at them.

Countless blood colored monsters cackled as they ravaged through the three great reverends' minds and seized their various memories. They bound up all the specks of light that represented their memory imprints, as if they were going to drag them out of the reverends' minds.

"AHHHH!"

The three great reverends clutched their heads as they tragically screamed out, their faces devoid of color. It was as if they were

about to lose all of their memories.

"Senior!" cried Feng Rong.

Xue Li just coldly cackled.

All of the bloodthirsty, evil spirits, which had invaded the minds of the three great reverends, quickly withdrew like the tide, disappearing in the blink of an eye.

The illusionary sea of blood that they saw also gradually returned to normal, eventually turning back into the mountain forest at the rear of the mountain.

"You three can be considered to be quite tough. As for those other inner sect elders, I'm afraid it would have been even more unbearable." Xue Li scoffed, "If you give those people the formula for forging Terminator Profound Bombs, then if the people of Eight Extreme Temple and Profound Heaven Alliance want to find and take it, they will truly have no difficulties."

The three great reverends all had expressions of embarrassment on their faces.

"If we can mass produce these Terminator Profound Bombs, perhaps... perhaps our sect won't be destroyed. If our enemies cannot break in, then it isn't possible for them to control us," whispered Jiang Hao.

“Learning the steps to forging such a wondrous treasure will require a period of time. However, you all don’t quite have such!” Xue Li coldly snickered, “In regard to the Terminator Profound Bomb, you all should care less. This thing isn’t something you all can acquire. It would be much better for you all to just remain on the mountain!”

The eyes of the three great reverends darkened.

Xue Li had pointed out the crucial flaw in their plan. Even if they had the facilities and resources to forge Terminator Profound Bombs, it wasn’t something they could instantly learn how to do.

Furthermore, there was no way that Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple would give them that much time.

Three days later.

A male riding atop a Green Hunting Bat descended from amidst the clouds in the sky, landing in front of the gate to Armament City’s Fire District.

“It’s a Rank Four spirit beast, a Green Hunting Bat!” loudly exclaimed Cloud Sky Mountain’s Ji Liu.

“It’s the messenger from Eight Extreme Temple!” Jiang Yuan whispered as he immediately walked forward, respectfully saying, “Cloud Sky Mountain’s Jiang Yuan greets the Temple’s Envoy.”

“Purple Mist Sea’s Yu Dai greets the Temple’s Envoy,” saluted Yu Dai, walking forward.

Cloud Sky Mountain and Purple Mist Sea were both vassal forces of Eight Extreme Palace. Even though Jiang Yuan and Yu Dai were both arrogant people, upon seeing the messenger in the sky, they couldn’t help but respectfully bow at this time.

This was because, one day, when they stepped into the next realm, they would enter Eight Extreme Temple and become a part of it.

“I am the temple’s Green Robed Envoy Zhan Tianyi. What’s the situation like right now?” The messenger dismounted from the Green Hunting Bat. He wore green colored robes which were covered with a magnificent, grand palace insignia. Bathed in the sun’s rays, the palace insignia gave off a sacred, untouchable feeling of majesty.

—It was Eight Extreme Temple, a renowned sacred temple built on top of Skypiercing Mountain.

Skypiercing Mountain was rumored to be the tallest mountain in all of Scarlet Tide Continent. Its peak directly penetrated into the depths of the clouds.

Eight Extreme Temple was located atop the peak of Skypiercing Mountain. Its Temple of Cultivation was grand and magnificent and was perennially within the depths of the clouds where it silently towered, mysteriously fading in and out of sight.

Perhaps it was because Eight Extreme Temple was located so high up, but all of the truly high-ranked practitioners of Eight Extreme Temple would have flying mounts.

The Rank Four Green Hunting Bat was the standard mount of a green robed envoy. It was able to bring its rider smoothly into the extremities of the sky, and thus, was a convenient way for them to enter and exit Eight Extreme Temple.

The external practitioners of Eight Extreme Temple were called envoys and were separated into white robed, green robed, and golden robed envoys.

Among these, white robed envoys had the lowest status, as their mount was a Rank Three Golden Boned Bird. Tu Xi, an early stage Fulfillment Realm practitioner, was a white robed envoy.

Green robed envoys had statuses that were one level higher and had Rank Four Green Hunting Bats as their mounts. They usually had a cultivation in the late stage of the Fulfillment Realm and were the backbone of Eight Extreme Temple.

As for the almighty gold robed envoys, they were rarely seen moving atop the continent. Not even the leaders of the vassal forces, Purple Mist Sea and Cloud Sky Mountain, knew what the general realm and mount of gold robed envoys were.

They only knew Eight Extreme Temple generally only dispatched white robed and green robed envoys for external affairs, as there

usually wasn't the need for a gold robed envoy to personally deal with anything.

It was rumored that every time a gold robed envoy moved, a torrential rain of blood would follow. The heads of countless martial practitioners would litter the ground.

Based on what Yu Dai and Jiang Yuan knew, within Eight Extreme Temple, there were no more than five gold robed envoys. Each one of them was a gem of Eight Extreme Temple, a taboo power of Eight Extreme Temple.

They were only loyal to the temple master.

"Before your arrival, we didn't dare act rashly and thus have just gathered here," replied Jiang Yuan.

"Envoy, Xie Zhizhang of the Xie Family has also been imprisoned at Armament Sect's plaza," reminded Yu Dai.

Green Robed Envoy Zhan Tianyi lightly chuckled and nodded, "Interesting. It seems as if this Armament Sect truly cannot be taken lightly. Even Xie Zhizhang has taken a loss. It is fortunate that the temple and Profound Heaven Alliance have made moves now. If we had given them another ten or so years to develop, Armament Sect might have truly become a Copper rank force, becoming the third one alongside the temple and Profound Heaven Alliance."

“The temple is indeed wise,” said Jiang Yuan respectfully.

Zhan Tianyi squinted as he looked towards the side of Dark Asura Hall and Seven Fiends Valley, his gaze eventually landing on the figure of Xie Jingxuan. He began to laugh as he asked, “Now that Xie Zhizhang has been imprisoned, what has the Xie Family’s attitude been like?”

“They have ceased all movements and are waiting for reinforcements to arrive,” Yu Dai chipped in.

Zhan Tianyi nodded, then said, “Then let us continue waiting. I want to see who Profound Heaven Alliance is going to send over.”

And thus, everyone continued waiting.

Another two days passed.

A middle aged man, holding an ancient text in his hand and wearing white scholar’s robes appeared riding atop a Silver Armored Giant Alligator. No one had any clue as to where he had suddenly emerged from.

“Song Siyuan!” Upon seeing the newcomer, Zhan Tianyi suddenly began to laugh. “It seems like Profound Heaven Alliance is truly not holding anything back.”

“Uncle Song,” whispered Xie Jingxuan. She bowed in salute, a bright light flashing through her eyes.

The body of the Rank Four Silver Armored Giant Alligator was ten or so meters long. It was like a moving mountain of flesh. Its body was covered in grayish brown folds of skin and its eyes were the size of fists. Within those very eyes, a terrifying, soul-shocking glint flashed, causing everyone to shudder.

Upon seeing the Green Hunting Bat, the Silver Armored Giant Alligator growled as violent fluctuations of energy began to exude from its giant body.

As for the crouched Green Hunting Bat beside Zhan Tianyi, it flew into the skies where it began to circle. It began to incessantly caw sharp noises, unwilling to show weakness as it began to confront the Silver Armored Giant Alligator.

“Behave.” The man atop the giant alligator furrowed his brows shouted a command before immediately beginning to chuckle. He nodded towards Xie Jingxuan. “When I was leaving, your father specifically told me that I had to definitely rescue your second uncle first. You can rest assured that this time, I will not ignore the safety of Brother Xie and act recklessly.”

Xie Jingxuan let out an obvious breath of air. “Thank you, Uncle Song.”

“Brother Song, if you put it this way, then does it mean that you already have a plan for rescuing them?”

Zhan Tianyi’s gaze focused on the figure of Song Siyuan, ignoring

the nearby practitioners of Dark Asura Hall, Seven Fiends Valley, Dark Shadow Tower, Cloud Sky Mountain, and Purple Mist Sea.

This was a conversation between the higher status practitioners only.

“Leave the rescuing to me. Just put in some more effort later on when we start fighting,” chuckled Song Siyuan.

Afterwards, under the gazes of everyone there, Song Siyuan’s body suddenly became transparent, as though his flesh and skin had turned into some sort of transparent crystal. This abnormality lasted for a while with his body turning increasingly see-through.

It reached the point where his body slowly disappeared from everyone’s sights, turning completely invisible.

Chapter 226: Dead End

“Something’s not right. I don’t know why, but I feel a little disturbed.” Inside Fire District’s tower, Lang Xie awoke from deep cultivation.

A blood cocoon had formed on the surface of his body, and it wrapped around tightly so not a trace of his bloody aura would seep out. This way, he would be able to gather his flesh, blood, and energy at the highest degree.

As he woke up, the thick cocoon fell off his skin like old tree bark. His scarlet pupils shook with worry. “Something dangerous is on the horizon,” he said as he turned to look at the city entrance not far away.

The five great forces had long withdrawn. When Zhan Tianyi and Song Siyuan had arrived, they also chose to stay away from Armament City out of sight.

Lang Xie looked at the front but noticed nothing wrong. He simply instructed the blood guard behind them, “Go to the plaza. Send more people over and keep a tight watch of that area!”

“Understood.” A blood guard hurriedly left.

……

At the plaza where the twelve spirit pattern pillars were.

A thick, long, and blood-stained chain had entangled itself around three spirit pattern pillars, and there was a person shackled to each of these three pillars—Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo and Si Ziying.

After losing a finger, these distinguished people of incredibly high status, from Seven Fiends Valley, Cloud Sky Mountain, and Purple Mist Sea had long lost their arrogance and become obedient.

During this time, they were all very quiet and seldom talked to each other.

When Xie Zhizhang had been thrown over by Xue Li and had fallen over like a bloody blob right in between them, the trio had grown even quieter.

There were a dozen odd Blood Spear martial practitioners at the sides of the plaza, and another dozen or so outer sect martial practitioners forming defensive lines. They watched over these four without rest.

They knew full well that these four were critical in preventing the five forces from easily destroying the weak points of the city.

As long as these four were not rescued, then the five forces would definitely not dare to continue their assault. They would be able to buy time for the sect to think up a new round of countermeasures.

Out of nowhere, ripples appeared in the air. The wind in the plaza grew stronger...

“That’s odd, I feel like something passed by me just now,” a blood guard whispered to himself doubtfully.

He frowned and turned to the plaza, looking at Shi Jingyun and the others before glancing at Xie Zhizhang, who was wrapped into a bloody blob with only his head exposed. It seemed nothing was out of the ordinary.

Therefore, he continued to bow his head and cultivate.

While his head was lowered, Xie Zhizhang, who had his eyes closed all this time opened his eyes.

After being trapped for such a long time, Xie Zhizhang’s fresh blood still remained coagulated. His dantian’s spirit sea was contaminated by a plasma that prevented him from gathering even his spirit energy.

However, his mind detection ability wasn’t affected too much. He had sensed a very well hidden soul aura.

An aura that he was very familiar with...

“Siyuan is here.” Xie Zhizhang’s eyes relaxed.

After focusing his mind and sensing the area for a bit, he opened his mouth and made a yawning motion.

A pill that smelled slightly like fish was immediately pushed into his mouth by an invisible hand.

Xie Zhizhang closed his mouth and swallowed the pill. He could clearly feel a strange, thin long fish consuming the energy in his body.

—Consuming the shackling powers that came from Xue Li.

“Wall Breaking Flying Fish Pill!” Xie Zhizhang secretly turned excited.

The flying fish were refined from special fish eggs to specially consume this type of shackling energy. It could break through all sorts of energy barriers which was why it was called the Wall Breaking Flying Fish Pill.

As the flying fish consumed the shackling energy on his body, Xie Zhizhang’s sluggish mind swiftly healed.

After a while, the bloody light of the blob on Xie Zhizhang’s body slowly grew dimmer.

Xie Zhizhang suddenly nodded towards the air and said, “Thank you, Brother Siyuan for your assistance. I am fine now.”

“Kra-kra-krak!”

A strange noise abruptly came from the blood-stained shackles binding Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo, and Su Ziying. It was as if they were being torn apart.

The trio that had been shackled for a long time immediately escaped the chains and regained their freedom.

When the surrounding blood guards had noticed something wrong and cried out, Song Siyuan’s body slowly appeared. He smiled coolly and spoke towards Xie Zhizhang, “How did you lose?”

“Armament Sect is hiding an old demon. He is probably even more terrifying than that You Hongzhi in the past. If I’m not mistaken, that person should be You Hongzhi’s master,” Xie Zhizhang answered solemnly.

“It’s not that Li Mu?” Song Siyuan looked shocked.

“No.” Xie Zhizhang shook his head.

The duo was speaking as if there was no one around them. They paid no heed to the surrounding Blood Spear martial practitioners at all. In fact, they didn’t even see Armament City itself as a threat.

“He’s here!” Xie Zhizhang did not look at the Blood Spear martial practitioners but instead fiercely stared at the back of the mountain.

A thick blood fiend aura rose from the forest behind the mountain, and a boiling cloud of blood rushed over to them.

“Who broke through my blood shackling arts!” Xue Li’s eerie chuckle came from the torrential blood cloud, causing the sky to seemingly shake along with the shockwave.

Song Siyuan looked up to the sky and took out an ancient book in his hands before saying, “I did.”

“Heh. So it’s a someone of the late stage of the Fulfillment Realm. It looks like the threat to Armament Sect has finally arrived.” Xue Li’s body, which was as thin as a dry mummy, fell down from the thick cloud of blood in the sky, landing on the plaza. His bloody red eyes peered at Song Siyuan once before nodding. He said, “And the other one?”

“He’ll be arriving shortly,” Song Siyuan answered before bowing slightly. Politely, he asked, “Where do you come from, senior?”

“Don’t give me that polite shit brat, it makes my ears itch. As for where I come from, there’s no use telling you this, so you can save the worry.” Xue Li grinned with a very relaxed look on his face. “So there are two fellows in the late stage of the Fulfillment Realm. I can’t handle you guys yet, and that Qin Lie kid still hasn’t appeared yet. It looks like Armament Sect is about to perish.”

He looked utterly careless.

Song Siyuan and Xie Zhizhang froze instead. They looked at him strangely and said, “Senior, shouldn’t you want to defend Armament Sect to the death?”

“I have nothing to do with Armament Sect whatsoever. I don’t care at all if this sect perishes or not.” Xue Li sat down and said with a bizarre look, “I simply had an agreement with Qin Lie, but there is a limit to it. I would not waste my powers to throw my life away.”

Song Siyuan and Xie Zhizhang suddenly felt a little confused.

After a moment’s hesitation, Xie Zhizhang narrowed his eyes and sent Xie Jingxuan a message, “Begin the siege!”

At the city entrance, the exquisite trinket at Xie Jingxuan’s neck suddenly lit up. After sensing it for a bit, joy appeared in her eyes as she said, “Second uncle has escaped. He’s asking us to attack the city. It should be save now.”

“Mn, all the people who were bound have regained their freedom. You can act now.” Zhan Tianyi from Eight Extreme Temple appeared out of nowhere while riding a Green Hunting Bat. While flying towards Armament Sect, he ordered them from the sky, “Slaughter everyone within the city!”

After being forced to hold back for such a long time, all the martial practitioners from the five forces wore dark faces and roared, “Invade the city! Leave no one alive!”

The three forces of Cloud Sky Mountain, Seven Fiends Valley, and Purple Mist Sea especially were feeling murderous to the brim. Many of the cried out loudly.

“Take revenge for Boss Shi!”

“Take revenge for Big Boss Wu!”

“Slaughter Armament Sect for Second Mistress!”

……

At the underground area of the Arctic Mountain Range.

Qin Lie, who was sitting on top of a glacier and channeling the Frost Arts, was suddenly awakened by an intense soul fluctuation. It was coming from the half of Xue Li’s soul hidden inside the Soul Suppressing Orb. “Kid, Armament Sect is just about to perish!”

“Creak creak creak!”

Ice exploded from Qin Lie’s body as he swiftly pulled himself out of the ice. His expression grew heavy.

His mind consciousness inspected inside himself, and he realized that the ninth Natal Palace inside his dantian's spirit sea had not formed yet.

He hadn't even entered the peak of the Natal Opening Realm and was still very far away from breaking through to the Manifestation Realm.

"There's just not enough time..." He sighed deeply.

It really was an impossible hope to form two Natal Palaces and ascend to the Manifestation Realm in just ten days.

"Two martial practitioners in the late stage of the Fulfillment Realm have arrived, and that Xie Zhizhang has escaped. The three prisoners had also been freed..." Xue Li's soul consciousness continued, "I told you before that helping the sect master recover would expend my blood essence. For a short time, my combat capabilities would be weakened. I cannot deal with the two martial practitioners at the late stage of the Fulfillment Realm right now, so I will not fight to the death. This Armament whatever Sect is going to perish very soon. Right now, the five Black Iron forces are already attacking the city. They will slaughter the whole city... Do you want to have a look?"

"Is there no way at all?" Qin Lie replied with his soul.

"I also told you before that unless you stepped into the Manifestation Realm sometime soon, the destruction of your sect cannot be prevented. Have you reached the Manifestation Realm

yet?” Xue Li asked.

“No.”

“Then this sect shall await its destruction.”

At the peak of the glacier, Qin Lie’s expression had turned extremely serious. The pressure from Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple was so heavy that he felt like he would suffocate from it alone.

It was a situation that even Xue Li was helpless to change. How could Armament Sect stop this, and who else could keep them standing?

Was the sect’s fall truly fated and unstoppable?

He thought of everything he could to attempt to overturn this situation, but he realized that unless Armament Sect’s people were transferred to this ice land, there seemed to be no other way.

Unfortunately, Li Mu had told him before he left that with the Eye of Frost alone, he could at most transfer two people in and out of this land.

This meant that this final plan would not work either.

“I have done all I can. Now I can only return to Armament Sect

and hopefully do whatever little I can.” After a long while, Qin Lie let out a sigh and activated the Eye of Frost. He returned to the poisonous bog.

He rushed towards Armament Sect at top speed.

He only wanted to contribute his final efforts, hoping to save the people he truly cared for from that hopeless dead end.

“The five forces have invaded Armament City!”

“Armament Sect is about to be destroyed!”

“Where is Qin Lie? Why didn’t Xue Li act?!”

“As the sect master, where is Qin Lie, and why hasn’t he shown up?!”

“Did he not even have the courage to see his sect perish!”

Many angry yells came from every direction of Armament Sect. The moment where the sect was facing its destruction, many people were thoroughly disappointed that Qin Lie had not yet shown up as the proxy sect master.

Chapter 227: Wailing And Despair Abound

Long before the five great forces had planned to attack Armament City, they had been quietly transferring their personnel out of the city.

When the five great forces actually began to clean up the city, even more scattered martial practitioners left and evacuated this dangerous place.

Armament City of the past was a core portion of the surrounding five forces' territory. It was their trading center. Not only did Dark Asura Hall, Seven Fiends Valley, Dark Shadow Tower, Cloud Sky Mountain, and Purple Mist Sea's martial practitioners gather here, this was even somewhere where their subordinate forces had set up bases.

Without exaggerating in the slightest, before the attack happened, Armament City was most definitely the most flourishing city in the area.

However, there were few people who walked the streets of Armament City today. Once in a while, there would occasionally be a figure or two walking through its open Streets.

Though those figures would only be Armament Sect's own martial practitioners rushing by.

The extremely busy Armament City had gone downhill and become desolate in a short period of time, as if it had been

abandoned completely.

But today, the Armament City that had been deserted for an extended period of time became lively once more.

However, blood, robbery, slaughter, and destruction was what was pushing forward this liveliness!

The five great forces were officially entering the city to begin a destructive cleansing operation of Armament Sect. They wanted to slaughter Armament City to the last man!

“Every Armament Sect martial practitioner that you see, be it elders, disciples, or whether they are a part of the inner sect or outer sect, slaughter every last one of them!” Yu Dai’s pleasant voice had turned cold and dark at this point. His words caused a chill to run up people’s backs.

“Destroy the sect! Slaughter every man alive!” Cloud Sky Mountain’s Mountain Master Jiang Yuan also ordered.

“Kill kill kill!”

“Take revenge for Boss Shi!”

“Take revenge for Big Boss Wu!”

“Take revenge for Second Mistress!”

Countless, murderous figures began to sweep the city, slaughtering every living man alive.

With the Fire District city entrance as their starting point, the invading five forces' martial practitioners flooded each city's area like swarms of locusts.

Terrible, anguished cries rang out from time to time from certain districts and the mouths of Armament Sect's martial practitioners.

The Armament Sect martial practitioners scattered at the four great city districts had escaped the last crisis, but they were not able to escape this slaughter. They were captured, decapitated, and had their bones cut into pieces by the sharp blades of those who had rushed into hidden rooms, secret passageways, and the gap between the fake hill...

Wailing and despair filled the city to the brim. No matter where one looked, there were Armament Sect martial practitioners who died in a horrific manner, and coinciding with these deaths were terrified screams.

"Yi Yuan, you don't look too good. What's wrong? Could it be that you've really developed some feelings for this sect?" Inside a manor of Wind District, a young, sexy girl with a beauty mark at the corner of her lips and who was wearing a rose-colored dress teased him.

There were six Armament Sect outer sect foreign delegates inside this manor. They had all been captured from the cellar.

These six people had already been beheaded and mutilated into many pieces.

Blood could be seen everywhere one looked. The entire manor was completely stained red, and the terrible stench would cause all who smelled it to feel like vomiting.

The dozen or so Purple Mist Sea martial practitioners who conducted this bloody slaughter just now were led by this young woman. They were now wiping off the blood stains on their spirit artifacts.

Yi Yuan's usual gentle smile was gone even before he entered the city. He had become unusually silent and had not said a word after walking into the city.

Facing the girl's teasing, Yi Yuan sighed inside his heart and said not a word.

"Yi Yuan, since when did you become so sentimental? Didn't you come to Armament Sect for a woman? Why haven't you gotten her yet?" A brawny man with a thick beard grinned and began chuckling oddly like a bear, "In my opinion, you should just capture her, push her to the ground, and be done with it. If it felt really satisfying, then just imprison her and slowly enjoy her. Why do you need to develop any feelings?"

"Shut up Tie Xiong, what the hell do you know about feelings!" the young girl with a beauty mark scolded him angrily.

“Heh, it’s not like old me knows what feelings are anyway.” The brawny man known as Tie Xiong with a greatsword on his shoulder said with the voice of a huge bell, “Sister Cang Li, do you know what feelings are?”

“Of course I understand! It’s just, it’s just that I haven’t met the right person!” Cang Li glanced at Yi Yuan. There was unconcealed light hidden within her passionate eyes.

The surrounding Purple Mist Sea martial practitioners all chuckled oddly at her words.

It was as if everyone knew that she had deep feelings for Yi Yuan.

“Tie Xiong, this Sky Flame Sword of yours was forged by Armament Sect’s Tang Siqi.” Yi Yuan, who had been silent for a long time calmly continued, “I still remember that the sea had commissioned Armament Sect to forge a batch of spirit artifacts three years ago. Your Sky Flame Sword was one of them. I still remember that it was made by Tang Siqi herself and how excited and happy you are after receiving it. You even hugged the sword as you slept…”

“The Sky Flame Sword feels great in my hands. I treat it as my second life. Armament Sect sucks at a lot of things, but it definitely is first grade when it comes to artifact forging!” Tie Xiong laughed loudly.

Yi Yuan then looked at the people around him one after another

and continued, “Huang Nan, your Crescent Hook was forged by my Lian Rou. Liu Tang, your Flowing Cloud Butterfly was forged by first inner sect disciple, Pan Xuan…

“All of your spirit artifacts came from Armament Sect. They are also the people you are about to slaughter.” Yi Yuan frowned. “But you seem to feel neither a twinge of concern nor pity at all. Have you ever thought about who is going to fix your spirit artifacts when they’re broken once they are all dead? Who is going to forge a higher grade spirit artifact for you once you’ve broken through to a higher realm?”

When he finished, the group of Purple Mist Sea martial practitioners had a short moment of silence.

But soon, Cang Li broke the silence and said uncaringly, “Armament Sect may be gone, but there are still other artificers. From what I know, Eight Extreme Temple and Profound Heaven Alliance’s spirit artifacts did not come from Armament Sect. Armament Sect may be rather famous on this continent, but that is all. There are plenty of artificers out there, and there are plenty of people who are better than those of Armament Sect as well.”

After a pause, Cang Li looked somewhat strangely at him before sneering, “Yi Yuan, you changed a lot after staying in Armament Sect for a year. You became sentimental and merciful. Can a single woman really turn that cold-blooded Yi Yuan of the past around?”

Yi Yuan snorted coldly.

“I will find that woman, hehe, and I will kill her. I will kill her right in before your very eyes. Yi Yuan, I want you to turn back to who you were before!” Cang Li laughed somewhat maniacally.

“If you dare touch her, I will definitely kill you!” Yi Yuan’s pupils shone with light as sharp as blades.

“The old you can kill me. I wonder if the current you still has that ability? I’m actually looking forward to it now!” Cang Li exclaimed coldly.

On the street of a district.

Jiu Liuyu watched as an Armament Sect foreign delegate slowly drew his last breath. Her expression was dark as she coldly mocked, “A mere Natal Opening Realm brat dares to act so ostentiously. He wants me to personally beg him for Old Shi and Lu Li’s release? What fantastic nonsense!”

From the mouth of this foreign delegate, she knew that Qin Lie had boasted on the plaza that he wanted her to meet him personally and her to beg him for Shi Jingyun and Lu Li.

“Cut this man’s tongue off,” Jiu Liuyu ordered in disgust.

“But valley master, he’s… he’s already dead…” the lady from Dark Fiend Valley said in slight surprise.

“Do I look like I don’t know he’s dead?” Jiu Liuyu said with a

dark face, “Do you have a problem understanding my words?”

The lady shuddered and did not dare to say another word. She hurriedly lifted a short sword and cut that outer sect foreign delegate’s tongue.

“Mince it!” Jiu Liuyu ordered again.

The lady grew more and more terrified, but she did not dare to ignore her orders. She hurriedly minced that tongue into smithereens.

“A brat who didn’t even have the qualification to see me four years ago dares to ask me to beg before him? This is the funniest joke I’ve heard in my life!” Jiu Liuyu laughed fiercely.

“Valley master, Yushi and him…” someone reminded her softly.

Jiu Liuyu’s eyes were cold as she let out a terrifyingly cold laugh, “I will make Yushi do it with her own hands. I will have her help me cut that brat’s tongue to pieces. I will allow the person he loves to end his lowly life!”

The numerous Seven Fiends Valley martial practitioners who heard her words felt frigid cold from the bottom of their heart while unconcealed fear appeared in their eyes.

The Rank Four Green Hunting Bat landed on the plaza beside Song Siyuan and Xie Zhizhang like a demonic shadow under the

dark sky.

Zhan Tianyi dismounted and looked at Xue Li, asking, “Are you that old demon, You Hongzhi’s master?”

Xue Li’s eyebrows jumped as a bloody light flashed across his eyes. He humphed, “Junior, has your sect never taught you about manners? Did they not tell you what kind of etiquette you should use when facing your elders?”

“If it is an elder deserving of my respect, then naturally I will treat them so. As for you…” Zhan Tianyi sneered, “Heh, you’re not worthy.”

Xue Li grinned and chuckled twice in a low tone. He nodded and did not say anything.

However, a terrific killing intent appeared abruptly from his body before vanishing into nothingness.

“Brother Song, Brother Xie, why haven’t you guys taken action yet?” Zhan Tianyi said in surprise.

“The reason I’m here is just to guarantee Armament Sect’s destruction. I’m here to make sure this person will not interfere with Armament Sect’s fall,” Song Siyuan said with a collected expression while holding an ancient book. “As long as he doesn’t act, I will not act either. I do not want to cause unnecessary trouble.”

He had an emergency discussion with the patriarchs of Profound Heaven Alliance's three great families before he came.

All three of them agreed in unison that a person who can shackle Xie Zhizhang must have an unusual background. They could be an expert from another continent.

Since they could not confirm Xue Li's identity, they did not want to provoke unnecessary trouble either. They simply hoped to eliminate Armament Sect so that they would not ascend into a Copper force in the future and split their cultivation resources.

In comparison to Eight Extreme Temple, Profound Heaven Alliance was a far more cautious force. They requested for stability in their work and would not easily provoke trouble.

"We of Eight Extreme Temple are not as peaceful as you are. Anyone who stands in our way must be slaughtered completely." Zhan Tianyi's expression straightened as he said seriously, "Old demon, I am going to kill you now."

Xue Li was so angry that he smiled instead and nodded continuously, "Good! Very good! Let's see how you can kill me!"

"I'll kill you like this." Zhan Tianyi's bones creaked endlessly as his body became incredibly brawny and layers of clear, white light appeared on his face. The light was vast and boundless as if it was released from a god.

A set of armor formed from white light covered his body, causing him to instantly gain a sacred, inviolable dignity.

The sacred and majestic energy rippled continuously around him, causing space itself to distort.

At this moment, it was as if Zhan Tianyi had transformed into a god. His aura had grown incredibly shocking.

Chapter 228: Holy Spirit God And Giant Blood Colored Demon!

Qin Lie returned to Blood Spear's training ground from the poisonous bog.

The normally lively forest was now completely empty. Even the severely injured personnel had evacuated from the area.

Qin Lie knew exactly where they went.

He also knew what would happen the moment they stepped out of this place—they would all die!

Since this place was already empty, it meant that Armament Sect was facing the biggest crisis it had ever encountered since it was founded.

If they could not survive this, then Armament Sect, a sect that could be called ancient with its nine hundred years of history, would be wiped off the face of Scarlet Tide Continent!

He did dally for a moment longer. His footsteps immediately quickened as he headed towards Flame Volcano at the highest speed he could manage.

At the peak of Flame Volcano.

The three great reverends and the seven inner sect elders looked down at Armament City from above. Their faces were pale, and their eyes flowed with incredibly obvious despair.

“The sect... the sect shall perish today!” Luo Zhichang’s tears flowed as he fell to his knees in the direction of the spirit pattern pillar below. He looked at the twelve spirit pattern pillars which represented Armament Sect and wailed, “Our Armament Sect has nine hundred years of history. If we’re comparing our history, then Eight Extreme Temple and Profound Heaven Alliance would be far inferior! We of Armament Sect devoted our hearts into researching artifact forging and seldom involve ourselves in the conflicts of the continent, and all we wanted is just a peaceful environment. All we wanted is our freedom! But why is it just so difficult?!”

“This old fool shall live and die with the sect!” Fang Qi also knelt.

Jiang Hao also knelt quietly and cried out in tears, “Without the sect, there will be no Jiang Hao. I have dedicated my life to the sect, and today, I will dedicate one last time!”

The inner sect elders, Mo Hai and Tan Dongling, were affected by the three great reverends and knelt down in unison. Their eyes fell on the many spirit pattern pillars.

Even the two cowards, Qi Zheng and Meng Chen, could not think of anything else and obediently knelt on the floor, waiting for death’s arrival.

“Milord, our men are rapidly falling!” A Blood Spear martial practitioner appeared beside Lang Xie and reported, “The enemy has broken into the city, capturing and slaughtering our sect’s personnel one after another. We number too few, we cannot hold on at all. Milord, please give us an order!”

“Regroup within the sect. Even if we are to die, we will die inside the sect!” Lang Xie said in a low tone.

“Your wish is my command!” The man then bowed and sent out the order, telling all roaming Blood Spear martial practitioners still inside the city to regroup within the sect.

It was as Lang Xie had said. Even if they were to fight to their last, they would want to do so inside the sect.

On the plaza.

“Boom!”

Zhan Tianyi wore a set of platinum armor while his entire body flowed with an immense divine and majestic energy. He walked in front of Xue Li like a god.

Above his head, a godly silhouette which was emanating turbulent intimidation and glaring light bizarrely formed.

The godly figure was as tall and wide as a mountain, and its aura covered the entire city like the great sea. As Zhan Tianyi moved,

the godly figure extended six giant hands, grabbing towards Xue Li's neck, arms, heels and stomach.

The divine might that would seal the heavens and trap the earth dominated this space, dispersing the black clouds above Armament City, causing rays of glaring sunlight to fall and painting the entire city and Flame Volcano golden yellow.

"The divine might of the Holy Spirit God!" Xie Zhizhang looked up to the god watching over from the sky and felt reverence coming from his heart as well, revering this giant god's divine might.

"This is the god Eight Extreme Temple believes in and also their protector. Every martial practitioner in Eight Extreme Temple, including Purple Mist Sea, Cloud Sky Mountain, and other subordinate forces must submit to him their humility and modesty and must respect and fear to this god." Song Siyuan's expression was a little odd as he gripped the ancient book in his hand and continued, "This god is also Eight Extreme Temple's spiritual leader. When their White Robed, Green Robed, Gold Robed Envoys are channeling their spirit arts, they can achieve resonance with this god and acquire its immense godly energy."

"Sundering of the Holy God!" Zhan Tianyi made a tearing motion with his hands.

The god who had dominated the space and floated above his hands also made an identical motion, attempting to tear Xue Li to shreds.

“Prak prak prak!”

A terrific energy that could tear apart space itself emanated from the god’s hands. Disc-like lights of various sizes blasted towards Xue Li like meteors.

Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo, Su Ziying, and many other Blood Spear martial practitioners could not even stand straight at this moment. The god’s might was so oppressive that even breathing was difficult. They practically felt like kneeling and worshipping the god, begging him for his forgiveness.

“The late stage of the Fulfillment Realm! This is the terrible might of the late stage of the Fulfillment Realm!” Wu Tuo roared madly inside his heart as it reflected upon his face.

“One day I will enter the sanctuary as well. One day, I will acquire the favor of the Holy God!” Su Ziying’s eyes glittered.

“Heh, not bad, not bad!” Covered by the six giant hands of god and with its mighty light shining down on him while appearing as lowly as an ant, Xue Li grinned and laughed strangely, “Blood Arts: Summon!”

His incoherent chanting summoned bloody runes one after another as they seeped out of Xue Li’s body. Like bloody butterflies, they flew towards Armament Sect.

The blood colored butterflies flew inside Armament City and unleashed strange blood energy fluctuations.

Inside Armament City's four great districts of Earth, Fire, Water and Wind, all the martial practitioners who had just died horrible deaths suddenly began to bleed hundreds of times faster than normal!

"Glug glug!"

Blood poured out of every wound the corpses possessed like a fountain. The countless corpses instantly turned dry.

"Heavens, wh-what's going on?" Inside the courtyard, Tie Xiong could not help but exclaim as he watched the corpses beneath his feet be drained of their blood till the very last drop.

As it had a mind of its own, the blood began to swim and gather together on the stone floor beneath their feet, taking the form of spirit snakes, giant boas, and earthworms.

It was so eerie that their hearts would burst!

Very soon, a small pond of blood was formed right before Cang Li, Tie Xiong, and Xue Li's eyes!

The same scene was happening at every corner of Armament City, at every place that had a corpse!

If the people were to look down from the sky of Armament Sect, they would notice that the ponds had suddenly appeared at many regions inside the city.

Once the bloody ponds had formed, they would suddenly sink into the ground and disappear right away.

On the plaza.

Out of nowhere, faint traces of blood appeared on the stone ground beneath the feet of Xue Li, who was captured by the six giant hands of god.

At first it was only a small stain...

However, when the crowd noticed the abnormality beneath his feet, the small stain had already turned into a sea!

Blood ponds appeared beneath his feet and merged into one.

Xue Li's figure was enshrouded by the sea formed from thick, fresh blood. Slowly, he disappeared one bit at a time into the blood colored water.

Then, the sea formed from the thick blood quickly shrank and coagulated. It began to undergo an extremely bizarre change.

As the blood gathered, a huge figure slowly formed. Gradually, it began to emerge from the blood colored sea!

It was a gigantic demonic figure formed from fresh blood!

“Get over here!” Xue Li’s voice came from inside this long-tailed, several hundred feet tall, giant demon which had suddenly appeared, howling at the god above his head.

Numerous thick, lengthy, and rusty chains were swung about like dragons by this giant blood demon, entangling the god’s body.

“Zzzt zzzt zzzt!”

The moment the chains fell onto the god, its ephemeral-like body began emitting smoke as if the stains of blood on the chains were corroding it away.

The Green Robed Envoy of Eight Extreme Temple, Zhan Tianyi, snorted dully and sat down without a word.

Glaring rays of light shot out of his body and were injected into the god’s body like a fountainhead.

The gradually fading god became solid once more after the powerful lights had poured into his body. Zhan Tianyi yelled with his eyes closed, “Old demon! What exactly is that evil art that you’re cultivating?!”

Xue Li's odd, skin crawling chuckles could be heard time to time from within that giant blood demon, "Junior, didn't you want to kill me? Come on!"

Song Siyuan and Xie Zhizhang matched each other's eyes and saw the trace of shock beneath their eyes, growing quieter by the moment.

Xue Li's might and bloody methods caused them to grow more and more cautious, becoming increasingly unsure of Xue Li's identity and background as well.

It was also at this moment that Qin Lie had entered the foot of Flame Volcano from the forest behind.

Strangely, after detecting Qin Lie's aura, Xue Li's aura unexpectedly subsided as that bloody aura that would cause even one's soul to shudder was swiftly withdrawn.

The giant bloody demon that was just beginning to show its fangs suddenly vanished underground like a river flowing into the sea. Xue Li's dry as a corpse body reappeared as well.

He was still sitting on the same spot as if he had never moved before. It was as if the person who stirred a mad commotion earlier wasn't him at all.

"Ostentatious kid, I hope you'll act smarter and quietly await

Armament Sect's destruction." Xue Li grinned and looked at Zhan Tianyi tauntingly, "If you do not act, then I will sit here and do nothing as well."

Zhan Tianyi opened his eyes with strange light flashing erratically in his eyes. After a moment of pause, he nodded and bowed respectfully. "This junior has acted offensively. I hope that senior will forgive me..."

The platinum armor on his body vanished into his body, and the god which had formed on top of his head slowly lost its intimidating presence as if it was formed from white clouds. After the mountain wind blew by, the god dispersed into thin air along with it.

"Hehe, I like smart people," Xue Li chuckled oddly.

Zhan Tianyi wanted to speak, but just as he started a trace of blood leaked out of the corner of his mouth. He hurriedly wiped it away, shut up, sat down, and began channeling his powers immediately to calm to the restlessness of his blood inside his body.

At the same time, Qin Lie had arrived at Flame Volcano's mountainside and came to his own cave.

"Sect Master Qin!" Seeing that he had shown up, a nearby Blood Spear martial practitioner hurriedly saluted him respectfully and reported, "The Ling sisters have not taken a single step out of this cave."

“Thank you for the hard work.” Qin Lie nodded and stood still in front of the cave. His expression was rather complicated.

“Qin Lie, is that you?” Inside the cave, Ling Yushi’s voice came out, “Have you seen my master? You, you didn’t do anything to her, right? Also, is Senior Sister Lu okay? Did you trouble her?”

Ling Yushi opened the door. Her eyes were worried, seemingly afraid that he would hurt Jiu Liuyu and Lu Li.

“They will be fine. You two… will be fine as well. Relax.” Giving her a somewhat strained smile, Qin Lie said, “Don’t worry. You will be fine very soon. What you’re worried about will probably… not happen. Yushi, I…”

He didn’t say those last words. Instead he said, “Stay inside the cave and don’t come out. Wait for your master. Wait until the people from Seven Fiends Valley call for you. Then you can come out.”

Then, he turned around and left.

Chapter 229: All I Can!

Qin Lie arrived at Tang Siqi's cavern.

"Miss Tang is not inside," another blood guard appeared and said respectfully.

Qin Lie frowned when he heard that, asking, "Where did she and Senior Sister Lian go?"

"The plaza," the blood guard answered softly.

Qin Lie was shocked.

The reason he came out of the land of absolute zero and rushed over from the poisonous bog was to preserve one or two seeds of hope for Armament Sect, and Tang Siqi and Lian Rou were the seeds he had chosen.

These seeds would one day grow up in the future and become a large, lush tree once more.

As for the inheritance and growth of Armament Sect, he personally wasn't too interested. However, he did owe Armament Sect their kindness.

Tang Siqi and Lian Rou had even saved his life once before!

The reason he came back was to witness Armament Sect's destruction with his own eyes. His other objective was to preserve as much of Armament Sect as possible.

When he had reached halfway up the mountain, he frowned and stood still for a moment. He first turned to look at the peak , then looked towards the foot of the mountain. In the end, after weighing it for a moment in his heart, he walked towards the plaza.

"Sect Master Qin has returned to the sect!" He hadn't left for long before a blood guard had reported his appearance to the three great reverends at the mountain peak.

"What is the point of him coming back now?" Meng Chen exclaimed in despair.

Luo Zhichang's expression managed to twist into one of shock. "He should not have come back!"

"Where did he go?" Fang Qi said in a low tone.

"He went to the plaza," the blood guard answered.

"We will go to the plaza! That is the land where our sect was first founded. Even if our sect is to perish, we should stand with it!" Luo Zhichang started down the mountain.

Fang Qi and Jiang Hao nodded before quietly following suit.

The inner sect's seven great elders looked at each other and saw both the despair and determination in their eyes.

Therefore, the inner sect's seven elders walked to the plaza at the foot of the mountain together, towards the place where the twelve spirit pillars stood.

At the same time, the Armament Sect elders and disciples who hadn't been killed and were scattered at the corners of Armament Sect had received Lang Xie's notification. With dark and despairing expressions on their faces, they returned to the sect, all headed towards the place where Armament Sect was first founded.

"Mountain Master, the remaining Armament Sect members are headed towards the sect," Ji Liu arrived beside Jiang Yuan and told him the latest news.

"Don't obstruct them too much. Give them a chance to breathe so they can return to the founding land of Armament Sect." Jiang Yuan and Yu Dai decided after discussing, "It'll save us the trouble of hunting them down anyway. Just let them gather so we can take them out all at once. This way we won't have to waste time running around."

"That is what I thought as well!" Yu Dai too gave out the order.

Meanwhile, Dark Asura Hall's Fu Zhuohui and Seven Fiends Valley's Ouyang Sheng quickly reached a tacit understanding also —to allow those who had slipped through the net to gather at

Armament Sect.

Right now, the entrances of the four districts of earth, fire, water and wind were completely under the control of the five forces.

Armament City had been sealed as well, also under their control.

As of this moment, Armament Sect was no longer Armament City's ruler. It was now near impossible for any of Armament Sect's martial practitioners to escape the city.

The scattered personnel gradually returned to Armament Sect from wherever they were in the city. There were quite a few outer sect foreign delegates who were mixed in with them as well.

Han Qingrui, Kang Zhi, Han Feng, and the rest of their group were sneakily moving along a quiet street, also heading to Armament Sect.

"If I had known that a day like this would come, I would not have come to Armament Sect back then. Sigh." Kang Zhi's father, Kang Hui, sighed deeply and felt such a strong sense of defeat that he was at his wit's end.

He was originally the vice pavilion master of Nebula Pavilion. He was originally of high status, and after he lost the competition against Liu Yuntao, he wasn't willing to bow his head and submit. Therefore, under Pan Jueming's recommendation, they had arrived at Armament City and became foreign delegates.

At first, their lives went pretty well. Armament Sect treated them very generously. As long as they completed a mission, they would receive a generous reward in return.

Moreover, once they had accumulated enough merits, they could even apply to have one of the inner sect elders personally forge them an artifact.

They quietly worked for Armament Sect, waiting for that day they accumulated enough merits so that they could request an inner sect elder like Mo Hai or Tan Dongling to personally forge them a perfectly matching artifact.

Unfortunately, judging from the current situation, they might never see that day.

“Hey, I heard... I heard a rumor that the current sect master seems to be Qin Lie...” Han Qingrui told them what he had just heard recently.

Han Feng and Kang Zhi shook their heads in great disbelief before looking at him with incredulous expressions on their faces.

“Old Han?” Kang Zhi was also shocked.

Han Qingrui smiled bitterly, “There should not be any mistake. If it wasn’t for him, we would’ve been sacrificed as cannon fodder when Armament Sect and Dark Shadow Tower came into

conflict.”

“Qin Lie! How can it be that kid Qin Lie?!” Kang Zhi exclaimed in an odd tone. He just couldn’t believe it.

“There’s a voice over there!” Not far away there was a stern shout, “Go check it out!”

When Han Qingrui, Kang Hui, and the rest of the group heard the voice coming from afar, all their expressions changed as they sternly glared at Kang Hui.

“This way! This way!” Many yells came from afar, and one of them was a powerful and masculine voice.

While listening to that man’s voice, Han Qingrui and Kang Hui suddenly shuddered as an odd light shone out of their eyes.

“Mo’er, take someone over there and check it out,” Tu Shixiong’s voice came from afar.

Han Qingrui, Kang Hui, and the rest stood perfectly still behind the walls of a shadowy corner. They expressions had turned incredibly odd.

Before long, Tu Mo had brought Tu Ze, Zhuo Qian, and a few Dark Asura Hall martial practitioners and appeared in this quiet street.

The moment they entered this place, Tu Mo swept his gaze about, and his face abruptly froze.

Tu Ze and Zhuo Qian's expressions changed greatly too, and they became frozen with shock when they saw little fatty Kang Zhi and Han Feng.

"Pavilion Master..." Han Qingrui and Kang Hui cupped their hands and saluted towards Tu Mo.

"Big Brother Tu, Sister Qian..." Han Feng and Kang Zhi looked pitifully at Tu Ze and Zhuo Qian.

"You guys know each other?" Another Dark Asura Hall martial practitioner frowned and looked to Tu Mo, asking, "Who are they?"

His name was Lian Dong, a subordinate under another commander. Just like Tu Mo, he was a martial practitioner at the early stage of the Manifestation Realm. He was a normal Dark Asura Hall general.

"Brother Lian Dong, these are my companions from the past and my father's old subordinates. Can you pretend that you haven't seen this and show them mercy?" Tu Mo bowed and said very sincerely, "When this is over, I will thank you greatly for the favor once we return to the hall!"

Lian Dong glanced once at Han Qingrui's group with a cool expression before shaking his head. He said, "The reason the hall master had specifically asked me to come with you all was to watch over you in case you couldn't act when you met an old acquaintance. Before I came over, the hall master had specifically instructed me to do what you guys could not."

He took out a long, snake-like spear and walked towards Han Qingrui and the rest of their group. His eyes were filled with murderous intent.

"Brother Lian Dong!" Tu Mo yelled loudly.

Lian Dong's footsteps did not stop. His tone was cold, "Brother Tu, don't put trouble onto yourself. It will bring trouble onto your father as well, and you must not trouble the hall master. Yuan Tianya is dead. Grand Hall Master will soon enter Profound Heaven Alliance, and our Hall Master Cao is the most best person to sit at that position. We cannot leave even a trace of a black mark behind and allow the others to catch hold of our weakness!

"That's why these people must die!"

Tu Mo, Tu Ze, and Zhuo Qian abruptly froze. Great shock and terror appeared in their eyes.

It was only now did they realize that the reason Lian Dong was with them was to prevent such a thing from happening, to eliminate all accidents from happening!

This was even ordered by Cao Xuanrui!

And this Cao Xuanrui was the hall master their fathers were loyal to. He was also one of their backers!

If they went against Cao Xuanrui's orders, they and their fathers might be faced with a murderous crisis.

Han Qingrui, Han Yu, and Kang Zhi had thought that they might be able to escape a crisis after seeing Tu Mo. But in the end, they still had to die.

They would even die at the hands of their close friends and brothers. This caused the four to feel forlorn and immensely bitter.

"Brother Lian!" Tu Mo yelled furiously once more.

Tu Ze and Zhuo Qian's eyes suddenly turned red. They appeared like they were about to lose control.

It was at this moment when Tu Shixiong's voice came from not too far away, "Mo'er, Ze'er, Little Qian, don't meddle in this matter."

"Great commander is truly courageous," Lian Dong smiled.

"Father!" Tu Mo exclaimed.

“Sigh. Old Han, Old Kang, please don’t blame us for not showing you mercy. There is really nothing we can do to help you.” Tu Shixiong’s voice came from afar again, “Even if we let you go this time, you will not be able to leave Armament City alive. It’s not that we refuse to help you, it’s that it’s useless even if we did. Lian Dong! Finish them quickly!”

“Don’t worry, great commander. This Lian Dong knows what to do. I will definitely not let these people suffer too much before their deaths!” Lian Dong answered.

He lifted his snake spear and began channeling his spirit arts. The dark green light glowing on his snake spear was swiftly unleashed.

“Kid, I’ve found the few people you asked me to pay attention to. But one group is just about to die …” While Qin Lie walked down the foot of the mountain, Xue Li’s soul fluctuated and spoke from inside the Soul Suppressing Orb inside his head.

A clear image was displayed directly inside his head—it was exactly the scene where Han Qingrui, Han Feng, and Kang Zhi was about to be killed!

“Stop that person wielding that snake spear!” Qin Lie screamed.

“Heh, I’m not going to do everything by myself. If you want to save them, I can send you over right now,” Xue Li said.

“Then send me over right now!” Qin Lie exclaimed angrily.

“Alright!”

Qin Lie’s figure, about to reach the plaza, suddenly came to a pause. A blood pond had appeared out of nowhere beneath his feet on top of the green stone floor and wrapped directly around him. Then, it pulled him underground.

All of a sudden, he felt faint. He could sense clearly that the blood pond was travelling a thousand meters in an instant underground.

Han Qingrui, Han Yu, and Kang Zhi’s group watched the light forming on the snake spear and watched Lian Dong, the Manifestation Realm martial practitioner. They felt as cold as ice facing against the might he had unleashed.

They knew very well that they might not be able to reach Armament Sect. They might not survive this crisis.

“Father!” Tu Ze howled.

“Keep him down!” Tu Shixiong’s voice came over again.

A Dark Asura Hall martial practitioner that was standing right beside Tu Ze extended a hand and pressed onto Tu Ze’s shoulders, preventing him from moving even one step.

“Little Qian as well! I will not allow them to act recklessly!” Tu Shixiong said again.

Another person pressed down on Zhuo Qian as well. And so, she could only watch little fatty Kang Hui and Han Yu walk towards their deaths in tears.

They could not do anything...

It was at this moment, the blood pond surrounding Qin Lie suddenly appeared between Lian Dong and Han Qingrui. Qin Lie stepped onto the ground as the blood pond vanished back underground.

“Qin Lie!”

“Qin Lie!”

“Qin Lie!”

Everyone cried out in shock.

Chapter 230: Tu Shixiong

When the blood pond floated to the surface, Qin Lie appeared.

He was now standing between Lian Dong and Han Qingrui.

“Qin Lie!”

Tu Ze, Zhuo Qian, Kang Zhi, and Han Feng all cried out after seeing him appear so suddenly.

“Qin Lie! It is you. It looks like the rumors I heard weren’t false after all,” Han Qingrui said in shock.

“Armament Sect’s current sect master? Heh, well met!” Lian Dong smiled, “As long as you are captured, the hall master is guaranteed to give me a generous reward!”

He swung the snake spear in his hands as ribbons of green light formed and were about to entangle Qin Lie.

“Qin Lie! What are you doing here!” Zhuo Qian said urgently.

“Senior Tu! Do you want everyone here to die?” Qin Lie shouted sternly towards Tu Shixiong.

Once finished, the spatial ring on his finger flashed as a Terminator Profound Bomb suddenly appeared in his palm.

“Rrrmb! Zzzt!”

A dull rumble of thunder, accompanied by bolts of dark blue lightning, emanated from the metallic, fist-sized ball.

A rampaging energy that was suppressed spun madly within the metallic ball, forming ripples in the area out of nowhere.

“Stop, Lian Dong!” Tu Shixiong exclaimed in a low tone.

“Great commander, are you going to go against Hall Master’s orders?” Lian Dong frowned.

An imposing figure walked out of a stone building not far away. He had a long, narrow scar extending from his left cheek all the way to his thick neck, and that very scar was like an earthworm’s brand on his face, causing him to look incredibly fierce.

This man was Tu Shixiong, the great commander under Second Hall Master Cao Xuanrui. He was also Nebula Pavilion’s founder and Tu Mo and Tu Ze’s father.

Qin Lie had heard of the man’s fame even before when he was at Nebula Pavilion. He had even seen him as an idol to be admired at one time.

Now he could finally see the so-called founder of Nebula Pavilion

as he watched him walk over and stand beside Lian Dong with natural might.

“If you do not want to die, then listen to me obediently.” Tu Shixiong shot a glance at Lian Dong.

Lian Dong’s expression shifted as he cried out, “Great commander, the hall master personally instructed me to carry this out!”

“I will personally explain things to the hall master.” Tu Shixiong no longer looked at him but Qin Lie instead. He stared at the metallic ball within Qin Lie’s hand as his expression grew more and more serious. He solemnly asked , “Is that the magic item that severely damaged Blood Shadow?”

Qin Lie nodded.

Tu Shixiong pondered for a moment before saying, “Take Old Han and Old Kang and leave, now.”

“Old pavilion master...” Han Qingrui and Kang Hui softly exclaimed.

Tu Shixiong waved his hands and frowned. “It has nothing to do with me. Qin Lie is the one who saved you from the brink of death. Without that item in his hand, you will be dead, and I no longer value our past relationship. Therefore, you have nothing to thank me for.”

“Uncle Han, let us go.” Gripping the Terminator Profound Bomb in one hand, he turned around and headed to Armament Sect.

Han Qingrui and Kang Zhi’s group followed behind him. From time to time they would turn around and look at the father and his sons, Tu Shixiong, Tu Mo and Tu Ze. Their eyes were filled with complicated expression.

“I will report this matter as is to the hall master!” Lian Dong suddenly snorted coldly.

The worm-like scar on Tu Shixiong’s face shook, and he turned around and, as fast as lightning, grabbed Lian Dong’s neck with his burly right arm.

Just like that, he took hold of Lian Dong’s neck and lifted him up into the air. “I dislike people who threaten me,” hmphing coldly as he stared into Lian Dong’s eyes.

“Father!”

“Uncle Tu!”

“Great commander!”

The expressions of Tu Mo, Tu Ze, Zhuo Qian, and a few other Dark Asura Hall martial practitioners all turned into ones of

extreme shock.

Lian Dong had made it very clear that everything he did was all according to Cao Xuanrui's orders. The reason he would stay with Tu Mo's group was also because of Cao Xuanrui.

Tu Shixiong might be Cao Xuanrui's strongest commander, but he was just his subordinate, after all. Wouldn't he not be giving Cao Xuanrui face if he treated Lian Dong like this?

That was why even Tu Mo had grown anxious.

"Great commander! What are you doing? How dare you treat me this way. I will definitely have the hall master thoroughly investigate this matter!" Lian Dong was utterly fearless. His face was already beet red, yet he still dared to utter threats.

That was because he knew that it was essentially impossible for Tu Shixiong to take action against him. There was just no way Tu Shixong would harm him.

That was why he had the confidence to yell at him.

"Great commander, you must not act recklessly!" the other Dark Asura Hall martial practitioners cried out, also attempting to persuade him against it.

"Hmph, would you really dare to kill me?" Lian Dong laughed coldly, "How dare you treat me like this. Do you believe that Tu

Mo and Tu Ze won't lose their lives, that your Tu Family won't be slaughtered to the last man? You dare kill me?!"

"Why not?" Tu Shixiong grinned and immediately applied a great amount of force.

"Krak!"

The sound of Lian Dong's neck being broken came out just like that. Lian Dong, who had just been sternly threatening him earlier, had his head twisted unnaturally to the side. His eyes were still shining with disbelief.

—To the very end, he still could not believe that Tu Shixiong actually dared to kill him!

"Great commander! Heavens, h-how could you do this?"

"Father! Y-you…"

"Uncle Tu!"

Tu Shixiong snorted coldly before carelessly tossing Lian Dong's corpse away. With a face full of brutality, he said, "Don't speak his name. If Cao Xuanrui himself dares to threaten my son, then I will kill him as well!"

The moment he said this, every single Dark Asura Hall martial

practitioner there turned as quiet as mice. They all thought Tu Shixiong had gone insane.

Even Tu Mo, Tu Ze, and Zhuo Qian thought the same.

Everyone already knew that Tu Shixiong was incredibly violent. They also knew that his methods were cruel and ruthless; they knew his bouts of madness even better.

But what they knew best was that Tu Shixiong was absolutely not stupid.

And Tu Shixiong's actions today were no longer those of someone insane. From their point of view, his actions were those of a man seeking death!

"Yuan Tianya died, and one of the seats for hall master in Dark Asura Hall has opened up. Of course, I will become that new hall master!" Tu Shixiong's expression was savage as he exclaimed in a deep manner, "Even Cao Xuanrui will not stop me!"

The crowd subsequently shivered upon hearing this.

At the corner of the street, Qin Lie unexpectedly stopped and turned around to look at Han Qingrui and the others. "Uncle Han, Kang Zhi, Han Feng, and Uncle Kang, have your men return to the sect first."

"You guys go on ahead," Han Qingrui instructed.

The few martial practitioners who had been following them since Nebula Pavilion secretly sighed in relief when they saw the entrance just in front of them. After giving slight bows, they returned to the sect entrance.

“Qin Lie…” Han Qingrui sighed.

“How did you come to be at Armament Sect?” Kang Zhi asked.

“I don’t have time to explain. The reason I led you here is so that you can live on.” Taking out the Eye of Frost, Qin Lie called over Kang Zhi and Han Feng, saying, “Come to my side. Grip my shoulders.”

Han Feng and Kang Zhi looked surprised, but even though they were confused, they still walked over and gripped his shoulders.

A shiny, crystalline light gushed out of the Eye of Frost and covered all three of them.

Under Han Qingrui and Kang Hui’s gazes, Qin Lie, Kang Zhi, and Kang Hui’s bodies turned transparent before disappearing entirely.

Han Qingrui and Kang Hui both appeared thoroughly shocked.

A few minutes later, Qin Lie reappeared and said, “Uncle Han, Uncle Kang, it’s your turn to grab onto my shoulders now.”

The duo followed suit in joy.

A dozen or so seconds later, Han Qingrui, Kang Hui, Kang Zhi, and Hang Feng were all within a sealed crystal house made of frost.

Qin Lie had gone out of his way to build this crystal house to shelter people. They were placed at the corner of the land of profound ice, and it was completely sealed. Here, the quartet would not be able to see the ancient beasts sealed in ice or where they exactly were.

Without his guidance, the four of them would not be able to exit or enter this place.

The reason he was so careful was that he was worried that they might expose the secrets beneath the Arctic Mountain Range. He was worried that someone might be careless and would accidentally let the secrets in this place slip .

—He was worried that those with ill-intent would discover this place and unseal the ancient beasts here, bringing a world-ending catastrophe to Scarlet Tide Continent.

“Wh-what is this place?” Kang Zhi exclaimed in a strange note.

“Forget what this place is. You only need to know that you are very safe here, that’s all.” Qin Lie touched the Eye of Frost and said continued, “I still have something else to do, so I’ll be leaving first.

Take a good rest, I will come again.”

Very soon, he reappeared at Armament City and looked at the sky. Then, he rushed towards the plaza.

During the short period of his departure, the leaders of the five forces had gradually gathered at the sect’s entrance.

“It’s about time to pull in the net,” Yu Dai said coldly.

“Yes. The last sinners of Armament Sect have all returned,” Jiang Yuan nodded. “It is time we finish this.”

“I also really want to see this newly appointed sect master,” Fu Zhuohui smiled coolly.

“That Qin Lie junior is mine to dispose of. I hope that you give this old one face!” Jiu Liuyu exclaimed in a dark tone.

“Let’s go!”

The leaders of the five forces led their subordinates through Armament City and then destroyed Armament Sect’s entrance as well. Like murderous intent given form, the five charged towards the plaza.

At the plaza beneath Flame Volcano.

Armament Sect's three great reverends, seven inner sect great elders, Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo, Su Ziying, Song Siyuan, Xie Zhizhang, Zhan Tianyi, and Xue Li...

All of the heavyweights were gathered at one place.

The three great Fulfillment Realm experts Song Siyuan, Xie Zhizhang, and Zhan Tianyi all sat down in front of Xue Li in silence with serious expressions.

Xue Li had promised that as long as the trio didn't move, he wouldn't act either.

And so, all three of them obediently stayed their hand.

They were waiting for the leaders of the five forces to come, waiting for them to kill every last man and woman in Armament Sect before settling this matter completely.

The three great reverends and seven great elders of Armament Sect were waiting as well. They were waiting for their deaths...

These ten people had even split up and sat down with one person per spirit pattern pillar. They had even chosen the places of their deaths beforehand.

"Qin Lie!" Luo Zhichang exclaimed, "Go! Escape Armament Sect!"

“Run as far as you can!” Fang Qi also cried out.

The three Fulfillment Realm experts narrowed eyes widened a little as they paid attention to the newcomer.

“Junior! Just wait a little longer. I will break all of your fingers, one by one!” Su Ziying grit her teeth and exclaimed.

Shi Jingyun and Wu Tuo’s gazes were also swimming around Qin Lie’s fingers. They obviously had the same line of thought on their mind.

“Hehe, you had actually came, kid. Are you here to see this sect walk towards destruction?” Xue Li grinned and chuckled strangely.

Qin Lie frowned and searched for Tang Siqi and Lian Rou’s figures. He beckoned them and said, “Senior Sister Tang, Senior Sister Lian Rou, please come over to my side.”

At the outskirts of the plaza, beside a group of Blood Spear martial practitioners, Tang Siqi and Lian Rou appeared dark and forlorn while looking ready to die along with Armament Sect. There was not the slightest bit of hope in their eyes.

Chapter 231: Six Loud Explosions!

At Armament Sect's entrance.

The leaders of the five forces led their respective subordinate experts and went in.

The scar-faced Tu Shixiong suddenly held out his hand, signalling everyone under his command to stop. Immediately after, all of the Dark Asura Hall martial practitioners nearby halted.

The group looked at him, wondering why he had stopped them.

"Do not enter this entrance," Tu Shixiong exclaimed in a low tone.

"But everyone else has gone in," Zhuo Qian commented in surprise.

"Before that thing in Qin Lie's hands has blown up, none of you are allowed to take even a single step into Armament Sect." Tu Shixiong glared.

The group was all deathly silent.

Tu Mo was the only one who dared to speak his doubts, "Father, why did you kill Lian Dong?"

“Because I’ve broken through to the middle stage of the Netherpassage Realm, so Cao Xuanrui can’t hold me back anymore. The reason he kept Lian Dong by your side means that he has already grown wary of me.” Tu Shixiong’s eyes shone with a violent light. “Don’t worry. I have warred all over the continent since the day I was born. My whole life has been composed of killing all sorts foreign species and evil beasts other than human themselves. Plus, I’ve never revealed my true power. A mere Cao Xuanrui? Hmph, he is no longer someone I need to concern myself with!”

The moment he said this, Tu Mo, Tu Ze, Zhuo Qian, and many more of his subordinates all grew incredibly excited.

“The position of hall master is probably... probably not that easy,” Zhuo Qian softly exclaimed.

“Relax, I’m taking this position for sure!” Tu Shixiong’s face was filled with mad arrogance. “Don’t worry. I planned this long in advance, and now the matter is set!”

“Father, why did you not stop them when Lian Dong wanted to kill Uncle Han and the others then?” Tu Ze asked.

“Because Old Han had entered Armament Sect. Even I cannot absolve them without a good reason.” Tu Shixiong frowned, continuing, “But since Qin Lie had arrived, bringing that item with him, I then had a reason to let them escape. I will have a solid enough reason to defend myself with even in front of the grand

hall master without being affected by rumors.”

“Father, if the item in Qin Lie’s hand is so terrifying, why didn’t you remind the grand hall master or the other four forces?” Tu Ze asked again.

Tu Shixiong chuckled brutally, “Why would I care for anyone else besides my own sons? Forget the four forces, even if it was the grand hall master himself... if he’s dead, he’s dead. If Dark Asura Hall suffers a great loss and loses all their leaders, then perhaps Dark Asura Hall may follow after the name Tu in the future!”

The two brothers looked at each other while, their bodies shaking. They felt a sense of worship towards their own father.

“Now that’s what you f*cking call an ambitious man!!” Tu Shixiong’s subordinates all cried out in silence.

On the plaza.

Qin Lie beckoned Tang Siqi and Lian Rou, asking for them to come over.

Tang Siqi and Lian Rou appeared forlorn as they sighed inside their hearts. They walked away from Blood Spear martial practitioners and came to his side.

“Why have you come back?” Tang Siqi complained in a low tone.

“You shouldn’t have come,” Lian Rou also sighed quietly.

“Brat, you’re Armament Sect’s new sect master?” Zhan Tianyi looked at him. “A mere Natal Opening Realm martial practitioner dares to cause such a commotion. You really don’t know how the word death is written, do you?”

“Your biggest mistake was allowing this kid to become your sect master!” Shi Jingyun hmphed, “Without his reckless actions, you artificers would have lived even though Armament Sect still would face its end. But now? Hmph!”

“You will all die alongside his recklessness!” Su Ziying looked at her broken finger and cried out somewhat hysterically.

The three great reverends and seven inner sect elders’ who had their eyes on Qin Lie all had rather complicated expressions on their faces.

At this moment, they too had begun to wonder if it was really a mistake to have Qin Lie replace Ying Xingran.

“Sigh…”

The three great reverends and seven great inner sect elders sitting under ten spirit pillars sighed deeply in their hearts at this moment.

At this point, there was no longer any use for regrets. They would watch their sect head towards its downfall with their very own eyes, going down with it as well.

“Yu Dai visits the sect!”

“Jiang Yuan visits the sect!”

“Ou Yangsheng visits the sect!”

“Fu Zhuohui visits the sect!”

“Jiu Liuyu visits the sect!”

“Cao Xuanrui visits the sect!”

Suddenly, the loud calls came from Armament Sect’s entrance one after another.

It was just like when Yuan Tianya, Liang Yangzu, Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo, and Su Ziying had arrived.

At the center of the plaza, Su Ziying’s eyes turned joyful, growing excited. “Damn you Old Yu, come over and kill this lowly bastard Qin Lie right now!”

“Qin Lie!” Jiu Liuyu’s voice came coldly from outside, “I will

have Yushi herself cut that boastful tongue of yours. Your tongue will be minced to tiny pieces and fed to the dogs!”

“This brat has stirred up countless troubles everywhere. He will definitely not be allowed to die comfortably!” Yu Dai laughed coldly.

Qin Lie, who was just about to take Tang Siqi and Lian Rou away from this land of conflict, heard Jiu Liuyu’s threatening voice. Then, a violent nature hidden inside his heart uncontrollably exploded outwards!

His eyes turned violent as his face turned savage. “You want to mince my tongue and feed it to the dogs? You even want Yushi to do it with her own hands? Jiu Liuyu! I will have you die right now!”

Multiple fist-sized, metallic balls suddenly appeared on his palm and were tightly surrounded with electricity. The very instant after they appeared, they were then thrown towards the outer sect entrance at the foot of the mountain.

It fell in the direction of the six voices that announced their visit.

Chuckling, Xue Li didn’t hide the joy in his heart as soon as he saw the Terminator Profound Bombs fly outside. He cried out madly in his heart, “Good! Very good! Extremely good!”

It was as if he had been waiting for Qin Lie to explode, for Qin Lie

to throw out the Terminator Profound Bomb, for more blood to be shed, and for more deaths to occur within the city.

"What's that?"

It wasn't long after the elites of the five forces entered the sect before they raised their heads and saw the metallic balls shining with lightning falling down on them from six different directions. They all instinctively looked towards the sky.

Yi Yuan was among them.

Terror—as if he had seen a ghost in broad daylight—appeared on Yi Yuan's face as he screamed crazily, "AVOID THAT METALLIC BALL!"

Regardless of the other's reactions, Yi Yuan decisively called upon a secret art and spewed out a mouthful of blood.

Yi Yuan's body turned into a purple stream and slipped outside the sect midair while still stained in blood.

"Purple River Destruction Escape!" Cang Li screamed.

She hesitated for only an instant before feeling a chill run through her entire body. She also used the same method and unleashed the escape art, turning into a purple stream and escaping outside while drenched in blood.

She actually unconditionally trusted Yi Yuan's judgment!

"What the hell is that thing?!" Jiang Yuan yelled.

His yell barely ended before a metallic ball, with coiled lightning descended down upon him.

"BOOM!"

"BOOM! BOOM! BOOM! BOOM! BOOM!"

The six Terminator Profound Bombs exploded in quick succession.

Six shockwaves that could shatter the earth and stun the sky exploded almost simultaneously. The thunderous shockwave spread out, causing the space in this area to experience an obvious collapse as black paths appeared midair out of nowhere while flying out in every direction.

Like the surface of a mirror, space shattered inch by inch!

The flying spatial energy reaped the lives of all within this space like the humongous scythe of the grim reaper!

Armament Sect's outer sect entrance was instantly destroyed under this world-ending shockwave!

Every single buildings and structures promptly shattered into billions of tiny fragments!

The rocks actually weren't affected by gravity at all as they floated in the middle of the air and filled every corner of the collapsed space!

This eerie scene paused for only an instant!

In the next moment, hundreds of lengthy, thick threads of lightning shot out like pythons, violent serpents, or lightning dragons!

It was only then that the mad howls of death finally came out.

"Rrrmb! Clap clap clap! Zzzt zzt zzt!"

The sound of thunder exploding, the sound of lightning streaking through the air, the sound of bodies shattering, the screams, the shouts, the wails...

All sorts of sounds mingled together and resounded throughout Armament Sect, exploding in this hellish area!

The collapsed space had now formed into an unnamed abyss. Countless black tunnels appeared and disappeared like illusions within the abyss, as if they would reach the end of the world or the

limits of the sky.

This scene had persevered for only a split second before the collapsed space automatically repaired itself. It was like a gaping, magical mouth that had shut up once more, swiftly returning to normal.

“Great explosion! Well blasted! Hahaha!” Xue Li cried out madly.

No one knew why he was so excited.

However, Armament Sect’s outer sect, including all its structures, had already disappeared.

The six deep pits were like bottomless lakes that were hundred of meters wide, replacing the original Armament Sect with smoke coming from the foot of Flame Volcano.

“Zzzt zzt zzt!”

There were even small flashes of lightning within the six pits. The thick smell of burnt flesh permeated the air.

A few scattered people stood beside the six deep pits. They seemed to have lost their souls as they blankly stared at the six deep pits, trying to find their companions who didn’t even leave behind a corpse.

It was as if these people's souls were directly shattered by the six great booms and became the walking dead...

Only facing the most extreme despair and shock would a martial practitioner who cultivated turn out like this.

Jiu Liuyu was gone. Cao Xuanrui was gone. Yu Dai was gone. Ouyang Sheng was also gone...

Jiang Yuan, Fu Zhuohui, Ji Liu, and a few dozen or so people scattered around the six great pits had soulless expressions on their faces. They were still looking into the pits, looking for any sign of anyone they knew...

Unfortunately, there was nothing.

"Well done! Well blasted! Truly the Terminator Profound Bomb!" Only Xue Li's mad laughter still filled the air.

Outside Armament Sect.

Tu Shixiong's body violently shook as he opened his eyes and attempted to speak. However, he soon realized that he actually couldn't utter a single word. What came out of his mouth was only a round of unconscious groans.

From their point of view, Armament Sect's outer sect had been eliminated in its entirety. They could see the plaza where the twelve spirit pattern pillars were situated without anything

blocking their view.

The dozens of Armament Sect buildings that were supposed to stand between them and the plaza were gone!

They had all turned to dust.

“Cough cough cough!” From the other side, Yi Yuan spat blood, his face completely pale, while holding himself against the wall. He looked in utter shock at the once standing sect entrance.

In his eyes, the sect entrance had already disappeared. Now, only six hellish great pits remained—and of course the countless burned corpses which belonged to the five great forces.

Beside him, Cang Li, who had gotten used to seeing all sorts of bloody scenes, was vomiting intensely to the point where she had gone completely pale.

“Butcher, this butcher named Qin Lie! H-how dare he act so crazy and ruthlessly!!”

Cang Li had never feared someone this badly before.

Chapter 232: Nowhere Left To Run!

When the six Terminator Profound Bombs exploded, they really did “terminate” the entirety of Armament Sect in an instant.

Armament Sect’s outer sect that had stood for many years was wiped out immediately. Not only that, but the numerous tall buildings which had once existed there had also been utterly destroyed.

The six great, abyss-like pits had replaced the buildings, sinking into the land filled with bits of flesh and blood. Inside each and every one of these huge pits, there were also tiny sparks of lightning and thick, black smoke rising up from the very bottom.

Jiang Yuan, Fu Zhuohui, Ji Liu, and dozens of others stood beside the scorched great pits expressionlessly, bowing their heads while seemingly looking for something.

On the plaza.

The three great reverends and seven inner sect elders’ mouths were all wide open, releasing some obscure and unrecognizable sound.

—They were all completely dumbstruck.

When the six Terminator Profound Bombs had exploded almost simultaneously, their instantaneous might was like the harbinger

of the end of the world. Compared to the explosion they had seen at the poisonous bog, this one was at least ten times more powerful.

When the Terminator Profound Bombs had all exploded together, the violent, thunderous shockwaves pressing against one another could cause even space itself to collapse. This elevation in explosive power was definitely not as simple as just one plus one!

Even the perpetrator himself, Qin Lie, was shocked when he saw just what kind of destruction was brought about by these six Terminator Profound Bombs.

Even he did not expect that the shockwave caused by the six Terminator Profound Bombs exploding at the same time could multiply their destructive might!

“Hehehe! Hehehe!” Xue Li, who was seated beneath a spirit pattern pillar, was laughing most comfortably, pleased with his shoulders shaking.

It was as if he was the only one who knew just what kind of devastating power would be produced from the synergistic effect of the bombs exploding together. It was as if this was exactly what he was hoping Qin Lie would achieve.

The other half of his soul trapped inside the Soul Suppressing Orb also let loose a faint wave of joy. This caused Qin Lie to react as he questioned Xue Li closely, “From the very start, you knew about how the explosions in unison would multiply its power?”

“Of course I knew about it!” The strange chuckle from Xue Li’s soul resonated inside the Soul Suppressing Orb endlessly, “Kid, you did well, you did very well! You should feel satisfied, shouldn’t you? The six Terminator Profound Bombs’ explosions resulted in the loss of three quarters of the five forces’ elites. Even if Armament Sect ends up being destroyed, you could count this as taking revenge for them in advance. You’re no longer in the red now!”

Xue Li’s true body glanced at Qin Lie with his bloody eyes before grinning and laughing out loud.

Of the three Fulfillment Realm experts, Zhan Tianyi, Song Siyuan, and Xie Zhizhang, who scattered to the edges of the plaza, each one’s faces was more shocked than the last.

“Th-this is…” Xue Zhizhang could not find the words to express the shock in his heart.

Zhan Tianyi and Song Siyuan’s faces turned incomparably hideous as they watched the outer sect vanish, the six pits pop into existence out of nowhere, and the cruel scene that could be compared to a bloody purgatory from afar.

They turned their attention to Qin Lie in unison.

“Old Yu. Old Yu…” Su Ziying was still whispering like she had lost her soul.

Shu Jingyun and Wu Tuo's bodies shook greatly with livid looks. It was as if they could explode at any moment.

The nearby Blood Spear martial practitioners, Tang Siqi, Lian Rou, and all other Armament Sect inner and outer sect disciples all opened their eyes wide while wearing looks of extreme disbelief.

Today's explosion was the biggest disaster they had ever seen in their lives. It was so deeply imprinted into their minds that they might never be able to forget this shocking event for the rest of their lives.

"Ah! Aaaaah!"

Suddenly, a crazy yell came from the bottom of one of the huge pits.

Beneath the blackish pit, where many scorched corpses laid, a disheveled, charred, and smoking figure jumped out while baring her fangs like a ghost.

"Qin Lie! I will hack you into a thousand pieces, peel off your skin, pluck out your sinews, and use your blood to make wine to drink everyday!" A horrendous voice exited her mouth and pierced through the sky. Then she pounced towards Qin Lie!

"The old hag lived through that!?" Qin Lie's expression shifted.

The ghastly figure that was Jiu Liuyu actually survived the explosion. She was blasted to the very bottom of the deep pit and buried beneath many corpses.

“Move, all of you! Capture this brat alive! I’m going to chew his bones into bits and swallow them all!” Ji Liu howled like an animal.

“Capture this kid alive! Forge him to death with the cruelest torture!” Jiang Yuan ordered.

All the remaining martial practitioners of the five forces instantly turned crazy and rushed at Qin Lie from all directions. Every single one of them wore eyes that burned with mad killing intent.

The explosion of six Terminator Profound Bombs had destroyed three quarters of the five forces’ elites. These Black Iron forces suffered a devastating blow and might not be able to recover even after a few decades just because of these six explosions.

Now, regardless of whether or not Armament Sect will perish in the end or how much wealth they robbed from Armament Sect, they could no longer recoup their losses.

It could be said that they had lost horribly in this war. Even if they murdered every last person in Armament Sect, this outcome still could not be changed.

All of this was due to Qin Lie!

It was all because of the explosion of the six devastating Terminator Profound Bombs that their hard work had all gone to waste. It was because of those very bombs that they had swallowed the most bitter fruit of defeat in advance!

If they could not torture Qin Lie to death, then how were they going to eliminate the hate in their hearts? How were they going to face their dead brothers and sisters?

While they were rushing at Qin Lie from every direction, they did not notice that the fresh blood from all the corpses had swiftly gone underground without a trace left behind. Nor did they notice the smile growing on Xue Li's face.

"Let's go!"

Seeing that everyone was rushing at him, Qin Lie's expression changed as he gripped the Eye of Frost and prepared to retreat.

His true realm was just at the late stage of the Natal Opening Realm after all. Any of the oncoming attackers had sufficient strength to kill him. If he remained where he was, then he would really be a fool who did not value his life.

"Grab my shoulders!" Qin Lie yelled.

While the crowd viciously rushed at them, Tang Siqi and Lian

Rou grew shocked as they instinctively grabbed his shoulders as soon as they heard his voice.

Qin Lie activated the Eye of Frost!

The icy, crystalline light wrapped around him, Tang Siqi, and Lian Rou as the bone-deep chill continuously climbed up their bodies, instantly freezing them all.

However, their bodies did not turn invisible. The strange energy that could twist space itself did not form.

The Eye of Frost had failed for the first time!

After having appeared calm and collected for so long, a light of shock abruptly appeared in Qin Lie's eyes. He actually could not escape with the Eye of Frost!

"Kid, it seems that you have a spirit treasure that can instantly teleport you thousand of miles away." The voice of Xue Li's soul appeared in his head again, "But you may have miscalculated this time. All treasures of this kind can only work on the basis that the space is stable...

"However, the six Terminator Profound Bombs that you just ignited have completely destroyed and twisted the space in this area, destabilizing it. From my experience, it will take at least half a month before the space within a hundred-mile radius can fully stabilize. Therefore, I advise you to abandon your pretty plans

sometime soon," Xue Li said quietly.

Qin Lie was frightened beyond speech by Xue Li's words.

How could he possibly escape the horrible fate of being skinned alive and having his sinews plucked out after losing the Eye of Frost's instant teleportation ability?

"Take the three of us and evacuate Armament Sect immediately!" he yelled inside the Soul Suppression Orb.

"With three Fulfillment Realm martial practitioners guarding this place, it would be hard enough for just me to escape, much less bringing the three of you together." Xue Li's soul swiftly transmitted the message inside his head, "Stop thinking about escaping. Stay here and fight to the bitter end."

The giant pits that extended from the outer sect to the foot of Flame Volcano were neither too far or too close. Therefore, the vicious martial practitioners rushing in their direction would not reach them immediately.

Even Jiu Liuyu, who was the fastest, was still a kilometer away from Qin Lie. However, there was an eerie aura of profound yin on her body that had already surrounded him like the sky pressing down on him, causing even his soul to feel like it was being suppressed.

"I'm going to kill him!" Su Ziying screamed over and over.

However, a demonic, bloody plant appeared out of nowhere from below and tightly entangled her legs, immobilizing her.

The other two, Shi Jingyun and Wu Tuo, were facing the same problem. Their legs had also been rooted by the bloody, vine-like plants.

“Senior, what is the meaning of this? Zhan Tianyi frowned.

“I shackled the three of them a while back. The reason they became like this was because the remaining Blood Arts: Shackle inside their bodies activated. You only got rid of the chains on the outside, not the ones inside them. Therefore, I have nothing to do with their current predicament.” Xue Li absolved himself from responsibility.

“I hope that you can keep your promise. As long as the three of us stay put, you will not interfere!” Zhan Tianyi said solemnly.

Xue Li chuckled oddly, “Relax, trust is my second name! As long as you don’t move, then I will definitely not move either.”

While he was speaking, the thoughts of his other soul resonated inside the Soul Suppressing Orb inside Qin Lie’s head again, “Originally, I was not planning on telling you the secrets behind the twelve spirit pattern pillars since you hadn’t broken through to the Manifestation Realm yet. But after considering that the explosive sounds of your six Terminator Profound Bombs were so pleasing to my ears, I’ve decided to tell you this in advance! Listen

well!”

Qin Lie’s body tightened as he instantly gathered all of his attention and listened to Xue Li’s voice inside the Soul Suppressing Orb.

“Qin Lie! Qin Lie! What should we do? They’re charging at us!” Lian Rou’s delicate face was wrought with desperation and worry as she continuously exclaimed in a low tone beside him.

Meanwhile, Tang Siqi tightly gripped Qin Lie’s shoulders. A resolute look appeared on her beautiful face.

At this time, she actually even looked at one of the caves halfway up the mountain—Qin Lie’s cavern.

Ling Yushi and Ling Xuanxuan were right inside that cave right now!

Tang Siqi gripped Qin Lie’s shoulders even more tightly and looked at that cave from afar. As more and more vicious people closed in on them, she actually felt a tiny hint of pleasure inside her heart. “At the very least, it is me who is together with him right now. For us to be able to die together... means that I’ve already beaten you.”

“Qin Lie!”

The three great reverends and seven great elders cried out in

unison.

In their eyes, as if he had been stunned silly, Qin Lie stood there motionlessly with vacant eyes, looking like he had lost his soul.

“He hadn’t experienced such a huge scene after all. He was still a little too young.” Xie Zhizhang withdrew his gaze after glancing at him.

He also thought that Qin Lie had been shocked silly.

Chapter 233: The Spirit Pattern Pillar That Soared To The Sky!

Halfway up Flame Volcano, a cave closed from the inside suddenly opened.

Ling Yushi and Ling Xuanxuan walked together to the cave entrance.

The six Terminator Profound Bombs' earth shattering explosions had caused an intense earthquake to shake Flame Volcano, causing the cave's stones to fall uncontrollably.

The two sisters were worried that the cave might fall and that the stones might crush them. Therefore, they had hurriedly exited without waiting for the people from Seven Fiends Valley to greet them.

At this moment, there were no longer any Blood Spear martial practitioners who were watching over this place. All of Armament Sect's martial practitioners had gathered at the plaza.

No one was watching over them any longer.

The two sisters walked to an open cliff side-by-side and looked down at the plaza from above. Suddenly, they heard Jiu Liuyu's ghastly and terrifying howl.

“It’s master!”

Ling Xuanxuan cried out and hurriedly scanned the foot of the mountain. Then, they subsequently found out the remnants of Armament Sect and the six, giant, glaring, abyss-like pits.

With this, they laid their eyes on the hellish, harrowing scene.

“Good heavens! What happened just now? How did it turn out like this? How did it turn out like this?” Ling Yushi’s beautiful face was covered in deep fear. Her body quivered slightly. She didn’t know what exactly had happened.

“So many people died. So many people from the valley died. I-I can see their bodies. Heavens, they’re all dead...” Ling Xuanxuan shivered as deep fear and worry appeared on her beautiful face.

“Master! Where’s master?”

The two sisters began searching for some sign of Jiu Liyu from the cliff.

“Qin Lie! This old body shall hack you to pieces! I shall pluck your sinews and skin you alive!” Jiu Liuyu’s fear inducing voice suddenly rang out.

In the next moment, the two sisters who were searching for Jiu Liuyu, dedicating all their attention, finally found her.

—They found a disheveled and ghastly looking Jiu Liuyu.

“Sister, ma-master wants to kill Qin Lie!” Ling Xuanxuan lost control and screamed.

Ling Yushi’s entire body turned weak as she nearly fell off the steep cliff. The deep fear that already covered her beautiful face turned even more extreme.

“Capture him alive! Dole him the cruelest of punishments!” Ji Liu was also howling madly.

It was only then when the sisters realized that Qin Lie had become everyone’s target.

“What do we do? What do we do? What do we do?!” Ling Xuanxuan exclaimed loudly.

“Master! Please let Qin Lie go!” Ling Yushi face was covered in tears. Her expression was one of heartache as she cried out with the loudest voice she could manage.

Her heartbreaking cry came down from halfway up the mountain, and many of the people there had heard it.

However, Jiu Liuyu’s expression only turned increasingly hideous. Her gaze was deep, quiet, and terrible, like a wraith from

the nine hells as she charged at Qin Lie with increased delirium!

Jiu Liu, Fu Chang, and many other survivors of the five forces also ignored Ling Yushi's cry. They were like bloodthirsty beasts who looked like they would chew Qin Lie to bits and swallow him alive.

Armament Sect's three great reverends and seven great inner sect elders seemed like they could not bear to see what was going to happen next. They seemed to know that Qin Lie was about face the most terrifying moment of his life.

"Kill them all!" Feng Rong's voice suddenly came up.

The remaining Blood Spear martial practitioners and other outer sect survivors surrounded Qin Lie at this moment, all forming a tight formation to guard him!

Of the remaining Armament Sect and Blood Spear martial practitioners who had the fortune to survive, even after experiencing two blood slaughters, less than twenty percent of them remained.

However, it was at this moment that they had all gathered around Qin Lie under Feng Rong's orders!

"Die before Qin Lie! Go and surrender your lives first!" Gritting her teeth so hard that her bottom lip was bleeding, Feng Rong ordered them all sternly.

“We obey Instructor Feng’s orders!” All of the Blood Spear martial practitioners howled with terrifying murderous intent.

“Kill! Kill them all!” Jiang Yuan ordered.

“Everyone, go,” Fu Zhuohui also nodded.

The remaining experts of the five forces crossed the six giant, deep pits and arrived outside the plaza. They cooperated with Jiu Liuyu, Ji Liu and Fu Chang, and began their slaughter.

The true reign of terror officially began at this very moment!

There was a lake, numerous two-story stone buildings, and vast areas built from bluestone bricks at the plaza where the twelve spirit pattern pillars were built at the foot of the Flame Volcano.

At this moment, the three great reverends, the seven great inner sect elders, Zhan Tianyi, Song Siyuan, Xie Zhizhang, Su Ziying, and Xue Li were all on the plaza.

Besides them, all other Armament Sect disciples, including Qin Lie, the Blood Spear martial practitioners, and everyone else that had escaped to this place by luck, were at the edges of the plaza.

They used their flesh and blood to form a defensive line, swearing to die protecting Qin Lie, the three great reverends, the seven great inner sect elders, and the twelve spirit pattern pillars that had protected Armament Sect for more than nine hundred

years!

“Profound Yin Earth Ghost Banner!”

Jiu Liuyu sternly screeched as deep purple banners flew out from her sleeves.

The banner burned with deep purple flames while waves of soul-extinguishing, profound, evil yin energy was unleashed from the banner, falling at the center of the Armament Sect defenders.

The moment the deep purple flames touched an Armament Sect martial practitioner, they would immediately grip their head and scream horrifically. Shortly after, deep purple flames would flow out of the seven orifices of their heads.

“Old demonic bitch! I’ll kill you!”

Feng Rong rushed out from the crowd and spat out a clump of fresh, scarlet blood from her mouth. The fresh blood spun like a large ruby while unleashing an earth-shattering blood aura before running into the deep purple banner.

“Out of the way!” Cloud Sky Mountain’s Ji Liu rushed over with an irritated expression.

His stone-like body ran toward Feng Rong in that manner. As he continued forward, his distorting, golden-gray fist rammed Feng Rong’s clump of blood like a falling meteor.

One of the Three Stones of Cloud Sky Mountain, Fu Chang, laughed coldly before five silver longswords abruptly flew out of his body. The longswords dragged a shocking rainbow behind them before also stabbing towards Feng Rong.

“Rrmmb!”

The golden gray meteor rammed into that clump of blood whereupon the clump promptly exploded.

Droplets of finger-sized blood littered the ground like broken stars.

Feng Rong snorted dully. She had not recovered from her severe injuries earlier, growing sluggish once more.

The two outer sect elders, Tong Jihua and Cheng Ping, put their lives on the line and threw out the spirit artifacts in their spatial rings to defend against the five silver long swords in order to help Feng Rong escape death.

“Pfft!”

Cheng Ping was not able to completely stop them, ending up with a silver sword in his chest.

He breathed his last breath.

“Old Cheng!” Tong Jihua’s eyes turned red.

“Kill!” Jiang Yuan ordered.

Those who survived the Terminator Profound Bombs’ explosion were the elites among the elites. They were all the most ruthless and vicious of the five forces!

These people now surrounded the Armament Sect martial practitioners at the outer edges of the plaza, swinging their butcher knives and slaughtering Armament Sect’s people without end.

Jiu Liuyu ghastly figure was the first one to break through the defensive line. Numerous banners, which burned a deep purple, were waved continuously, incinerating all Armament Sect martial practitioners that they came into contact with.

No one could stop her advance!

Every man in Armament Sect who rushed forward was set alight with purple flames coming from their heads the moment they made contact with her banners.

Her vicious eyes stared straight at Qin Lie while wearing a cruel and mad expression.

Whereas Qin Lie's eyes were expressionless as if he had lost his soul.

It was as if he had been shocked silly by the great scene around him.

"Tong Jihua! Go and join Cheng Ping!" Ji Liu laughed madly and crushed dozens of Armament Sect practitioners into chunks of bloody flesh and bones like a steel tank.

He had forced his way in front of Tong Jihua before attempting to grab Tong Jihua's neck with a savage expression on his face. He wanted to crush Tong Jihua's bones with his own hands.

At this moment, all of the vicious people of the five forces who had survived were brutally murdering Armament Sect's practitioners after their insane, murderous intent inside their hearts had been ignited by the Terminator Profound Bombs.

With each passing second, more and more of Armament Sect's people were being eliminated!

From the moment they acted, Xue Li had closed his eyes and said nothing. He adhered to the promise between him and the trio.

He did not even look at them.

—He was explaining the magics of the twelve spirit pattern pillars to Qin Lie.

Suddenly, he opened his eyes and began chuckling strangely under Zhan Tianyi and the others' uncomfortable and worried gazes.

All three of them were confused by Xue Li's laughter.

It was also at this moment when the still-eyed Qin Lie unexpectedly shivered before a brilliant light shot out of his eyes.

He looked at the spirit pattern pillar closest to him.

It was the spirit pattern pillar inscribed with the Radiant Galaxy Diagram!

"Rise!"

Qin Lie suddenly made a lifting motion.

"Rrrmb! Rrrmb!"

From the depths of the earth, an earthshaking rumble came from below at once! It quaked until everyone there was shaking!

The spirit patter pillar began to shake intensely as well as the Radiant Galaxy Diagram above it exploded into countless specks of bright starlight!

The Radiant Galaxy Diagram came alive as a brilliant and gigantic diagram of the galaxy suddenly appeared on top of everyone's heads like a projection!

"Rrrmb!"

The terrifying, quaking energy grew increasingly intense until the entire Flame Volcano itself was violently shaking. Countless gigantic stones fell from the mountain peak and mountainside. Its aura was shocking to the extreme.

"Rise!"

Qin Lie yelled once more.

"Rrrmb!"

The stone pillar that was dozens of meters tall rose to the air, and under the reflection of the vast sea of stars, emitted a brilliant light!

The very next moment, many eye-catching, star-like lights actually rushed out of the humongous galaxy diagram and rammed the invading five forces martial practitioners, exactly like shooting stars.

"Bang!"

A Manifestation Realm martial practitioner from Cloud Sky Mountain was struck by the starlight, and his body actually shattered from the impact like jade stones. He was dead before his body even touched the ground.

“Starfall!”

Qin Lie angrily roared with bloodshot eyes.

The numerous dazzling star fell from the vast sea of stars and thrust into the incoming five forces practitioners!

Countless terrifying cries of pain and death rang out from among the five forces yet again. Every time a cry came out, it meant that another person had been eliminated by the stars!

“One more!” Qin Lie howled madly.

The spirit pattern diagram inscribed with the Celestial Sealing Demon Diagram also shot out of the ground from amidst the earthshaking rumble!

After the spirit pattern pillar had risen into the sky, the terrifying image of demons and monsters, struggling and howling with everything they had but unable to escape the shackles of a humongous, sky-locking web, appeared midair.

“Temporary seal release!” Bloodthirst appeared in Qin Lie’s eyes.

The giant web that had trapped the demons and monsters for god knows how long loosened that very moment.

Then, the terrifying demons and monsters that seemed to hail from the nine hells entered a state of frenzy after sniffing fresh blood.

Qin Lie suddenly looked towards Jiu Liuyu.

The great demons and monsters that had just been released immediately had a target as they rushed towards Jiu Liuyu like thick, demonic clouds!

They immediately flooded over Jiu Liuyu!

And Jiu Liuyu immediately cried out in mad pain!

As if her flesh and blood were being consumed and her soul was being gnawed apart, those terrifying cries caused a hair-raising, bone-chilling, violent shudder to wrack the bodies of anyone who heard it!

Chapter 234: Yet Another Miracle!

The two towering spirit pattern pillars suspended themselves in the air high above Qin Lie's head as if they were two giant spears which were about to pierce holes in the heavens.

Armament Sect had built itself around the twelve spirit pattern pillars for nine hundred years. It was their symbol of glory and was the core foundation of their sect. The area was also considered the sect's spiritual sanctuary.

As of right now, of the pillars which acted as the foundation of everything Armament Sect had accomplished in its nine hundred years of existence and allowed it to remain standing for that period of time, two of them had flown into the sky!

No one knew that these spirit pattern pillars could move, nor had anyone ever been able to pull a spirit pattern pillar out of the earth. Obviously, absolutely no one had been able to cause them to fly!

Qin Lie was currently creating one miracle after another!

The glow of dazzling stars formed a vast, profound, and mysterious shining sea of light. It was as if the heavens had been painted across the sky.

One ten-meter-long giant monster and demon after another silently howled. As if they were going to kill all that possessed the breath of life, they began to release harrowing, evil energies.

Jiu Liuyu's tragic cries had long since stopped.

The demons and monsters which had rushed towards her like demonic clouds dispersed, similar to a colony of giant bats, as they shrieked and roared. They followed Qin Lie's eyes as they pounced on even more practitioners of the five forces.

"Good kills! Good kills! Hahahaha!"

Xue Li's loud cackles and cries echoed across the square, entering the ears of each and every practitioner.

He had gone mad from excitement.

"Good heavens!"

"The spirit pattern pillars can actually fly!"

"The spirit pattern pillars actually have such terrifying power!"

All of the people of Armament Sect, from disciple to elder, all arched their necks and gazed into the sky with the occasional tear running down their cheeks.

"The heavens have opened their eyes!" Feng Rong's mouth was covered by her hand. Amid her lustrous fingers, traces of scarlet blood could be seen.

However, her eyes had become extremely bright as a reddish color emerged atop her face, showing her extreme excitement.

“Sis, sis!” At the halfway point of the volcano, Ling Xuanxuan’s feminine figure froze as she blankly stared at the enormous spirit pattern pillars and the two shockingly majestic yet mysterious pictures.

She also watched as Jiu Liuyu was being covered up by the giant monsters and demons!

“Master, master has disappeared…” Ling Xuanxuan sobbed.

Not a trace of Jiu Liuyu was left. She had been completely torn to pieces and devoured by the demons and monsters. Not even a single drop of blood had spurted out.

Ling Yushi blankly stood atop the cliff, completely frozen as if she had lost her soul. Her beautiful figure seemed incredibly helpless.

She realized that she had been unable to do anything.

She had been unable to prevent her master from trying to kill Qin Lie and had also failed in preventing Qin Lie from killing her master. All she had been able to do was cry, shout, and accept everything that had happened.

Her entire body suddenly seemed to have become devoid of

energy.

“The third spirit pattern pillar! Rise!” Qin Lie roared like an primeval beast.

Another spirit pattern pillar began to vibrate and shake, causing the earth to rumble. It rose from the earth one bit at a time and then flew high into the sky, similarly suspending itself above Qin Lie’s head like the other two.

One giant bird, including giant golden colored eagles, after another flew out screeching from within this spirit pattern pillar. These magical birds of prey were ten or so meters in length.

The Soaring Sky Birds Diagram!

Ten or so strange, fierce, and never before seen spirit birds gracefully flew in the sky, drawing arc after arc with their bodies as they tore flesh off the bodies of the practitioners of the five forces.

Even more sharp, mournful cries emanated out from within the group of people. Upon being attacked by the talons of a giant golden eagle, even practitioners such as Ji Liu and Fu Chang, whose flesh was extremely tough, would see their bodies become bloody.

There was not a single person left who could still attack the people of Armament Sect.

The practitioners of the five forces within the area between the three towering spirit pattern pillars suspended in midair were all almost instantaneously turned into corpses.

Much quicker than when they entered, they began to desperately run outside Armament Sect's gate, trying to flee from this terrifying area.

Even Jiang Yuan was amongst the ranks of those who fled!

"Kill him! Kill him for me!" Su Ziying screamed uncontrollably, "Take revenge for Old Yu!"

Qin Lie had originally forgotten about them. But now, upon hearing the cries and shouts of Su Ziying, he turned his head to look behind him.

He looked at Su Ziying and the other two.

Two fifteen-meter-tall winged demons with curved horns on their heads turned into streaks of demonic light as they appeared above Su Ziying and the other two in a flash.

The two vicious, murderous evil energies soon locked onto Su Ziying, Wu Tuo, and Shi Jingyun, and as the demons roared, they then violently bit down.

“Lord, Lord Song, save me!” shrieked Shi Jingyun.

“Envoy, save me!” screamed Su Ziying.

Atop the square, the expressions of the three martial practitioners from Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple all became increasingly heavy as they looked towards the sky.

They looked at the three spirit pattern pillars, then at the situation which had taken a complete one eighty. Their gazes covered the immense fluctuations of energy in the sky and watched as the fluctuations materialized into numerous demons, monsters, and spirit birds.

With their cultivation, these three could naturally see that those falling stars, biting and clawing demons and monsters, and giant avian spirit birds were not living creatures.

Those evil demons and monsters which were ravaging the entire area were all formed through the condensation of a special energy with a remnant soul as the core.

All of the demons, monsters, and spirit birds were actually not physical beings. Instead, they were all remnant souls which had fused with the strange energy within the spirit pattern pillar. The result were these strange creatures which were neither real nor illusory.

“Brother Song?” Zhan Tianyi lowly said.

Song Siyuan furrowed his brows, then gently nodded, saying, “We cannot sit here and do nothing.”

Thus, Zhan Tianyi stood up.

He first glanced at Xue Li, slightly bowing in apology, before turning around, his body now releasing a white holy light.

Rays of that light, like giant platinum dragons, condensed atop his head, forming the powerful figure of the Holy Spirit God. The Holy Spirit God reappeared in midair, its entire body shining with a boundless radiance.

“Die demons!” Zhan Tianyi shouted.

The Holy Spirit God was like the blinding sun as it began to act. Ray after ray of holy platinum-colored light began to rain down from the sky.

Upon colliding with the holy platinum colored light, the demons, monsters, giant birds, giant eagles, and falling stars all dissipated into plumes of colorful smoke and disappeared back into the three spirit pattern pillars.

The late stage Fulfillment Realm practitioner, Zhan Tianyi, relied on his clear cultivation advantage to clear the entire sky of demonic figures in one move.

Upon seeing Zhan Tianyi make a move, the expressions of Jiang Yuan and the rest of the people who were frantically fleeing all subsequently shifted, completely stopping in their tracks.

Tu Shixiong and the group which included Tu Mo and Tu Ze had still yet to enter Armament Sect. They had constantly been observing from outside of the gate, watching the strange series of events with ever-changing expressions.

At this time, when Song Siyuan nodded his head, Tu Shixiong suddenly said, “You all stay here, I must go in.”

“Why, father?” Tu Mo asked, unable to understand.

Tu Shixiong looked at the distant Song Siyuan, his expression complex. Unexpectedly, he sighed.

“Because he is backed by Profound Heaven Alliance’s Song Family. Because five years ago atop the Nether Battlefield, he constantly assisted Song Siyuan.”

Xie Jingxuan’s cold, clear voice resonated over from somewhere close by. She and Liang Zhong were both mounted on Profound Nether Beasts as they arrived beside Tu Shixiong. She continued to explain, “Since Song Siyuan is about to move, he naturally has to move as well, unable to simply sit here in the distance and observe any longer.”

She and Liang Zhong all knew that Qin Lie was in possession of powerful artifacts like the Terminator Profound Bomb. Moreover, they had also previously seen Du Haitian blown to pieces and, more importantly, were extremely clear on what fate had befallen Blood Shadow.

Thus, while the situation was unclear and before Qin Lie had thrown out his Terminator Profound Bombs, they, like Tu Shixiong, had not shown themselves.

As of now, the Terminator Profound Bombs had exploded, and Qin Lie had incited miraculous changes in the spirit pattern pillars, causing three pillars to take to the sky one after another...

From Xie Jingxuan's point of view, all of Qin Lie's cards and hidden tricks had been used.

Thus, she had finally appeared.

"Heh. Girl of the Xie Family, you finally came out. Are you also preparing to help your uncle wrap things up?" Tu Shixiong grinned, revealing his white teeth, "I heard that when you went to Nebula Pavilion in the past, you personally asked my son about Qin Lie and brought him with you to the stone forest to deal with the Soul Devouring Beast. Hei, with your insight, how come you weren't able to see Qin Lie's wisdom? How come you didn't recruit and monopolize such a gem?"

Confusion emerged within Xie Jingxuan's eyes.

“That year, in the stone forest, Qin Lie used heavenly thunder to kill the Soul Devouring Beast. Back then, you should have recruited him into the Department of Internal Affairs and made him your subordinate.” Tu Shixiong laughed, “If your vision was a little bit sharper and you acted more decisively, would we encounter this many problems today?”

Liang Zhong’s expression was bitter.

At that time, he had reasoned with Xie Jingxuan and tried to get her to recruit Qin Lie into the Department of Internal Affairs; he had tried to persuade her to make an exception and recommend Qin Lie to enter Dark Asura Hall.

Unfortunately, Xie Jingxuan hadn’t agreed with his suggestion. He had no clue as to what had happened between Xie Jingxuan and Qin Lie.

Only afterwards, when Qin Lie had fought with Du Haitian in front of everyone, had Xie Jingxuan recognized Qin Lie’s courage and thought of recruiting him

It was very unfortunate that Qin Lie’s consecutive murders caused Yuan Tianya to become furious and chase him throughout Icestone City to kill him.

At that time, if she had been willing to offend Yuan Tianya and protect Qin Lie at all costs, then using her identity as Xie Jingxuan of the Xie Family, she could have also safely induced Qin Lie into the Department of Internal Affairs without problem.

But Xie Jingxuan hadn't done that, and thus, she had lost yet another opportunity.

"Girl of the Xie Family, you actually don't have an eye for people," rudely said Tu Shixiong, "Comparing you with the young miss of the Song Family, you are a full level lower. If it had been Song Tingyu who had brought Qin Lie into the stone forest and had killed the Soul Devouring Beast with him, haha, this brat Qin Lie would long since have obediently followed in her footsteps. I bet one wouldn't have even been able to chase him away. He would have been hell-bent on selling his soul to the Song Family.

"If this had happened, the series of troubling matters which followed wouldn't have happened. Nor would Armament Sect have become so difficult to destroy, much less cause such great casualties to the five forces!"

Xie Jingxuan's expression froze. She looked Tu Shixiong in the eye, then indifferently said, "I am indeed not her match in this aspect."

Tu Shixiong chuckled, but didn't continue speaking. He gave some instructions to Tu Mo and Tu Ze, then gathered his subordinates and entered Armament Sect.

Xie Jingxuan and Liang Zhong followed them in, also entering the ruined Armament Sect. They walked forward, following the increasing chaos.

“Bang!”

A ray of holy platinum colored light shot at Qin Lie’s chest. Qin Lie’s body tingled, and all of a sudden he became unable to move.

“Eh?” Zhan Tianyi said in astonishment, “He’s actually not dead?”

He thought that upon being hit, Qin Lie would immediately explode and die. Afterwards, he would be able to easily end this long battle which had dragged on for far too long.

“We hope for him to live. He has too many secrets on his body. For him, my Profound Heaven Alliance is willing to give up Mo Hai,” suddenly said Song Siyuan.

As Song Siyuan’s words fell, a mirror about the size of a palm emerged over the area on Qin Lie’s chest where he had been attacked by the platinum colored light. It was because of the presence of this mirror that Qin Lie had been able to block a blow that had been meant to take his life.

The mirror was clearly Song Siyuan’s.

“Not just simply Mo Hai, but all of Armament Sect’s wealth, books, and forging manuscripts can also be given to Eight Extreme Palace to divide amongst themselves as well,” interrupted Xie Zhizhang.

Zhan Tianyi was a Green Robed Envoy of Eight Extreme Temple

and was purely a wild fighter that wasn't good at strategy.

However, even upon hearing Song Siyuan and Xie Zhizhang's most generous concessions, in which they gave up all benefits, he was still able to sense Song Siyuan and Xie Zhizhang's intentions. He shouted, "You all have set your eyes on that strange explosive artifact, right?"

Chapter 235: Stunning Change

Zhan Tianyi's guess was on the mark. Song Siyuan and Xie Zhichang, the two experts from Profound Heaven Alliance, saw the value of the Terminator Profound Bomb.

They had personally witnessed the power of those six Terminator Profound Bombs. Even as Fulfillment Realm experts, they didn't dare to claim that they would escape unscathed if they suffered the full brunt of a Terminator Profound Bomb's explosion.

This terrifying object that could obliterate a sect and wipe out a force was something that Profound Heaven Alliance had to pay attention to!

Compared to the Terminator Profound Bomb, Mo Hai and all the spirit materials and secret recipes Armament Sect possessed now seemed insignificant.

Zhan Tianyi might not be a martial practitioner who focused on strategy, but he was not stupid. He saw that Song Siyuan and Xie Zhizhang placed great importance on the Terminator Profound Bomb, so his eyes flickered and he said with a smile, "I can't let your Profound Heaven Alliance take all the good stuff."

He glanced at Qin Lie and said, "Eight Extreme Temple will not allow you to take what this boy has. Let's first capture him alive and then discuss what to do."

Song Siyuan and Xie Zhizhang knew that it wouldn't be so easy to

have everything go their way, so they nodded, agreeing to Zhan Tianyi's proposal.

"Senior..." Zhan Tianyi turned away away from Qin Lie and bowed apologetically towards Xue Li. He said, "Senior, please, forgive us. Senior... Senior??"

He discovered that Xue Li had closed his eyes at some point while they were talking.

With his eyes closed, Xue Li did not emit any strong blood energy fluctuations. He was like a dried corpse that had weathered thousands of years with only the ability to make others uncomfortable, completely unable to intimidate anyone.

Since Xue Li did not open his eyes or speak, Zhan Tianyi did not continue. He even withdrew the Holy Spirit God.

At this time, all of the demons, great birds, golden eagles, and galaxies of stars had already returned to the spirit pattern pillars after being herded by the platinum divine light of the Holy Spirit God.

The three Sky Obelisks were still suspended above Qin Lie's head but no longer gave off any shocking vibrations.

One after another, the three unusually large picture scrolls shrunk, all the way down to small wisps of light before disappearing into the diagram on top of the spirit pattern pillar.

Under the three stone pillars, Qin Lie was positioned similar to Xue Li, seated with his eyes closed.

“Lord Song, Lord Xie...” Fu Zhuohui bowed from a distance.

“Envoy.” Jiang Yuan paid his respects to Zhan Tianyi.

A group of people, including Fu Zhuohui, Jiang Yuan, Ji Liu,Fu Chang, and Feng Lin, whose men had died,...once again gathered at the edges of the plaza.

Dark Asura Hall, Dark Shadow Tower, Cloud Sky Mountain, Purple Mist Sea, and almost a thousand martial practitioners from the five forces had attacked Armament Sect.

Up to this point, Yuan Tianya and Liang Yangzu were the first to die, and were soon followed by Jiu Liuyu, Cao Yuanrui, and Yu Dai.

They had been wiped out, one group after another.

Now, only a few dozen remained...

Tu Shixiong, Xie Jingxuan, Liang Zhong, Yi Yuan, Cang Li, and the others also walked in fromoutside.

They looked at the people from Armament Sect who had also suffered heavy casualties and were in a similarly terrible state.

They looked at Feng Rong and Tong Jihua, then at the three reverends and the seven inner sect elders. Next, they looked at Xue Li...

Everyone suddenly became silent.

However, as if they were in agreement, all the gazes swept towards Qin Lie!

All of the people from the five forces were now absolutely clear that the reason why Armament Sect was able to survive until now and make them pay such a heavy price was due to Qin Lie's existence!

If Qin Lie was not present, Armament Sect would have been destroyed by the first wave that included Yuan Tianya, Liang Yangzu, Shi Jingyun, Wu Tuo, and Su Ziying.

It was Qin Lie who released Xue Li and pulled Armament Sect from the abyss of death. Not only that, Qin Lie was also the one who killed Yuan Tianya, Blood Shadow, and Liang Yangzu. Furthermore, he had captured Shi Jingyu, Wu Tuo, and Su Ziying.

Without Qin Lie's order to cut off the fingers of the captured trio, Armament City, along with Armament Sect, would have perished long ago.

Without Qin Lie, how could Armament Sect withstand the attack led by Yu Dai and Jiang Yuan?

Without Qin Lie...

After carefully considering the situation, everyone found, to their great shock, that this martial practitioner who was just in the Natal Opening Realm had dealt the five forces an unimaginable blow!

So from this, the longer they looked at Qin Lie, the colder their hearts grew.

“This brat is a genius, but he has spilled too much blood. Otherwise...” Zhan Tianyi shook his head in regret.

He suddenly felt some admiration for Qin Lie.

Xie Zhizhang reflexively looked at Xie Jingxuan and sighed. “... Jingxuan is not as good as Song Tingyu in this aspect. If it were Song Tingyu, Qin Lie would have already submitted, willingly becoming the fangs and claws of the Song Family. It is such a pity.”

“Lord?” Jiang Yuan called lightly.

Zhan Tianyi waved his hand and signaled for everyone to settle down and not to act rashly.

Song Siyuan had Dark Asura Hall, Dark Shadow Tower, Seven Fiends Valley, and the others wait.

The three Fulfillment martial practitioners looked at Xue Li and wanted to get a clear signal from him.

—They recognized Xue Li's great strength.

"Kid, I said that unless you reach the Manifestation Realm, it would be impossible to turn the situation around." At this point in time, the voice of Xue Li echoed in Qin Lie's Soul Suppressing Orb.

"The twelve spirit pattern pillars can imprison me, so naturally they can also easily imprison Fulfillment Realm martial practitioners. I have already told you how to manipulate the spirit pattern pillars. It is a pity that you cannot pull the twelve spirit pattern pillars out of the ground. You are not strong enough, so you cannot set the twelve spirit pattern pillars into the Great Seal Formation nor seal these three Fulfillment Realm martial practitioners. Therefore, you will fail.

"It is not that I am not willing to help you, but your cultivation is too low. You cannot even form the most basic defensive formation."

"Is there really no way?" Qin Lie focused his mind and conversed with Xue Li. "Even you do not have any way to reverse this situation?"

"Hehehe, there actually is a solution." Xue Li laughed like a demon in the Soul Suppressing Orb.

“What solution?” Qin Lie pressed.

“Give me back the other half of my soul. I will kill all the offenders and these three Fulfillment Realm martial practitioners. Also, I can guarantee you that I will help you resolve the problem of the two Copper forces within a decade.” Xue Li started to laugh.

He had planned each step and set up traps at each step. Moreover, he had dug holes for Qin Lie to jump over in order to reach his goal: regaining his freedom.

Half of his soul was in the Soul Suppressing Orb, so he knew that Qin Lie had a wondrous treasure that could teleport him. He could leave the battlefield at any time and could easily abandon Armament Sect to escape.

He did not tell Qin Lie that the combined might of six Terminator Profound Bombs would cause space to compress and collapse, causing ripples in its layers. Qin Lie being unable to escape with the Eye of Frost was part of his plan.

He and Zhan Tianyi had reached a silent agreement and were not willing to interfere. This was all to force Qin Lie dead end!

Step by step, he forced Qin Lie into the present situation, eliminating all the possibilities that Qin Lie had of turning the situation around. He even told Qin Lie about the spirit pattern pillars in order to give Qin Lie hope, and then, he used Zhan Tianyi, who was in late stage of the Fulfillment Realm to destroy it!

He wanted Qin Lie to taste despair!

He wanted Qin Lie to have to rely on him to survive so Qin Lie would willingly give up that half of his soul!

Currently, Qin Lie was only able to get three of the twelve spirit pattern pillars to fly. Unable to to form the Great Seal Formation, Qin Lie didn't have a chance of turning the situation around.

"Does the other half of your soul not have any way of taking me away from this place?" Qin Lie asked.

"Facing three Fulfillment Realm martial practitioners and taking you away along with two women? Hah, sorry, I do not have the ability to do that," Xue Li replied.

"What about me only?" Qin Lie asked again.

"I myself might not be able to escape. With only half of a soul and my strength greatly damaged, I most likely cannot fight against these three." Xue Li gradually grew impatient. He said coldly, "You give me that half of my soul and I will help you get rid of all this trouble, guarantee that I will eliminate the two Copper forces within a decade, and allow Armament Sect to rule this land. Otherwise, take half of my soul and walk towards death. You choose!"

Qin Lie's heart tightened.

He had a feeling that—Xue Li was not giving his all. Xue Li was

forcing him to give up that half of his soul.

But right now, he couldn't find any way out of this situation. He had to be extra careful, and he had to make a transaction with Xue Li!

Just like Xue Li said, with the situation like this, he had no other choice.

He could refuse and die together with that half of Xue Li's soul or he could choose to believe Xue Li's promise, give up that half of his soul, and gamble that Xue Li was willing to uphold his end of the bargain.

If he did not work together with this old demon, he would not be able to overcome this obstacle and would undoubtedly die.

If he worked with this old demon, he could be killed right after, but there was the chance the old demon might let him live...

A string of thoughts flew through his head. He slowly sorted them out and gradually came to a decision.

He was going to give his answer.

Yet at this time, he felt a dark and terrifying vibration.

He suddenly opened his eyes.

Xue Li opened his as well.

The three Fulfillment Realm experts, Song Siyuan, Xie Zhizhang, and Zhan Tianyi, also shifted and looked at three spots.

—The three gaps where the three pillars had been pulled out from!

At this moment, grayish-white smoke slowly floated out of the three empty holes. A dark and horrifyingly evil aura was gradually being emitted.

“Awoo! Aooo!”

The sounds of otherworldly vicious beasts seemed to echo out from the three holes as though there were layers of space and a thick barrier between them.

Flame Volcano started to shake violently. This mountain that had always erupted with earth fire for many years shook, and rocks rolled as though the mountain was about to collapse.

“Krrk, krrrk, krrrk!”

Enormous rocks appeared on the body of the mountain, and this volcano seemed like it was going to be torn apart by the violent shakes!

“Booooom! Boom boom boom!”

The remaining nine spirit pattern pillars shook violently as they stood on the plaza. It seemed that something was trying to push them out of the ground.

“Heavens! This is the Nether Realm’s aura!” Xie Zhizhang shouted in fear.

Everyone looked towards the three gaps, exactly where the three spirit pattern pillars once stood!

“Flame Volcano, the volcano, the earth fire! To use the heat of the earth fire to seal the dark nether, to suppress the evil nether passageway!” Xue Li’s expression also changed. “Motherf*cker, these twelve spirit pattern pillars sealed me inside, and on the outside, they were suppressing the evil nether passageway!”

“Now I know why that senior who had protected Armament Sect and disappeared long ago never allowed Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple to move against Armament Sect.” Song Siyuan’s expression became extremely ugly. “So the twelve spirit pattern pillars that have stood for nine hundred years at Armament Sect were at the base of Flame Volcano because they are supposed to suppress the entrance to the Nether Realm!”

Chapter 236: Change

For many years, Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple had coveted Armament Sect's accumulated riches. They feared that one day Armament Sect would also become a Copper force and cause the state of affairs to turn into one with three forces.

So Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple wanted to destroy Armament Sect.

Yet whenever they were about to carry out even low-impact plans, they would receive a warning—a warning from higher level forces!

They also knew that there was someone protecting Armament Sect that did not allow them to act.

It was something they had tolerated for many years...

Over the last hundred years, they had not heard anything about that person. They had endured until they assumed that person had passed on to dare take action against Armament Sect.

Furthermore, at first, the only thing action taken by them was for Dark Shadow Tower to go and observe.

They received no warning of any kind when Dark Shadow Tower attacked Armament Sect, so they had rejoiced in secret. After that,

they ordered Dark Asura Hall, Seven Fiends Valley, Cloud Sky Mountain, and Purple Mist Sea to take action.

They still didn't receive a warning.

With that, they grew even more daring, completely sure that person was no longer around. So Tu Xi and Xie Zhizhang appeared, and they carried out even more major plans later on.

In the eyes of Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple, Armament Sect, who did not submit to them, was a threat and was also a fat piece of meat that should be taken care off.

They never could have dreamed that Armament Sect, which had been founded at Flame Volcano, existed for nine hundred years for the sake of suppressing the evil nether passageway!

Today, they finally understood why that great personage who protected Armament Sect did not do so just for the sake Armament Sect but for all of Scarlet Tide Continent...

"Woosh, woosh, woosh!"

Thick clumps grayish-white fog came out of the three holes with waves of dark, terrifying vibrations emanating from the smoky mist.

Flame Volcano was shaking, the cracks growing as time passed. The remaining nine spirit pattern pillars were also shaking as

though they were being forced up.

Xue Li turned serious. He stared at the three holes and sensed them whereupon the expression on his face became ugly.

Song Siyuan also looked at the three holes, the look on his face also one of fear. He said, “Qin Lie, put the three spirit pattern pillars back and suppress the evil nether passageway. I can promise that, from now on, Profound Heaven Alliance will not touch one hair of Armament Sect!”

“I can also speak on behalf of Eight Extreme Temple. As long as you continue to suppress the evil nether passageway, my Eight Extreme Temple will instantly send out the order and will discard any any notions of ever destroying Armament Sect!” Zhan Tianyi also shouted out.

All the martial practitioners from the five forces and every single person from Armament Sect, in this moment, had gone pale and were filled to the brim with terror.

They finally understood what was happening.

The twelve spirit pattern pillars, which had stood for more than nine hundred years, had the purpose of using the heat of the earthfire at Flame Volcano to suppress the dark evil nether passageway. It was to stop the Nether Realm and Scarlet Tide Continent from being connected!

The evil races from the Nether Realm had to always pass through the Nether Battlefield to enter Scarlet Tide Continent.

The Nether Battlefield was the buffer between Nether Realm and Scarlet Tide Continent. Inside the Nether Battlefield, the strongest elites of Eight Extreme Temple and Profound Heaven Alliance stood guard. They cast endless restrictive formations, barriers, and the like, using up the spirit materials of the two great Copper forces to stop the evil races of the Nether Realm from going forward!

The evil races of the Nether Realm had to pay a great price to pass through the Nether Battlefield. They had to withstand the terrifying attacks of the restrictive boundaries and other hindrances.

Due to this, there had not been many evil races from the Nether Realm that had made it through the defensive line at the Nether Battlefield. Even if there were one or two fish that slipped the net, they would be quickly dealt with.

Yet if the twelve spirit pattern pillars rose up and the seal on this land was completely opened, then the passageway between the Nether Realm and Scarlet Tide Continent could be opened.

The evil races of the Nether Realm could easily enter Scarlet Tide Continent through this passageway without needing to deal with the seal and blockades at the Nether Battlefield, not needing to spill much blood at all!

Everyone recognized the severity of the matter.

“Boom boom boom! Woosh!”

After earth-shaking quakes, another spirit pattern pillar flew and floated in the air.

Qin Lie’s expression also changed.

This spirit pattern pillar had not risen due to him but was pushed up by an enormous power from under the ground.

“Qin Lie! If you can reseal this land we will accept any conditions!” Xie Zhizhang shouted in fear.

“Act immediately, I guarantee that nothing will happen to Armament Sect!” Song Siyuan also shouted.

“Quickly!” Zhang Tianyi shouted urgently.

“Qin Lie!”

The three reverends and the seven inner sect elders suddenly became excited. They finally saw hope and shouted at Qin Lie as well.

They were now also urging Qin Lie to act.

Qin Lie subsequently sat down. He gathered all of his remaining power and his mind consciousness. According to the method that Xue Li taught him, he tried to get the spirit pattern pillars in the air to come down.

“Boom boom! Boom boom!”

Yet, before he could act, another two spirit pattern pillars flew up.

“Woosh, woosh, woosh! Woosh, woosh, woosh!”

More grayish-white smoke flowed out of the deep of the earth accompanied by terrifying screams and wails, thoroughly shocking everyone’s minds.

“There is no time,” Xue Li inserted.

Bloody light flashed in his eyes, and blood colored waves spread from his sitting body.

The blood colored waves rippled out as though they were intelligent vacuums that were searching for something.

All the blood that was seeping out from the recently slain martial practitioners seemed to be attracted to the bloody ripples, being completely absorbed.

The bloody ripples of light expanded out, moving under everyone's feet. It gradually reached the point where it spread out past Armament Sect and sucked up every drop of blood from everyone who had died from the Terminator Profound Bombs and the spirit pattern pillars.

Like blood was being pushed into him, Xue Li's withered and dry body slowly expanded. His ashen skin gradually became flushed.

A terrifying and vicious bloody fluctuation that caused one's blood to boil started to emanate from Xue Li. His state improved drastically in this instant.

The bloody circle of light that Xue Li released was absorbed into his body.

He suddenly stood up.

His body, which had been like a dried corpse, now possessed the figure of a normal person. That ugly and terrifying face became handsome and youthful.

He had transformed into a handsome male of around forty years of age in a short period of time.

Thin, tall, and wearing a dark red robe, he possessed a pair of red eyes on that handsome face and gave off a feeling of extraordinary yet eerie charisma.

“Senior!” Qin Lie shouted.

In this instant, it wasn’t just Xue Li’s appearance that changed, his aura had exploded as well.

Qin Lie instantly understood. It was not that Xue Li did not have the power to kill the three Fulfillment Realm martial practitioners, but he had kept his strength hidden and was patiently absorbing the power from the blood underground.

—Xue Li had been forcing him into a corner as Qin Lie had expected!

“Boom boom! Boom boom!”

Another two spirit pattern pillars rose up. Amidst the enormous shakes, Flame Volcano started to collapse. The caverns halfway up the mountain crumbled as even more cracks appeared.

“Senior! Can you suppress the evil nether passageway?” Xie Zhizhang shouted.

Xue Li grinned and started to laugh.

He, whose figure and appearance as well as aura had changed, was actually now extremely pleasant to the eyes when laughing. Not only was the bloodiness and viciousness gone, but it also made

one feel very comfortable.

He didn't place any importance on Xie Zhizhang, Song Siyuan, or Zhan Tianyi. He only said to Qin Lie, "Kid, unless you can reach the Netherpassage Realm, you cannot suppress the evil nether passageway. So this passageway will be opened, and the evil races of Nether Realm will step onto this land. Heh, better start preparing now."

Qin Lie's face was dark.

Xue Li looked at Song Siyuan and the two others. He smiled slightly, his tone calm and natural. "You afraid now?"

The three nodded frantically.

"There's no use in feeling fear, what will come will come. Try to prepare and face this calamity." Xue Li was not polite. "You caused this calamity. This passage was opened because of the pressure you were applying onto the sect. Let me remind you, the suppression of this passageway probably relies on those twelve spirit pattern pillars. In addition, Qin Lie might be the only one who can move the spirit pattern pillars and be able to seal this place. Of course, he cannot do it now. He needs time to grow and at least needs to reach the Netherpassage Realm."

The trio's expression became even more grave.

"Oh, right, let me remind you of one more thing. That

Terminator Profound Bomb, it is a great weapon against the evil races of the Nether Realm. If it can be mass produced and used effectively, you might manage to survive," Xue Li snickered as he spoke.

The trio looked at Qin Lie with great emotion.

"Kid, considering how you escaped this calamity, you lucked out." Xue Li scoffed and said to Qin Lie, "Take care of that half of my soul for me. If something happens, I will destroy everyone close to you!"

Upon finishing, Xue Li roared. He turned into a streak of bloody light and flew to the east. In a flash, he disappeared.

Xue Li clearly felt regretful that he could not force Qin Lie to give up the half of his soul, but he seemed to have urgent matters to attend to, so he could not waste more time on Qin Lie. He had to temporarily leave and take care of his private matters.

Half of his soul still remained in Qin Lie's Soul Suppressing Orb which meant he could still communicate with Qin Lie at any time.

He could also knew Qin Lie's state at any moment and could easily find Qin Lie. Consequently, he had no worries about leaving.

"The passageway is already open. Low level martial practitioners should leave now and evacuate. Inform your superiors to prepare for battle." Song Siyuan took a deep breath and shouted,

“Everyone, retreat from this place! Starting from now, the battle against Armament Sect is on hold! Dark Asura Hall, Seven Fiends Valley, Dark Shadow Tower, you are not permitted to take action against Armament Sect!”

“Cloud Sky Mountain and Purple Mist Sea, stop your retaliation against Armament Sect; the grudges stop here!” Zhan Yianyi ordered.

The five forces were shocked when they heard Song Siyuan and Zhan Tianyi’s orders.

They knew that the sudden change in attitude from Eight Extreme Temple and Profound Heaven Alliance was due to a few of Xue Li’s statements—Qin Lie would be able to seal this ground in the future and Qin Lie’s Terminator Profound Bomb was crucial in combating the evil races of the Nether Realm!

Chapter 237: Reaching An Agreement

As Xue Li glided away, Eight Extreme Temple and Profound Heaven Alliance finally threw out the olive branch as they took initiative to plead with Qin Lie...

Qin Lie stood on the fragmented stone ground and observed the expectant gazes of all the Armament Sect elders and disciples as they all came to the sudden realization that Armament Sect's calamity had already passed.

Because the opening of the evil nether passageway meant that the Nether Battlefield between the Nether Realm and Scarlet Tide Continent would no longer be able to contain the evil races of the Nether Realm. Before long, a great wave of evil beings from the Nether Realm would set foot onto their continent.

A great war between Scarlet Tide Continent and the Nether Realm could break out at any time.

At this time, Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple had to band together; they had to muster every last bit of combat strength possible to defend against the invasion of the evil races.

As for Qin Lie, he would be of great use during that time. The spirit artifacts and Terminator Profound Bombs forged by Armament Sect's artificers and his control over the twelve spirit pattern pillars would provide a flicker of hope for the continent as they clash against the invaders.

Only thus were Song Siyuan and Zhan Tianyi able to decisively suspend the grudges held between the five great forces and Armament Sect.

“Boom boom!”

The earth tremored as long, narrow fissures began to emerge under everyone’s feet.

Amidst the sounds of explosion, another spirit pattern pillar was harshly ejected from the ground up into the air.

“Sect Master Qin!” screeched elder Tong Jihua.

Qin Lie’s mind quivered, and he immediately reacted, saying, “Everyone, try your best to evacuate from this area. I will try to see if I can delay the arrival of the incoming evil beings!”

Finished, he promptly sat down.

Closing his eyes, he began to circulate all the power within his body, inciting the spirit energy within his dantian’s spirit sea to flow like a stream through his four limbs and bones as it converged towards his muscles, veins, and organs.

Following his mind’s guidance, the spirit energy he possessed surged out of the top of his head into the sky towards the spirit

pattern pillars suspended in midair.

Each spirit pattern pillar was like a glowing cylindrical galaxy and shined with various colors of brilliant light. Each of the spirit diagrams inscribed atop the pillars once again began to emerge as if they were alive.

One long, white river of energy after another surged down from within the Nine Winding River Diagram and flowed into the hole from which the pillar had escaped from. The intense tremoring of the hole was gradually being suppressed.

Chunks of starlight, which glowed as brightly as diamonds, fell into another hole. The heaven-shaking earth-moving howls from within the hole were seemingly sealed.

The giant birds, spirit birds, and golden eagles were like a group of swallows returning to their nest as they descended into the next hole, dissipating the clouds of grayish-white smoke while also forcefully stabilizing the ground below.

“Everyone, immediately retreat out of Armament Sect and Armament City. Evacuate this entire area!” decisively ordered Song Siyuan.

“Evacuate now! The faster the better! The farther the better!” similarly shouted Zhan Tianyi.

“Leave!” also screamed Feng Rong.

Thus, the martial practitioners of the five great forces, along with the people of Armament Sect, all began to withdraw as quickly as possible.

“Qin Lie, how long can you hold out?” asked Liang Zhong.

“At most, at most two hours...” replied Qin Lie as he wildly circulated his spirit energy.

“Within two hours, everyone must evacuate. Otherwise you shall die!” Xie Zhizhang’s face was extremely serious as he ordered, “Jingxuan, you leave too! You are responsible for keeping a close eye on the people of the five forces. They are not allowed to come into conflict with the people of Armament Sect again during this time!”

Xie Jingxuan solemnly nodded and subsequently looked in the direction of Fu Zhuohui and Tu Shixiong’s people, saying, “From now on, the hatred between the five forces and Armament Sect must be forcefully suppressed!”

“Rest assured,” promised Fu Zhuohui.

“Us three, along with Qin Lie, will stay behind. Everyone else leave this instant!” urged Song Siyuan.

The people of the five forces and Armament Sect all quickly withdrew in terror.

When the mountain had begun to violently tremble, Ling Yushi and Ling Xuanxuan had also quickly rushed down the mountain along with numerous fleeing martial practitioners from Armament Sect and had regrouped with the martial practitioners from Dark Fiend Valley.

The entire city was evacuated.

Within the natural stone forest between Icestone City, Water Moon City, and Crimson Flame City.

“Old man, just who are you?” Gao Yu’s expression was dark and cold. His gloomy eyes were filled with impatience. “It was indeed wrong of me to make a move to kill you, but the matter has already passed. Must you follow after me like a lingering ghost?”

“Brat, I was really injured last time. I had finally escaped from that accursed place and was preparing to rest for a while in this remote place, but somehow I ended up encountering you, you evil brat. You could clearly see that I was severely injured, but not only did you not reach out and help me, you suddenly tried to kill me instead. If not for my quick reaction, I’m afraid I would have directly been killed by you!” A short, skinny old man, who was wearing loose gray robes, coldly stared at Gao Yu, his body covered with sharp killing intent.

This old man was none other than Di Shijiu, the tower lord of Dark Shadow Tower’s Dark Tower.

Earlier he had chased Lang Xie through Armament City all the way out of the city as he and Tu Xi joined hands in an attempt to kill Lang Xie.

They hadn't expected that Lang Xie was hiding a secret technique. By burning the blood essence he had bitterly cultivated, Lang Xie had been able to explosively increase his strength in but a moment. Not only did he manage to kill Tu Xi on the spot, he had almost killed Di Shijiu as well.

At the time, Di Shijiu saw Tu Xi's tragic death and immediately realized at that Lang Xie had gone crazy at that moment. Thus, he had decisively run away.

He had fled to this natural stone forest.

Within this forest, his blood-covered, extremely weak body sat itself within an exceptionally deep valley.

Afterwards, he had encountered Gao Yu, who had come to the stone forest to cultivate...

As soon as Gao Yu saw him, even before any words were even exchanged and without delay, he had instigated his Ogre-faced Rings and summoned his Demon God's shadow. Without asking any questions, Gao Yu had attempted to murder him straightaway.

If not for his cultivation being much higher than Gao Yu's, in addition to him being significantly faster, he might have really fallen at the hands of Gao Yu.

After having escaped, he needed to spend several days to recover. However, during these several days, he had been constantly hunted down by Gao Yu, who was intent on killing him, through this stone forest. He had almost been driven into dead ends several times.

But now, he had finally recovered a bit of his strength. Thus, he had promptly gone and found Gao Yu.

He stood in front of Gao Yu, blocking Gao Yu's way as he demanded, "Brat, you'd better clearly explain why you tried to kill me on sight. Moreover, why have you chased for so long?"

"Ever since the Soul Devouring Beast died, no other person has come to this accursed place. Thus, I have recently started coming here to cultivate. This place is my own personal domain!" Gao Yu's face became colder, his eyes narrowing as he said, "You suddenly appeared out of nowhere, both covered in blood and exuding extremely dense killing intent. How was I supposed to know whether or not you held any ill intent towards me? I didn't care about your birth or origins considering you were already severely injured at the time. In order to prevent you from possibly killing me, I could only make the first move and take advantage of your injuries to kill you before you could recover."

Gao Yu had constantly been bitterly cultivating his Nine Hell Wandering Soul Record, and thus, his cultivation had rapidly sped up. He had currently already broken through into the late stage of the Natal Opening Realm.

The cultivation of Nine Hell Wandering Soul Record caused one to be accompanied by dark ghost energy because it required one to be able to control evil spirits and communicate with the Demon God's shadow...

Thus, he had to find a remote place devoid of people. That was how the stone forest had become his primary cultivation spot.

"Just because you thought I could cause you harm you tried to kill me without saying a word? Brat, your heart is so vicious!" Di Shijiu's face was cold as he asked, "What about afterwards? I had clearly escaped, so why did you keep chasing me for several days?"

"I had already made my move, so you would definitely harbor resentment in your heart. After you have recovered, you would definitely come find me to repay this debt." Gao Yu's eyes were cold, "In order to prevent any future trouble, it was best for me to kill you before you were able to recover!"

Listening to Gao Yu's explanation, Di Shijiu's face began to twitch. He realized that this kid named Gao Yu was even more vicious than the assassins of his Dark Tower.

"Brat, you have two choices. Either I kill you here, or you follow me," shouted Di Shijiu after thinking for a while.

"I will go with you," immediately replied Gao Yu without asking a single question.

Di Shijiu's face stiffened, "You..."

"You have recovered now. If you wanted to kill me, I would have no way of stopping you." Gao Yu's voice was as cold as ice, "That being the case, I can only follow you."

The expression within Di Shijiu's eyes was extremely weird. He profoundly stared at Gao Yu for a while, then suddenly thought that this brat was extraordinarily similar to him when he was younger. Whether it was the youth's temper or viciousness, it all surprised him.

"Then come with me." Di Shijiu nodded and lead him in the direction of Armament Sect.

Gao Yu very sensibly followed.

After who knew how long had passed, Gao Yu's footsteps abruptly halted. A look of astonishment flashed through his eyes as he looked at the Ogre-faced Rings on his hands.

The fragmented memories of the remnant soul of the demon within the ring had become extremely unrestful. It was as if they were urging him, urging him to go forward—in the direction of Armament Sect!

"Brat, are you daydreaming?" asked Di Shijiu, turning his head.

Gao Yu didn't respond. His fingers gently caressed the Ogre-faced

Rings as he continued to sense the internal fluctuations and tried to piece together the numerous memory fragments.

Within the mountain forest at the rear of Flame Volcano.

Bloodwater gurgled within the blood pool. Lang Xie's entire body soaked within as his pores braved the tiny bubbles.

A bloody mist suffused through the forest. Only Lang Xie was present; not a single other member of Blood Spear was there.

A ray of bloody light descended, revealing the relaxed and extraordinary body of Xue Li. His body was clothed in dark red blood clothes. His aura was quite feminine as each of his motions contained a special charm.

He simply stood beside the pool Lang Xie was soaking in.

"Why aren't you participating in the vanguard for this conflict?" asked Xue Li, chuckling.

Lang Xie glanced at him, then looked at his own body. He said, "My severely injured body is unable to affect the outcome. Furthermore, they still have you."

"I'm not someone from Armament Sect, and thus, I don't care about the life and death of the sect." Xue Li giggled, then profoundly looked at Lang Xie, saying, "In your heart, have you truly sworn to defend this sect to your death?"

“If I can protect it, then I shall. If I can’t, then I shall not die to show my sincerity,” replied Lang Xie after thinking for a period of time.

Xue Li laughed, then nodded. He said, “Those who are flexible will generally live longer. I shall give this scripture to you. It will lead you along the right path of cultivation of the Blood Fiend Sect. I hope you will manage to always retain control yourself and not follow in the steps of You Hongzhi. Otherwise, as long as I am alive, I will personally kill you myself.”

Lang Xie received the thin book. Narrowing his brows, he looked at Xue Li, then asked, “Is it your hope that I will pass down the teachings of Blood Fiend Sect in your place?”

“Good boy,” Xue Li grinned.

“Even if I pass it down, it will be Blood Spear, not some Blood Fiend Sect,” stated Lang Xie, looking directly into Xue Li’s eyes.

“I don’t care what it’s called as long as you stick to the right path and don’t become controlled by fresh blood.” After saying these last words, Xue Li once again turned into a ray of blood and left, leaving only Lang Xie in his trance.

Chapter 238: Demon Armor Insects And Spirit Corroding Beasts

Flame Volcano collapsed, resulting in the tumbling descent of many millstone-sized stones. The earth rumbled endlessly as ghastly, wicked clouds of smoke began to emerge from each hole.

The earth was torn apart as one fissure appeared after another. The plaza began to resemble a giant fragmented rock as cracks formed.

Qin Lie sat atop the plaza situated halfway up the shaking mountain. Gathering all of his mind consciousness, he permeated it into each and every spirit pattern pillar.

Xue Li had told him the method for moving these spirit pattern pillars. In fact, it was extremely simple. All he had to do was send his soul consciousness into each spirit pattern pillar. Then, he would be able to control each pillar's "soul"—its spirit diagram.

By inciting the spirit diagram, he would be able to control the respective spirit pattern pillar. This allowed him to release the various powers of the spirit pattern pillars.

To put it simply, these twelve spirit pattern pillars were a single unique spirit artifact!

"Spurt! Spurt!"

Song Siyuan's Silver Armored Giant Alligator emerged beside the plaza with no one noticing when it had arrived.

At this time, Song Siyuan and Xie Zhizhang were both mounted on the Silver Armored Giant Alligator. They intently stared at all of the holes in the ground.

Zhan Tianyi was on his Green Hunting Bat. The bat circled high in the sky, constantly emitting ear piercing low sounds.

Regardless of whether it was the Silver Armored Giant Alligator or the Green Hunting Bat, they both felt an inexplicable sense of evil coming from the holes which exuded grayish-white smoke. The evil fluctuations which emerged caused both of these spirit beasts to be constantly anxious.

"Boom!"

The fissures running through Flame Volcano became increasingly more severe. All of the palaces which had been constructed atop the mountain peaks by Armament Sect's inner sect came crashing down at this time.

Armament City was already lifeless. All of the living practitioners had long since withdrawn.

"Boom!"

Yet another spirit pattern pillar flew up, exposing yet another

extremely deep hole. The extremely powerful tremor caused Qin Lie's body to suddenly shake.

Two lines of blood emerged from the corners of Qin Lie's mouth. The light in Qin Lie's eyes disappeared as he suddenly shouted, "I can't suppress it any longer!"

"Bang bang bang!"

From within the depths of the earth, a drum-like roar emanated out. One angry howl after another loudly echoed through the emptiness.

Yet another spirit pattern pillar charged into the sky!

The expressions of Song Siyuan and the other two greatly changed. Xie Zhizhang shouted, "Kid, come here!"

At this moment, all of the spirit pattern pillars had flown into the sky where they were suspended in midair and released one powerful fluctuation after another.

However, these fluctuations were extremely tempestuous and violent. Clearly, they were not all under Qin Lie's control—he didn't have enough power.

"The pillar which I was imprisoned in is the central one. As long as you are able to reach the center of it with your soul and activate it, the other spirit pattern pillars will naturally be suppressed and

enter your spatial ring...” Xue Li’s words from earlier quickly flickered through Qin Lie’s mind once again.

Qin Lie looked towards the twelfth spirit pattern pillar.

The inscription atop this pillar depicted the primitive world. It was the spirit pattern pillar which Xue Li had originally been imprisoned in. Under Qin Lie’s fixated gaze, it faintly trembled in the air.

His mind consciousness was like a thread of spirit as it completely traced along the ancient glyphs depicted on the body of the pillar. Subsequently, a wisp of his soul immediately entered inside.

Within the boundless yet small space were twelve seemingly real but illusory spirit pattern pillars. In quick succession, rays of blinding, seven-colored light shot out from the base of each pillar, converging at a point in the center of them...

Where they came together was the spot where Xue Li had originally been sitting when he was restricted by the heavy chains.

That wisp of Qin Lie’s soul was like miniature duplicate of himself as it followed Xue Li’s example and sat down where the twelve rays of light intersected.

Tiny memory fragments, containing countless obscure, indistinguishable, complex, and profound symbols, in addition to a

stream of flashing orbs of light simultaneously surged into the thread of soul like a wave of consciousness.

Qin Lie's physical body began to intensely convulse.

At this moment, he suddenly began to feel some kind of mystical sensation: he had become the soul of the artifact!

He had become the soul of the twelve spirit pattern pillars!

He could sense the small differences between each spirit pattern pillar as well as the power stored within each one. Furthermore, he could feel the secrets hidden deep inside the pillars, and... the wondrous array which had been purposefully blocked!

"Shrink!"

His soul shouted a single word as it sat at the intersection of the twelve rays of light, using his thoughts to express his intention.

Extremely magically, the glow of the twelve spirit pattern pillars suspended above his head all began to diminish as each pillar, around ten or so meters tall, began to shrink and quickly miniaturize.

In the short span of five breaths, the twelve spirit pattern pillars had each shrunk, now the length of his arm, and could be easily stored in his spatial ring.

Qin Lie's eyes brightened. As per Xie Zhizhang's waving and shouting, he immediately rushed towards the Silver Armored Giant Alligator and climbed on.

"Where are those twelve pillars?" asked Xie Zhizhang in shock.

"They've been temporarily stored," replied Qin Lie.

Song Siyuan and Zhan Tianyi's eyes showed traces of shock as they also subconsciously looked at Qin Lie in bewilderment.

"Crack crack crack! Crack crack crack!"

The earth began to split even faster. The twelve holes created by the spirit pattern pillars flying into the sky began to grow larger at a rapid pace.

Intense, demonic flames; odd, ink-black smoke; and foul, reddish-brown water began to spew out from each hole.

Copious white bones were contained within the foul water. There were also the cocoons of insects and unbelievably large eggs of unnamed beasts.

"Demon Armor Insect cocoons! Those are the eggs of Spirit Corroding Beasts!" shrieked Zhan Tianyi.

“Shit!” Song Siyuan’s expression also shifted. He immediately reached out and patted his Silver Armored Giant Alligator.

The Silver Armored Giant Alligator lowly roared as it turned around and quickly fled. From afar, it looked like a mountain of flesh was writhing.

Zhan Tianyi also rode away on his Green Hunting Bat.

Amidst the foul, reddish-brown water that was spewing out, the bug cocoons continuously grew in size. As for those unbelievably large eggs, the sound of hearts beating began to emanate out from within them.

Seated atop the Silver Armored Giant Alligator, Qin Lie looked back at Armament Sect which was gradually disappearing into the distance and at the foul water which spewed out from within the holes. He then peered at the bug cocoons and giant eggs and couldn’t help but ask, “The cocoons of Demon Armor Insects and the eggs of Spirit Corroding Beasts, what do they do?”

“You’ll find out very soon,” answered said Xie Zhizhang, sighing.

“Crack! Crack! Crack!”

One bug cocoon after another burst open. Afterwards, one strange-looking, thumb-sized, winged bug after another emerged and loudly hissed as they flapped their wings as they took flight. Their bodies were covered in a blackish-red shell.

These bugs were called Demon Armored Insects. After taking to the skies, they all began to make swallowing motions as if they were swallowing air.

Qin Lie watched from a great distance. After a while, his expression greatly changed as he exclaimed, “They are devouring all the nature spirit energy nearby?”

He could feel the spirit energy surrounding Armament Sect was rapidly thinning out as if it were disappearing.

Replacing it, dark and cold evil energy was gradually filling the area.

The sky above Armament Sect gradually turned pitch black. Everything was blocked out by the darkness. Not even the sun’s rays were able to penetrate through.

From his point of view, Qin Lie discovered that the clear skies in Armament Sect were fading away at a speed that was visible even to the naked eye. The blue sky and white clouds were all blotted out and replaced by the pitch darkness which rolled in.

The sky slowly became black...

“Those Demon Armor Insects don’t devour nature spirit energy. Instead, they convert nature spirit energy. They can turn the world’s spirit energy into the nether demonic energy of the Nether

Realm!" Xie Zhizhang's expression became increasingly severe. "Of the evil beings of the Nether Realm, the majority have bodies which are different from ours. They are unable to survive in Spirit Realm's environment. Some cannot even withstand the light of the sun. Thus, they use Demon Armor Insects to first convert nature spirit energy into nether demonic energy. Only after the surroundings have been converted into an environment in which they can survive will they finally appear."

"Turn the world's spirit energy into demonic nether energy?!" Qin Lie exclaimed in askance, "Can we not exterminate the Demon Armor Insects? After killing them, won't it become impossible for them to create nether demonic energy and thus prevent them from entering our world?"

"If it were only Demon Armor Insects, it would be easy to deal with. However, I'm afraid there is still the issue of the Spirit Corroding Beasts' eggs..." bitterly answered Xie Zhizhang.

"Spirit Corroding Beasts are beasts of the Nether Realm. What do they do?"

"Spirit Corroding Beasts are one of the evil races of the Nether Realm. They specialize in fostering the corrosion of the earth of Spirit Realm. Spirit Corroding Beasts can continuously secrete fluids which corrode the earth. Upon permeating into the ground, these fluids will slowly corrupt and change the earth, turning it into one which is reminiscent of their favorite environment." Xie Zhizhang sighed, then continued, "Demon Armor Insects create nether demonic energy in the sky while Spirit Corroding Beasts infect the earth. These two nether beasts, one responsible for the

sky, one responsible for the earth, will slowly change the area in which they appear. Before long this place will become reminiscent of the Nether Battlefield."

"Can't we kill these Spirit Corroding Beasts too? These Spirit Corroding Beasts, aren't they still in their eggs?" asked Qin Lie in doubt.

"It's precisely because they are still in their eggs that we don't dare approach them. Before Spirit Corroding Beasts hatch, the fluids within their shells are completely terrifying. When one of them hatches, the fluids inside will explode out. In that case... whoever touches it will promptly perish." As Xie Zhizhang remembered events of his past, his expression turned even uglier. "We have things which we can use to deal with Demon Armor Insects and Spirit Corroding Beasts, but those things are all at the Nether Battlefield. Everything there is used as a part of the line of defense."

"Let's leave this area and notify the alliance of the situation here first. The Green Robed Envoy will ride his Giant Hunting Bat as quickly as he can to the Nether Battlefield and procure the things we need from there," solemnly said Song Siyuan.

"This is all we can do," said Xie Zhizhang, nodding his head in annoyance.

The two of them had traveled all the way to Armament Sect to assist the five forces exterminate it. They never expected that they would encounter such a series of unexpected events.

Currently, not only was Armament Sect not exterminated, they had accidently pried open an evil nether passageway and allowed the Nether Realm's Demon Armor Insects and Spirit Corroding Beasts to surface.

The two already had no idea how they would report the results of their mission this time.

"Brother Song, can you let me take Qin Lie?" The Green Hunting Bat approached from behind, hovering by the head of the Silver Armored Giant Alligator. Zhan Tianyi continued, "My Green Hunting Bat is a flying spirit beast after all, and it is quite a bit faster than your Silver Armored Giant Alligator. I can quickly bring him to Eight Extreme Temple."

"One step faster, one step slower, it doesn't make much of a difference right now." Song Siyuan snorted and said, "Furthermore, your Eight Extreme Temple is too perplexing. I'm afraid that if I hand a living person to you guys, he will eventually turn up dead."

"So what if he's dead?" Zhan Tianyi's expression was indifferent. "As long as we are able to soul scour and learn what we want, we will be able to mass produce those bombs and figure out the mysteries of the spirit pattern pillars. Aren't you guys thinking the same?"

"No. We need him alive. The senior said very clearly, only he can control the twelve spirit pattern pillars," said Xie Zhizhang.

Listening to the conversation between the three, Qin Lie's expression constantly shifted. He watched as the Silver Armored Giant Alligator fearfully rushed out of Armament Sect into the land outside.

He quietly touched his Eye of Frost, trying to stimulate its mysteries. Promptly, a sphere of icy-blue light suddenly began to wrap him, one layer at a time.

While Zhan Tianyi and Xie Zhizhang were arguing, Qin Lie suddenly vanished into thin air, disappearing from the back of the Silver Armored Giant Alligator.

Chapter 239: Spatial Spirit Artifact

One moment Qin Lie was on the broad back of the Silver Armored Giant Alligator, the next he had disappeared.

Zhan Tianyi and Xie Zhizhang were still arguing and had yet to realize that the person they were fighting over had already escaped right under their noses.

“Qin Lie has disappeared!” Song Siyuan shouted.

It was only then that both of them reacted as their expressions shifted. Zhan Tianyi slapped the Green Hunting Bat. This Rank Four flying beast instantly beat its wings to gain elevation so it could search for traces of Qin Lie from higher up.

Xie Zhizhang also looked around with urgency plastered all over his face.

“There’s no point. He used some special spatial spirit artifact and passed through space to leave.” Song Siyuan had clearly witnessed it.

When the icy-blue circles of light had covered Qin Lie’s body, he had only thought that Qin Lie was channeling his spirit art to recover, paying it no mind.

Yet, the moment Qin Lie disappeared into space, Song Siyuan immediately noticed the strong fluctuations of spatial distortion.

It was a pity that by the time he realized that something was not right, Qin Lie was already long gone.

“Spatial spirit artifact?”

Xie Zhizhang was shocked. Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple were both Copper forces that had dominated Scarlet Tide Continent for many years. They even had relations with neighboring continents. However, they had only ever heard about spirit artifacts that could travel through space, and never seen one before.

Amongst spirit artifacts, spatial ones were the rarest and the most valuable!

There were many artificers in the world, but the ones that were able to forge spatial spirit artifacts were the rarest kind. Technically, spatial rings were not even spatial spirit artifacts.

It was most likely impossible to find even a single artificer in Scarlet Tide Continent that had the ability to do so. Even Mo Hai... did not have that ability.

When Zhan Tianyi heard Song Siyuan’s words, he stopped his futile search and returned. “Spacial spirit artifacts are extremely valuable, no one in Armament Sect can forge them. This sect should not possess such a rare spirit artifact. If what Qin Lie has really is a spatial spirit artifact, his origins most likely are not simple. Or maybe it was the senior from before that gave it to

him…”

Xie Zhizhang and Song Siyuan’s expressions deepened.

“That’s not right! There’s still another! Li Mu! Li Mu from Li’s Shop!” Xie Zhizhang’s expression shifted as that realization suddenly dawned on him. “According to Jingxuan, that Li Mu is an accomplished artificer! She had Ying Xingran and Mo Hai certify the Spirit Gathering Boards she bought from Li’s Shop. Armament Sect is in consensus that the spirit diagrams inside the Spirit Gathering Boards are ancient ones. Li Mu should be the person who made that spatial spirit artifact!”

“Where is this person called Li Mu?” Song Siyuan’s expression changed.

Xie Zhizhang grimaced. He shook his head and answered, “Dark Asura Hall has searched for a long time, but there’s no information whatsoever. Jingxuan investigated using the ears and eyes of the Xie Family, but no trace of him could be found.”

“Already able to manipulate the spirit pattern pillars, receiving the protection of that senior named Xue Li, and possessing that destructive explosive… Now he even has a spatial spirit artifact…” Song Siyuan organized his thoughts. He processed everything for a while and then said to Zhan Tianyi, “This boy is not simple. Eight Extreme Temple should not make any rash moves. Right now, the continent is facing an invasion from the Nether Realm, you have to consider everything meticulously before taking action of any kind.”

“My Eight Extreme Temple does not need your Profound Heaven Alliance to teach us what to do.” Zhan Tianyi snorted and then left on his Green Hunting Bat.

“First we need to learn Qin Lie’s birth and history. We need to learn all we can about him so we do not make any more mistakes!” Song Siyuan shouted.

Xie Zhizhang nodded.

……

“Tower lord!”

“Tower lord!”

A group of Dark Shadow Tower martial practitioners that were wearing gray robes and had cold eyes unexpectedly ran into Di Shijiu when they were fleeing to Dark Shadow Tower.

Di Shijiu had changed into clean long robes and was riding a thin, normal horse as he rushed towards Armament Sect.

Gao Yu’s expression was cold as he unwillingly held the reins of the horse. He was preparing to throw the reins away when he heard the group of people yelling out “tower lord.” His expression immediately shifted.

“Tower lord? The tower lord of Dark Shadow Tower!” Gao Yu finally learned Di Shijiu’s identity.

“Why have you all retreated from Armament Sect? What happened in my absence?” Di Shijiu questioned in a stern voice.

“Tower lord, Liang Yangzu is dead, Blood Shadow is dead, we…” Unable to finish, one person walked forward and prostrated himself on the ground. With a bowed head, he narrated the events that had recently transpired.

“Armament Sect counterattacked and heavily damaged the five forces? An old demon appeared? He caused Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple’s people to grow wary? The evil nether passageway has been opened, and the evil races of the Nether Realm are about to invade?” Di Shijiu’s expression continued to change.

At his side, Gao Yu’s body shook as he listened to this. Strange light flashed through his cold eyes. He couldn’t help but ask, “The present sect master of Armament Sect is called Qin Lie? The same Qin Lie from Icestone City?”

“Yes, that Qin Lie!” the person replied.

Gao Yu was silent, but a smile that caused a shiver to run down the onlooker’s spine made its way onto Gao Yu’s face. “Good going! Only one year and you already attained such heights and made such waves!” he thought silently.

“So even the three Fulfillment Realm martial practitioners needed to retreat?” Di Shijiu inquired.

“Everyone had to retreat. The people from the five forces are returning back to their sects. The people from Armament Sect are going to the rear of Flame Volcano to the training grounds of Blood Spear. They are fleeing in the direction of poisonous bog.” The person’s expression wavered as he continued, “Tower lord, if the evil races from the Nether Realm really invade us, what will happen? Why are even Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple so frightened?”

“Our Dark Shadow Tower is responsible for hunting down and killing people, so none of us have been sent to the Nether Battlefield. Obviously you would not know of the harshness there.” Di Shijiu’s brow was deeply creased as he inwardly sighed.

Gao Yu stood nearby without making a sound. His hand which had shrank inside his sleeve rubbed one of the Ogre-faced Rings. A storm was brewing inside him.

The soul fragments of the Demon God’s shadow were unorganized inside. He needed to use up a lot of time and effort to achieve anything.

Right now, when he tried to feel it out, he found that the disorganized soul fragments inside the Ogre-faced Rings seemed to have been activated by a certain evil power and were coming together...

He reflexively looked in the direction of Armament Sect!

The vibrations inside the Ogre-faced Rings increased in intensity. A comforting aura was coming from Armament Sect—from the evil nether passageway!

Gao Yu was both shocked and scared.

From when he first obtained the Ogre-faced Rings and started to cultivate Nine Hell Wandering Soul Record, he knew that the Ogre-faced Rings were evil artifacts and that Nine Hell Wandering Soul Record was not just some average spirit art.

He had hesitated, but in the end, he had chosen this path and continued cultivating it.

He could no longer turn back from the path he had chosen. His body, flesh, blood, spirit sea, and even his soul were deeply imprinted with this evil spirit art.

“Approaching the evil nether passageway will be very beneficial for me and can quickly increase my strength!” quickly concluded Gao Yu.

With that, he had come to a decision.

……

“You dare return to Dark Fiend Valley?” On the large road to Seven Fiends Valley, a dignified matron stared at Ling Yushi and her sister with a cruel and stern expression.

At the side, many martial practitioners from Seven Fiends Valley and even many people from Dark Fiend Valley were staring coldly at Ling Yushi and Ling Xuanxuan.

The two sisters had timid expressions on their faces. Standing within the crowd, they knew that they were being isolated.

“Old Granny was killed by Qin Lie and Qin Lie had once been a member of your Ling Family. Not only that, but he was once engaged to you, Ling Yushi!” The matron’s expression grew even colder. “You somehow have the face to return to Seven Fiends Valley?”

The two sisters had silently bowed their heads, their expressions pitiful.

“Aunt An, what does this have to do with them?” Lu Li said in a cold voice.

As Flame Volcano crumbed, the restrictions on Fire Prison Cliff had been broken. Lu Li and Pang Feng who had been imprisoned inside had escaped.

Lu Li had met with the retreating group from Seven Fiends

Valley.

“How is it not related to them? If it weren’t for these two girls, would Qin Lie have been so angry with Granny? If it weren’t for them, Granny would not have disliked Qin Lie so much!” The matron called Aunt An coldly exclaimed, “If we take a step back, Qin Lie’s explosive bomb inflicted our Seven Fiends Valley with heavy casualties! Furthermore, Qin Lie had lived before in Ling Town and could even be considered a member of the Ling Family! In any case, I do not want to see anyone from the Ling Family in the valley! Not a single one!”

“Me too!”

“I do not want to see any member of the Ling Family!”

“Get them to leave!”

“If it weren’t for the order from Profound Heaven Alliance, we should kill them and take revenge on behalf of the people from the valley who died from Qin Lie’s bomb!”

“That’s right!”

A great number of martial practitioners from Seven Fiends Valley had looked at Ling Yushi and her sister on the way with vicious expressions.

Shi Jingyun, who had one of his fingers cut off, was among the

crowd. In the past, he would have come out and mediated this.

But right now, he only observed coldly.

Because it had been Qin Lie who had etched the painful episode of his finger being cut off into his memories... He was unable to persuade himself.

“Heh, you do not have the skill to take revenge on Qin Lie, so all you can do is bully these two little girls? Your Seven Fiends Valley sure is strong!” Tu Shixiong, along with Tu Mo, Tu Ze, and his subordinates, were also travelling along the road. They were going in the same general direction as Dark Asura Hall and Seven Fiends Valley were in the same direction at the beginning of this journey.

He grinned and disregarded the fury on the faces of the people from Seven Fiends Valley. He said, “Girls from the Ling Family, do not return to Seven Fiends Valley, just follow me back to Dark Asura Hall. Also, get your Ling Clan to come over. I can see that if you return to Seven Fiends Valley, your future won’t be bright.”

“Leave! Go join Dark Asura Hall!” the people from Seven Fiends Valley shouted.

“We need to return to the valley to mourn Master.” Ling Yushi looked at Tu Shixiong, her eyes glittering with tears. “We accept Senior Tu’s good intentions. However, we will not go to Dark Asura Hall.”

Tu Shixiong looked at her and sighed lightly. He said, “Sihh, you are quite pitiful... alright, since you have the heart, go to Seven Fiends Valley to mourn Granny Jiu. If things become difficult and you can’t keep going on in Seven Fiends Valley, take your people and come to Dark Asura Hall. I, Old Tu, will accept you.”

“Thank you, Senior Tu.” Ling Yushi and Ling Xuanxuan voiced their thanks. Then, they ignored the hate-filled expressions from the members of Seven Fiends Valley and walked with the crowd towards Seven Fiends Valley.

“Thanks, Father,” Tu Ze said.

Tu Shixiong waved his hand. He said, “You were brothers with Qin Lie, I am glad you have such intentions. We are not enemies with Qin Lie right now. Even if we were, we should still help resolve little matters such as these for the women of our brothers.”

Tu Mo, Tu Ze, and Zhuo Qian, along with his subordinates felt respect welling up when Tu Shixiong said this.

“Do not worry. At most, Ling Family will receive cold words from Seven Fiends Valley. They will not dare to act.” Tu Shixiong comforted them. He then patted Tu Ze’s shoulder and grinned, saying, “This brother of yours called Qin Lie, he isn’t bad. In fact, he’s very skilled! In the future, you and Zhuo Qian should remain close to him. The people from Profound Heaven Alliance also hope that you are on good terms with him.”

When Tu Ze and Zhuo Qian heard this, their expressions turned

to ones of joy, and they nodded with smiles on their faces.

Chapter 240: Slipping By

Outside Armament City.

The glittering light slowly gathered and formed into people with both Qin Lie and Kang Zhi taking shape.

A short while later, Qin Lie, Kang Zhi, Han Qingrui, Han Feng, and Kang Hui appeared outside Armament City.

This was where Qin Lie had disappeared from earlier.

“Qin Lie, where are the people from the sect?” After Han Qingrui appeared, he asked that in a grave tone.

In that secret room made from ice, Qin Lie had already informed them all of the situation outside. He told them that because the evil nether passageway had been opened, the forces had all retreated with the remnants of Armament Sect doing the same.

“I was keeping an eye out. Our people should have retreated towards the back of the mountain,” said Qin Lie as he raised his head to look at the plaza in the distance.

The dark black clouds resembled a black curtain that covered the skies above Armament Sect, obstructing the shining light of the sun.

Those thick, demonic clouds shrouded that entire area. As of this moment he was unable to see what was happening over there, but

he could feel an overwhelming dark and evil aura flooding out.

He knew that the evil nether passageway had truly opened. The evil races from the Nether Realm have most likely stepped onto this land.

“Where should we go?” Little Fatty Kang Zhi’s face was in a frown. “So unfortunate, forced from Icestone City to Armament City, having only just settled in, now look, Armament City has fallen too...”

“Go to the forests at the back of Flame Volcano where Blood Spear’s training grounds are. We will take a detour to avoid the area covered in nether demonic energy,” Qin Lie answered.

Everyone nodded in agreement.

At this time, it was an hour since Xie Zhizhang, Song Siyuan and Zhan Tianyi had left. All of Armament Sect was slowly being consumed by the nether demonic energy. The area around Armament City was engulfed in dark, chaotic power.

Only their group remained.

“Let’s go, avoid the sect and head behind Flame Volcano,” Han Qingrui said.

Two hours later.

At a hill near the edges of Armament City, Qin Lie's eyes flashed as he suddenly looked in a direction.

He was looking Armament Sect's direction!

At this time, everyone had already left Armament City. Anyone who knew that evil nether passageway had been opened definitely did not dare to stay and wait for death.

Even the three Fulfillment Realm experts did not dare to stay too long. They were in a hurry to return to Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple to report what had transpired on their mission. Who could possibly be in Armament City now?

But Qin Lie felt an aura that was somewhat familiar inside the city that was being shrouded by nether demonic energy. That presence was very indistinct and small, so he wasn't very sure.

But it seemed to be Gao Yu's presence...

"It isn't very likely. There's no way Gao Yu would show up here." Shaking his head inwardly, Qin Lie left with Kang Zhi and Han Qingrui.

In the cellar of a destroyed building in Armament City, which had been torn apart by the Silver Armored Giant Alligator, Gao Yu sat there by himself.

While Di Shijiu had been taking care of business at Dark Shadow Tower, he had slipped away. He fled to Armament City, the area that was shrouded by nether demonic energy. The area that would become the territory for the beings of the evil races from the Nether Realm.

He was the only person that stood guard here with the identity of a human martial practitioner.

Breathing in the dark and evil energy and looking at the wisps of black power that permeated his body, Gao Yu felt right at home. A dark and cold glint shone out from his shadowy eyes.

“It seems the cultivation of Nine Hell Wandering Soul Record uses the nether demonic energy as its source of power. This means the Ogre-faced Rings and the Nine Hell Wandering Soul Record are really evil artifacts of the Nether Realm!” Gao Yu finally understood.

What he did not know was that when he was concentrating on his cultivation, Qin Lie was close to him and felt the fluctuations coming from his body.

Gao Yu was in Armament City, an area that might have already be taken over by the evil races. Qin Lie could perceive those fluctuations but felt that it wasn’t very plausible. He only thought that the evil aura that was on Gao Yu’s body was released from those of the Nether Realm.

Due to this, the two slipped right past each other.

……

Half a day later.

Qin Lie, Han Qingrui, and the rest of the group reached the rear of Flame Volcano where Blood Spear's training grounds were. They found that the blood mist that had previously enshrouded this area had disappeared.

There was no bloodwater left in the blood pools or ponds which exposed the cold stone.

"This is too close to Flame Volcano. The people from the sect definitely did not dare to linger too long, so they should have proceeded to the poisonous bog," said Han Qingrui to Qin Lie as he glanced at the surroundings.

Qin Lie nodded, "That should be right."

So everyone left behind the forest and travelled to the poisonous bog to meet up with the elders of Armament Sect.

Another day passed.

Multicolored, poisonous miasma spread through the bog as numerous unnamed poisonous insects chirped. Much of the poisonous water in the bog exuded sour and rotten smells. It

caused those who happened to inhale them to feel dizzy and drowsy.

Qin Lie's group carefully avoided those places and tried to find dry ground to walk on as they delved deeper into the poisonous bog.

"Sect Master Qin!" Tian Jianhao's voice suddenly came from atop a strange tree.

The leaves of the strange tree retreated back towards the branches. Then, it formed a nest-like space of branches and leaves like that of a person's embrace where Tian Jianhao popped out from.

"Elder Tong had me wait here for you. As expected, you came," Tian Jianhao said.

"The three great reverends and the seven inner sect elders have also retreated into the poisonous bog?" Qin Lie asked in surprise.

Tian Jianhao jumped out from the nest made from tree leaves, saying dejectedly, "We retreated into the poisonous bog, but..."

"What?" Qin Lie's brow creased.

"But the situation is not good. Many people have perished from being poisoned after staying half a day in here," Tian Jianhao sighed. "The poisonous miasma in the poisonous bog, the

poisonous water, and some aggressive poisonous insects can be fatal. Even though Elder Mo Hai and Senior Sister Lian Rou led the way and secured the safest path, we still had a great number of fatalities."

There were three people who were proficient in making antidotes in Armament Sect: Sect Master Ying Xingran, Great Elder Mo Hai, and Lian Rou.

It was because Mo Hai and Lian Rou had been in the group that Armament Sect dared to set foot into the poisonous bog. They planned on temporarily settling down at the poisonous bog.

They did not dare believe Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple's promises. Rather, they were afraid these people would still attack them, so they didn't risk moving to an area under the governance of the five forces.

They were also afraid of the evil races from the Nether Realm, so they did not settle down near Flame Volcano. With all that in mind, they could only retreat until they reached the poisonous bog. They retreated to this dangerous place where the five forces and the evil races of Nether Realm were unlikely to enter.

"Have you explored the paths along this road? Will there be problems if we enter with you?" Qin Lie asked.

"We used more than ten lives in order to secure it. There won't be any problems. I can take you to meet up with the elders," Tian Jianhao bitterly answered.

“Then lead the way,” Qin Lie nodded. “When we meet the elders, we can try to think of ways to deal with the poisonous bog’s poor environment.”

“Mn, please come with me.” Tian Jianhao led the way.

Everyone instantly followed.

Chapter 241: Poisonous Bog

At the poisonous bog.

The orange-red flames resembled numerous streams flowing amidst the wet swamp. Under the baking of intense heat, the bog's poisonous water was evaporated at a great pace.

The flames came from the fire crystals, Fiery Solar Jade, and other fire type crystals. These crystals were supposed to be used by artificers as fire sources. However, now they had no choice but to ignite these precious fire stones to dry the land and create a suitable place for Armament Sect to rest.

The crystalline fire stones emanated with fiery light as they dried the bog and burned all the tiny poisonous insects to death.

A piece of land about a hundred square meters in size without any swamp, puddle or poisonous plant in it was gradually formed under the burning flames.

The three great reverends, seven great inner sect elders, and more than a hundred surviving Armament Sect martial practitioners stood above the dry ground baked by intense flames. The serious expressions on their faces finally started to relax as time passed by.

"The poisonous bog is very dangerous. There is almost no chance for those who aren't familiar with the characteristics of poison to survive here without having prepared the appropriate antidotes

and pills." There were several spots on Mo Hai's clothes that had been charred by the flame sparks as he looked towards the Armament Sect members and said, "This is because this place is more dangerous, and even we have to pay a huge price to base ourselves here. Therefore, it will be more difficult than normal for Eight Extreme Temple and Profound Heaven Alliance to deal with us, whereas the five great forces will not even dare to step into this land at all. This is because none of them are proficient in poisons."

"Mn, Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple cannot be trusted. If it weren't because the evil nether passageway had opened, they would never have let us go," said Second Reverend Fang Qi.

"Blood Spear needs a new training ground," Lang Xie said at the side.

"We need time, and we also need to find somewhere suitable," opined Mo Hai.

After they had evacuated from Flame Volcano, the three great reverends and Blood Spear members had gathered together and passed through Blood Spear's training ground, taking everything they could with them, then entered the poisonous bog.

After a road of hardships, they had finally arrived inside and forcefully scorched a piece of dry land with the fire stones, ready to set their foot in this place.

As of this moment, Armament Sect's inner and outer sect

members, added with Blood Spear's Lang Xie and Feng Rong's group, numbered only around one hundred.

—They did not even number one tenth of their original force.

It could be said that Armament Sect had suffered a tremendous loss, but the sect's most important people had survived.

The inner sect's three great reverends and seven great elders along with Blood Spear's Lang Xie and Feng Rong were the true foundations of Armament Sect, the true core.

Those who had been killed and cleaned up by the five forces were mostly foreign delegates, outer sect martial practitioners, and outer sect disciples.

They were not part of Armament Sect's core.

As long as Armament Sect continued to stand on Scarlet Tide Continent and could preserve its strength, then it would be a simple matter to replenish their foreign delegates, outer sect martial practitioners, and outer sect disciples.

That was why, despite the tragic losses, Armament Sect had only sustained flesh wounds rather than taken internal damage.

"As long as Qin Lie survives, as long as the twelve spirit pattern pillars are around, and as long as we survive, Armament Sect will continue to exist!" Chief Reverend Luo Zhichang yelled.

“And Xingran as well!” Jiang Hao said.

Ying Xingran, frozen in ice, was carried out by Lang Xie from the peak of the mountain before Flame Volcano had collapsed.

He had also been brought to the poisonous bog.

According to Xue Li, Ying Xingran could probably still be saved. Given enough time and preparation, Ying Xingran should be able to survive this disaster.

The crowd looked at the frozen Ying Xingran and thought about their current circumstances. All sorts of emotions welled up in their minds as they felt they had been reborn.

“Could Qin Lie have been kidnapped by Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple?” Tan Dongling asked in worry.

“Even if he was kidnapped, there shouldn’t be any threat to his life. He is the only person who can reseal the evil nether passageway, so it’s unthinkable that Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple would kill him,” Luo Zhichang answered. “Judging from the fact that Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple had forbidden the five forces from taking revenge on us, we can see that they have made up their minds to combine everyone’s strength to fight the evil forces from the Nether Realm.”

“That’s right, they need us! They need us artificers to survive!” Jiang Hao proudly exclaimed.

Lian Rou and Tang Siqi sat on meditation mats among a group of inner sect disciples and looked at the rainbow-colored poisonous gas in the sky.

“Sister Rou, is your family not far from here?” Tang Siqi abruptly asked.

“It is quite far.” Lian Rou looked into the distance with a hint of worry on her face. “My family is only reachable through this bog. You can say that my home is at the edge of the swamp, which is why my family has deep knowledge of poisonous insects and poison itself. That’s why I managed to become an Armament Sect inner sect disciple. Besides the fact that I have some level of talent in artifact forging, part of it was also because of my background.”

“Sister Rou, how did Sect Master and Elder Mo Hai come to be experts in poison?” Tang Siqi suddenly lowered her voice and asked.

“We had a poison master in our sect before. A long time ago, he… cultivated at the poisonous bog. I’m not sure about the details, but in short, he cultivated poison to the point where he killed himself instead. Before he died, however, he had written down all of his knowledge about poison and his experiences with refining medicine into a book and returned it to the sect. Both Sect Master and Mo Hai read through that book, which is why they are very

knowledgeable about poison," Lian Rou answered.

"Have you seen that book before then?" Tang Siqi asked doubtfully.

"I'm not good enough yet. Perhaps I'll have to wait until Sect Master and Elder Mo Hai grow old before they would pass down that book to me." Lian Rou's expression was one of indifference. "Speaking of which, medicine refining is also a branch of artifact forging. From my point of view, the reason the sect recruited me is because that senior had a mind to pass down his inheritance and skills in medicine refining."

"Sister Rou, about Qin Lie and Ling Yushi..." Tang Siqi said softly.

"Qin Lie killed Jiu Liuyu and many people from Dark Fiend Valley. The next time Ling Yushi faces Qin Lie, she may not be able to accept it in her heart." Lian Rou thought for a moment and then continued, "If she cannot accept it, then a gap between her and Qin Lie will open up. A very troublesome gap."

Tang Siqi bit her lips as her eyes gradually lit up.

"The current Qin Lie is no longer that obscure Qin Lie in the past. In the future... there may be a lot of girls around him. You need to mentally prepare yourself," Lian Rou sighed softly.

A faint smile appeared at the corner of Tang Siqi's lips upon

hearing her words, before suddenly, she froze.

"Qin Lie is back!"

"Sect Master Qin is back!"

"This is great! As long as Sect Master Qin is still in Armament Sect, Armament Sect will be safe. We will be able to face any force's siege!"

"Yeah, it's thanks to Sect Master Qin leading us against the five great forces, Eight Extreme Temple, and Profound Heaven Alliance that we were able to survive until now!"

"Sect Master Qin is even greater than the previous sect master!"

"....."

The moment they heard that Qin Lie had arrived, everyone in Armament Sect boiled up and praised him passionately.

There were plenty of girls in Armament Sect who hurriedly rushed out to surround recently arrived Qin Lie. Each one of them had eyes shining with the light of admiration.

"Now you get what I mean, don't you?" Lian Rou said.

A helpless expression appeared on Tang Siqi's beautiful face. "Yes, I can see that. After this crisis, he has become a great hero and a pillar in everyone's hearts."

"After this incident, even I feel that he has become Armament Sect's pillar, much less other people?" Lian Rou smiled.

"It looks like I'll have a lot of competitors in the future!" Tang Siqi gripped her little fists and hmphed, "I should dominate this guy as soon as possible!"

Lian Rou chuckled and said, "Now this is more like it. That's the Tang Siqi I know!"

"Reverends, elders, are you all okay?" Qin Lie walked over.

"We're fine for now. As long as Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple don't try to slaughter us all, then we can still survive in the poisonous bog." Luo Zhichang's expression was bitter. Then he remembered something. "How did you manage to get here? Why did that Xie Zhizhang and Song Siyuan let you go?"

"I escaped," Qin Lie answered.

The crowd was dumbfounded.

"Save it for later!" Lang Xie passed through the crowd and stood before Qin Lie, solemnly saying, "Armament Sect's crisis has not yet ended. The evil races from the Nether Realm have appeared,

and even Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple had to use all everything at their disposal to deal with them. Moreover, the place taken over by the evil forces from the Nether Realm is our old sect—they are right before us!”

The moment Lang Xie said this, everyone turned serious. They all knew what he said was true.

“Sect Master Qin, if you still have the energy, then please forge a large number of Terminator Profound Bombs!” Lang Xie yelled.

The moment they heard “Terminator Profound Bomb,” everyone’s eyes lit up again in unison as they said, “That’s right! We should forge Terminator Profound Bombs in large amounts! It’s a terrifying item that can turn the tides!”

The three great reverends’ expressions also shook as they turned to Qin Lie together. Fang Qi asked, “Qin Lie, can you forge them?”

“With enough materials, I can start any time,” Qin Lie answered.

“It is enough! It will definitely be enough!” Jiang Hao interrupted, “Our years of accumulated wealth is all sealed within the spatial rings, and these spatial rings are currently in our possession. We have all the necessary materials to forge artifacts, this is one thing you don’t need to worry about!”

“Then there should be no problem,” Qin Lie nodded.

“Prepare all the materials, the fire sources, and the furnaces Qin Lie needs to forge artifacts. Let’s open up a special artifact forging area for him!” Chief Reverend Luo Zhichang ordered.

Everyone began to busy themselves to prepare for the forging of Terminator Profound Bombs, taking action to secure the safety of Armament Sect.

The explosions of the six Terminator Profound Bombs had buried three quarters of the five forces’ elites in but an instant. That destructive power had deeply engraved itself in the minds of everyone who laid eyes upon the power of the Terminator Profound Bomb.

The Terminator Profound Bomb was Forefather Terminator’s destructive treasure from Silent Heaven Continent. At its highest rank, it was an item that could kill even a terrifying existence like a Nirvana Realm martial practitioner.

If Armament Sect had enough Terminator Profound Bombs, then even Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple would have to think twice before dealing with Armament Sect!

“Put other tasks on hold and focus on forging the Terminator Profound Bombs. We need at least ten of them first,” said Luo Zhichang seriously.

Qin Lie nodded, “Don’t worry, I know how important Terminator Profound Bombs are for us right now. I will hurry them out.”

“That will be great. They will be our bargaining chip with Eight Extreme Temple and Profound Heaven Alliance!” Fang Qi said.

Chapter 242: The Python Tattoo On His Neck

One hundred and fifty kilometers east of Dark Asura Hall.

A wide flatland stood at the center of a huge mountain that pierced into the clouds with a great city situated on top of this very flatland.

This great city was at least ten times bigger than Armament City and located in the middle of many mountains. The stone buildings inside the city resembled small hills that were at least a dozen or so meters tall.

Many luxuriously dressed martial practitioners traversed the infinitely wide streets. All sorts of restaurants, red-light districts, treasure stores, and combat grounds were completely crowded. Countless martial practitioners from the surrounding forces would come here to seek entertainment.

This was Profound Heaven City, the headquarters of Profound Heaven Alliance, and the land held by the Song, Xie, and Nie Families and also the most prosperous city on Scarlet Tide Continent.

It was early in the morning. The bright sunlight shined down on Profound Heaven City, bathing it in a majestic atmosphere.

Profound Heaven Great Hall.

Three imposing-looking men sat on chairs carved from the carcasses of giant beasts with serious expressions on their faces.

Many well-dressed men and women also stood right behind them. All of them wore heavy looks on their faces and heavy hearts within.

Xue Zhizhang and Song Siyuan stood at the center of the trio. Under everyone's gazes, they explained all major events that had transpired at Armament Sect that day.

An old demon suddenly appearing and capturing Xie Zhizhang, wielding unfathomable strength.

A strange item called the Terminator Profound Bomb that nearly routed the entire five forces, instantly overturning the tides for Armament Sect.

The twelve spirit pattern pillars soaring to the sky and killing Jiu Liuyu, intimidating all elites within the vicinity.

The stone caves emanating a dark and evil aura, the evil nether passageway appearing, the Demon Armor Insects and Soul Corroding Beasts gushing out of the tainted waters...

Xie Zhizhang and Song Siyuan had explained everything they had encountered without missing even a single detail, explaining how serious the situation was to the patriarchs of Profound Heaven

Alliance's three great families.

The Song Family's Patriarch Song Yu; the Xie Family's Patriarch Xie Yaoyang; and the Nie Family's Patriarch Nie Yun. All three patriarchs had gathered at this spot a while back and summoned the core members of the three great families to discuss the matters together.

"You immediately stopped the attack on Armament Sect. On this point, you guys did very well." Song Yu wore a clean green robe without a single ornament on him. His expression was gentle and he wore a smile when he spoke, giving off the illusion of someone who was gentle and easy-going. "At this stage, to attack Armament Sect any longer will affect the overall situation. There is use in keeping those artificers alive—at the least they can still forge some artifacts for us—and as for that Qin Lie... have you uncovered his identity?"

He looked at Song Siyuan.

Song Siyuan frowned slightly before shaking his head and said, "We are not too sure."

Song Yu's eyes narrowed as a hint of displease leaked out of his pupils. "What is it?"

"That Qin Lie kid suddenly appeared at Ling Town a few years ago along with his grandfather..." Xue Zhizhang reported the information he acquired.

“He appeared out of nowhere and was retarded for five years? He cultivated inside the belly of the mountain during all that time?” Song Yu’s eyes shone with a strange light as he pondered for a moment before nodding and then saying, “It appears that this kid has an extraordinary background. He may not even be a local from Scarlet Tide Continent…”

The crowd inwardly nodded.

“Send word to Eight Extreme Temple. Have them send people to the Nether Battlefield immediately and transport the equipment that is used against the evil races.” Song Yu pondered while sending out orders continuously, “We, the three families, will immediately send our experts to the evil nether passageway and build the first line of defense fifty miles away from the area to stop the Nether Realm’s nether beasts from poisoning the surrounding cities.

“The strange item called the Terminator Profound Bomb has incredible killing power. If we can acquire its forging method, then that will be best. If not, then we will order some from Armament Sect. We will leave this matter to…”

Song Yu scanned the hall as his gaze swam across everyone’s faces. After a while, he said, “We tried to eliminate Armament Sect beforehand, and now we’re about to beg for their help. This may be a little problematic. Negotiations in such circumstances will require a certain level of skill. Average people may not be able to handle this.”

At this point, the crowd’s expressions moved as if they could

guess who he was going to send out.

“Why do I not see Yu’er?” Song Yu asked.

Someone answered, “The miss has just come back from overseas, and she has been recuperating as of late. She said that she wants to rest for the time being instead of running around for the family.”

“The evil races of Nether Realm are about to invade us en masse, and Scarlet Tide Continent is facing a huge crisis as of this moment. We cannot afford to have her rest.” Song Yu yelled, “Notify her immediately to head towards Armament Sect as soon as possible. She will be responsible for the negotiations with Armament Sect.”

“Understood.”

“Get ready, all of you. This time we’re not fighting at Nether Battlefield but at our own homes. We will devastate the evil races of the Nether Realm!”

Everyone voiced their promises.

……

Skypiercing Mountain, Eight Extreme Temple.

At the top of the cloud-covered mountain, a man dressed in a

golden ceremonial vestment with eyes as deep as the sea stared at the sun on top of a cliff.

Zhan Tianyi knelt behind him and, with his head lowered respectfully, explained everything that occurred at Armament Sect and the shocking turn of events.

“Holy Master, Profound Heaven Alliance has just sent word to us. They want us to head to Nether Battlefield as soon as possible to transport the items that we use to deal with the evil races of Nether Battlefield,” Zhan Tianyi said respectfully.

“Why have you not brought that Qin Lie kid back to me? There is a certain limit to how far one can escape with a spatial spirit artifact.” The golden robed man spoke with a very beautiful voice, causing people to feel as if they were in spring and listening to the word of god. His voice alone carried a strange charm that could subvert a person’s soul. “Song Siyuan cannot search by air since he rides a Silver Armored Giant Alligator, but you ride a Green Hunting Bat which is capable of searching thousands of miles in a short period of time.”

He turned around while wearing a natural and peaceful smile. “Have you searched within a thousand mile radius?”

Zhan Tianyi felt cold from the bottom of his heart before bowing his head even lower to the point where his forehead was about to touch the stone floor. “Reporting to your holiness, I have searched everywhere carefully within a thousand miles. I truly did not sense his aura anywhere.”

“A spatial spirit artifact that can escape thousands of miles…” he nodded and said, “Not simple at all.”

If Qin Lie were here, he would realize that this Eight Extreme Temple Holy Master, the master of a Copper force actually looked fifty to sixty percent similar to Li Mu.

“You may leave.” He pondered for a moment before waving his hands for Zhan Tianyi to retreat. “Have Mo He meet me.”

“Mo He…” Zhan Tianyi’s expression changed, and he actually lost control of himself and lifted his head, exclaiming, “Holy Master, that Qin Lie is the only person who can control the twelve spirit pattern pillars and reseal the evil nether passageway!”

“It won’t be until the Netherpassage Realm before he has the ability to reseal the evil nether passageway with the spirit pattern pillars. The gap between the Natal Opening Realm and the Netherpassage Realm will take at least a dozen or so years of cultivation.” His smile did not falter one bit. “When that amount of time has passed, the war between the Nether Realm and Scarlet Tide Continent may have already ended. Why would we need him then?”

After shuddering once, Zhan Tianyi said no more and quietly retreated.

Before long, a man who was dressed in golden clothes and looked even prettier than a woman walked up and said, “Mo He has

arrived.”

“You will go and kill that kid called Qin Lie. Extract his memories with the soul searching art and seal it before you bring it to me. Find out where he keeps the spirit pattern pillars, the spatial artifact, and the forging method of the Terminator Profound Bomb and bring them to me,” the holy master ordered. After thinking for a moment, he gave him some advice, “There is an old demon beside him, and this old demon is powerful enough that Zhan Tianyi, Xie Zhizhang, and Song Siyuan combined did not dare act recklessly. Take caution.”

“This subordinate understands.” The beautiful man named Mo He bowed and left.

……

Deep inside the poisonous bog.

Atop the dried ground at the center of the bog, three crimson furnaces were burning with huge flames. A large amount of spirit materials, such as jade stones, bone plates, wood blocks, and colored metal pieces were beside them.

Qin Lie and Tang Siqi were adding the spirit materials needed to forge Terminator Profound Bombs into the furnace on the dry ground.

Beside them, five Blood Spear blood guards were watching over

them intently, preventing anyone from approaching them.

Even the sect's disciples would be chased away if they even inched closer.

—They were afraid of them seeing the method to forge the Terminator Profound Bomb.

"The three great reverends and seven inner sect elders currently all view the Terminator Profound Bomb as their savior. They prevented anyone from approaching this place." Tang Siqi's clothes were drenched, and her voluptuous curves were defined through her long, wet dress. It was incredibly attractive.

"The method to forge the Terminator Profound Bomb really can't be exposed though," Qin Lie commented while adding the spirit materials.

Even he was scared after realizing the might of six Terminator Profound Bombs exploding together. It was only now that he realized exactly how terrifying the forging method of the Terminator Profound Bomb that Li Mu had given him was.

"From now on, you have to package all of the spirit diagrams inside and prevent anyone from seeing them. It is best not to let even the inner sect elders to know about this. Those people are cowards. If they are tortured and extorted, they may not be able to hold out for long," Tang Siqi instructed him.

“Got it. I will be careful.” Qin Lie took out the Fiery Solar Jades and put them beneath the three furnaces, causing the fire source to burn even stronger.

“Here, wipe your sweat. Look at your head, it’s all wet.” Tang Siqi smiled beautifully and took out a purple red handkerchief from her lap before passing it to Qin Lie. “Now all we have to do is to wait for the artifacts to precipitate. There’s no need to spend too much concentration here. You should rest too.”

“Thank you.” Qin Lie accepted the handkerchief and carelessly wiped the sweat on his head. It took him only three wipes before the handkerchief was completely drenched. “Sorry, it’s all wet…” It was only then he came to and felt a little embarrassed.

Tang Siqi’s beautiful eyes glittered as she wore an attractive smile. “It’s okay. That’s what a handkerchief is for.”

“Rrrmb! Rrrmb!”

While the duo was talking, thunder rumbled from deep within the clouds of the poisonous bog.

“This is how the poisonous bog is, it can rain and thunder at any time. It looks like we’ll have to catch up a little,” Tang Siqi said.

“Got it.” Qin Lie returned the handkerchief to her and readied himself to work faster. He wanted to complete the Terminator Profound Bombs as soon as possible.

“Boom boom boom!”

The thunderous sounds grew more and more intense as bolts of lightning tore through the dark sky. As a result, the poisonous gases in the bog swirled around.

Qin Lie and Tang Siqi both paid close attention to the burning furnace.

Out of nowhere, Qin Lie felt an itch on his neck and reached out to scratch it...

“Prak!”

A bolt of dazzling lightning struck down from the sky, covering everything within the area in glaring light. Amidst the lightning’s powerful light, a python tattoo appeared impossibly clear at the itchy spot of his neck.

The python’s eyes, in tattoo form and imprinted on his neck, seemed to have lit up a little amidst the thunderous rumble and lightning strikes.

Chapter 243: Lightning Field

Lightning flashed and thunder rumbled in the layer of clouds above the poisonous bog. The thick bolts of lightning moved like dragons and rolled in the thick clouds.

The multicolored poisonous miasma slowly dispersed as it was struck by lightning. As the firmament howled, it gradually disappeared.

On the dry ground at the center of the bog, Qin Lie raised his head to look at the thunder and lightning in the black clouds. He suddenly felt a strong urge to cultivate Heavenly Thunder Eradication.

Hearing the cracks of the thunder, the blood and cells inside his body seemed to be boiling.

“Take care of the smelting furnace, I’m going out for a walk in the poisonous bog. You only need to keep the fire source going and add a portion of cold spirit materials so that the Terminator Profound Bomb can precipitate and form into a sphere. We did this together last time, so you should be familiar with the process.”

Qin Lie gradually couldn’t control the restlessness inside. He also wanted to use the thunder from the Ninth Heaven to test his most recent cultivation progress., so he had Tang Siqi keep an eye on smelting furnace.

“I’ll be fine. When it comes to forging… I’m not less skilled than

you.” Tang Siqi wore a confident smile on her beautiful face. “Don’t worry, I’ll make sure to manage it properly. Oh, you should be careful. The poisonous bog is very dangerous, and we have yet to explore many strongly poisonous areas. Do not get bitten by poisonous organisms.”

“I have the detoxification pills that Senior Sister Lian Rou made, there shouldn’t be any problems.” Subsequently, Qin Lie moved towards the depths of the poisonous bog.

At that time, the python tattoo on his neck disappeared inside his body.

“Sect Master Qin!” A Blood Spear blood guard shouted.

“Don’t follow me. I’m going inside the poisonous bog. I want to use the thunder to cultivate.” Qin Lie continued his advance.

“Will Sect Master Qin be alright?” a blood guard said worriedly.

“Alright?” another blood guard grinned. “With Sect Master Qin’s mysterious skills, I think that there is nothing in the poisonous bog that can pose a threat to him. In the sect, he had killed people from the five forces with the Terminator Profound Bombs, was able to manipulate the twelve spirit pattern pillars, and even killed Jiu Liuyu… what could possibly happen to him?”

“That’s true. Sect Master Qin is different from the old sect master, he is not only an artificer.” The guard’s mind was put to

rest.

After this calamity, everyone in Armament Sect truly accepted Qin Lie as the sect master.

In the eyes of many people, Qin Lie was a better sect master than Ying Xingran, because it had been Qin Lie who had given them hope and life. Even if Ying Xingran was present, he could not have done what Qin Lie did.

“If the sect was given ten more years to develop, Armament Sect would rule over Scarlet Tide Continent with Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple! We would truly become a Copper rank force!” someone shouted lowly.

The blood guards from Blood Spear that were around wore excited expressions, their minds stirred as though they were seeing a vast scene of the future.

……

” Pak!”

Suddenly, a spear of lightning shot down from the sky and caused an old tree to become unusually bright.The lightning quickly passed through the tree branches.

Qin Lie’s body suddenly stopped.

He stood in a muddy bog which glowed with dark green poisonous light. On the surface, bubbles of poisonous water could be seen, constantly releasing corrosive acid poison.

“Boom boom boom!”

The sound of thunder was exceptionally intense here. The streaks of lightning seemed to be alive and were gathering in this area.

Qin Lie had also come here after following rumbles of thunder and flashes of lightning. He approached the green water poisonous bog, and headed towards an area with old, gray-brown trees.

There was a circle of strange ten-meter-tall trees around the green-colored poisonous water bog. Not a single leaf could be found on these trees. The tree branches were gray-brown and the patterns on the trees seemed ancient and mysterious.

Under the illumination of lightning, those patterns flashed like tiny arcs of electricity.

“Boom!””

As the lightning came down and struck an old tree, the old tree did not turn into ash under lightning’s destructive might Instead, the sound of thunder seemed to come from within it.

Looking closely, one would find that the tree patterns of this ancient tree were constantly flashing with light.

A kind of restless lightning field slowly spread around the old trees, causing the rumbles of thunder in the area to intensify.

“These old trees…”

Qin Lie’s expression shifted slightly, surprised joy rising in his eyes. “Thunderblitz Tree! It’s able to tolerate the repeated attacks of thunder and lightning, and is even capable of absorbing their power! Thunderblitz Tree, Profound Grade Six spirit material!”

The Thunderblitz Tree was a rare kind of wood-type spirit material. Only areas plagued with frequent thunderstorms could give birth to a Thunderblitz Tree.

It was different from other trees. When other trees encountered the strikes of lightning, they would quickly wither and die, or burn, becoming burnt black ash.

Thunderblitz Trees however, did not fear lightning strikes. On the contrary, if they were not stuck by lightning for a long period of time, they would slowly wither and then die.

The thunder and lightning that came from the Ninth Heaven was the power that kept it alive, and also the source of its existence.

Profound Grade Six Thunderblitz Tree was a great material for

forging many thunder-type spirit artifacts. Even the forging method of Terminator Profound Bomb that Li Mu had given to Qin Lie had mentioned the Thunderblitz Tree. If he could use the Thunderblitz Tree to replace the Thundersky Rock, the power of the Terminator Profound Bomb could increase by another level.

"The poisonous bog has Thunderblitz Trees, and more than ten of them. I have pretty good luck." Qin Lie's eyes gradually brightened up.

"Eh, that's not right, it seems... like I had known beforehand that there were Thunderblitz Trees here. It feels like I've come here before." Qin Lie rubbed his head, his expression slightly puzzled, as he spoke to himself with his brows creased.

When he had been forging with Tang Siqi, he had heard the roars of thunder. At that time, his blood had burned and he had a strong impulse to cultivate Heavenly Thunder Eradication. This impulse couldn't be suppressed, no matter how hard he tried...

Then he had come searching this entire way following density of thunder and lightning, according to... a mysterious intuition which led him here.

Which lead him to find this wondrous land that contained Thunderblitz Trees.

"There are enough Thunderblitz Trees that when the storm comes, it can form a strong lightning field. This lightning field can take in the thunder and lightning from the Ninth Heaven and

gather their power... The strange formations I made inside Herb Mountain had copied the lightning field that Thunderblitz Trees naturally form to help you cultivate Heavenly Thunder Eradication."

He suddenly remember Qin Shan's words, as the blurry memories became clear.

Qin Lie raised his head to look at the lightning crashing down. He looked at the dazzling dragons of lightning, looked at the glittering Thunderblitz Tree, then his expression trembled.

"This is a great place to cultivate!"

Bolts of lightning came out of his body like electrical snakes. They wrapped around his arms and waist like chains and formed layers of flickering lightning barriers. They were meant to protect the vulnerable parts of his body.

Subsequently, he sat down on a relatively dry part of the ground.

He started to channel Heavenly Thunder Eradication at full power!

"Boom!"

A roar of thunder that could tear the earth apart came from the depths of his mind, shaking his mind until both his vision and consciousness became blurry.

“Zzt zzt zzt!”

The lightning flashed as it condensed on his neck. The python tattoo became clearer. Under the illumination of the lightning, it seemed to have come alive, moving slightly.

That python’s little eye which had been condensed from that light contained an ancient and desolate aura. It was like an existence that had slept for tens of thousands of years that slowly awakened. The ancient soul used a puzzled gaze to size up the world that had become so unfamiliar...

“Pah pah pah!”

Bolts of lightning and the loud rumblings of thunder fell from the void and landed on lightning field created by the Thunderblitz Trees.

Qin Lie was like a whirlpool that was able to absorb thunder and lightning. He sat at the center of the field, as the fluctuations emanating out of his body became stronger!

As he was cultivating Heavenly Thunder Eradication, the python on his neck moved, making swallowing motions. .

The thunder and lightning power that entered Qin Lie’s body turned into streams of light that poured into its mouth in the form of a long river of lightning.

The tiny body of the python seemed to slowly grow a bit as it swallowed more and more of thunder and lightning power...

Its body that seemed illusory became more real and slowly gained an intimidating aura.

Such a high-level being was undergoing its first metamorphosis. It was evolving to a state that would suit it best in the present world!

It was using Qin Lie's body, the Heavenly Thunder Eradication that Qin Lie cultivated, and the lightning field produced by the Thunderblitz Trees to finish its own evolution.

And Qin Lie was benefitting from its existence as it caused even more lightning to fall down, letting it temper his body.

"Strange, there's something wrong with my body today, how is so much lightning entering my body directly? And how could this body of mine withstand it until now? Why do the thunder Natal Palaces inside my body not feel as though they are going to explode..."

Qin Lie did not know what was currently happening on his neck. He felt that the rate of absorption of thunder and lightning into his body was extremely high this time, yet he did not have the feeling he would explode.

After being puzzled for a while, he decided it must have been due to the lightning field and didn't think about it any more.

He still focused on cultivating Heavenly Thunder Eradication.

The place where the people of Armament Sect were situated.

The three reverends and the seven inner sect elders felt uneasy when they learned that Qin Lie had headed deep into the poisonous bog to cultivate. They were afraid an accident would happen to Qin Lie.

They had sent Lian Rou out. They had Lian Rou go with Tang Siqi deep into the poisonous bog to make sure that Qin Lie would not get bitten by the poisonous insects or get his body corroded by the poisonous water.

Lang Xie and the martial practitioners of Blood Spear were also roaming around another part of the poisonous bog under the leadership of Mo Hai. They needed to find the most suitable place for Blood Spear to cultivate.

Having found a large piece of dry ground, the three reverends arranged for the sect disciples to cut down the surrounding trees and use the wood to construct some simple buildings.

Everyone was working hard.

"Look at the sky!" Pan Xuan, inner sect's senior disciple,

suddenly pointed at the grey sky and hollered.

The inner sect disciples that were busy and all the elders raised their faces to the sky.

Elegantly dancing among the clouds was an extremely beautiful butterfly that was around the size of an enormous eagle. Woven with a rainbow of fluid colors, it was around seven or eight meters long.

On the bright and vivid butterfly was a beautiful figure that flickered in and out of view dressed in multicolored clothing. She looked like a goddess riding on a rainbow, shocking anyone who laid their eyes on her.

Chapter 244: Song Tingyu

"A Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly! A Rank Five spirit beast!" Chief Reverend Luo Zhichang's expression suddenly shifted.

"The legendary Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly! A terrifying spirit beast from the Flowing Cloud Continent, how come it is here?" Fang Qi shouted in surprise.

Flowing Cloud Continent was very close to Scarlet Tide Continent. In previous generations, there had been artificers from Armament Sect who had traveled to Flowing Cloud Continent and recorded down many of the precious fauna on that continent.

The Rank Five Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly was the most famous spirit beast of Flowing Cloud Continent. This spirit beast was an enormous and extremely beautiful butterfly. When it flew, rainbow light would flow around its wings, causing it to look like a rainbow cloud. Thus it was called a Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly.

The Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly could fly extremely quickly. Supposedly, it would at most take it ten days to go from Flowing Cloud Continent to Scarlet Tide Continent.

In comparison, normal martial practitioners who traveled to Flowing Cloud Continent by boat had to spend one to two years. Even if it was by some other flying animal, they would need at least several months.

Even on the Eight Extreme Temple's Green Hunting Bat, it would take at least two months to travel to Flowing Cloud Continent.

That stood as testament to the speed at which Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly flew.

"I am Song Tingyu of Profound Heaven Alliance and am here on a special visit. Greetings to the uncles of Armament Sect, please allow me to come down and have a chat." A pleasing and soft voice came down from the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly, one so pleasant, it caused the nervous expressions of whoever listened to it to subconsciously relax.

Many of the Armament Sect disciples, including Pan Xuan, Tian Jianhao and their group, showed intoxicated expressions just from hearing the voice which floated down from the sky.

"Profound Heaven Alliance's Song Tingyu! Are you the only daughter of Alliance Master Song Yu?" Luo Zhichang's expression was greatly shocked.

"Haha, that's me." Song Tingyu's voice resounded slowly.

"Armament Sect's main sect no longer exists. As this place has just started to be built, it is still very crude here. Miss Song, please don't take offense." Luo Zhichang thought for a moment and looked at the two other reverends. The three said together, "It is an honor for Armament Sect to have Miss Song come. We respectfully welcome your arrival."

Under the scolding of the inner sect elders, a group of outer sect disciples scattered, making space for her.

“Uncles are too courteous…”

A beautiful girl wearing a multi-colored robe which was embellished with rainbow crystal jewelry slowly appeared atop the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly. She had a pair of bright eyes along a mesmerizing smile, and her hair was piled high atop her head.

As the men of Armament Sect raised their heads to look up from below, their bodies stiffened.

The girl had a devastatingly enchanting figure, and her eyes were like crescent moons. Moreover, the exquisite beauty of her face was enough to bring ruin to countries. Her looks were simply too destructive, like femme fatales of legend. It was as if the description had been specifically created to describe her extreme beauty…

But it wasn’t simply just the inner and outer sect disciples. Even the three great reverends and six inner sect elders fell into a momentary daze when they saw her. As their gazes landed on her body, they began to show extremely obvious signs of deep infatuation.

“Profound Heaven Alliance was really in the wrong this time. We should not have attacked Armament Sect. I have personally come today in hope that I can reimburse you for your losses. I hope to I

can receive your forgiveness.” Song Tingyu showed a pitiful expression, causing all of the men around her to feel a desire to protect her. As if all of her words were said with the utmost sincerity, they couldn’t help but subconsciously believe her.

“All the members of Armament Sect who worked in the Armament Pavilions of Dark Asura Hall, Seven Fiends Valley, and Dark Shadow Tower and who were imprisoned have all been released as of now. As long as you say words, they can leave at any time and come meet up with you here.”

Song Tingyu looked at the crowd and said with a serious expression,”Profound Heaven Alliance did not touch them. These people who sold spirit artifacts in those Armament Pavilions are all alive and well. I guarantee you that none of them have been injured, and that they can leave at any time.”

When Luo Zhichang and the others heard this, their expressions turned joyful as excitement silently bubbled up inside their hearts.

They had constantly been worried about the shop attendants of the Armament Pavilions which were scattered across the land, afraid that they had been killed by the five forces before the war had even began

Hearing Song Tingyu’s words, it sounded like those people had only been imprisoned, and that their lives had never been threatened. This caused everyone to become excited.

After all, those people were also the disciples of Armament Sect.

They too were members of Armament Sect. Moreover, there was a huge number of them. If they were still alive and well, then it would become much easier for Armament Sect to rebuild.

"...Still, some people of Armament Sect have died. Thus, Profound Heaven Alliance would like to extend our apologies and offer reparations." Song Tingyu bowed slightly. "Profound Heaven Alliance is willing to pay ten thousand Earth Grade One spirit stones. If Armament Sect does not believe it is enough, then we can further negotiate ..."

"Earth Grade One spirit stones! Ten thousand pieces!" Pan Xuan inhaled a breath of cold air.

The expressions of Tian Jianhao and the other outer sect disciples changed as their eyes began to fervently glow.

Even the expressions of the three great reverends and the six inner sect elders quietly shifted, as their eyes also began to shine.

Earth Grade spirit stones were usually something that only Fulfillment Realm martial practitioners could use. The spirit energy contained in one piece of Earth Grade One spirit stone was multiple times higher than a Profound Grade Seven spirit stone.

Earth Grade spirit stones were commonly used as currency by Copper rank factions. They were the materials which Fulfillment and Fragmentation Realm martial practitioners generally used to assist their cultivation.

Armament Sect, along with nearby Dark Asura Hall, Seven Fiends Valley, Cloud Sky Mountain, Purple Mist Sea, and Dark Shadow Tower were all only able to store Profound Grade spirit stones and thus only used them during cultivation. They would rarely have the chance to come into contact with Earth Grade spirit stones.

The total value of ten thousand Earth Grade spirit stones was probably worth as much as a third of Seven Fiends Valley. It was enough to purchase ten mines or exchange for several cities like Icestone CIty.

The reparations offered by Profound Heaven Alliance greatly surpassed the expectations of Luo Zhichang and the others, causing them to feel greatly moved.

“Is Profound Heaven Alliance really planning to resolve this peacefully? Are they really not preparing to finish off Armament Sect?” Everyone was currently thinking the same thing.

“So, so what does Armament Sect need to do?” asked Luo Zhichang in a deep voice as he suppressed his excitement and tried to not get carried away.

“You do not need to do anything. Just being willing to continue business with Profound Heaven Alliance is enough. My Profound Heaven Alliance plans to order some things from Armament Sect. We will use additional spirit stones to pay.” Song Tingyu smiled docilely.

“What kind of transactions? What are you preparing to order?” Luo Zhichang shouted lightly.

“...That object called the Terminator Profound Bomb. One hundred Earth Grade One spirit stones for each one. We will buy as many as you can make.” Song Tingyu finally stated her true intentions, “The fighting between Scarlet Tide Continent and the evil races of the Nether Realm will start soon. This time, we are not fighting atop the Nether Battlefield, but atop the land on which we reside. If we lose this fight, Scarlet Tide Continent will become Nether Realm’s playground. It’s even possible that Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple will disappear. That’s why we need something that can reverse the situation. The Terminator Profound Bomb is exactly the thing that we need.”

After she had said this, all the people of Armament Sect knew what Song Tingyu had really come for. They also knew why Profound Heaven Alliance’s terms were so generous, and why they had come to ask for peace.

—They had come for the Terminator Profound Bomb.

The evil races of the Nether Realm were extremely afraid of thunder and lightning. The Terminator Profound Bomb was precisely the bane of their existence!

The Terminator Profound Bomb had almost killed all the troops of the five forces. Considering that it could possibly be even more effective when used against a force of similar size and power of evil races from the Nether Realm, perhaps it could completely

obliterate them!

Thus, after realizing that Armament Sect was the only one to have such a wondrous object, Profound Heaven Alliance instantly made a decision—to obtain the Terminator Profound Bomb at any cost!

Their original goal had been to obtain the method to make the Terminator Profound Bomb, but Song Tingyu knew that Armament Sect would definitely not give up the forging method. Thus, in order to avoid creating enmity with Armament Sect, she had never mentioned buying the method.

In this regard, she was extremely smart and crafty. .

“Only Sect Master Qin knows the method for forging the Terminator Profound Bomb, and only he can forge it.” Luo Zhichang thought for a moment and then said calmly, “Moreover, we cannot make the decision as to whether we sell Terminator Profound Bombs or not. Only the sect master can make this decision.”

Song Tingyu’s smile did not fade as she sincerely asked, “Can I see your honored Sect Master Qin? I would like to talk about this face to face with him. After all, I have come a long ways to demonstrate my sincerity. Uncles, please guide me to meet him.”

Hearing her say that, a similar, yet strange thought emerged within the minds of all the males of Armament Sect—if you talked face to face with someone, who could possibly refuse your

suggestion?

As long as it was a man, how could they possibly refuse her? Furthermore, the conditions she gave were so benevolent, just how could Qin Lie refuse?

This was what everyone thought.

Even Luo Zhichang thought so. He assumed that if Song Tingyu met with Qin Lie, Qin Lie would definitely be unable to refuse her and thus quickly form a partnership agreement with Profound Heaven Alliance.

“The sect master is temporarily absent. He is cultivating inside the poisonous bog. It may be some time before he comes out,” said Luo Zhichang.

“Then why don’t I go find him?” Song Tingyu suggested.

“Don’t, the sect master is currently cultivating. Miss Song, please do not disturb him,” lightly shouted Fang Qi.

Song Tingyu wasn’t angry. Instead, she smiled and then said with a nod, “Alright, I will wait here for him to return then.”

Chapter 245: Denied!

In the center of the ring of Thunderblitz Trees, the thunder and lightning magnetic field formed a powerful suction force which sucked the entire sky full of thunder and lightning over.

Qin Lie was cultivating within this lightning field.

“Zzzt!”

Tiny strands of electricity swam across his entire body and wound around him as thin threads of lightning energy continuously shot at his meridians.

Examining his meridians with his mind consciousness, he could see the lightning ramming into each of his meridians like dragons.

“It’s the second stage of Heavenly Thunder Sacred Body!” loudly exclaimed Qin Lie in his heart.

According to Qin Shan, the cultivation of the Heavenly Thunder Sacred Body was separated into several stages, and required one to repeatedly enhance themselves through constant tempering and polishing. Only then would the true might of Heavenly Thunder Sacred Body gradually be unleashed.

The first stage of Heavenly Thunder Sacred Body focused on using thunder to temper one’s blood, flesh, internal organs, bones, and muscles so that their body could become accustomed to being

intertwined with thunder and lightning.

At this stage of Heavenly Thunder Sacred Body, one's bones, nerves, and innards would all contain traces of thunder and lightning energy—their flesh would also harbor thunder and lightning energy. When fighting against others, one would be able to infuse this power of thunder and lightning into their own spirit energy with a simple gesture, causing in each circulation of their spirit arts to be accompanied by the raging force of thunder and lightning.

The first stage of Heavenly Thunder Sacred Body focused on infusing thunder into one's innards to attain perfection. At this stage, one's corporeal body was rather strong, and one's physical endurance was greatly increased as well.

The second stage of Heavenly Thunder Sacred Body focused on using thunder and lightning to open and transform one's meridians.

A person's body contained a total of seven hundred and twenty meridians, and each one was like a miniature world of its own. If one slowly refined these meridians with the power of thunder and lightning, they would each transform into something reminiscent of a miniature natal palace. Each meridian would become able to independently absorb and store thunder and lightning. This was the second stage of Heavenly Thunder Sacred Body.

Cultivating this stage required bitter cultivation, a sizable amount of time, and the right person at the right place at the right time.

As of right now, Qin Lie could be considered to have officially stepped into the cultivation of this stage. He now needed to use thunder and lightning to open his meridians.

The weather of the poisonous bog was quite unpredictable. Indeed, the rumbling of thunder and crackling of lightning did not last for long before the weather quickly cleared up.

As the thunder and lightning came to a stop, the powerful magnetic field caused by the lightning field also gradually disappeared.

Qin Lie remained sitting in the center of the ring of trees. After silently sitting for a while, he eventually realized that he could no longer borrow the power of the lightning field to cultivate and finally opened his eyes.

The moment he opened his eyes, the python tattoo that had emerged on his neck mystically disappeared back into his body.

It had swiftly vanished into his skin like ink.

“Thunderblitz Tree, Thunderblitz Tree...”

Qin Lie stood up and began mumbling to himself as he observed the bare ancient trees. Very quickly, he came to a decision—he would not harm these Thunderblitz Trees.

He would treat this place as his personal cultivation area, as the lightning field formed by these Thunderblitz Trees that his grandfather had built in the belly of Herb Mountain had the same function, despite slight differences.

The lightning field formed by the Thunderblitz Trees could attract the thunder and lightning in the sky. It would assist him in gathering even more thunder and lightning energy and help him as he cultivated Heavenly Thunder Eradication.

Thus, he did not plan to chop down the Thunderblitz Trees, nor did he plan to use them to enhance the power of the Terminator Profound Bombs.

He looked around and firmly imprinted the location of this area within his mind. Afterwards, he once again felt some fluctuations nearby. After making sure that there was nothing amiss, he finally headed back to where Armament Sect had gathered.

Two hours later, he ran into Tang Siqi and Lian Rou beside a purple marsh.

“Qin Lie, are you okay? The chief reverend and the others worried that you ran into some problems, and asked us to come look for you.” Tang Siqi exclaimed.

“You really should be more careful in the future. There are quite a few poisonous insects deep within the poisonous bog that can cause even a Netherpassage Realm martial practitioner to die in a matter of seconds. Even though you’re an extraordinarily talented

genius, if you happened to be unlucky enough to run into one of those few, rarely seen poisonous insects, you would probably not be able to walk out alive." Lian Rou said bluntly, "You are currently the sect's jewel and its hopes for the future. If anything happens to you those old men are going to cry their hearts out."

"Yes." Tang Siqi smiled, "When they heard that you went alone into the deeper regions of the poisonous bog to cultivate, those old fellows all turned completely pale because they were terrified that something would happen to you."

"I'm fine. Moreover, in the future, I will frequently go deep into the poisonous bog alone to cultivate. They will eventually get used to it." After giving them a smile, Qin Lie arrived between the two girls and began walking back with them, shoulder to shoulder.

"Senior Sister Lian Rou, Yi Yuan... why did he let you go?" Qin Lie suddenly asked.

Previously, Lian Rou had definitely been taken away by Yi Yuan. Yet later on she had surprisingly returned to the sect by herself. Qin Lie was quite confused by it.

He knew very well just how obsessed Yi Yuan was with Lian Rou.

Just for Lian Rou, Yi Yuan had been willing to betray the sect and lure Lang Xie, Feng Rong, and Qin Lie himself into an encirclement laid down by the five forces—he had been willing to trade Lang Xie, Feng Rong, and Qin Lie's lives for Lian Rou's life.

From this, one could see just how crazy he was for Lian Rou.

The moment Yi Yuan was brought up, Lian Rou's expression drastically changed and turned sorrowful, "He knew that something had changed within the sect yet again. He sensed Senior Xue Li's aura and felt that it was better for me to return to the sect, so he released me. This guy, sigh..."

Lian Rou turned towards him, "Why did you bring up Yi Yuan? Qin Lie, don't you hate Yi Yuan a lot and want to kill him no matter what? Qin Lie, can, can I ask you something about Yi Yuan..."

"Senior Sister, you do not want Yi Yuan to come to harm, do you?" Qin Lie looked into her eyes and said.

"I, I really do not want him to be hurt. Even, even though he's a very disgusting and annoying person, I still don't hope for him to die." Lian Rou smiled bitterly.

"Sooner or later the grudge between Yi Yuan and I must be settled!" Qin Lie's expression turned cold. However, just as Lian Rou was about to beg him again, he changed his tone and said, "But that's that. I will not take his life, nor will I force him into a dead end."

The moment he said this, both Lian Rou and Tang Siqi's expressions were slightly dumbfounded. They both stared deeply at him.

“To be honest, I only have three friends in the entirety of Armament Sect, you two and Yi Yuan.” Qin Lie sighed, “If it wasn’t for you, I don’t think Yi Yuan would have betrayed the sect and harmed me. His methods may have made me a little uncomfortable, but in the end, it was all done for you, for the person... he deeply loves. Now that I think about it, I do admire him quite a bit. I admire his ability to throw everything behind and how he exchanged his extraordinary status at Purple Mist Sea for the lowly status of an outer sect disciple just to stay beside you.”

“Didn’t you expose your own identity and oppose the sect just to protect Ling Yushi and her sister’s life as well?” Tang Siqi said quietly, “In this aspect, you and Yi Yuan are exactly the same. That’s why the grudge within your heart isn’t so deep, and also why you don’t hate him so much.”

Qin Lie frowned and suddenly became silent. After carefully thinking about it, he realized that what Tang Siqi said was indeed very true.

“You killed their master and so many other practitioners of Dark Fiend Valley and Seven Fiends Valley . They...” Tang Siqi said softly.

Qin Lie’s frown deepened.

When Ling Yushi and Ling Xuanxuan evacuated from Flame Volcano, he had seen them enter Dark Fiend Valley’s crowd from afar.

At the time, he had felt a little disappointed.

From his point of view, he could give them everything that Dark Fiend Valley could give them.

Ling Yushi and Ling Xuanxuan definitely could have remained with Armament Sect. They could even have called their clansmen over. In the current situation, Qin Lie believed that he was able to protect the Ling family clansmen.

However, in the end, Ling Yushi and Ling Xuanxuan had still left with the people from Seven Fiends Valley beneath his gaze. They did not greet him and had wordlessly slipped away from his side.

He had killed Jiu Liuyu as well as many people from Dark Fiend Valley. Those people who he had killed could have had good relationships with the two sisters...

“We cannot blame them. After all, Jiu Liuyu was their master and benefactor who led them out of Ling Town. Moreover, she always treated them with great love. Now that Jiu Liuyu has died, the fact that they could not accept it within their hearts right away is very normal. In the future, once they’ve accepted it, they will probably come to Armament Sect to look for you again...” Ignoring Lian Rou rolling her eyes at her, Tang Siqi consoled him gently, “Therefore, don’t feel too dispirited. What is yours, will still be yours.”

“Yoh!” Lian Rou exclaimed in a cynical tone.

“Thank you for the advice, Senior Sister Tang.” Qin Lie smiled slightly.

Tang Siqi also smiled back at him, only her smile seemed somewhat bitter.

Another two hours passed, and the trio finally returned to Armament Sect’s newly opened area. The moment they appeared, Tong Jihua came over with a serious look and said softly to Qin Lie, “Sect Master Qin, Profound Heaven Alliance’s Miss Song Tingyu has been awaiting you for a while.”

“Song Tingyu? Who is she? What business does she have with me?” Qin Lie frowned.

“They have come for the Terminator Profound Bomb.” Tong Jihua lowered his voice and briefly stated Profound Heaven Alliance’s conditions, “Profound Heaven Alliance is willing to compensate us with ten thousand Earth grade spirit stones, and have already released the imprisoned Armament Pavilion disciples on their own accord in attempt to purchase the Terminator Profound Bomb to deal with the evil races of the Nether Realm. Moreover, they are willing to pay a high price…”

“Does the sect lack funds?” Qin Lie said solemnly.

“Not at the moment, no.” Tong Jihua looked surprised.

“Then what do we lack?” Qin Lie asked again.

“We lack Fulfillment Realm experts, we lack power, we lack...” Tong Jihua’s eyes brightened little by little as he gradually understood Qin Lie’s meaning.

“Before the sect has ascended into a Copper rank force, it will not lack spirit stones. Don’t forget that Armament Sect is still the richest among the surrounding Black Iron rank forces. What we are lacking is power. We lack the power to strike fear into both Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple. The power wielded by the Terminator Profound Bomb is exactly the kind of frightening power that can terrify these two powers!” Qin Lie frowned, “Why would we sell the power that only Armament Sect wields to Profound Heaven Alliance? We are busy dealing with the evil races from the Nether Realm as well. We can use the Terminator Profound Bomb to eliminate the evil races ourselves. There is no need for Profound Heaven Alliance to intervene!”

Tong Jihua nodded lightly, “What you say is very true, sect master. But if we do not sell Profound Heaven Alliance the Terminator Profound Bomb, I’m afraid...”

“They should not be able to say anything as long as we promise them that Armament Sect will aid them in this battle and attack the evil races of Nether Realm with the Terminator Profound Bombs.” Qin Lie said.

“Then, then are you still going to meet with that Song Tingyu?” Tong Jihua turned around and looked at a simple wooden house behind him, “She’s right there.”

“There’s no need. Just tell her that I ran into some problems during my cultivation and that I needed to immediately rest and recuperate. Also state that Armament Sect will cooperate with Profound Heaven Alliance in dealing with the evil races of Nether Realm, and that we will use the Terminator Profound Bombs in doing so, so they can save their money.” Qin Lie thought for a moment before lowering his voice to instruct Tong Jihua.

Tong Jihua smiled lightly, “I understand.”

Inside the crude little wooden house, Song Tingyu’s colorfully dressed figure leaned against the wooden wall as she read a book.

At this time, she suddenly closed the ancient book in her hands, a thread of light flickering through her beautiful eyes. She seemed to be attentively listening to something.

After a while, her lips formed a bewitching smile as she lightly nodded and whispered to herself, “This Qin Lie fellow isn’t so easy to deal with after all. Heh, what an interesting kid.”

Chapter 246: Terrifying Charm

“Are you not willing to meet me, Sect Master Qin?”

A pleasant and seductive voice rang out of the little wooden house. A beautiful woman wearing colorful clothing and adorned with equally colorful crystals walked out of it.

It was as if that heart melting gaze could soften any man’s heart and cause them to feel protective and willing to sacrifice everything for her.

Qin Lie frowned. He also looked towards the direction the voice came from; towards Song Tingyu standing in front of the wooden door.

“What a beautiful woman!”

Qin Lie’s eyes lit up. His expression was also somewhat surprised, praising the flawless beauty that was Song Tingyu.

When his gaze met Song Tingyu’s eyes, even he felt moved and subconsciously willing to agree to any of this woman’s demands; wanting to bow willingly before the straight and beautiful legs of this woman and gift her even his own life.

“This is…”

Cold energy rushed out from the bottom of his heart as Qin Lie forcefully entered his frost concept, forcefully freezing the fire that had appeared in his heart with ice.

Traces of mind-freezing, consciousness stopping frost aura wrapped inside his body, slowly dispersing all of the passion.

The hint of confusion in his eyes was gradually replaced by a thin layer of white ice. Only coldness was left in his pupils.

He had broken out of the opponent's concept!

It was only then he finally saw that Song Tingyu's glittering eyes and perfectly curved bodice was emanating out a mind-drugging and soul-intoxicating aura.

The aura was like waves rippling the surface of a lake that gradually spread outward in circular patterns. It was like a magnetic field that could suck in everyone's soul and pull a man's attention and heart completely to her side!

It was an incredibly rare and unique concept!

He now understood how formidable she was.

Not only was this woman from Profound Heaven Alliance born exceedingly beautiful with a peerless face, she was also very good at employing her natural advantage–she had specifically cultivated a magical spirit art that would enhance her own charm!

This spirit art caused her charm, already irresistible to males, to be magnified severalfold!

She had even enhanced her spirit art to the point where her concept had turned into a magnetic field that surrounded the perimeter to cover an entire area, causing all the men within a specific range to be unable to escape the allure of her attractive charm. She would cause even a person's soul to succumb to her.

"What a formidable woman! What a terrifying concept!" Qin Lie exclaimed in great shock inside his heart as his expression gradually turned serious. He was now viewing this woman in another light. He now considered her his strongest opponent.

"Haven't we met, just now?" Qin Lie's eyes were cold as his entire body was brimming with a kind of bone deep chilliness. He was barely resisting his opponent with the frost concept; holding back her terrifying concept magnetic field from overwhelming him. He had focused all of his mind and consciousness on preventing his heart from being corrupted.

"Crack crack crack!"

Suddenly, the air within a ten meter radius around Qin Lie seemed to have suddenly frozen, as his surroundings emitted cracking sounds caused by the dry ground slowly freezing.

A terribly cold aura covered the everything within that ten meter radius, causing everyone within the area to feel cold all over.

A few tiny green grass stalks were covered in ice and became crystalline and translucent. Lian Rou and Tang Siqi's hair were gradually covered in white snow.

"You're unwilling to see me, so I have no choice but to come out myself. Why do you need to act so cold, Sect Master Qin? I have traveled quite a distance to come here out of true sincerity. I wish to grow closer to Armament Sect and you. To send your guest away is against customs, don't you know?"

Song Tingyu wore a beatific smile as her eyes brimmed with indignation and blame. It was as if she was a woman deeply in love complaining to a distant lover for not returning soon enough.

It was as if that gaze could move a man with a heart of ice, and make even the most ruthless man submit obediently.

This was the first time they have seen each other, and they already were locked in combat, using their respective concepts to pressure the opponent's heart's defense line and to force them into submission!

This was a war between concepts!

Tong Jihua abruptly shuddered and woke up. He stared at Song Tingyu first, then at Qin Lie as his expression abruptly changed.

He had actually lost himself temporarily while he looked into

Song Tingyu's eyes.

If it wasn't for Qin Lie unleashing the frost concept and spreading it to his surroundings, awakening him with ice cold chilliness... he would still be trapped inside Song Tinguyu's concept.

"What a formidable woman. Her charm that could cause a soul to unknowingly succumb is at least dozens of times stronger than before!" Tong Jihua immediately understood that Song Tingyu did not unleash this magical concept when she had faced them earlier at all. She didn't take them seriously.

When Tong Jihua had awakened, he suddenly felt cold to the bone, and when he looked at Song Tingyu once more his eyes actually shone with a hint of deep fear and worry.

"Let us back away first." Tong Jihua exclaimed in a soft tone, asking for Lian Rou and Tang Siqi to retreat with him together out of Qin Lie and Song Tingyu's zone.

However, he did not hear a reply from both of them.

When he turned around to look, he realized that both Lian Rou and Tang Siqi were staring blankly at Song Tingyu with empty eyes. It was as if they were trapped inside an illusion and could not break free.

Tong Jihua was dismayed, "This woman's charm and concept

area works on both men and women?”

He was shocked once more, recognizing just how terrifying and formidable this only daughter of Profound Heaven Alliance’s Alliance Chief Song Yu was.

A charm that could capture both men and women, and a concept field that could cause a person’s very soul to submit willingly to her orders... With her working for Profound Heaven Alliance, just how many people in the entire Scarlet Tide Continent could resist her advances; just how many people could remain themselves in front of her?

Tong Jihua was deeply worried for Qin Lie.

Qin Lie was still young after all. He was hot-blooded and vigorous, and a man his age had the least resistance against the allure of a beautiful woman, not to mention that his opponent was Song Tingyu, a disaster-level beauty who was well-versed in the concept of seduction.

Even he had fallen for her trick. Tong Jihua did not think the odds were in favor of Qin Lie. Actually, he did not believe Qin Lie had any chance of victory.

“Siqi! Lian Rou!

He yelled beside the two women’s ears and woke them from their trance. Then he said seriously, “Follow me!”

The emptiness in Tang Siqi and Lian Rou's eyes faded slightly. They shuddered once and suddenly stared somewhat fearfully at Song Tingyu. A great fear was born inside their hearts.

They understood what had just happened.

They had fallen into an illusion earlier, and within that illusion they saw Song Tingyu as an empress—an empress ruling over a nation made up of women alone.

They were Song Tingyu's guards. They had sworn their lives to defend Song Tingyu, to sacrifice their lives for her at any moment, to listen to her orders, to do their absolute best to serve her, to dedicate everything they were to her...

Everything had appeared so real in that illusion. Even after they had awakened they still doubted themselves; doubted if the world around them was fake and they were bewitched to feel doubt towards their empress.

"Bite your own finger!" Tong Jihua yelled in a low tone.

Tang Siqi and Lian Rou's expressions abruptly shuddered as they hurriedly put their jade fingers into their beautiful lips and bit themselves.

In the next moment, they cried out in uncontrollable pain, and finally came to realization which world was truly real.

They stared fearfully at Song Tingyu, realizing that Song Tingyu was smiling at them, seemingly ridiculing them for their unruly appearances and finger biting act...

Great fear appeared inside their hearts as they swiftly retreated under Tong Jihua's shouts, until they were at least a hundred meters away from Qin Lie and Song Tingyu, beside Armament Sect comrades. Only then did they stop while breathing heavily.

"That woman is practically a devil!" Lian Rou pressed her rapidly beating heart with a slightly pale face, exclaiming in shock, "I've never met such a person. I've never seen someone who can cause us to succumb to the point where we didn't even know who we are in just a few glances! Does she hail from Nether Realm to be this terrifying?"

These were exactly the same thoughts Tang Siqi had.

She also stared fearfully at Song Tingyu, and as she watched Song Tingyu slowly approaching Qin Lie, she cried out, "Qin Lie, Qin Lie is still inside!"

"This is the war between concepts. It is... incredibly difficult for others to interfere unless one is well-versed in some concept and can disrupt them with it.. Otherwise... otherwise we will have to kill Song Tingyu, but..." Tong Jihua smiled bitterly.

Kill Song Tingyu?

Who would dare?

Lian Rou and Tang Siqi had also turned silent. They knew that there were probably no one who dared to kill Song Tingyu on this continent.

Even Eight Extreme Temple would never dare to commit such an act unless they had made up their minds to start an all-out war against Profound Heaven Alliance.

Much less Armament Sect.

Therefore, the crowd could only smile bitterly as they watched Song Tingyu taking step after step towards Qin Lie. They could only watch her beautiful eyes brimming with expressions as deep as the sea as she stood amorously in front of Qin Lie...

No one could help him.

This was a war between him and Song Tingyu alone. This was the unique war between concepts.

Chapter 247: Sinking Into Two Lifetimes Of Love

Before he met Song Tingyu, Qin Lie would never have believed that a woman could cause him to sink into depravity with just a pair of eyes.

Now he believed it.

If he hadn't learned the frost concept, if he hadn't managed to freeze his body and mind with the frost concept and affect the surroundings as well, he might have succumb to Song Tingyu's terrifying charm already.

However, even as he resisted with difficulty with the frost concept now, he knew that he wasn't completely immune to this woman's terrifying charm.

Layer after layer of invisible ripples rammed continuously against his frost concept field as she walked towards him.

When Song Tingyu's infinitely loving eyes stared at him, a passion and love as deep as the sea threatened to flood over him. Like a bottomless abyss, she threatened to suck him in and cause him to lose himself forever...

"Sect Master Qin, I simply admire you and wish to get closer to you. Are you truly that ruthless? Are you not willing to see me even once? Oh, how can such a cruel man as you exist in this

world?” Song Tingyu’s voice rippled with an irresistible magic that was like a warm spirit floating into the bottom of Qin Lie’s heart.

Qin Lie actually lost control of the frost concept field he had gathered with such difficulty in an instant!

The melting, gentle voice and eyes filled with deep love flowed into his heart and mind like a warm stream.

The coldness in Qin Lie’s eyes was instantly melted, as lost and confusion appeared in his eyes.

He had succumbed deep into Song Tingyu’s charm field. His mind and body was led step by step by the other party to sink into an abyss that was as warm as the sea...

“My dear husband, please come back soon, okay? Your wife will be waiting for you, always. You must be safe. You must remember that your wife wishes you to come home...”

Inside a simple and crude stone house, a woman who was as gentle as water clad in a simple white skirt let out a thick color of worry on her impossibly beautiful face.

While tidying his clothes and fussing over him endlessly, the unfading love in her eyes was one that could melt even frigid ice and iron stone.

This woman, was none other than Song Tingyu.

On the other hand, Qin Lie, clad in leather armor while wearing a quiver at his back and a sword in his hand was ready to depart for a war and clash against the enemy on the battlefield.

Song Tingyu, was none other than his beloved wife. Before he left she had fussed over him with gentle words against and again, tell him how worried she was and expressed the reluctance in her heart.

Qin Lie's heart was filled with regrets. They had married for only a few days, and he already had to leave his beloved because of an invasion by the enemy country. As a soldier, he had to go to the battlefield.

This departure might be several years long. He would have to leave his beloved alone in an empty house, thinking of him and worrying for him everyday, fearful that he would die in war and be separated forever.

He felt a terribly deep regret in his heart. He felt that he owed his beloved far too much, and made up his decision in his mind. When he came back from the war, he would definitely repay this debt as best he could.

And if he unfortunately perished in battle, then he would repay this lifetime debt even on his next life as well...

The scene changed.

Qin Lie sat in a luxurious carriage. There were handsome stallions opening the way at the front, and government escorts protecting his safety as they headed towards a secluded alley with bright lights and colorful decorations.

Many commoners congratulated him loudly along the way while wearing excited looks on their faces, as they welcomed him on both sides of the road.

The luxurious carriage stopped right in front of a shabby house. A beautiful woman clad in a green skirt with many sewn patches waited almost unbearably in front of the door.

“The Top Scholar is back, the Top Scholar is back! It’s been three years; he finally scored first on the rank and came back.”

“His poor beloved wife had to skimp here and there and wait him for three years, praying that he would be home everyday.”

“Their love has finally became whole.”

The people around them yelled loudly.

Qin Lie walked down from the carriage and saw his wife who had waited for him for three years at first glance. He felt a terrible regret in his heart and swore on the inside that he would repay her for a lifetime.

That woman was Song Tingyu again. She stood right by the door with a look of deep love and passion.

“My beloved, I will repay you for all that I’ve owe you with a lifetime!” Qin Lie walked forwards and hugged her right in front of everyone’s gazes. He swore silently in a low tone.

“Not just this lifetime. For the next life, and the life after that, you must remember what you owe me, and remember to repay me…” Song Tingyu said word by word with a voice full of magic.

That voice reached straight into Qin Lie’s heart and mind, and resonated deeply within his soul. Like an imprint or a seed, it wanted to imprint itself deep into Qin Lie’s heart and mind so he would not forget forever.

“Rrrmb!”

A loud rumble resounded inside Qin Lie’s mind. Like deeply rooted seed, it bloomed inside his head and grew bigger.

“This is what I owe her. I owe her two lifetimes of love, two lifetimes of debt!” Qin Lie exclaimed softly inside his heart.

A seed bloomed inside his heart, causing his mind to be imprinted with a figure that could never be wiped out.

That, was Song Tingyu’s figure.

“It’s good that you know that you owe me two lifetimes of love. Now then, you should return your debt for this lifetime now...” Song Tingyu smiled beautifully.

She had already walked in front of Qin Lie and stood at the opposite side of him. Two pairs of eyes gazed into each other.

She extended a jade finger and pointed smilingly at Qin Lie’s forehead, “My dear husband, this lifetime has arrived, so you should wake up and take a look around now. What you’ve owed me should be returned to me this lifetime...”

Her crystalline fingertip touched gently once at Qin Lie’s forehead. She had touched... where the Soul Suppressing Orb was right beneath his flesh and skin.

“Rrrmb!”

Surprise flashed across Song Tingyu’s beautiful eyes. A hint of fear appeared deep within her pupils.

The torrent of memories had rewinded from Qin Lie’s forehead and flowed back to her like rays of rainbow instead.

Those lights of memory imprinted with her mind seeds were the fruits of love she had spent much effort to cultivate. She had originally planned to implant this deep inside Qin Lie’s mind.

But at this moment, it had suddenly uncontrollably flowed back to her mind and consciousness from Qin Lie's body, rushing through the door of her heart and soul...

Suddenly, the two scenes Qin Lie had seen earlier were displayed inside her mind.

Qin Lie had worn a soldier's outfit, ready to attend his duty on the battlefield. Filled with regret, worry and sadness, she helped Qin Lie to tidy his clothes...

Her heart was filled to the brim with thick bitterness. They had gotten married for only a few days and enjoyed a few days of deep passion, and her husband was already going to war and would not return for several years.

She was very worried; worried that Qin Lie would encounter an accident; worried that Qin Lie would die on the battlefield.

After Qin Lie had left, she was left alone inside the house, thinking and crying for him day and night, missing Qin Lie.

After the scene changed, Qin Lie was now hurrying for the exam at the capital, and she was left alone at the house feeling anxious and worried for him.

She was worried that Qin Lie would not pass the imperial exams, wasting his many years of hard effort in studies and the money they had accumulated with much hardship. She then worried

about Qin Lie not returning home after becoming an official, living abroad and marrying a new wife at the capital...

She thought of him for three years day and night. Her mind was filled with Qin Lie's figure, hoping everyday for him to get on the honor roll and come home.

Two lifetimes of love, two lifetimes of endless waiting for the day her husband came home.

She waited all the way until today, this lifetime, the third lifetime.

She watched Qin Lie in front of her and suddenly realized that his figure had been deeply imprinted inside her heart. It was as if his figure had became rooted inside her heart and could never be wiped away...

She suddenly realized that she had suffered a backfire from her concept.

This was the first time she had failed in her whole life.

A stream of blood flowed down from the corner of her red lips. Her charm concept had finally shattered after the trickle of blood had appeared.

She stared deeply at Qin Lie with impossibly complex colors dancing inside her eyes. Then, she cried out softly.

The colorful figure of a Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly suddenly appeared high on the sky. It flew towards her like a rainbow meteor.

When the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly had closed in, she jumped once and fell on top of the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly. She was carried by the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly into the sky and vanished in the blink of an eye.

Deep within the clouds, she took out an exquisite-looking handkerchief and gently wiped the blood at the corner of her lips. Suddenly, she shook her head and laughed bitterly, “I can’t believe I actually failed. My concept actually backfired going up against a guy who hasn’t even reached the Fulfillment Realm. I’m the one who had his figure implanted deep inside my heart instead.”

She knew very well that the moment the magical spirit art she cultivated had backfired, she must wipe away the other party’s imprint from the bottom of her heart as soon as possible.

Otherwise, she would float between the lines of illusion and reality. Her emotions would become unstable when facing Qin Lie, and it would affect her cool judgment as well.

—As long as that seed belonging to Qin Lie inside her head was not eliminated, she would treat Qin Lie as her most intimate companion. She would even experience the the terrifying feeling that Qin Lie was her husband of two lifetimes.

She, who had never failed, was terrified for the first time. She was in a hurry to eliminate that terrifying influence immediately.

That was why she didn’t even dare speak an additional sentence and ran away from Qin Lie at top speed.

Chapter 248: Fiancé?

Qin Lie was still dazed, still trapped in an illusory state!

Even long after Song Tingyu had departed, he was still standing there expressionlessly, puzzled which world he was truly in.

Tong Jihua, Tang Siqi, and Lian Rou all looked at him from afar with puzzled expressions on their faces. Why had Song Tingyu suddenly flown away?

When Song Tingyu left, the three clearly saw that Song Tingyu had slightly been panicked. It seemed something unexpected had occurred, considering the manner in which she had left.

What had really happened?

The battle of concepts was usually mysterious. Only the participants would know what had occurred.

Outsiders had no way of discerning what had happened with only just their eyes.

“Qin Lie!”

Tong Jihua shouted, hoping for Qin Lie to wake up.

His shout was like a bolt of lightning that pierced Qin Lie’s mind.

The dazed Qin Lie shook in response as his eyes finally became clear again.

He could feel a thread of light shooting out of the Soul Suppressing Orb which instantly eliminated any remaining confusion. The mist that shrouded his mind was blown away.

The scenes that seemed so clear and realistic shattered under the illumination of this light.

He seemed to hear some unusual object in his mind be cleansed by the light.

Little did he know that it was exactly the imprint left by the seed that Song Tingyu had implanted in his mind...

So he completely recovered and was wholly awake. He knew who he was, where he was, and knew what was true and what was false.

“Such a scary woman!”

Thinking back to the scenes he had seen, he broke out in a cold sweat. He knew that Song Tingyu’s strange concept had enchanted his soul and almost broke through his mind. If that had occurred, he would then always possess Song Tingyu’s figure deep within in his heart, shackled by its influence for the rest of his lifetime.

Without the Soul Suppressing Orb which cleansed his mind, his mind would forever possess a hole in its defenses—one which Song

Tingyu could always enter through, entering and exiting his mind to control his emotions as she pleased!

"Are you alright?" Tang Siqi walked to his side and looked at him with worry. "What did that woman do to you? You don't look too good..."

"Qin Lie, what did that Song Tingyu do?" Lian Rou asked.

Furrowing his brow, Qin Lie thought and then said, "She tried to enchant my mind, attempting to envelop it in her charm. However, it seems she didn't succeed and gave up. That's why she left."

What he did not know was that Song Tingyu had left because the Soul Suppressing Orb had instead reflected her influence. It inflicted a deep imprint of him onto her mind instead, so she had hurriedly retreated.

"That woman will not rest. She is an envoy from Profound Heaven Alliance and the only daughter of Song Yu. This time, she has left for an unknown reason, but she will come back to find us," Tong Jihua said heavily.

"We will deal with her when she returns. For now, let's just wait." Qin Lie looked at Tang Siqi. "Senior Sister Tang, are the Terminator Profound Bombs ready to be turned into spirit artifacts?"

“Yes!” Tang Siqi smiled and took out six fist-sized metal balls and then subsequently handed them to Qin Lie. “Check and see if there are any problems.”

Taking the six Terminator Profound Bombs, Qin Lie used his mind consciousness to feel them. He smiled slightly and nodded. “They are all very good. I can inscribe spirit diagrams directly inside. When the spirit diagrams are finished, then these Terminator Profound Bombs will be truly complete.”

“Haha, it is good that I can be of help to you,” Tang Siqi smiled happily.

She was smiling, but there was a thread of worry in her eyes for Qin Lie.

That Song Tingyu’s beauty was something that even she, a woman, sighed over. Song Tingyu was also skilled spirit arts of seduction, could cast a wondrous concept... She was worried that Qin Lie would not be able to withstand Song Tingyu’s charm.

Furthermore, she was afraid that Qin Lie would fall sooner or later, becoming Song Tingyu’s subject and that he would faithfully serve her.

This was something she did not want to see.

But she realized that she was powerless to stop it...

It took a great deal of time to forge the six Terminator Profound Bombs, but it did not take very long to inscribe spirit diagrams.

The wooden house Song Tingyu had stayed in was the one that Armament Sect had built specifically for Qin Lie. It was a building that belonged to him, the house of the sect master.

With the six Terminator Profound Bombs in hand, Qin Lie entered inside. He had the blood guards stand guard outside so that he could inscribe the spirit diagrams in peace.

After half a day, he finished inscribing spirit diagrams on the Terminator Profound Bombs. After a moment of thought, he called in Tang Siqi.

“You were looking for me?” Tang Siqi was wearing a long silk dress woven with flower patterns. She walked in with a smile and asked, “You have already inscribed all the spirit diagrams?”

“Mn.” Qin Lie handed one over. “Take a look and see if you can perceive the spirit diagrams inside with your mind consciousness. I added a secret sealing method on the outside in hopes that I can conceal the compound diagrams within.”

“That’s what you should do. What you use are ancient diagrams. If other people see this, it will only create trouble. Also, the Terminator Profound Bomb itself is a very serious matter. Anything about it should be kept as secret as possible...”

Taking a Terminator Profound Bomb from Qin Lie's hands, Tang Siqi gathered her mind consciousness to inspect its insides. She found there were layers of mist that covered the core like a curtain, resulting in her being completely unable to see anything!

She nodded and said, "You have done very well. I am unable to see the spirit diagrams inside. There shouldn't be a problem now."

"There is one other matter." After a moment of thought, Qin Lie said, "You and I worked on forging the Terminator Profound Bomb together. You should have a general understanding of the forging process. If there are still steps you do not understand, tell me and I will explain them for you. In the future, you will forge the Terminator Profound Bombs and I will just inscribe the spirit diagrams."

When these words were spoken, Tang Siqi's beautiful eyes lit up. "Senior Xue Li once said that... you shouldn't reveal anything about the Terminator Profound Bomb. It is best if you do everything yourself. Aren't you afraid that I will leak Terminator Profound Bomb's forging process?"

"I trust you," Qin Lie said seriously.

Tang Siqi's smile was bright as she said, completely pleased, "Alright, as long as you believe in me, I will do my best to forge Terminator Profound Bombs for you."

"Many thanks, Senior Sister Tang."

“It should be me thanking you for your trust in me.”

Over the next few days, Tang Siqi was responsible for forging the Terminator Profound Bombs. After she finished forging them, Qin Lie would then inscribe the spirit diagrams.

In the area of forging, Tang Siqi had great talent. After just a bit of guidance from Qin Lie, Tang Siqi didn’t have any problems when forging the Terminator Profound Bombs.

As a result, the forging of the Terminator Profound Bombs passed without incident

Qin Lie focused on his Frost Arts and adding spirit diagrams to the bombs. In a short six days, thirty five of them had been produced.

Everyone a part of Armament Sect was excited.

At the bottom of the Arctic Mountain Range.

Qin Lie sat on top of a glacier, his eyes closed, then turned to a statue of ice as he worked on cultivating the frost.

There was still one Natal Palace remaining.

Only after creating his ninth Natal Place would he truly be considered to have reached the peak of the Natal Opening Realm

and achieved the qualifications to rise to the Manifestation Realm.

After having recently participated in battles and comprehending more on inscribing spirit diagrams, he felt that it would not be difficult for him to break into the Manifestation Realm.

He needed to form the ninth Natal Palace!

Due to this, after thirty five Terminator Profound Bombs were made, he had Tang Siqi continue to use Armament Sect's spirit materials to continue forging the base for more Terminator Profound Bombs.

He took the opportunity to come to the bottom of Arctic Mountain Range, intending to use the cruel cold and the thick ice present to form his ninth Natal Palace.

He was in the state of Thoughtless Tranquility and almost completely lost himself. He only gathered the cold energy and funneled all the cold energy around him into his spirit sea.

Unknowingly, after he had stepped into the Arctic Mountain Range, a peerlessly handsome man from Eight Extreme Temple had come to the poisonous bog.

He was called Mo He.

Mo He quickly found where Armament Sect was, but he did not disturb the people there. Instead, he used a secret technique to

listen to the conversations between the people of Armament Sect.

He quickly learned that Qin Lie was not here but was cultivating in a deeper part of the poisonous bog, so he proceeded deeper into the bog. With his terrifying mind consciousness, he covered large portions of the bog, to carefully searching for Qin Lie.

But it was a pity that Qin Lie was at the bottom of Arctic Mountain Range.

He searched the poisonous bog for a long period of time and almost went through the majority of it, but he still could not find Qin Lie.

He found Song Tingyu instead...

In a remote corner of the poisonous bog, Song Tingyu was sitting crossed-legged on the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly. She was under the thick canopy of a few ancient trees and was still try to get rid of the imprint that Qin Lie had left behind on her mind.

Before this, she had never had a backlash, so it was the first time she encountered such a state. She had no experience in cleaning out Qin Lie's influence whatsoever, so she was simply slowly exploring.

When Mo He's powerful soul searching technique covered this area, she was instantly disturbed. The Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly she was on lightly flapped its wings in the air.

“Who is it?” Song Tingyu called quietly.

“The miss of the Song Family, Song Tingyu.” Mo He’s beautiful figure appeared, his feet not even touching the ground. He stopped under where Song Tingyu was. “Why are you in the poisonous bog?”

“Senior Mo He!” When Song Tingyu saw the incomer, she was shocked inside. Then, she smiled brightly. “If Senior Mo He can come to the poisonous bog, why can’t I? Senior, you have covered the area with a soul searching technique, who are you searching for?”

“I’m looking for Qin Lie.” Mo He was open and directly stated his intentions. “The Holy Master has sent out an order. He wants something from Qin Lie, so he has sent me.”

“What is senior supposed to take from Qin Lie?” Song Tingyu asked, her expression unchanging.

“His memory, spatial spirit artifact, and Terminator Profound Bomb,” Mo He smiled slightly.

“Then you want to take my fiancé’s life?” suddenly said Song Tingyu’s right after her eyes swirled.

Mo He’s expression changed. “Fiancé? When did he become your fiancé?”

“Not long ago.” Song Tingyu smiled and a thread of embarrassment appeared on her face. “Senior, will you kill my fiancé? Right now, the evil races of the Nether Realm are about to invade, yet you want to kill my fiancé. Are Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple still going to be allies?”

Chapter 249: Acting

Song Tingyu knew very well just how terrifying Mo He was. For Mo He to have stated his intentions so openly, he must have been very confident.

As one of the few gold robed envoys of Eight Extreme Sanctuary, it was already rather easy for Mo He to destroy Armament Sect. If he wanted to kill Qin Lie, extract Qin Lie's memories, and steal the spatial spirit artifact and the Terminator Profound Bomb, it would be a walk in the park.

From Song Tingyu's point of view, even that old demon called Xue Li was probably unable to stop Mo He. Moreover, based on the intel that she had received, that senior had already left Qin Lie and Armament Sect.

In that case, who was there to stop Mo He?

Even she did not have the strength to prevent Mo He from killing Qin Lie.

She could only lie and say that Qin Lie was her fiancé so that she could use Profound Heaven Alliance to force Mo He to retreat.

This was the only method she could think which would save Qin Lie's life.

"Your fiancé?" Mo He smiled coldly. "Song girl, do you think that

I am easy to fool? With your status in Profound Heaven Alliance, would you ever lower yourself to marry the sect master of a Black Iron force? Moreover, this boy is only in Natal Opening Realm, and probably isn't even as strong as your guards. With your pride, would you be attracted to him?"

"His cultivation is slightly weak but he has potential. I assume that you also know that Qin Lie has been able to comprehend a concept. Furthermore, his talent in the martial way is also not lacking. He was also able to cause changes in the twelve spirit pattern pillars which have stood in Armament Sect for nine hundred years, and his skill in artifact forging is even more extraordinary."

Song Tingyu's beautiful eyes moved as she said rationally, "Moreover, he has the Terminator Profound Bomb, and is able to order around an old demon of immeasurable power. He is also the sect master of Armament Sect. If Armament Sect can develop well, it may well become a Copper force..."

"Let me put it this way, this boy does indeed have endless potential, but in the end, potential is just potential. He cannot instantly cause any great change for Profound Heaven Alliance." Mo He shook his head and was still unwilling to believe it. "With your pride and intelligence, you wouldn't just be attracted to his potential. You must want to save this boy so that you can swallow everything that he has. I'm afraid I cannot allow this to happen."

"Why can't senior believe me?" Song Tingyu's eyes moved rapidly as a strange light flashed in her eyes. "To be honest, he is not actually someone from Scarlet Tide Continent. In fact, his

actual birth and background... is the real reason why my father has consented. Your Eight Extreme Temple must have also investigated his background. You do not know anything about him before he suddenly appeared in Ling Town."

"Your Profound Heaven Alliance knows?" Mo He's expression finally changed.

Before he had come, he had investigated Qin Lie using the channels available to Eight Extreme Temple.

He had detailedly gone over every single action that Qin Lie and Qin Shan had made ever since their appearance in Ling Town.

He had also guessed that Qin Lie's origins were not ordinary. Moreover, he speculated that Qin Shan, who had disappeared for a long time, was probably someone who had come to Ling Town from another continent—as for Xue Li, he believed that Xue Li was someone that Qin Shan had arranged to be by Qin Lie's side to protect him.

However, he did not care about this.

Because he was a gold robed envoy from Eight Extreme Temple, he had enough confidence in himself to face everything.

However, Song Tingyu's words had caused him to waver slightly. If Profound Heaven Alliance really knew Qin Lie's true identity and engaged Song Tingyu to Qin Lie because of his extraordinary

origins, wouldn't Profound Heaven Alliance retaliate if he killed Qin Lie now?

"Of course we know his background." Song Tingyu smiled mysteriously. "Otherwise, why would my father nod his head, why would I... agree? Oh, right, I'll also remind you of this as well. Your Eight Extreme Temple cannot afford to provoke what is behind him. I urge you to not make any trouble for Eight Extreme Temple. You can tell my words to the Holy Master. With how brilliant the Holy Master is, I believe he will definitely change his mind."

Mo He's brow creased deeply. He smiled at Song Tingyu for a while and then suddenly smiled faintly. "Then Eight Extreme Temple will be the first to congratulate Miss Song and Sect Master Qin's joyful event."

Finished, Mo He turned and disappeared in a plume of thick poisonous miasma.

After he left, Song Tingyu's smile did not decrease. Her eyes glowed with an extremely beautiful and moving rainbow light.

"You hope to hide and expose my lie. You hope to wait until I meet with Qin Lie and see me slip up... then you will immediately kill him. Did you think that I wouldn't know?" Song Tingyu quickly saw through Mo He's intentions, and then silently laughed on the inside. "I'm more skilled than anyone else at acting. You have wasted your efforts."

She knew that Mo He had hidden somewhere and had not given up on killing Qin Lie. She also knew that she could not stop Mo He from wanting to kill Qin Lie with just her words.

If Mo He saw that she and Qin Lie did not have a relationship, if he ever became certain that what she said was a lie, Mo He would not hesitate from attacking right in front of her to fulfill the order the Holy Master had given to kill Qin Lie.

Upon encountering Mo He and learning his intentions, Song Tingyu, who had been in a hurry to erase Qin Lie's imprint on her mind, stopped trying to do so.

Instead, she rode the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly back to Armament sect. Upon learning that Qin Lie was cultivating alone within the poisonous bog, she started to roam through the poisonous bog like Mo He in search of Qin Lie's traces.

Another five days passed.

Today, Song Tingyu was currently resting on the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly with her eyes closed. Suddenly, a tremor came from deep within her mind—that heart shaking imprint of Qin Lie in her mind.

An odd light surfaced in Song Tingyu's eyes as she thought, "You've finally appeared."

The Flowing Cloud Rainbow butterfly turned to a streak of

rainbow light and rapidly flew in one direction like a wondrous light of sunset.

At the same time, in a bog several thousands of meters away from Song Tingyu, a figure covered in blue light slowly rose out from within the bog.

It was none other than Gold Robed Envoy Mo He.

Mo He had been hiding near Song Tingyu. With his great cultivation level, he was able to avoid Song Tingyu's perception and prevent her from knowing of his presence.

Song Tingyu's guess was right. There was no way he would scrap his mission just based on Song Tingyu's words.

He had to see it with his own eyes. He had to be certain that there was an engagement between Song Tingyu and Qin Lie. He had to see the intimacy between the two before he would believe what Song Tingyu had said.

He also rushed in the direction of Song Tingyu moved.

In a deep part of the poisonous bog.

In the area surrounded by Thunderblitz Trees, Qin Lie's body released an icy light as his figure gradually appeared.

His body emanated with coldness, and an emotionless, glittering, and icy light flashed in his eyes.

Using the fierce cold energy of the icy world, he had successfully formed his ninth Natal Palace. He finally stepped onto the peak of Natal Opening Realm and reached the qualification needed to break into Manifestation Realm!

“I’ve waited here a long time for you.”

Song Tingyu’s soft voice suddenly sounded from a distance. The Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly came like a rainbow and flashed right in front of Qin Lie.

“Why did you cultivate for so long?”

Song Tingyu came off the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly and walked towards Qin Lie. Her eyes held great emotion, as well as a thread of anger.

—She was like a beautiful wife that had been waiting a long time for her husband.

Qin Lie stilled. In a daze, he seemed to go back into the illusion which Song Tingyu had cast. He began to see Song Tingyu as his wife again, one who had been waiting and longing for his return.

“Two days ago, Gold Robed Envoy Mo He of Eight Extreme Temple came. He doesn’t believe that we’re engaged and said he’ll

kill you...” Song Tingyu pouted and snorted. “If he dares to act against my fiancé, my Profound Heaven Alliance will kill him even if we have to ignore the invasion of the Nether Realm!”

She was like a wife who would defend her husband to the death.

Qin Lie looked deeply at her, light flashing through his eyes as he quickly understood.

“Does Eight Extreme Temple still not know about the invasion of the Nether Realm evil races yet? At this time, why do they still want to kill me? Do they really want Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple to become enemies right now?” Qin Lie’s expression was cold as he followed along and also complained. He then showed gentleness as he said, ‘Yu’er, I’ve made you wait for a long time. I just formed my ninth Natal Palace, so it took some time.””

“Yu-Yu’er...” Song TIngyu’s body suddenly froze.

Chapter 250: Snuggle

A trace of oddness appeared in Song Tingyu's eyes.

Other than her parents, no one else had ever dared to call her so intimately before. Even the uncles at Profound Heaven Alliance only called her "Tingyu".

It was obvious that the "Yu'er" coming from Qin Lie's mouth was meant to be frivolous. She should have gotten riled up and angry... but she wasn't.

It felt slightly weird at first, but she very quickly became accustomed to it and began to feel like there should be a man in this world who could call her this intimately.

And this man, was none other than Qin Lie...

"What terrifying influence!"

Song Tingyu snapped out of her reverie. She knew that the reason she felt like this was completely due to the mark of Qin Lie's figure which had been deeply imprinted within her heart.

When she was hit by the rebounding charm concept earlier, a charm seed had gushed into her mind. In such a short period of time, the charm seed had already unleashed a great amount of power.

Now, she finally began to understand why those men who had been charmed by her charm concept were forever enthralled by her. She began to realize why these men who had been implanted with charm seeds and deep imprints of her were so deeply in love with her, and why they could easily accept any unreasonable requests from her.

—She finally began to vaguely understand a little of those people's feelings.

As long as the charm seed was imprinted within one's heart, it would slowly flourish and grow stronger, gradually increasing its influence.

As time passed, the influence of this charm seed would only grow stronger and stronger, causing her view of Qin Lie to experience an immeasurable change. In the end she would become completely obsessed with Qin Lie and be unable to pull herself away. She would finally succumb completely to Qin Lie's charm.

"Oh, the ninth Natal Palace. So you're almost stepping into Manifestation Realm. That's great. However, your current realm is too weak, so you should really put more effort into cultivating." Song Tingyu quickly reacted as her beautiful eyes turned and a charming smile appeared on her peerless face.

She arrived beside Qin Lie and stared at the center surrounded by Thunderblitz Trees, saying most naturally, "Don't worry. If Eight Extreme Temple dares to harm you, my father will not let them off easy."

The closer she got to Qin Lie, the stranger Song Tingyu felt—she felt increasingly at ease.

It was as if she would feel very relaxed as long as she stood near to Qin Lie.

Qin Lie was like a huge magnet which was releasing a huge magnetic field, and she… was easily attracted over by him.

Indeed, she had taken the initiative and walked towards Qin Lie herself. She had approached him, and was now standing stood shoulder-to-shoulder with him. Their shoulders were only two fingers apart.

It was all because of the influence of the charm seed.

For the longest time, Song Tingyu had relied on the charm seed to make men submit to her. She had used it to force them to go through life and death and risk everything for her. Now that she had suffered the charm seed's backfire, she was finally experiencing the terror of the charm seed herself.

"Mo He. What cultivation realm is he in?" Qin Lie asked casually.

At this moment, Song Tingyu was only standing straight beside him. She was no longer releasing her charm concept, nor was she deliberately making any moves. However, he was still strongly impacted by her.

Being so close to her, he could smell the nice fragrance released from Song Tingyu body. It was an incredibly faint scent, yet it seemed to slip into the depths of one's soul, causing them to feel very comfortable and wanting to immerse themselves in it. It caused one to want to sniff a few more times and move closer to Song Tingyu... This was not the effects of the charm concept, but Song Tingyu's natural charm.

Scenting the nice aroma radiating from her body, Qin Lie turned around and glanced once at this terrific beauty who could make an emperor skip his court. He couldn't help but silently praise her beauty—this woman did indeed have the proud ability to make any man submit to her.

"Senior Mo He, you say..." Song Tingyu's beautiful eyes looked about once before glancing at a faraway swamp land and said respectfully, "He had just entered Fragmentation Realm not long ago and is one of the strongest martial practitioners in Eight Extreme Temple. Even that Senior Xue Li of yours may not necessarily be able to beat him."

"Fragmentation Realm!" Qin Lie was shocked.

Natal Opening Realm, Manifestation Realm, Netherpassage Realm, Fulfillment Realm and Fragmentation Realm. Each realm had thick barriers between them and a difference in power that was as wide as the sea itself.

If Song Tingyu had not come to his aid, if the backbone known as

Profound Heaven Alliance did not exist, how many people in the entire Scarlet Tide Continent could stop this Mo He from killing him?

Even the current Xue Li might not necessarily be able to stop Mo He since his strength hadn't recovered.

Not to mention that he wasn't here in the first place.

Qin Lie experienced a great shock in his heart. He already knew where Mo He was from Song Tingyu's gaze. Almost immediately he adjusted himself to the highest alert to deal with Mo He, the most terrifying danger at the moment.

"Yu'er, you have waited for long. Once I've forged a few more Terminator Profound Bombs in the future, I will accompany you to Profound Heaven Alliance and meet your father..." Under Mo He's tremendous pressure, Qin Lie focused his mind into high concentration and thought quickly. He let out a regretful look on his face and naturally hugged Song Tingyu's shoulders at his side, pulling her into his lap.

Song Tingyu's rather perfect bodice was obviously a bit stiff. It seemed that she was never treated this way by a man before. She was very uncomfortable with it.

Rays of rainbow light flowed inside her beautiful eyes until even her body was overflowing with many colorful lights. It was as if she was covered in rainbows and appeared shockingly beautiful.

She did not struggle nor push him away. Stiffly, she allowed Qin Lie to hug her shoulders and press her body tightly against Qin Lie...

She could feel Qin Lie's anxiety and hear the powerful beating of his heart. She could detect that Qin Lie was carefully facing everything under Mo He's great pressure, and a could feel a round icy artifact inside his left sleeve.

That was the Eye of Frost. The moment Mo He appeared and did a little of anything, Qin Lie would immediately borrow the Eye of Frost's power and slip beneath the Arctic Mountain Range immediately.

Qin Lie could not raise even the slightest thoughts of resistance against a monster of Fragmentation Realm. He knew that he was no different from the ants beneath his feet in Mo He's eyes. He could kill a huge group of him just by stomping carelessly.

At the center of the Thunderblitz Trees.

Qin Lie gently hugged Song Tingyu and pressed their bodies against each other. They had suddenly grown quiet.

Slowly, a wonderful atmosphere began to grow between the duo...

Mo He was hidden beneath the swamp of a swamp land. A blue light covered his body, preventing the swamp from dirtying him in

the slightest.

He had his eyes closed and used a mind consciousness that not even Song Tingyu could detect to lock down the duo's location. He could see every bit of their movements.

After a long time, he realized that Qin Lie and Song Tingyu were just hugging each other, seemingly enjoying this wonderful atmosphere that was even better when soundless. It seemed like they had no intentions of speaking any longer.

After waiting for a long time and seeing that the duo was still just hugging each other, Mo He exclaimed from the bottom of his heart, "This shitty little kid has quite the love affair…"

He did not plan to waste his time any longer. He had already believed Song Tingyu's explanation after he realized that they were hugging each other. He believed that there was an engagement between Song Tingyu and Qin Lie—he had seen it from her eyes.

He realized that when Song Tingyu was looking at Qin Lie, her eyes did let out a faint sense of love.

What he didn't know was that it was due to Song Tingyu suffering from the backfire of her charm concept which caused Qin Lie's figure to be implanted inside her heart. That was why she was affected unknowingly by the seed when she was together with Qin Lie.

Song Tingyu had purposely delayed the cleansing of the charm seed to deal and confuse him.

He fell for it. Therefore he quietly went away from beneath the swamp and slowly slipped away from this region.

Mo He left. But Qin Lie and Song Tingyu were still hugging each other, quietly enjoying the wonderful atmosphere...

They did not know when Mo He left.

Qin Lie felt as if every hair on his body had become stimulated from hugging a beauty that could fell entire countries. His blood felt like it was boiling, and he grew even more restless when scenting the faint aroma from her body.

He had never thought that there was a woman in this world who could have such a terrifying charm.

Even without unleashing her charm concept, Song Tingyu could entrance a man completely just by standing beside them, causing them to lose control—she was just born with such an amazing charm.

This was a natural talent, an amazing ability given to her by the gods. It was as if she was the spirit specifically created by the heavens to charm all man in this world, causing them all to willingly bow to her terrifying abyss of charm.

“A terrifying woman!” Qin Lie labeled her as such in his mind.

Song Tingyu’s feelings were completely different from his...

She did not feel uncomfortable when being hugged by Qin Lie other than the initial awkwardness.

In fact, after getting through the initial awkwardness, she actually felt extremely safe, feeling joyful and relaxed in both body and mind to be hugged by Qin Lie.

Before today, no one could give her such a feeling. No one.

Even though she knew that it was the influence of the charm seed, she still enjoyed it very much. She wanted very much to just stay in Qin Lie’s lap in this pose forever with Qin Lie...

It was as if there was something on Qin Lie that caused her to feel extremely comfortable. It was as if Qin Lie was a warm pond that she could relax every inch of her body and soak inside. She could forget all her troubles and be free of all worries when she was inside... she could obtain true peace of the mind.

After a very, very long time...

Song Tingyu grew more and more relaxed amidst the strange peace of mind. She was experiencing a wondrous feeling that she had never experienced in a lifetime.

Suddenly, a jade bracelet on her arm that was as white as the moon suddenly emanated with a strange energy. The energy was like a green light that slowly rippled in the air, spreading little by little towards the surrounding... almost as if it was sensing for something.

Song Tingyu gradually awakened and stared at her bracelet. She used her heart to sense the energy waves sent out by the bracelet.

—The energy that detected a soul's magnetic field.

After a while, she gently pushed Qin Lie away and opened some distance between him and her. With an odd tone she said, "Mo He is gone."

When she pushed Qin Lie away from her, she actually felt a faint disappointment inside her heart. She actually felt incredibly reluctant, and this caused Song Tingyu to feel a gradual sense of fear—the influence of the charm seed seemed to be growing stronger and stronger.

She was slightly afraid now.

Before she had cleaned away the charm seed completely, she would not dare to be together with Qin Lie any longer. She was afraid that she would succumb completely.

"Qin Lie, I will come look for you again." Song Tingyu stared at

him with complicated eyes and said, “Please consider the cooperation between Armament Sect and Profound Heaven Alliance seriously. If we do not appear to be working together at all, I’m afraid that Mo He will not let it go just like that.”

She turned around and jumped on the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly. Like a rainbow cloud she went away once again atop the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly.

Chapter 251: The Nether Demonic Energy Spreads

Song Tingyu stepped onto the Rainbow Butterfly, which then turned into a shining rainbow as it flew away.

However, her fragrance had remained...

Smelling her faint fragrance, Qin Lie actually felt a little reluctance in his heart as he looked in the direction in which she had flown away.

Her charm could indeed only be described as terrifying. As long as one was an ordinary man, then they would not be immune to the terrifying charm which emanated from her body.

Of course, Qin Lie was no exception.

“She only got close to me and said those things to force Mo He to leave...”

Qin Lie was not dumb. He knew very well what Song Tingyu was aiming for, and clearly understood why Song Tingyu wanted to defend his life. After all, Profound Heaven Alliance was after the same things Mo He was.

However, in comparison to Eight Extreme Temple’s method, Profound Heaven Alliance’s method wasn’t as extreme.

“The Terminator Profound Bomb. They have all come for the Terminator Profound Bomb!”

He frowned and recalled the words Song Tingyu had said before she left. Afterwards, Qin Lie sighed once and then gradually came to a decision.

—He was afraid that he could possibly have to make a trade with Song Tingyu for real and sell a portion of the Terminator Profound Bombs. Otherwise, Mo He would definitely not give up.

Only by demonstrating that Armament Sect and Profound Heaven Alliance were working together would he be able to cause Mo He to believe that he truly had an engagement with Song Tingyu, and that their acting today was real.

“My strength still isn’t enough…” Qin Lie looked helpless.

For the next few days, Qin Lie focused on inscribing the spirit diagrams of the Terminator Profound Bomb to swiftly increase Armament Sect’s strength.

Six days later, Qin Lie already had fifty three Terminator Profound Bombs!

However, all the spirit materials needed for forging the Terminator Profound Bomb had finally been completely exhausted. There was no longer enough spirit materials to forge

another Terminator Profound Bomb.

"Fifty three Terminator Profound Bombs should be enough for now." Luo Zhichang looked at the round metallic balls and appeared satisfied, "It is unfortunate that we didn't manage to carry out all of our spirit materials. Otherwise we could have forged even more Terminator Profound Bombs. This item is of the utmost importance for our sect which is lacking in strength."

"Mn, with this in our hands, even Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple will have to think again before harming us." Fang Qi smiled.

"Qin Lie, if this many Terminator Profound Bombs were to explode all at once at Profound Heaven Alliance or Eight Extreme Temple, could it possibly…?" Tang Siqi said in high spirits.

The moment she said this, everyone's eyes excitedly lit up.

"It should be enough to deal a severe blow to Profound Heaven Alliance or Eight Extreme Temple. However, it isn't enough to wipe either of them off the map completely." Jiang Hao shook his head and said, "A Copper rank force will have strange formations to protect the sect, and will also be covered in all kinds of barriers and restrictions. It will definitely not be so easy to wipe out an entire Copper rank force in one blow."

"Heh, Siqi is just kidding. Naturally, we can't act so recklessly." Luo Zhichang chuckled.

Qin Lie did not say anything and instead stared deeply at the three great reverends' eyes.

Suddenly, he grew cautious.

He could see great ambition and madness hidden within their eyes.

He suddenly realized that although the trio was able to maintain a peaceful outlook while Armament Sect was weak, if Armament Sect was strong enough one day; if enough Terminator Profound Bombs could be forged to the point that they could destroy Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple, they would definitely do so.

If that day came, these three would most probably ignite the Terminator Profound Bombs and cause Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple to vanish from Scarlet Tide Continent.

On one hand, it was due to how Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple had always been plotting against and trying to eliminate Armament Sect during these last few years. That was why they contained hatred inside their hearts.

On the other hand, if Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple were to be destroyed, then there would be no one left on Scarlet Tide Continent who would be able to control Armament Sect. Armament Sect would seize this momentum to rise to the top and replace Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple to become a Copper rank force. They would

possibly be able to lord over this land.

All men were ambitious and selfish. However, they would suppress their ambition when they weren't strong enough. But once their strength became enough, then their ambition would leap out into the open and begin to influence their actions.

"The forging methods for the Terminator Profound Bomb must not be learned by them. These three are not good people either." Qin Lie decided inwardly.

……

Armament City.

In just half a month, Armament City and Armament Sect had experienced a tremendous change. Thick layers of demonic clouds were now present in the sky above Armament City, blocking any sunlight from entering and casting Armament City into a gray world.

Dark, evil nether demonic energy permeated through the entirety of Armament City and Armament Sect, growing stronger with each passing day.

If one were to enter Armament City right now, they would discover a multitude of new strange plants in Armament City. These plants were bizarre and had thick horizontal growing roots and sharp thorns. They were just as fear-inducing as fangs.

These were all plants that were unique only to the Nether Realm that were tainted with nether demonic energy. These plants could contaminate the air and allow many nether beasts from the Nether Realm to move freely.

These ugly-looking plants were like a line of defense by themselves. They could unleash crazy and fearsome attacks towards any Scarlet Tide Continent martial practitioner.

Any living being which entered the current Armament Sect would be attacked by these plants if they did not have any nether demonic energy on them. They would be entangled to death.

There were also countless nameless nether beasts. Some were incredibly long, some were covered in thick gray brown scale armor, and some had all kinds of strange thorns on their body. They roamed within Armament City, looking for any signs of life.

Gao Yu had hid himself in an underground cellar at the corner of the now ruined city and was absorbing nether demonic energy every day for cultivation.

His body also released a thick evil aura, so the ugly plants and the nether beasts which roamed through the city treated him as a friend.

Gao Yu was the only human martial practitioner who was currently within Armament Sect. He was trying his best to absorb nether demonic energy to cultivate his Nine Hell Wandering Soul

Record.

Like a bottomless pond, the Ogre-faced Rings on his fingers were similarly absorbing a tremendous amount of nether demonic energy.

The interior of the Ogre-faced Rings gradually turned into a little world filled with nether energy and various strange environments filled with evil, madness, irritation, oppression, and the like.

The broken soul fragments of the Demon God's Shadow and the many shattered light spots of memory were like fish swimming inside the tiny world as they began to gradually gather together by the day.

It was as if an ancient demon god was gradually awakening and trying to reemerge on this land through Gao Yu.

Meanwhile, Gao Yu was also experiencing change as those memories recondensed and were absorbed into his soul.

His body began to release an incredibly evil aura. His already twisted personality also seemed to be headed towards an even greater extreme.

……

On top of some tall hills outside of Armament City stood a group of martial practitioners from Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight

Extreme Temple.

Among them were Song Siyuan, Xie Zhizhang, and Zhan Tianyi. They were all looking at the former Armament City from afar.

Numerous spirit beasts and spirit birds knelt behind these people. Many of them were clad in heavy armor, and all of them released auras which were as fierce as the sea and hell. A ruthless light flickered in their eyes as they all stared at Armament City from behind Song Siyuan and Zhan Tianyi.

They were the true elites of Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple.

From their position, all they could see were vague shadows as Armament City had been enveloped within the nether demonic energy. They could only see blurry gray darkness and were completely unable to look into the situation within Armament City.

Even their soul consciousness felt as if it had sank into thick mud when they used it to probe closer to Armament City. Their wisps of consciousness seemed to become entangled by some kind of evil energy, and thus became unable to function.

“The evil races of the Nether Realm are preparing to gradually devour the Scarlet Tide Continent. They plan to root themselves at Armament Sect and slowly corrode the land around them with Demon Armor Insects and Spirit Corroding Beasts.” Song Siyuan’s expression was solemn as he said seriously, “They are planning for

the long con. They want to gradually turn Scarlet Tide Continent into the Nether Battlefield!”

The moment he said this, everyone’s expressions became horrified as traces of extreme worry emerged on all of their faces.

“Brother Zhan, why haven’t you transported the goods over yet?” Xie Zhizhang asked somewhat impatiently.

“There has been a change at Nether Battlefield. The evil races of the Nether Realm at that place have also suddenly turned crazy. They are probably coordinating with the forces here to buy as much time as possible for these forces to convert this land so that the evil races on this side can invade through here first.” Zhan Tianyi explained.

Hearing his words, the group’s expression grew more and more serious, “You’re saying that the goods cannot be sent over in a short time?” Song Siyuan frowned.

“We really need more time.” Zhan Tianyi answered.

“Time. The Nether Realm’s evil races are also fighting for time!” Song Siyuan’s expression was incredibly heavy, “We all know that once the veins of the earth have changed, once this land had turned into another Nether Battlefield, it will be very difficult to change it back again. When that happens, the high rank experts of Nether Realm’s evil races could all step into Scarlet Tide Continent without any worries whatsoever!”

“We do not have a better way.” Zhan Tianyi’s expression looked helpless.

“What about Armament Sect’s Terminator Profound Bombs? If we are able to procure enough of them and mass explode them over there right now, we should be able to stall the enemies’ progress ,” Xie Zhizhang suddenly said.

“The Terminator Profound Bomb!”

Everyone’s eyes suddenly lit up as they realized that this was a possible plan.

“Let’s go! Together, we will go around the city and enter the poisonous bog to meet Armament Sect’s new sect master, Qin Lie!” Song Siyuan exclaimed softly.

“That girl Tingyu should be at Armament Sect already.” Xie Zhizhang said.

“Then the matter should be resolved then. With her present, there is nothing that can’t be done.” Song Siyuan smiled with a relaxed expression.

He was filled with confidence towards Song Tingyu. He knew that Song Tingyu had never failed, and he was sure that an insignificant Qin Lie would never be able to resist against Song Tingyu’s terrifying charm.

He glanced at Xie Zhizhang and suddenly smiled, saying, “If only Jingxuan was just as capable as Tingyu in this aspect, then Armament Sect would not have caused us so much trouble. Qin Lie would not have pulled out the spirit pattern pillars and opened the evil nether passageway. This Qin Lie, and perhaps Armament Sect itself, could have become the Xie Family’s loyal servant and be working tirelessly for the Xie Family.”

Xie Zhizhang’s expression was a little ugly as he humphed once and said, “I don’t think it will be that easy.”

“Hehe, naturally this won’t be easy for Jingxuan, but for Tingyu, this is not a challenge.” Song Siyuan smiled.

Chapter 252: Negotiation

“Qin Lie, although the evil races of the Nether Realm are officially invading now, we will not be getting involved for a short while. Both Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple did not appear to have any thoughts of acting against us at the moment, and all of the Terminator Profound Bombs had been forged successfully as well.”

Chief Reverend Luo Zhichang pondered for a moment before saying, “The sect should not be facing any danger anytime soon. Maybe… it’s time to consider unfreezing Xingran and see if his life can be saved?”

Before the great war, Xue Li had inspected Ying Xingran’s injuries and told Qin Lie that he could still be saved.

After acquiring Ying Xingran and the three great reverends’ agreement, Xue Li had injected a wisp of thick blood energy to maintain the strength of Ying Xingran’s life magnetic field. Then Qin Lie took over and froze Ying Xingran into an ice sculpture to delay dispersal of his soul.

At the time Xue Li had said it very clearly; as long as he had time and the materials were prepared, he would be able to save Ying Xingran.

Now that Armament Sect had gained a valuable period of time, the three great reverends thought of Ying Xingran’s matter and so asked for Qin Lie’s opinion.

Under their hopeful gazes, Qin Lie smiled bitterly, “You’ve all seen Senior Xue Li leave. If he isn’t around, who else can I find to save the sect master?”

“Why did Senior Xue Li had to leave?” Second Reverend Fang Qi asked.

Qin Lie shook his head, “I don’t know.”

“Then Xingran…” Jiang Hao sighed deeply.

“Let me think of a way.” After pondering for a moment, Qin Lie returned to his personal small wooden house, closed the door and focused his mind consciousness into the Soul Suppressing Orb, contacting other half of Xue Li’s soul.

“Kid, don’t disturb me whenever you’re free! I have a lot of things to do as of late. I’m in a hurry right now!” Xue Li’s other half of the soul answered.

No matter how far apart they were, anywhere or anytime, both of Xue Li’s souls were connected to each other. Whatever his original body was doing could be felt by this half of the soul as well.

Qin Lie could hear frustration from Xue Li’s tone. It would seem that whatever Xue Li was doing wasn’t going too well.

He didn't know that Xue Li had passed down the secret cultivation arts of Blood Fiend Sect to Lang Xie before he left—just in case.

That was to say, Xue Li might very well be killed during this journey.

"Congratulations, Senior. Judging from the energy of your soul, you are recovering swiftly." Qin Lie said with discretion with his mind, "However, I do have something I need to ask you. My sect master's mind and soul were damaged, and you once said that you have a way to treat it. What is it?"

"The method's very simple. I will forcefully extract a martial practitioner's mind and soul before sealing and forming it into a state that suits him. Then I'll teach him a secret art that will allow him to absorb that mind and soul's powerful soul magnetic field to restore his soul's injuries. Then he will be able to recover swiftly."

Xue Li explained briefly before saying, "But I have to be there to do it. But since I'm not, that method wouldn't work. So just keep that sect master of yours frozen. If I come back alive, then I'll be able to help him recover anytime."

"Where did you go, senior? With your level of cultivation, there is actually a threat to your life?" Qin Lie was surprised.

"Hmph! How narrow-minded!" Xue Li replied, "The world outside is so wide that you'll only understand it after you have seen it yourself. If I screw up during my trip my soul will be completely

destroyed, so you'd best not rely on me."

"Your soul will be destroyed..."

Qin Lie sat in the wooden house with a shocked look on his face. After a long while, he suddenly said, "Senior Xue Li, if you can return at this moment and help save my sect master, I can release the other half of your soul. How is it?"

Xue Li had helped him kill Blood Shadow, Yuan Tianya and Liang Yangzu and resolved the first wave of his crisis.

After that, Xue Li had trapped Xie Zhizhang, causing his second wave of attack to fail and stopped Song Siyuan, Xie Zhizhang and Zhan Tianyi from interfering with the fight as well... In truth, Xue Li had helped him quite a bit.

Now, with the opening of the evil nether passageway, Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple completely abandoned the thought of exterminating Armament Sect.

Armament Sect's crisis was resolved temporarily. There was actually not much use to trapping Xue Li's other half of the soul any longer. Basing off the fact that Xue Li had helped him quite a number of times, the thought of freeing Xue Li came to his mind.

"Don't! You must not take out the other half of my soul!" Surprisingly, the moment Xue Li heard that Qin Lie was going to release the other half of his soul he turned shocked instead of

joyful, “You mustn’t! My soul had recently examined closely the interior of this orb and discovered that, although this orb is shackling me, it is also a kind of protection at the same time. Moreover, there is another use to this orb... it has a pulling effect on the other half of my soul.”

Qin Lie was confused, “What does that mean?”

“It means that there is a high chance that I will die in this journey, and if I‘m not completely dead yet, I can slip out of my mortal body and possibly borrow this orb’s function to pull my faraway soul directly into it. Therefore, even if my mortal body is eliminated, my two souls would still join as one inside this orb.”

Xue Li explained to him in detail, “Even in the worst case scenario where both my body and soul that had left Scarlet Tide Continent were eliminated, I still have half a soul inside this orb. As long as my soul imprint isn’t completely eliminated, I may be able to come back in the future. Thus, you must not release this half of my soul no matter what!”

“So, you’re begging for me to imprison you right now?” Qin Lie said in a strange tone.

“Guess so. What can I say, your orb is a little special, and there’s a high chance that I may perish on this journey. I have to cover every base, so I’ll be borrowing your orb and stay inside it for a while; leaving an escape route for myself.” Xue Li said.

“You can’t just use me for free, can you senior?” Qin Lie suddenly

said.

Xue Li snorted coldly before thinking for a moment. He said, “Kid, tell me the latest news on your side and I’ll help you sort things out. Let’s see if I can give you some suggestions and resolve some of your troubles. Just take this as a payment for borrowing your orb...”

“Now that’s what I’m talking about.” Qin Lie was waiting exactly for these words. Once he had expressed his attitude, Qin Lie immediately told him the recent changes about the evil races of Nether Realm taking root at Armament Sect to nibble at Scarlet Tide Continent little by little; about Armament Sect, Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple’s current relationship, and about Armament Sect’s somewhat difficult situation right now.

After he had explained everything, Xue Li thought for a moment before saying, “I have several suggestions to give you.”

“This junior is listening closely.” Qin Lie’s expression straightened.

“First, you must befriend at least one force, be it Profound Heaven Alliance or Eight Extreme Temple. You must be acknowledged by at least one of them. Of course, if you can have them both be satisfied and relaxed around your Armament Sect then that will be best.”

“Yes, I understand your meaning, senior.”

“Because I left, both of these forces now have the power to eliminate Armament Sect at any moment. After acquiring one force’s acknowledgement, the other force will find it inconvenient to harm you. You will be safe for a short period of time.”

“What then?”

“Then have Lang Xie develop his powers and improve his strength as soon as possible. While Nether Realm is invading, and Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple are focusing all their thoughts on dealing with the evil races, Armament Sect must swiftly utilize this timing to develop themselves. You must remember that the moment the threat from the Nether Realm is resolved will be the moment when Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple attack you again—unless you have already accumulated enough power that they dare not act carelessly.”

“Thank you for your advice. What other suggestions do you have?”

“Your own strength is too weak. You must continuously improve yourself, and it will be best if you can enter the Netherpassage Realm. Only by entering the Netherpassage Realm and possessing a powerful enough soul would you be able to truly wield the twelve spirit pattern pillars. Only then you can rely on the formation formed from the twelve spirit pattern pillars to have the right to speak when facing against two Copper rank forces.”

“Of course, if you can forge a higher ranking Terminator

Profound Bomb; one that can completely blast both Copper forces into smithereens in an instant... then you can do whatever you want on Scarlet Tide Continent. No one can stop your footsteps, and noone would dare interfere with your matters."

"In the end it comes down to the fact that Armament Sect's strength is still insufficient and my cultivation being too weak. That's why I have to borrow strength against strength; borrow the timing of Nether Realm's invasion to accumulate as much power as possible, develop the sect and improve myself... is that right?"

"Not bad. I guess you aren't too stupid. Oh, right, if you want to save your sect master, you can ask the two Copper forces to think of a way. A force of that rank should have a method to repair one's psyche."

"Thank you for your teachings, senior."

"Hmph, just take it as rent for living inside your orb."

Qin Lie cut off the communication between him and Xue Li.

He began to exert great effort into cultivating in accordance to Xue Li's advice. He first had to improve himself.

Two days later, the trio Xie Zhizhang, Song Siyuan and Zhan Tianyi arrived together at the poisonous bog where Armament Sect was at and informed that they wanted to meet him.

And so Qin Lie came out to negotiate.

“Do you still have the item named Terminator Profound Bomb?” Song Siyuan said openly.

“I have just forged some.” Qin Lie answered.

Joy appeared in Song Siyuan’s eyes as he said, “Great! We, Profound Heaven Alliance, can buy according to the price Tingyu had set. Oh, right, Tingyu had come earlier, right?”

“She had.” Qin Lie smiled and said, “The Terminator Profound Bomb can be sold, but I do not want to exchange for Earth Grade spirit stones. Instead, I’d like to ask Profound Heaven Alliance a favor.”

“Do tell.”

“My sect’s sect master injured his psyche when he was forging artifacts years back. I hope that Profound Heaven Alliance can help cure him.”

“His psyche? No problem. I can represent Profound Heaven Alliance and guarantee that Sect Master Ying will recover fully.”

“One more thing. The ignition of the Terminator Profound Bombs must be done by me. Of course, those who are well-versed with the secrets of lightning and have a certain level of knowledge about the Terminator Profound Bombs can do this as well.”

“You can do it!” Song Siyuan said seriously, “I need you to go up to the skies of Armament City and throw the Terminator Profound Bombs to blast the entire city. The best direction to throw them would be where Armament Sect was formerly, starting from the former location of the twelve spirit pattern pillars!”

“I don’t have a problem with that, but how do we get there?” Qin Lie frowned.

“Let me bring you over, okay?” Song Tingyu’s pleasant and melting voice came from inside a faraway dark green miasma.

Qin Lie was surprised for a moment before he answered immediately, “Sure.”

“Heh, then it’s decided. I will bring you over.” Song Tingyu smiled slightly.

The beautiful figure of the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly suddenly flew out of the green poisonous miasma and flew towards Qin Lie’s side.

Chapter 253: Hand In Hand

Qin Lie and Song Tingyu stood shoulder-to-shoulder on top of the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly's colorful back.

The back of the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly was incredibly smooth. There were many colorful and beautiful patterns on it, and it even let out a rainbow-like luster.

Song Tingyu, who was dressed in colorful clothes was covered by these shining patterns and appeared to be unbelievably beautiful. Her seductive and soul-snatching eyes brimmed with a gentle light that could melt even a man with a heart of stone...

Qin Lie stood together with her and watched the poisonous bog growing smaller and smaller below them; watched Flame Volcano getting closer and closer. His expression couldn't help but turn serious.

They would head to the sky over the former Armament Sect and throw down Terminator Profound Bombs. They would use the Terminator Profound Bombs to cause mass slaughter of the Nether Realm's evil races.

Qin Lie had never dealt with the evil race of the Nether Realm, nor had he ever seen a single evil race before. He had only seen a few nether beasts from the Nether Realm—the Ghost Bird and Profound Nether Beast.

According to Xie Jingxuan's words, the Ghost Birds and Profound

Nether Beasts were not even pure Nether Beasts from the Nether Realm. They were new nether beasts that were bred by the evil races to adapt to the environment of the Nether Battlefield.

Supposedly, these types of nether beasts were not as strong as pure Nether Beasts from the Nether Realm.

The Soul Devouring Beast was a purebred of the Nether Realm. Once it had escaped from Nether Battlefield, it completely terrified Scarlet Tide Continent.

“The nether beast’s adaptability is slight stronger compared to the evil races of the Nether Realm. Therefore, there should be more nether beasts passing through the evil nether passageway during the invasion’s early stage.” Song Tingyu explained, “Even with the nether beasts’ adaptability, they would normally not dare to move during the day. They fear the sun’s strong light.”

It was high noon at that moment. It was the sun’s strongest time of the day.

“Back then, Miss Xie Jingxuan and I had killed a Soul Devouring Beast at a natural stone forest. Why could that Soul Devouring Beast operate outside and without depending on its unique environment?” Qin Lie asked doubtfully.

“Xie Jingxuan... Hehe, you know her?” Song Tingyu smiled and asked with some interest.

“Mn, you can say that. I aided her in killing a Soul Devouring Beast before.” Qin Lie explained the matters briefly.

Song Tingyu listened to him with a smile and did not express any opinion about him and Xie Jingxuan. Instead, she said, “Among the nether beasts of Nether Realm, that Soul Devouring Beast could be said to be a ferocious beast that is extremely special and dangerous. Its strength lies in its ability to consume souls. Therefore, a Soul Devouring Beast’s strength also comes from its soul. It can ignore the restrictions of the environment and live even in a foreign world.”

Qin Lie listened attentively.

“Not all nether beasts can acquire strength from souls like the Soul Devouring Beast,” Song Tingyu explained seriously. “Most nether beasts need nether demonic energy to survive. Nether demonic energy is the source of their strength as well as their tether to life. Just like we need to breathe air, most nether beasts need to breathe nether demonic energy. Of course there are some exceptions to the rule, like the Soul Devouring Beast, but they are very rare.”

“Are the evil races of Nether Realm also like the nether beasts; needing to breathe nether demonic energy to live?” Qin Lie asked.

“Most of them are. Only some high rank evil races can live without breathing in nether demonic energy for a short time. These powerful evil races are extremely scary, but their numbers are few as well. Before the situation becomes clear, they should not come over easily.” While flying towards Armament City, Song

Tingyu explained her knowledge about the evil races of Nether Realm in great detail.

Qin Lie achieved a certain level of comprehension about the Nether Realm, nether beasts and those evil races after her explanation.

Dusky nether demonic energy surrounded Flame Volcano and Armament City like black smoke.

When they arrived at the back of Flame Volcano on the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly, an oppressive atmosphere slowly pressed over, causing them to feel uncomfortable all over.

A portion of thin nether demonic energy had already spread to this area. It made the air become dark and wet. Even sniffing it would cause someone's heart to feel dull and depressed...

Qin Lie's expression changed slightly.

He hadn't expected nether demonic energy to spread so quickly. In just half a month, the nether demonic energy had already spread to the back of Flame Volcano.

At its current speed, it wouldn't be long before it would spread to the poisonous bog and covered Armament Sect's new location, would it?

"Starting to get worried for Armament Sect?" Song Tingyu's

attractive eyes shone with the light of wisdom. She saw through Qin Lie's mind instantly.

Qin Lide nodded darkly.

"Relax. For a short time, nether demonic energy will not continue to spread to the poisonous bog."

"You're saying that they won't spread the nether demonic energy to the poisonous bog?" Qin Lie's eyes lit up.

"If they are not stupid, they would not do something so arduous and fruitless. They would definitely spread nether demonic energy somewhere else." Song Tingyu brought up the topic of the evil race's intelligence, and deep worry appeared on her exquisite face, "The Nether Realm's evil races are not wild beasts. They too have astounding intelligence, and there are also high rank races. Moreover, those powerful evil races are all insidious, vicious and cunning. None of them are easy pickings!"

"Are they very powerful?" Qin Lie frowned.

"They're incredibly hard to deal with." Song Tingyu sighed for the first time.

While the two of them spoke, they gradually entered an area where nether demonic energy was thick.

Every part of Qin Lie's body screamed in discomfort. His chest

felt heavier there. He could not help but think evil thoughts in his mind, and he felt as if his soul was being gradually polluted.

"In this environment, even good men will turn into devils!" He suddenly exclaimed.

"That's why you must use spirit energy to form shields of light to prevent nether demonic energy from affecting you, just like this." Song Tingyu smiled casually.

A beautiful shield that looked like a rainbow wrapped around her perfectly curved body. Black smoke sizzled on the shield, preventing the Nether Demonic Energy from entering and protecting her completely from its influence.

Qin Lie was dumbfounded for a moment before he nodded and channeled his Frost Arts as well.

Cold streams of energy flowed over his entire body. A thin layer of crystalline ice then covered his entire body.

Inside the icy crystal, Qin Lie immediately felt his mind returning to normal, no longer affected by nether demonic energy's influence.

"If an evil race of the Nether Realm detaches itself from this area filled with nether demonic energy and enters a place filled with this world's spirit energy, they would have to form a shield with nether demonic energy to defend against the influence of the

natural spirit energy as well." Song Tingyu smiled lightly, "Moreover, they would only be able to come out at night. If they were exposed to the sun in broad daylight, they would feel intense pain and become extremely weak."

"No wonder they are converting the land little by little, steadily spreading the nether demonic energy to the horizon. It's because they're suffering from this restriction." Qin Lie realized.

"Of course. If they're fighting on Scarlet Tide Continent then naturally they'll have to endure all kinds of limitations. If we enter the Nether Realm, we will feel incredibly uncomfortable, just like they do here. We may even be overcome by nether demonic energy in the end and become extremely weak..."

The duo flew through the dark skies covered by nether demonic energy and slowly approached the location where Flame Volcano once was. Beneath the dark sky, they discovered that Flame Volcano had collapsed and was split into several huge parts.

There were many black caves within the shattered mountain. Among them were caves that were filled with incredibly thick nether demonic energy, emanating shockingly evil energy.

The plaza where the spirit pattern pillars once stood was torn into twelve huge, bottomless pits that seemed to merge together to form an extremely wide hole.

Twisted spatial energy and shocking howls came from the huge hole as if there were vicious beasts rushing over from that place.

The six huge pits blasted apart by the six Terminator Profound Bombs were now filled with all kinds of gray, tainted water. Demonic insects that were appearing constantly from the tainted water, apparently using the tainted water to reproduce. If one watched them closely, they would realize that those insects were Demon Armor Insects—the strange insects from the Nether Realm which specifically produced nether demonic energy.

Looking towards Armament City from there, one would discover that all kinds of ugly plants had filled the city's interior. These plants were several people tall with strange thorns emerging from its trunk. Their appearances were extremely scary.

The ugly plants of the Nether Realm had covered Armament City entirely. There were many nether beasts from the Nether Realm that moved about the city, crouching beside the terrifying plants as if quietly awaiting something.

After only a moment's look, Qin Lie knew that Armament Sect's inner sect, outer sect, and Armament City were gone forever. They had all been swiftly changed by the Nether Realm—transformed into a demonic land that suited their needs.

"There should be a few members of the Nether Realm's evil races who have taken up residence in the caves at Flame Volcano. At the moment, they should be cultivating or hiding themselves to discuss something." Song Tingyu looked towards the collapsed Flame Volcano and the many caves that were not destroyed by the quake. "The Terminator Profound Bombs would be most effective if used on Flame Volcano. Killing any of the highly intelligent evil

races would be more profitable than the nether beasts!”

“Can we destroy the evil nether passageway with the Terminator Profound Bombs directly?” Qin Lie exclaimed softly.

“Don’t!” Song Tingyu hurriedly scattered his delusions, “Unless we enter deep into the evil nether passageway and detonate the Terminator Profound Bombs from the inside, we will not be able to block the evil nether passageway. It is more likely that an explosion at the entrance would cause the passage entrance and the passage itself to grow even wider, allowing the evil race to enter even easier than before... it will only bring the opposite effect.”

Qin Lie thought carefully for a moment and knew that what Song Tingyu had said was right. Therefore he nodded and said, “Then let’s have this butterfly fly above Flame Volcano. We need to be a little closer so that my connection with the Terminator Profound Bombs won’t be cut off.”

“Alright. We have to be careful.” Song Tingyu exhaled softly.

Chapter 254: Falling Into The Nether Realm

The Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly's flying speed was clearly affected in the area covered by nether demonic energy. Under Song Tingyu's orders, the butterfly's lithe movements were no longer as graceful and free as before.

At the moment, the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly was above the holes where the twelve spirit pattern pillars once stood.

Just as it was about to fly back towards Flame Volcano, a loud, shrill howl suddenly came from inside the evil nether passageway.

That howl contained an extremely murderous desire. It was as if the most vicious nether beast was swiftly passing through the evil nether passageway.

At the same time, a terrifying force field was abruptly unleashed from the mouth of the passageway.

Gravity instantly increased by a hundred times!

"Whoooooosh!"

Qin Lie and Song Tingyu instantly felt that it was difficult to breathe. They suddenly felt as if an iron mountain had pressed down on their bodies. They could not help but fall towards the evil nether passageway.

Qin Lie and Song Tingyu's expressions abruptly changed as a tinge of fear flashed through their eyes. They immediately panicked.

"Flap! Flap!"

The Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly was also affected as it flapped its wings intensely, attempting to carry Song Tingyu and Qin Lie away from this place.

However, the terrifying gravity field coming from beneath the evil nether passageway was like a giant magnet pulling at it, stopping it from escaping.

"Awroooh!"

An angry howl mixed with madness and evil came from inside the evil nether passageway. The howl shook the earth and a terrifying energy poured towards them like a tidal wave.

The nether beasts roaming around Armament City grew excited, howling and roaring in response when they heard it.

"Not good!"

Song Tingyu's exquisite face was now completely filled with fear. She cried out, "Reverse gravity field! It's a reverse gravity field!"

Qin Lie looked at her in shock.

“Under the influence of the reverse gravity field, the Nether Realm will generate a terrifying attraction force that pulls at all life forms with spirit energy! In contrast, the evil race of the Nether Realm would also be pulled by the reverse gravity field and our attraction force, bringing it in our direction with all of the field’s power!” Song Tingyu exclaimed, “It must be a high ranking evil race. Since their power is too strong and they were afraid that the evil nether passageway would not be able to withstand it, it activated the reverse gravity field to use the powerful attraction force formed at our place to help it escape Nether Realm and appear on Scarlet Tide Continent! This is bad!”

Qin Lie did not immediately understand.

Song Tingyu did not have time to explain either. Instead, she made a snap decision and said, “Qin Lie, use all of your power to protect yourself!”

Qin Lie said nothing and immediately activated all nine Natal palaces; covering himself in lightning, frost, and geocentric magnetism. He formed three layers of defense on his body’s surface.

Then, Song Tingyu said something that shocked him to the core.

“There’s no other choice. Let’s go, we will descend to Nether Realm!” Song Tingyu grasped his hand and jumped down from the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly with a resolute look.

Without the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly's body supporting them, they were pulled by the powerful attraction of the reverse gravity field and fell straight down the evil nether passageway.

Before they entered the passageway, Qin Lie could hear the sad cries of the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly. Then, he saw countless lightning-like passing meteors streaking ten thousand miles past him in an instant.

A tinge of terror towards this twisted time and space was born in his heart.

He knew that he was falling at an unimaginable speed towards the other end of the evil nether passageway—Nether Realm!

Inside this strange passageway filled with flashing lightning and criss-crossing lights, he could occasionally catch a glimpse of the blurry figures of ferocious beasts and evil races. Their direction was opposite to Qin Lie's descent, flying up towards Scarlet Tide Continent!

When the vicious beasts passed him, he could even smell a terrible stench and feel dark and evil intent.

"Awroooh!"

Almost shattering the evil nether passageway itself, a brutal roar came from beneath him.

Before long, a humongous creature comparable to the ancient beasts beneath the Arctic Mountain Range passed by him and flew towards Scarlet Tide Continent like a blurry mountain.

He could barely make out a person from a humanoid evil race standing on that giant creature. They moved too quickly, however, so Qin Lie could see neither the shape of the nether beast nor the appearance of the person riding it.

He could only feel a thick evil life energy that could smother the entire world.

This life energy could summon all the evil in his heart and cause him to instantly fall into the abyss of evil, never to return.

While inside the evil nether passageway filled with streaking lights, Song Tingyu and Qin Lie held each other's hands and fell towards the motherland of the evil races—Nether Realm.

He gradually became numb to the blurs of vicious beasts that streaked past him. He simply squeezed Song Tingyu's hand tightly.

He could feel warmth and peace from this jade-like hand...

The length of their fall was unexpectedly long. He thought it would be over in an instant but, contrary to his expectations, the falling did not stop.

“...Nether Realm, Nether Realm. Will we find any hope of survival entering the homeland of the evil races?” He smiled bitterly on the inside and felt despair and weakness grow within his heart.

Time passed.

After an indescribably long period of falling, a powerful uplifting force suddenly came from beneath him, causing his descent to greatly slow.

Then Qin Lie smelled an extremely pungent stench. It was the smell of a beast, an unbelievably thick smell.

“We’re here!”

Song Tingyu exclaimed as two rainbow wings suddenly appeared from beneath her arms. The two wings were the same as the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly’s wings, shining with colorful light.

Her falling figure swiftly came to a stop due to the appearance of the rainbow wings.

She stopped in midair!

Qin Lie and her held each other’s hands and stopped steadily in midair in a dark world.

This was an evil world with a sky that was forever grey without a single celestial body to be found.

Across the horizon, endless mountain ranges and vast forests could be seen. The plants that grew there were just like the ones they had seen at Armament City; they were ugly and filled with thorns, resembling claws that possessed an inherent evil.

Nether demonic energy filled this land. An extremely oppressive atmosphere covered the entire world!

The Nether Realm, which lacked day and night, was icy cold. The ugly plants covered the entire landscape and the whole world was filled with a twisted and evil life force.

“Hrm! Hrm!”

The sounds of animalistic breathing came from beneath their feet.

When the duo looked down they color drained from their faces. Great shock and fear appeared inside their eyes.

There were countless nether beasts, Spirit Corroding Beasts, Demon Armor Insects, Nether Giant Tail Lizards, Soul Devouring Beasts, even Bloodthirsty Blade Demons and all kinds of other nether beasts!

There were beasts as far as the eye could see. They were all gathered here, waiting for the time they would enter the evil nether passageway—waiting for the time to rush into Scarlet Tide Continent!

There were many people of the evil races of the Nether Realm sitting on top of those high rank Nether Giant Tail Lizards, Soul Devouring Beasts and Bloodthirsty Blade Demons. These people were at least two meters tall. Their wrinkled, grey skin looked as ugly as a toad's. Their faces were unspeakably savage.

They wore bestial armor and stood atop nether beasts. A lizard-like tail extended from their lower backs and their necks were covered with thin, tight scales.

There were also strange, curved horns growing from the back of their necks. Some had more than one horn, lined one by one along their spine as if they had mountains sprouting from their backs.

"Horned Demon Race! This is the Nether Realm's Horned Demon Race!" Song Tingyu cried out!

"Awoo!"

All the nether beasts and evil races of the Nether Realm were looking toward her and Qin Lie from below. The nether beasts let out earthshaking roars.

"The evil nether passageway is above us?" Qin Lie looked up and

could not help but cry out.

A huge, black whirlpool was spinning in the air above their heads. Its rapid rotation constantly let out a terrifying attraction force—one that was aimed only at the nether beasts and evil races.

Once the whirlpool moved directly above the nether beasts and evil races, the suction force at the heart of the whirlpool would swallow them, pulling them deep into the evil nether passageway and straight to Scarlet Tide Continent.

“Let’s go!” Song Tingyu appeared shocked. “Hold on tight, we are leaving this place immediately! These nether beasts and people of the Horned Demon Race are gathered here in order to enter our Scarlet Tide Continent! Let’s go quickly!”

The rainbow wings beneath her arms began to flap rapidly as she hurriedly led Qin Lie towards the forest in the distance. She wanted to escape the location of the evil nether passageway as soon as possible.

A horde of nether beasts and many elites of the Horned Demon Race had gathered here. She didn’t wish to stay for even a moment longer!

Chapter 255: Blast Out A Bloody Route!

Underneath the dark sky, the densely packed nether beasts howled as many experts of the Horned Demon race pointed at Qin Lie and Song Tingyu, seemingly yelling something in the language of Nether Realm.

Song Tingyu grabbed Qin Lie tightly as the rainbow wings beneath her arms flapped swiftly towards a faraway forest.

“Whoosh whoosh whoosh! Thump thump thump!”

The nether beasts howled angrily and charged towards the duo. Countless evil and icy consciousnesses were also floating in mid-air, locking down their location.

“Blast them!” Song Tingyu suddenly cried out. “Use the Terminator Profound Bombs and blast them to death! This is the Nether Realm—even if this place is turned upside-down, it has nothing to do with us!”

She also seemed to be feeling restless due to the circumstances. She knew that it would be incredibly difficult to survive after falling into Nether Realm. If they could severely damage the evil races of the Nether Realm before they were killed, then in her eyes it was worth it.

“Alright!”

Qin Lie did not hesitate at all as a Terminator Profound Bomb appeared in his palm with a thought.

Seeing that more and more nether beasts were gathering and getting closer to them, he aimed at the place with the most nether beasts and threw out the first Terminator Profound Bomb.

The Terminator Profound Bomb was like a bolt of faint blue lightning that fell onto the crowded nether beasts, accompanied by the dull rumble of thunder.

A wisp of Qin Lie's mind was remotely connected to the Terminator Profound Bomb like a bolt of lightning. Once the Terminator Profound Bomb was in position, his thoughts abruptly shifted.

A bolt of blazing lightning flashed deep inside his pupils.

"Booom!"

A thunderous explosion instantly rippled from the center of the nether beasts. A spatial distortion was abruptly formed, accompanied by lightning that crashed towards its center.

"Bang bang bang! Prak prak prak!"

Heavenly thunder rumbled and snakes made of lightning danced. At the center of the nether beasts, the two kinds of immeasurably violent power exploded like they would sunder mountains and

split the earth.

Many nether beasts were instantly blasted into pieces, flesh and blood splattering everywhere as heads separated from bodies...

The smoke was thick, and dust was flying. Within that small gray space the nether beasts cried out in terrible pain. Some of the nether beasts charged out into the open covered in blood.

They were a few Nether Giant Tail Lizards and a Bloodthirsty Blade Demons as well. These were all high ranking nether beasts whose bodies were as tough as mountains. It was as if they were forged by black iron stones and tough metal. They actually survived the Terminator Profound Bomb's explosion.

They pursued Qin Lie and Song Tingyu with an even more terrifying aura than before. A cold, maddening color radiated from their bestial eyes, causing Qin Lie to feel cold in his heart just looking at it.

"Do you have any left?" Song Tingyu asked hurriedly.

"Yes! I have a lot!" Qin Lie took out another three Terminator Profound Bombs.

"Dead ahead, open up a path dead ahead! There are nether beasts gathering behind us at the evil nether passageway and approaching us from the front! Throw the Terminator Profound Bombs there and blast open a bloody path!" Song Tingyu cried out loudly.

Qin Lie turned around and saw a group headed toward them from the direction they were traveling in.

The few people from the Horned Demon Race were clad in bestial armor and posessed cold eyes. They sat high above the nether beasts, and they looked at them suspiciously—they seemed curious about the people of Spirit Realm that entered their land.

“Capture them alive!” A person of the Horned Demon Race with four curved horns running down his spine ordered in a Nether Realm language.

“They want to capture us alive.” Qin Lie waved his hands. The Terminator Profound Bomb in his palm was already ignited, ready to explode at a moment’s thought.

“You, you can understand what they’re speaking?” Song Tingyu suddenly appeared incredibly surprised. Her eyes flashed with a beautiful and wondrous light, “Do you really understand their words, or did you see through their actions and understand their intentions?”

The moment she said this, Qin Lie suddenly froze as well.

He really did understand their words. He could hear loud and clear what the evil races of the Nether Realm were saying!

How could he understand what they said?

Qin Lie's expression was dumbfounded and confused, "I understand their language..."

Song Tingyu was obviously shocked. She stared deeply at Qin Lie as a strange light shone from the bottomless depths of her eyes, "No time to be dazed. Let's blast them first. We may be in the sky, but their throwing spears will be enough to take us down!"

Qin Lie glanced downward and discovered that it was as Song Tingyu said. The people of the Horned Demon Race were holding white bone spears carved from beast bones and huge nets knitted from beast tendons. Once they got close enough they would be ready to strike.

And so Qin Lie did not hesitate in the slightest to throw out yet another two Terminator Profound Bombs.

A sharp howl came from the Horned Demon Race expert chasing after them. He screamed out with the language of the Nether Realm, "Avoid it! Avoid that devil's fruit!"

The martial practitioners holding the great net also hurriedly ordered when they heard his cries, "Get away! All of you, dodge it!"

The two Terminator Profound Bombs still fell in the center of their group.

"Booom! Booom!"

Mixed with thunder and wide, arcing lightning bolts, two earthshaking explosions erupted within the group of nether beasts and men; they bloomed with terrifying shockwaves that caused the surrounding space to collapse.

The shockwaves of the Terminator Profound Bombs that were ignited at the same time pressed against each other, causing an incredible distortion within the space.

The distortion caused the nether beasts and Horned Demon clansmen to be twisted to death, as if by a great, invisible hand. Even their bones were twisted to bits.

“Let’s get out of here before their bird-type nether beasts show up! Qin Lie, the moment you see a nether beast or foreign race approach, blast them immediately with the Terminator Profound Bombs! Blast out a bloody path!” Song Tingyu shouted with a steely note.

“Okay!” Qin Lie took out a few more Terminator Profound Bombs.

“Boom boom boom! Boom boom boom!”

The explosions of the Terminator Profound Bombs rumbled continuously within this evil land of the Nether Realm.

Each explosion was always accompanied by a huge pit in the

ground. Every deep pit in the ground would contain the dead bodies of dozens of nether beasts and the dismembered limbs of Horned Demon men.

Along the way, the moment he saw nether beasts pursuing them or Horned Demon men blocking their way, Qin Lie would immediately throw out a Terminator Profound Bomb without a word.

What followed after was always a terrific explosion. Those who were chasing after them or blocking their way would be immediately torn to shreds along with their so-called encirclement.

Relying on the Terminator Profound Bombs, the continuous explosions, and Song Tingyu's rainbow wings, the duo literally blasted out a blood path and charged towards the dense forest in the distance.

There were dozens of huge pits wherever they went, all the way to the evil nether passageway. They had blasted hundreds of nether beasts and tens of Horned Demon clansmen into pieces.

"Heh... this Terminator Profound Bomb... is really something impressive. Can I have a few to play with?" Song Tingyu turned around and looked at him. Her beautiful face brimmed with a seductive smile, "I want to blast some enemies too..."

Right at that moment, they could no longer see any groups of nether beasts or evil races before them. Behind them were dozens

of giant pits; the people of the Horned Demon Race had been blasted so much that they completely lost their courage. They did not dare to pursue them any longer.

They were safe for the moment. At the very least, they would not need to worry about being attacked for a short while.

Therefore Song Tingyu took the chance to express her interest in the Terminator Profound Bomb.

“You do not cultivate a thunder and lightning spirit art. Even if you held the Terminator Profound Bomb, you will not be able to ignite them.” Gripping two Terminator Profound Bombs in his hand, Qin Lie frowned and rejected her request in a straightforward manner.

“How stingy.” Song Tingyu rolled her eyes seductively at him, but she did not insist any longer.

However, after flying for a short while, she suddenly let go of his hands.

Qin Lie fell straight into the forest filled with densely packed savage plants.

These plants had branches like sharp saw teeth. Seeing prey falling towards them, they actually appeared excited and began swinging their teeth-like branches, ready to entangle Qin Lie and consume him the moment he hit the ground.

Qin Lie was shocked. While inwardly cursing at the woman's revenge, he hurriedly channeled his Heavenly Thunder Eradication and covered his entire body in blue lightning.

Blue lightning balls swiftly formed in each of his hands. Like little blue suns they fell towards the thicker parts of the plants.

"Bang bang bang!"

Qin Lie protected his life with lightning that was many times weaker than the Terminator Profound Bomb. Lightning as thick as a finger streaked out and exploded within those man-eating plants, frying them until they were charred black.

Qin Lie's body slammed against tree branches until his head spun.

Meanwhile, Song Tingyu had descended gracefully from the sky with the help of her rainbow wings.

She resembled a saintly fairy who had descended to earth.

A smile played across her lips. Her eyes danced with satisfaction as she said quietly while still in mid-air, "I gave you my hand to hold and allowed you to take advantage of me for such a long time, carrying you all this way to escape the nether beasts and Horned Demon men, yet you're not willing to lend me a few Terminator Profound Bombs to play with. You deserve to be thrown down...

So? How's your butt?" She couldn't help but giggle.

At this moment, Qin Lie was rubbing his bottom indecently, baring his teeth and staring angrily at her.

"Alright, alright." She pursed her lips and smiled lightly. She landed steadily beside Qin Lie like a celestial being covered in rainbow light. "We have escaped one danger, but there's no telling how long we can keep this up. This is the Nether Realm. Every nether beast and evil race will see us as their sworn enemies. They will do everything they can to kill us..."

"Just like how you and Xie Jingxuan had pursued the Soul Devouring Beast, our presence here is just like the Soul Devouring Beast that had entered the Scarlet Tide Continent. We have become public enemies." Song Tingyu sighed slightly.

"Are there any way to return to the Scarlet Tide Continent?" Qin Lie stifled his anger and began to consider this question seriously.

"We will leave the way we came from, of course. However, it will be difficult to do so at the moment." Song Tingyu's beautiful eyes gazed in the direction of evil nether passageway, "For the moment, there will be nether beasts and experts from the Horned Demon Race gathered around the evil nether passageway's entrance. It won't be possible to enter the evil nether passageway while they're still around. If the reverse gravity field is still active, we would not be able to pass through the evil nether passageway even if we tried."

“An extremely powerful nether beast and elite of an evil race seemed to have entered the Scarlet Tide Continent through the evil nether passageway just now.” Qin Lie said.

A hint of fear appeared inside Song Tingyu’s eyes as she nodded, “Yes, he is the one who created the reverse gravity field. I brought you into Nether Realm because he was about to come out with his nether beast. If we were still trapped when he came out and could not escape, then we would easily be killed by him. In that case, we might as well take the risk to fall into the Nether Realm and bypass him altogether. Even he would not be able to do anything inside the evil nether passageway!”

“We are still alive. This proves that your decision was correct.” Qin Lie praised.

“But of course. I very seldom make mistakes.” Song Tingyu smiled and exclaimed arrogantly. “If I had been the one to lead you to kill the Soul Devouring Beast and learned of your ability to summon lightning from the heavens, you would’ve been absorbed into the Song Family a long time ago. If that had happened, hehe, you would’ve already been one of us.”

Light flashed across her eyes. There seemed to be great meaning behind her words. It was as if she had made up her mind and firmly believed that Qin Lie would fall into her grasp sooner or later.

Chapter 256: Hard March

The outer world.

Song Siyuan, Xie Zhizhang, Zhan Tianyi and the group of Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple martial practitioners stationed themselves outside Armament City, waiting quietly for the explosive sounds of the Terminator Profound Bombs.

However, after waiting for a long time, they still hadn't heard any explosions from Armament City.

Song Siyuan's expression gradually turned grave, "Could something have happened to them?"

"There shouldn't be. The Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly's speed is extremely quick; there shouldn't be any nether beasts capable of matching its speed," Xie Zhizhang consoled him. "Plus, with Tingyu's abilities, it shouldn't be too difficult for them to deal with the average evil races."

The seriousness in Song Siyuan's eyes did not fade. He was still worried as he said, "I'm worried if there might be high ranking evil races who came over."

"This timing... is still too soon." Xie Zhizhang said again.

The group waited quietly.

Finally, the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly appeared, having flown back while crying sadly the entire way. Song Tingyu and Qin Lie's figures were nowhere to be seen.

The expressions of Song Siyuan and Xie Zhizhang finally changed.

"What happened?" Song Siyuan exclaimed impatiently.

The Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly flew to him and cried out just as hastily, explaining what happened earlier and ceaselessly urging him to save Song Tingyu.

"What? They were pulled into the Nether Realm by a reverse gravity field?" Xie Zhizhang couldn't help but cry out in shock. "Only a high rank evil race would come through using a reverse gravity field. They actually happened upon the arrival of a high rank evil race! They were even pulled directly into the Nether Realm. This, this is..."

He did not say anything after those words.

But everyone could hear the meaning regardless—Song Tingyu and Qin Lie's fates were in dire straits.

"Tingyu has entered the Nether Realm. She actually entered the Nether Realm..." Song Siyuan's face was ashen. He wasn't stupid. He almost instantly deduced the duo's ending.

“If the humans of the Scarlet Tide Continent accidentally enter Nether Realm, their fate... would be unspeakable.” When Eight Extreme Temple’s Green Robed Envoy Zhan Tianyi figured out what happened, he too let out a long sigh, “Brother Song, please restrain your grief and come to terms with the inevitable. Humans who step into the Nether Realm will be hunted by the entire continent just like the evil races who come to our Scarlet Tide Continent. There is basically no chance of survival.”

“How am I going to explain this to my elder brother...” Song Siyuan was wrought with grief.

“The situation has worsened with the arrival of a high rank evil race. Sigh. Let us get ready for a difficult fight.” Zhan Tianyi slowly calmed down. “Both Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple will face heavy losses. Those two... let’s just assume that they are the first batch of victims.”

Be it in their minds or through their words, they had sentenced Qin Lie and Song Tingyu to death. They did not think that the two could survive in the Nether Realm.

.....

“They probably assumed that I died.” Inside Nether Realm, within the thick forest. Song Tingyu pulled at the corner of her lips to draw out a somewhat bitter smile.

“I have no ties anyway.” Qin Lie said indifferently.

“Flap flap flap!”

Three Spirit Hunting Beasts, each about six to seven meters long, circled the dark gray sky above. They bore resemblance to Ghost Birds but were more than ten times larger.

The Spirit Hunting Beasts were all Rank Three nether beasts, the equivalent of Fulfillment Realm martial practitioners. They were bird-type nether beasts with sharp claws that could tear through steel and stone. They loved to eat the brains of humankind the most and had acute insight towards living beings with spirit energy inside them.

The Ghost Birds that Liang Zhong had raised were descended from the evil races of the Nether Realm. They were slowly raised as the variant of a Spirit Hunting Beast.

By putting it through an art of blood sacrifice unique to evil races and mingling the Spirit Hunting Beast’s blood with a portion of a spirit beast’s bloodline, they managed to raised a Ghost Bird that could adapt not only to the environment of the Nether Battlefield, but also to the Spirit Realm.

Because the Ghost Bird’s blood was mixed with the fresh blood of spirit beasts, it did not fear sunlight and could even fly through it. However, because its bloodline was impure, its rank was incredibly weak and its room for growth was nearly non-existent.

The Spirit Hunting Beast was a pure bred nether beast. It might

not be able to endure the Spirit Realm's environment for a long time, but in the Nether Realm it was incredibly powerful!

The three Spirit Hunting Beasts had circled above this forest for a very long time, searching for Qin Lie and Song Tingyu to track them down and lead the elites of the evil races to kill them.

It was also because of the Spirit Hunting Beasts that Song Tingyu and Qin Lie did not dare to fly above the sky, instead quietly walking under the cover of the forest's thick canopy.

"I can hide the spirit energy and soul aura on my body, preventing the Spirit Hunting Beasts from detecting my presence." Song Tingyu took out a glittering cold blade and cut at the roots of a lush ancient tree.

This ancient tree's serrated branches and leaves were shaking violently just earlier. After its roots were stabbed several times by her long blade, the last bit of its evil life drained away.

In this forest, this type of savage tree was extremely dangerous. It instinctively hated them and, the moment they got close to any tree of this kind, they would attack immediately.

The duo had already gotten used to it. Along the way, the moment they saw this type of ancient tree, they would immediately cut off the evil life force inside its roots—this prevented the ancient tree from ambushing them.

“I can cover my aura because I have a special treasure with me that can isolate my spirit energy and life force.” Song Tingyu stared at Qin Lie curiously with glittering eyes. “How about you? I didn’t see you taking out any spirit artifacts or garb yourself in some special armor. Why do the Spirit Hunting Beasts fail to track you?”

Along the way the Spirit Hunting Beasts had flown overhead again and again, searching for them. Song Tingyu was worried and frightful, certain that Qin Lie would expose their positions.

Yet the Spirit Hunting Beasts continued flying past them again and again, somehow failing to discover Qin Lie beneath them.

She focused her attention and realized that every time the Spirit Hunting Beasts were about to get close, his life force, aura, and even the shape of his soul would transform—it was as if everything had been hidden in an instant.

If Qin Lie wasn’t right beside her, even she would think that Qin Lie had disappeared into thin air. She closed her eyes and realized that she could not detect any fluctuation of energy on Qin Lie’s body.

Yet he stood right in front of her…

What she didn’t know was that, at that moment, Qin Lie had immediately entered into the state of Thoughtless Tranquility. In that state he could magically merge with the environment, becoming a part of it.

His life force, his energy, the flow of his blood, and the magnetic field of his soul… All of his characteristics would be greatly slowed down by the state of Thoughtless Tranquility. It caused him to be as if he had turned into air and instantly disappeared from the world, slipping out of anyone's grasp. Naturally he could not be locked down in this state.

This was the reason why the Spirit Hunting Beasts were unable to track him down.

Qin Lie did not clear her doubt. Instead, he frowned and asked, "You seem to have an objective. Where are you heading?"

"If you tell me how you are able to avoid the Spirit Hunting Beasts, then I will tell you where I'm heading. How's that?" Song Tingyu smiled beautifully and stared at him with glittering eyes. "Very fair, isn't it?"

Qin Lie did not say anything. He looked deeply into Song Tingyu's eyes and suddenly said, "You are different from before."

"Before?" Song Tingyu was surprised.

"Back when Eight Extreme Temple's Mo He was around." Qin Lie nodded.

A trace of embarrassment suddenly appeared on Song Tingyu's face. Her charm immediately rose to the surface as ripples of light

appeared in her beautiful eyes. It was as if it could captivate any man.

Last time she had yet to clear the charm seed within her heart so, when she faced Qin Lie, she would appear to be deeply in love. Every action and every smile had been filled with emotion.

That was how she managed to trick even Mo He. Not even he could discern anything odd before giving up on killing Qin Lie in the end.

She had appeared sincere because Qin Lie's imprint existed inside her heart at that time, causing him to feel like getting close to her.

By now, Song Tingyu had already dealt with the troubles brought by her concept backfiring. Her heart and mind did not have the charm seed any longer, so naturally she lost her weakness as well.

Therefore, her speech, expressions, and actions were slightly different from before. Qin Lie had clearly noticed these differences.

"Heh, that situation... will not happen anymore." Song Tingyu quickly regained her calm and smiled lightly. "It is a very strange feeling. I have experienced it firsthand and found it rather lovely. However, it was also too passive, and I dislike being passive. I like seizing the initiative and grabbing hold of someone's heart. I dislike the opposite." She smiled at Qin Lie.

Qin Lie did not understand the meaning behind her words.

She did not explain either.

The duo found a place to hide and sat down. They took out their spirit stones to recover.

They were unable to absorb nether demonic energy to cultivate inside the Nether Realm and were forced to spend spirit energy to protect their bodies at every moment to purify the nether demonic energy they breathed into their lungs.

Therefore their spirit energy consumption was huge. Every time they walked any distance, they would have to borrow the spirit energy inside spirit stones and spirit pills to replenish themselves, guaranteeing that their spirit seas were always at a full state so they could deal with danger at any moment.

Although Qin Lie had his own opinion towards the Nether Realm's terrible environment, Song Tingyu's words did make him feel a bit better, "Be content. The Nether Realm may be hard on us, but it isn't too bad yet. When the evil races enter Spirit Realm they would be exposed to the strong sunlight which is far more difficult for them. They can only operate at night and they probably feel worse than us after absorbing spirit energy."

Underneath an ancient tree that would need ten people to completely encompass, three Spirit Hunting Beasts knelt behind a person. This man was a member of the Horned Demon Race. He wore black bestial armor and had four curved horns lining the

back of his neck. A dark and evil light shone from deep within his dark brown pupils.

He was two and a half meters tall and his body had the appearance of black stone. He gave off a feeling of indestructibility.

He held a gigantic hammer forged from the skull of a nether beast which was filled with ugly thorns. There was blood on the thorns. He seemed to have been waiting for a long time.

Song Tingyu and Qin Lie had traveled stealthily and avoided the areas they assumed were dangerous, all the way until they reached this ancient tree.

They immediately saw this person from the Horned Demon Race.

“A Horned Demon clansman with four curved horns!” Song Tingyu exclaimed as her gaze became serious. “The equivalent of a Netherpassage Realm martial practitioner!”

Qin Lie went pale.

Thanks to Song Tingyu’s explanations, Qin Lie also knew how to identify ranks within the Horned Demon Race. Those with a curved horn behind their neck was the equivalent of a Refinement Realm martial practitioner. Those with two horns was the equivalent of Natal Opening Realm martial practitioner.

Going by this logic, this one with four curved horns was

comparable to a Netherpassage Realm expert.

“I knew you would pass through this place!” He said coldly in the language of the Nether Realm.

Chapter 257: Interpreting Memories

“He has been waiting for us for a very long time.”

Qin Lie said softly to Song Tingyu. His expression was stern as he stared at this Horned Demon elite.

Song Tingyu frowned slightly and looked at him, then at the three Spirit Hunting Beasts, before saying in a small voice, “Can you kill him directly with the Terminator Profound Bomb?”

“I’ll give it a try.” He took out a Terminator Profound Bomb and looked at the Horned Demon elite from afar, calculating the distance between them in his head.

However, the Horned Demon elite seemed to recognize the Terminator Profound Bomb, and the moment he saw him taking it out, a trace of fear appeared in his dark and deep pupils.

The three Spirit Hunting Beasts kneeling beneath him suddenly let out a long howl before flying into the air simultaneously.

The Horned Demon elite also jumped up into the air, landing on one of the Spirit Hunting Beasts. He lifted his giant hammer and stared coldly at Qin Lie and Song Tingyu in midair.

“I can’t easily attack him while he’s in the air like this. I can’t accurately throw the Terminator Profound Bomb at him.” The moment Qin Lie saw that the Horned Demon elite had retreated,

his expression changed and he gave up almost immediately.

"You mean to say that your Terminator Profound Bomb is useless now?" Song Tingyu cast a glance at him and appeared slightly frustrated. "I guess I have to do this myself..."

Qin Lie's eyes lit up.

To this day he still had not figured out this woman's true realm. He did not know exactly which level of power she belonged to, but he did know that she was extremely dangerous and that her biomagnetic field was incredibly powerful.

He was sure that this Song Tingyu must be incredibly scary. Her ability was most definitely not confined to just being a fairy who seduces men.

"Whoosh whoosh whoosh!"

The Horned Demon elite suddenly began to spin his giant hammer while on top of the Spirit Hunting Beast.

His hammer was forged from the skull of a giant beast. It was like a giant millstone adorned with sharp and bloody thorns. It was obvious that the weapon had many kills under its belt.

The Horned Demon elite swung his hammer, arcing it toward them like a meteor. Three fearsome wraiths of vicious beasts appeared from within the hammer and howled.

Half of the three beast wraiths were connected to the giant hammer, and the other half howled as if their bodies had been stretched and pulled. They bit and tore in the direction of Qin Lie and Song Tingyu.

The dark, maddening, oppressive, bloodthirsty, violent and cold mind blast from the giant hammer felt like sharp blades that came down, like the sky was falling on them. It formed an evil consciousness that stabbed into the hearts and minds of Qin Lie and Song Tingyu.

This was the same as the Soul Devouring Beast's method of attack back then.

"Be careful of his evil mind attack!" Song Tingyu cried out.

Qin Lie could not hear what she said. The torrent of evil consciousness swirled with all sorts of maddening negativity and had already stabbed into his mind like a sword.

He immediately hugged his head and cried out in pain.

Qin Lie had the terrifying feeling that someone was stirring his brain with a sharp knife to the point where it was turning to goo. He felt as if his mind was about to shatter into countless pieces and be absorbed into the giant hammer.

However, this terrifying feeling only lasted for an instant.

A warm, soft purifying light was unleashed from the Soul Suppressing Orb at the center of his forehead. It seemed capable of purifying all evil thoughts that invaded his mind. In a short amount of time, it dispersed all the negative, cold, evil, maddening and bloodthirsty thoughts from his mind.

Qin Lie immediately recovered.

His previous fear had vanished from his heart and he was able to observe calmly from the sidelines.

He saw Song Tingyu extending her slender white hands, lifting them gracefully to grab at the three beast wraiths.

Prismatic light flew out of her soft clean hands and slashed at the three beast wraiths like indestructibly sharp swords.

The three wraiths shattered into countless pieces, their souls suffering the same fate and disappearing like dust.

“Pop pop pop!”

Three crisp sounds came from inside the decending giant hammer. It seemed that the vicious beasts’ souls had exploded.

However, the giant hammer carried with it a tidal wave of evil, hurtling towards Song Tingyu’s skull with unstoppable force and

momentum. The person planned to kill her first.

"A Horned Demon with four horns is about the as strong as a Netherpassage Realm expert. However, that fourth horn of yours must have sprouted not too long ago." Song Tingyu lifted her head and laughed softly at the Horned Demon elite. She raised her hand again, as if to grab at the descending giant hammer.

The hammer was about the size of a millstone and was covered with ugly thorns. Those thorns were as sharp as needles and, at first glance, they could be mistaken for an oversized porcupine.

"Watch out!" Qin Lie cried out subconsciously.

Song Tingyu smiled lightly. Her hands were covered in layers of rainbow light and, in an instant, it was as if she wore a rainbow glove.

Then she clenched her fingers into a fist and swung towards the giant hammer. Her cute little fist shone with terrific rainbow light!

"Boom!"

The hammer forged from the skull of a giant beast smashed against her tiny fists and instantly disappeared in a burst of dust. The giant hammer was blasted into smithereens by an impossibly terrifying force!

Qin Lie was so shocked he could faint.

The Horned Demon elite also paled as he screamed out, slapping the Spirit Hunting Beast beneath him in terror.

—He was urging the Spirit Hunting Beast to leave this place immediately.

“It’s too late.” Song Tingyu smiled beautifully.

The rainbow wings beneath her arms extended once more, and like a ray of colorful rainbow she shot into the sky.

Many colorful ribbons flew out of her sleeves. The ribbons were like rays of rainbow, binding the three Spirit Hunting Beasts and the Horned Demon elite with four horns tightly.

“Get over here!” Song Tingyu pulled strongly.

The six or seven meters long Spirit Hunting Beasts should be flying high up in the sky like enormous eagles. At this moment, however, they were all crying out in fear as a strong force brought them hurtling towards the ground.

The Horned Demon elite with four horns also fell along with them. He plummeted from the air, spinning and crying out in panic.

While Qin Lie was staring like a wooden chicken, Song Tingyu

dove from her position in the air and a longsword suddenly appeared in her hand.

She swung the sword through the air as vicious sword beams the color of rainbows criss crossed onto the Spirit Hunting Beasts and the Horned Demon clansman, striking fatal blows on their bodies.

She killed the three Spirit Hunting Beasts and the Horned Demonelite with four horns, who was equal to a Netherpassage Realm expert, all too easily.

Qin Lie's face suddenly twitched.

"What's wrong? Are you scared?" Song Tingyu looked at him with bright eyes and a smile before saying somewhat helplessly, "I don't like to kill or fight either; I prefer to make my enemies retreat without fighting. But I do not know how to speak the language of the Nether Realm and... I can't charm this ugly bastard of a Horned Demon with my beauty either. Since you're useless, the only choice I have left is to do this."

"Useless..." Qin Lie smiled bitterly.

Compared to Song Tingyu, who appeared as strong as a vicious ancient beast, he did seem somewhat useless at this moment.

Without being able to borrow the Terminator Profound Bomb's might, he was just a puny martial practitioner at the pinnacle of the Natal Opening Realm. In this Nether Realm, there were far too

many nether beasts and evil races that could kill him.

Even a portion of the Nether Realm plants' power could strangle him alive if he was unprepared.

"I dislike it when people don't see my graceful and courteous side," Song Tingyu cast a glance at him and said quietly. "The men who saw me like this in the past mostly had bad endings..."

Qin Lie's face paled slightly.

"Hehe, look at yourself. I'm just playing with you." Song Tingyu waved the sharp sword in her hands, stabbing the corpses of the Spirit Hunting Beasts and Horned Demon elite a couple of times while giggling.

Then she took out a hexagonal jade crystal that had murky yellow spots in it. The bright spots on it blinked continuously as she pressed it into the Horned Demon elite's mouth.

Incredibly weak waves of soul energy came from the dead Horned Demon elite. Tny, scattered lights seemed to be attracted by the hexagonal jade crystal and were quickly absorbed by it.

The jade crystal became even murkier. The yellow spots inside it slowly increased in size.

"What is this thing?" Qin Lie asked in surprise.

“A Memory Fragment Crystal,” Song Tingyu answered carelessly.

“What’s it for?” Qin Lie continued.

“When a living being dies, their soul would be dispersed throughout the world. But, if it only died recently, then the soul’s memories won’t disperse right away. This Memory Fragment Crystal is able to absorb and store those memories before they dissipate…” Song Tingyu looked at him. “When Mo He said that he would extract your memories to acquire the forging method of the Terminator Profound Bomb and understand the secrets of the twelve spirit pattern pillars, he had planned to use this Memory Fragment Crystal.”

Qin Lie’s eyebrows furrowed.

Soon the Memory Fragment Crystal grew brighter and the yellow spots inside it grew incredibly huge, as if many memories inhabited it.

“Come. You will interpret the memories inside it and see this Horned Demon elite’s life experiences for yourself.” Song Tingyu suddenly passed the Memory Fragment Crystal to him.

The Memory Fragment Crystal still had saliva, blood, and some kind of sticky fluid on it. It made one nauseous.

“Take it quickly.” Seeing him refuse to accept it, Song Tingyu forced it into his hands before taking out a handkerchief and wiping the filth from her hands. “You understand the language of the Nether Realm so it will be easier for you to interpret the memories inside it. I need you to determine the direction of the Nether Battlefield.”

“We need to return to the Scarlet Tide Continent and we can either go through the evil nether passageway or the Nether Battlefield. There are too many elites of the evil races gathered at evil nether passageway right now, not to mention the reverse gravity field that was activated. Therefore we have no choice but to return through the Nether Battlefield.” Song Tingyu wiped her hands while explaining. “I may have a goal but I do not know the direction or exact location of the Nether Battlefield. That’s why I needed to extract his memories and have you interpret it. This guy’s a four horned elite of the Horned Demon Race. He must know the way to enter the Nether Battlefield from the Nether Realm.”

Holding the Memory Fragment Crystal covered with traces of blood, saliva, and sticky fluids, Qin Lie bared ugly expression. “A pure soul memory has no language boundaries, right? Any living being’s soul would be able to interact with another and memories are formed from the fragments of one’s soul. Even if you don’t understand the language of the Nether Realm, it does not keep you from interpreting his memories, does it?”

A high rank living being could interact with a soul, and the interactions would not be limited by one’s language at all.

That was to say, there was no difficulty whatsoever for Song Tingyu to interpret the memories within Memory Fragment Crystal.

Seeing that Qin Lie wasn't fooled, Song Tingyu stuck out her tongue before saying with a pitiful look, "You wouldn't let me hold such a disgusting thing just to interpret the memories, would you?"

Qin Lie grunted once and said, "I'll do it, but just tell me the truth next time. I hate it when people lie to me."

"Alright, alright, I won't lie next time." Song Tingyu said gently.

Qin Lie nodded. He let his mind consciousness slip into the Memory Fragment Crystal in his hand, delving into the Horned Demon martial practitioner's entire life history.

Chapter 258: A Tale Of Life

It wasn't hard to interpret a memory. For an artificer who was well versed in the inscription of spirit diagrams like Qin Lie, the task of interpreting a memory was much simpler.

Gripping the Memory Fragment Crystal, a wisp of Qin Lie's mind consciousness slipped into the crystal as if entering a spirit board or artifact. His mind was like a chain that reached straight to the center of the Memory Fragment Crystal. With it, he touched the bright yellow spots inside.

"Bang!"

One of the yellow spots shattered and strips of memories were displayed inside his mind like scattered, flowing lights.

Each one of these bright yellow spots were related to the most important things in this Horned Demon elite's life. The moment Qin Lie disturbed them, the strips of memories contained inside would gush out and form many images and scenes.

Qin Lie focused his mind, closed his eyes and continuously knocked against the bright yellow spots. This way, he could see many different scenes and many slivers of life experiences.

This Horned Demon clansman was called Kun Sen. He was born in a small normal tribe of the Horned Demon Race and received combat training from a young age.

The elders of the Horned Demon Race would gather all the children and teach them the cultivation arts and combat skills of the Nether Realm. At a very young age, they were given tasks in the mountains outside the clan to hunt nether beasts and accumulate combat experience.

Kun Sen's talents weren't particularly extraordinary but he put a lot of effort into cultivation. He put all of his efforts into cultivating with almost no time for pleasure.

His hardworking behavior was gradually acknowledged by the elders of the clan and, as he grew older, his powers steadily improved.

When he grew his second curved horn, he was arranged to participate in the Nether Battlefield and fight against the Scarlet Tide Continent's martial practitioners who were stationed there... he had experienced countless bloody battles.

Many new sceneries were born from every battle and, through each one, he was able to grasp the essence of combat.

He was gradually improving himself.

The elders of the Horned Demon Race said that their native land had been occupied by strangers and that they were exiled to the Nether Realm—that the Spirit Realm and Scarlet Tide Continent were their homes...

In Kun Sen's eyes, the humans of the Scarlet Tide Continent were evil, crazy, and disgusting.

They had occupied the world that originally belonged to them and exiled them to this place. They had even set up all kinds of defenses and prohibited them from returning to the Scarlet Tide Continent, depriving them of the chance to step onto their native land ever again. That was why they hated every human from the Scarlet Tide Continent and sought only to break through their defenses and march out of the Nether Battlefield.

For this objective, countless clansmen had died on the Nether Battlefield. Warriors that had grown up and cultivated alongside him remained in the Nether Battlefield forever as corpses.

He had even loved a Horned Demon girl before but she was killed and beheaded at the Nether Battlefield.

He hated all of mankind. He had but one obsession in his heart—to slaughter his way to the Scarlet Tide Continent and murder every single human.

This was their tribe's and the Horned Demon Race's ultimate goal.

To achieve this goal, every generation worked hard, accumulated their strength, and charged the Nether Battlefield again and again.

They would never retreat.

Gripping the Memory Fragment Crystal and knocking into one bright yellow spot after another, Qin Lie activated many clumps of memories and watched the scenes play out before him.

Gradually, he had the illusion that he himself was Kun Sen. He could feel the same powerful feelings present in the memories—those of the Horned Demon Race were also high rank living beings who experienced love, anger, sadness and joy; they their own ideals and desires.

Other than appearance and cultivation methods, this Horned Demon martial practitioner called Kun Sen was not very different from the humans of the Scarlet Tide Continent.

The scenes changed and played in his mind continuously. He didn't know how long had passed since he had activated all of the bright yellow spots, interpreting memories until the Memory Fragment Crystal no longer shone.

Yet he still gripped the Memory Fragment Crystal in a trance.

It was as if he was still immersed in Kun Sen's world and was unable to pull himself away. It was as if he could still feel the influence of Kun Sen's life.

Song Tingyu did not say anything from the moment Qin Lie gripped the Memory Fragment Crystal. Instead, she simply

watched him quietly.

She could sense an incredibly intense mind fluctuations from Qin Lie's body. She knew that Qin Lie's mind had gone deep into the Memory Fragment Crystal and that he was experiencing Kun Sen's memories and life experiences.

A strange smile appeared on her exquisite face. Her beautiful eyes glittered as she stared intently at Qin Lie's expression, catching every wrinkle, every strain, every fear, every joy, and every sadness on his face...

After a very, very long time, Qin Lie opened his eyes as if he had walked out from another time and space. His eyes were devoid of emotion.

There was no longer any light in the Memory Fragment Crystal. No memory fragments remained.

"Return the Memory Fragment Crystal to me." Song Tingyu suddenly extended her hand. There was even a handkerchief covering it—this was to avoid touching the saliva again.

Qin Lie subconsciously returned the Memory Fragment Crystal to her. He was still absentminded. The endless scenes appeared and transitioned so clearly in his head—these were Kun Sen's life experiences.

"Qin Lie!" Song Tingyu exclaimed softly.

As if someone had poured a bucket of water over his head, a gentle and clear energy reached straight into his mind and consciousness as if to sweep it clean of doubt.

He suddenly shuddered, a strange light in his eyes.

Then he finally awoke and looked towards Song Tingyu. His expression was complicated as he said, “I think I saw Kun Sen’s life. It’s as if I had experienced everything that he had. Just now, I felt like I was a member of the Horned Demon Race, and that I was fighting hard for the Horned Demon Race’s ultimate ideal…”

“Kun Sen?” Song Tingyu smiled lightly. “That’s the name of that Horned Demon clansman?”

“Mn,” Qin Lie nodded and said with a strange tone. “This evil race also has flesh and blood; soul and emotion; ideals and desires for the future…”

Song Tingyu’s expression turned serious. “Every high rank living creature and intelligent life has everything you said. The nature of the evil races of the Nether Realm isn’t all too different from ours. The only difference is our appearances, the martial way we cultivate, the our bodies…”

Qin Lie looked at her with surprise. “You’ve interpreted a Horned Demon’s memories before?”

“I didn’t need to interpret one to know that there’s no real difference between us and them. This is because I’ve fought against them on the Nether Battlefield before. I know they are intelligent and I know their strength,” Song Tingyu said softly.

“They seek to fight their way into Scarlet Tide Continent, Spirit Realm and… the native land in their hearts. They believe that the land we’re living on is their native land and that our ancestors exiled them to Nether Realm, laying down all kinds of defenses and forbidding them from returning their native land forever…” Qin Lie said quietly.

“Some of the things he believed are correct and some are not. All of the things he knew and learned came from the Horned Demon elder. That is how they raise their warriors—through brainwashing.” Song Tingyu smiled.

“What is correct? And what isn’t?” Qin Lie frowned.

“You need to experience some of these matters yourself. You need to understand them on your own. These experiences are also part of cultivating your martial way and something that you must go through in order to hone yourself further. Gradually, you will come to realize the truth,” Song Tingyu said very seriously.

After staying quiet for a while, Qin Lie no longer asked questions and nodded, saying, “I found out the direction of the Nether Battlefield.”

“That’s good!” Song Tingyu looked motivated. “The main reason

I had you interpret the memories was to find out the location of the Nether Battlefield. We can't go through the evil nether passageway right now, so we can only return to the Scarlet Tide Continent through the Nether Battlefield."

"It's in that direction. It's very far from here." Qin Lie recalled Kun Sen's memories and pointed.

From their location, one would see a huge mountain in the direction he had pointed. The gigantic mountain stabbed straight into the clouds, standing tall amidst the thick, black nether demonic energy.

"That's fine as long as we know where we're going." Song Tingyu said confidently.

After that, the duo then headed in that direction. Inside the forest, they carefully avoided the Horned Demon Race's renewed attacks and inched little by little towards the Nether Battlefield.

For the next few days, images would appear in Qin Lie's mind constantly – they were the Kun Sen's life experiences.

These impossibly clear images were sometimes a kind of torture to him. It would cause him to grow confused about his own identity, a condition that was gradually growing worse...

At times he would suddenly feel hatred and his gaze towards Song Tingyu would shine with murderous intent. He would feel an

intense desire to kill Song Tingyu.

Today, he actually failed to control the hatred in his heart and attacked!

He had gathered his energy, covered himself in lightning, and attacked her while she was recovering using spirit stones.

Song Tingyu did not even open her eyes when she suddenly lifted her left hand that was covered in rainbow light.

“Boom!”

His charging body was blasted away by the rainbow light. He flew for tens of meters before he finally smashed into the ground.

He had fallen into a cluster of shrubbery and was entangled tightly by bloodthirsty trees. They nearly strangled him to death.

It took him a lot of effort before he managed to struggle out of the shrubbery. His rationality had also returned. Then he quietly sat down and looked somewhat surprised and uncertain about Song Tingyu.

After a while, Song Tingyu regained her strength through the spirit stones. She opened her eyes and smiled cheerfully at Qin Lie. She wasn’t angered and instead explained to him in an understanding tone, “Before your Soul Lake forms, you will see countless manifestations and feel many confusing thoughts. Heh,

that Kun Sen's life has helped you walk and experience the path to Manifestation. It is simply his being of a foreign race that his experiences affected you somewhat, causing your emotions to become unstable at times."

She seemed to know from the beginning that Qin Lie would experience such a condition. She spoke confidently and casually. "Relax. Once your Soul Lake is formed, those confusing feelings will not trouble you any longer."

"Soul Lake?" Qin Lie was shocked.

"Mn." Song Tingyu's smile was charming. "The Soul Lake can be considered a soul mirror that reflects the manifestation of life. You will be able to see yourself more clearly and view the nine Natal Palaces directly. You will be able to see the changes of the energy within you, your flesh, your blood, and every minuscule bit of yourself..."

After pausing for a moment, Song Tingyu concluded, "The formation of the Soul Lake means that you have entered the Manifestation Realm. The reason you see illusions in your mind, why your emotions have became unstable, is because you are about to form your Soul Lake."

Qin Lie was dumbfounded. After pausing for a moment, he bowed deeply to Song Tingyu and said with sincerity, "Thank you for allowing me to interpret the memories within the Memory Fragment Crystal, Miss Song."

Chapter 259: Forming The Soul Lake!

After that, Qin Lie and Song Tingyu continued to advance in the direction of the Nether Battlefield.

Pursuers from the Horned Demon Race continued to appear and attack them.

Yet, in front of Song Tingyu who was extremely strong offensively, the closest waves of Horned Demon warriors were mercilessly killed.

After killing those people, she would use the Memory Fragment Crystal to extract their memories and allow Qin Lie to analyze them.

Qin Lie gradually realized that analyzing the memories inside the Memory Fragment Crystal and experiencing the lives of other people was extremely helpful for forming his Soul Lake. He could quickly establish himself and step into the Manifestation Realm.

In order to break through to the Manifestation Realm, one needed to see tens of thousands of manifestations of life. They needed to experience something that moved them and accumulate those experiences.

When Yi Yuan reached the peak of the Natal Opening Realm, he had chosen to leave Purple Mist Sea and travelled a great distance to come to Armament Sect. He had accompanied Lian Rou with the identity of an outer sect disciple. He did this because of his

affection for Lian Rou.

Yi Yuan also did it for an unforgettable experience. He needed an experience that was not from Purple Mist Sea to help him step into the Manifestation Realm.

Martial practitioners that reached the Natal Opening Realm would usually choose to go on a long journey.

They would leave their familiar environment behind to go to a new place and interact with strangers or go through a dangerous experience. They would seek new life experiences. Through these experiences, they would find the way to step into the Manifestation Realm.

Yi Yuan went to Armament Sect for this experience; Pang Feng accompanied his sister to Armament Sect. Other than their original goal, they had come to experience a new environment and accumulate their experiences in life. Their goal was to prepare to enter the Manifestation Realm.

Qin Lie had experienced a string of events in Armament Sect. He helped Armament Sect fight against the five forces, summoned Xue Li, forged the Terminator Profound Bomb, and used the Terminator Profound Bomb to kill the invaders of the five forces. Then he opened the evil nether passageway and negotiated with Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple before falling into the Nether Realm. To use the Memory Fragment Crystal to further reflect on life...

The experiences and scenery he had never seen were a kind of accumulation—the accumulation of life.

Qin Lie's accumulation of life had never been little. Adding on what he had experienced through the Memory Fragment Crystal, his accumulation was nearly complete.

Today, he once again used the Memory Fragment Crystal to experience the life of a Horned Demon martial practitioner. Then he sank into a state of silence for a long time.

There was a small clear lake in his mind that seemed to be made from his mind consciousness and a part of his soul. That clear lake was as smooth as a mirror. It seemed like it could reflect all kinds of scenes.

Qin Lie only needed to think and could see his nine Natal Palaces from the surface of the lake. He saw the thunder, the lightning, the ice, and the magnetic waves that filled the nine Natal Palaces. He could also see his dantian's spirit sea.

It was as if, with just a thought, he could see any detail inside his mind using that lake.

This was the Soul Lake, a reflection of his soul, and a sign that he was stepping into the Manifestation Realm!

The formation of his Soul Lake meant that he had successfully broken through to the Manifestation Realm. He had the power of

the early stages of the Manifestation Realm.

When Qin Lie's Soul Lake formed, it was as though his mind and soul had powered up. Even his perceptive abilities had increased as well. He discovered that it was easier to detect changes in the surroundings, the flow of the air, the vitality of the plants, and the biomagnetic field of living beings...

Opening his eyes, he saw Song Tingyu look at him brightly. From Song Tingyu's expression, he saw a sliver of praise...

"You formed your Soul Lake?" Song Tingyu's lips moved. Her beautiful face had a dazzling smile.

"Mn, many thanks, Miss Song, for letting me use the memories in the Memory Fragment Crystal. If not for those experiences, I probably would not have entered the Manifestation Realm so early." Qin Lie thanked her sincerely.

The Soul Lake was the reflection of the soul. It could help the soul recognize itself more clearly and feel the changes in the world more easily. This helped martial practitioners to notice details and further their cultivation.

Once his Soul Lake formed, the condition in which the memories caused his soul to become lost and panicked stopped occurring.

He clearly recognized that he was him. He was Qin Lie, the one and only.

He was no longer affected by the mess of memories.

“There are many wondrous uses of the Soul Lake. You can slowly explore them. As your understanding of the Soul Lake increases, you will gradually improve and move towards the mid and later stages of the Manifestation Realm.” Song Tingyu smiled brightly and raised her head to look in the direction of the Nether Battlefield. “I do not want you to become a burden on me which is why I helped you improve quickly. Right now, the reason that we have not been pursued by powerful martial practitioners is because... the truly powerful of the Horned Demon Race are going through the evil nether passageway and the Nether Battlefield. A stronger portion of the Horned Demon Race has either already entered the Scarlet Tide Continent or are furiously attacking the Nether Battlefield. This has caused the number of elites in their homeland to be much lower.”

Qin Lie was shocked. “Does this mean that the state of the Scarlet Tide Continent is not an optimistic one?”

“Mn, the strongest of the Nether Realm have either already reached Scarlet Tide Continent or they are at the evil nether passageway and the Nether Battlefield, waiting to kill their way into the Scarlet Tide Continent.” Song Tingyu said worriedly. “If that were not the case, we would not have been able to survive until now. We would have already been killed by the strongest of the Horned Demon Race.”

Qin Lie knew that what she said was the truth.

When they had entered the evil nether passageway, he had almost suffocated in the terrifying presence of the nether beast he had slipped past as well as the evil race that was rode it.

He believed that, if it was that person pursuing them, he and Song Tingyu would not have had any hope of survival.

Several days later, when the two were hurrying in the direction of the Nether Battlefield, they passed through a town of Horned Demons.

“Do you want to see a town of Horned Demons?” Song Tingyu suddenly stopped and asked.

The two stood at a little mountain peak. The peak was bare and nothing grew. From this little peak, they could see that there was a little town nearby.

“A Horned Demon town? Are you interested in seeing one?” Qin Lie was puzzled.

“I’ve never seen one before, so I’m interested. The strongest people of the Horned Demon Race have either entered the Scarlet Tide Continent or are preparing to do so. There should not be any strong individuals left in the town.” Song Tingyu became alert. “There shouldn’t be any trouble as long as we are careful.”

“Oh, then there should be no harm in looking.” Qin Lie nodded.

“Then we shall go.” Song Tingyu’s eyes flashed with interest. She walked ahead and killed off vicious plants along the way.

The two sneaked towards the town of Horned Demons.

“There is a large tree there. After I cut off the vitality inside it, we can climb the tree to look directly into the town.” Song Tingyu’s eyes were bright as they quickly moved to the tree that was more than ten meters tall.

When they arrived, the branches of the large tree that were covered in thorns and sharp serrated leaves seemed to detect an uncomfortable vitality. It then started to shake violently.

The plants of the Nether Realm held an innate animosity toward beings that contained spirit energy fluctuations.

Song Tingyu laughed lightly. She raised her long sword and avoided the attacks of the branches, strongly stabbing the trunk of the tree a few times.

Dashes of vicious rainbow light ran deep inside the ancient wood and, in a short while, killed off the ancient tree. Then Song Tingyu used her rainbow wings to carry Qin Lie to the top of the tree. Obscured by its dense foliage, they could observe this Horned Demon town which didn’t look all too special.

This little town was neither large nor small. There were slightly more than one hundred buildings. Some were made from wood.

Others were built from bones, giving them an extremely crude appearance. The architecture was bland. All the buildings were square in shape and had no sense of beauty.

There were many female and elderly Horned Demons. There were also some young mature Horned Demon fighters that were active inside the city. They seemed to be preparing supplies for a great war, storing up food and dried meat. It seemed that those supplies would be transported somewhere else.

Inside the city, there were many nether beasts. Spirit Corroding Beasts, Demon Armor Insects, Spirit Hunting Beasts, and Nether Giant Tailed Lizards could be seen. These nether beasts were clearly tame.

There was a little plaza at the center of the town where enormous stone slabs stood. Ancient demon pictures were engraved on these slabs and many members of the Horned Demon Race were kneeling in front of them, worshipping them with expressions of reverence. Their faces were pious as though the slabs depicted gods they believed in.

Qin Lie looked over and saw a figure of a demon that seemed familiar. Two large curved horns protruded from the head of the demon, a pair of pitch black wings that could covered the sky behind him, and his surroundings were shrouded in a thick, pitch black energy...

After studying it for a while, Qin Lie’s expression changed slightly. He remembered where he had seen this demon before.

Back in the natural stone forest, it had formed above Gao Yu's head and hovered high above him. The Demon God's shadow!

The Demon God's shadow released by Gao Yu!

The Demon God that was considered pure evil in Scarlet Tide Continent was being worshipped as a god in this Horned Demon town.

It was revered as their protector!

Qin Lie suddenly realized that the spirit art Gao Yu cultivated and the Ogre-faced Rings in his hands were probably not from the Scarlet Tide Continent.

They were from the Nether Realm!

He suddenly felt worried on Gao Yu's behalf. He was concerned that if Gao Yu continued to cultivate, he would one day walk on the path of evil and the Demon God would corrupt his soul.

"What, you have seen the Ancient Demon God before?" Song Tingyu had been paying attention to the change in his expression. She found that when he looked at the stone slab, his expression changed dramatically and she couldn't help asking.

"No, no. I'm just a bit shocked." Qin Lie hid his thoughts.

Then he noticed that Song Tingyu went silent. He felt a wave of bloodlust emanate from her. This bloodlust was extremely sharp, making him feel as though he were sitting on needles, making him feel uncomfortable all over.

“Damn those Horned Demons!” Song Tingyu growled in a low and cold voice, her expression icy.

This shocked Qin Lie who looked to follow her gaze. Then his face also grew cold.

In a corner of the town, a few dozen humans appeared. There were both males and females, all of them completely naked.

Their bones showed through their skin and their eyes were devoid of life. Their bodies were covered in whip marks, blisters from burns, and bite wounds. Some of the people had crisscrossing scars that were frightening to see.

These people were holding the reins of nether beasts and gave off an aura of death. They seemed to be restricted in some unseen way. When they walked, their bodies would occasionally convulse.

There were several females whose lower bodies were swollen, blood and other fluids spilling out. Their breasts showed horrific teeth marks, some of which were fresh with blood.

Song Tingyu looked at them and knew what they had

experienced. She had an expression of great anguish. She gritted her teeth and said in a low voice, “If there ever comes a day that the Scarlet Tide Continent is conquered by the Horned Demons... you, me, and all of our friends and relatives will become nothing more than slaves to be treated like animals.”

Qin Lie looked at these people, trembling at Song Tingyu’s words.

Chapter 260: Those Who Seek Death

Qin Lie and Song Tingyu hid deeper within the tree's foliage and looked down at the Horned Demon town close by.

Song Tingyu's shoulders shuddered slightly, a cold expression on her face. Her body emanated a terrible killing intent. "We may not even compare to nether beasts in the eyes of the Nether Realm's evil races. If they get their hands on us, our fates will be worse than death!"

Sadness shimmered in Song Tingyu's eyes as she watched the captive human girls and imagined their horrible fate.

Qin Lie said nothing, his face grim. He finally realized what kind of horrible fate would await everyone on the Scarlet Tide Continent if their martial practitioners lost the war against the evil races of the Nether Realm.

It would probably be exactly as Song Tingyu said—a fate worse than death!

He had learned the life experiences of several Horned Demon martial practitioners, and before he formed his Soul Lake, his mind had been shaken and he once thought of himself as a clansman of the Horned Demon Race.

From the perspective of the Horned Demon Race, he felt sympathy in his heart and thought that there was nothing wrong with the Horned Demon Race wanting to attack Scarlet Tide

Continent.

However, it was only when he saw the circumstances of the human captives that he finally understood what would happen to his friends and acquaintances if Scarlet Tide Continent ever fell into the hands of the evil races of the Nether Realm.

“That day will never come!” Qin Lie suddenly exclaimed.

“The evil races have already entered the Scarlet Tide Continent…” Song Tingyu sighed deeply.

“Then we shall kill them all! We will force them back to the Nether Realm and permanently seal all the paths to the Scarlet Tide Continent!”

Song Tingyu’s eyes lit up slightly as she looked deeply at him. “There are actually a lot of things that we can do right now.”

“Like what?” Qin Lie turned his head and asked.

“While their elites are in the Scarlet Tide Continent, we can siege and kill the Horned Demons in the Nether Realm. With your Terminator Profound Bombs we can find bigger cities, go to their fortresses, ruin their equipment and supplies, kill their young beasts, destroy their food…” Song Tingyu’s eyes flashed with coldness and she gradually grew more and more excited as she spoke. “With the Terminator Profound Bombs we can do a lot of things! I suddenly realize that you and I may be able to do a lot

more here in Nether Realm than we would outside!”

Qin Lie’s eyes also lit up as he said with excitement, “I still have a lot of Terminator Profound Bombs with me!”

“Excellent!” Song Tingyu grew more excited as well.

“Splurt!”

It was at this moment a Horned Demon martial practitioner inside the city killed a human with a single stab.

Qin Lie and Song Tingyu’s faces went cold again as they returned to watching the Horned Demon town. They realized that, while they were talking, the Horned Demon clansmen had rounded up dozens of human in the small plaza with the upright stone slabs.

Fresh blood gushed out of the stomach of the human who had just been killed. A Horned Demon martial practitioner lifted a wooden pail and gathered the fresh blood that poured out of his stomach.

“Kachak!”

Another human girl was beheaded while her hair was grabbed, and the fresh blood spraying out of her neck splashed against the many stone slabs.

This seemed to be a kind of priest's ritual in preparation for war. The Horned Demons were offering fresh human blood to the demon gods they worshipped, asking for protection and a great victory. They also seemed to be wishing for acquire some kind of blessing from the demon gods.

Qin Lie's expression was dark. A murderous intent suddenly gathered in his heart as he watched the Horned Demon clansman who killed the two human slaves.

The two murdered human slaves had shown no resistance whatsoever. The human who had been stabbed even let out a relieved expression—it was as if he had wanted to die a long time ago.

The dead eyes of the rest of the human slaves actually shone with expectation. They seemed to be wishing for their own deaths as well.

"They were originally powerful martial practitioners! They were captured alive by these evil races when they fought them in the Nether Battlefield. How were they reduced to this miserable state?" Song Tingyu suddenly screamed, her usually calm demeanor forgotten as she lost a bit of her control.

Before Qin Lie could react, she pulled his hand, flapped her rainbow wings and actually flew straight out of the tree's foliage, heading towards the Horned Demon town like a beam of light.

"Qin Lie! Show no mercy!" Song Tingyu exclaimed through

clenched teeth.

“Alright!” Qin Lie took out a Terminator Profound Bomb, aimed at the Horned Demon men at the perimeter of the ritual, and threw it.

The Terminator Profound Bomb flashed with deep green electricity, letting out an intense, thunderous energy. Like a meteor, it crashed at the center of the dozens of Horned Demon men.

“Booom!”

An earthshaking explosion erupted forth, immediately followed by a terrifying tidal wave of force.

The houses built from bone and wood shattered instantly. Amidst the shards of bone and splintered wood, the painful cries of the Horned Demon men resounded instantly.

Many bloodied corpses were scattered around the center of the blast site. The few lucky survivors howling on top of their lungs had their throats cut by Song Tingyu’s sharp sword just as they entered the blast site’s perimeter.

Rays of colorful rainbow light crisscrossed and decapitated the many Horned Demon clansmen into tiny bits of flesh.

“Into the plaza!” Song Tingyu charged straight for the plaza, her

figure dancing lithely.

Qin Lie followed her closely from behind.

“Uoooh! Uooooh!”

All of the Horned Demon warriors in the entire town howled madly at the skies when they heard the explosion and rushed over from all directions.

“Qin Lie! Blast the place that has the most people!” Song Tingyu shouted.

“Alright!” Qin Lie took out another three Terminator Profound Bombs and threw one out at the Horned Demon warriors charging towards him.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!”

The entire town shook as if a tremendous earthquake was in progress, causing many houses to crumble to pieces.

One deep pit after another abruptly opened up in this small town. Every one of these deep pits had many bloody corpses in them.

There weren’t many Horned Demon warriors in this town in the first place, and their ranks were obviously somewhat low as well. Most of them had only two or three horns and, after four

Terminator Profound Bombs had exploded, almost all the warriors in this town were dead.

There were only some women, elderly, weak, and sick Horned Demon clansmen who had no combat capabilities left at the edges of the town. They did not dare to get closer and only stared at Qin Lie and Song Tingyu with extreme hate.

After gazing for a while and realizing that the only fate waiting for them here was death, they quickly escaped.

In just a few minutes, there was no longer a single living Horned Demon clansman in the entire town. The few Horned Demon warriors who had killed the two human slaves at the plaza had also been killed by Song Tingyu's earlier charge.

After looking at his surroundings and confirming that there were no longer any Horned Demon warriors in sight, only then Qin Lie turned around and moved to the plaza.

There were still dozens of human captives left in the plaza. A trace of light flashed across their dead eyes. They shivered and pulled pieces of beast skin and cloth from the Horned Demon corpses to cover up their bodies.

"I belong to Profound Heaven Alliance. You... when were you imprisoned in the Nether Realm?" Song Tingyu watched their terrible appearance and felt unbelievably sad.

“I am a martial practitioner from Cloud Sky Mountain. I was originally at the middle stage of the Manifestation Realm. Fifteen years ago, during the great war at the Nether Battlefield, I was knocked out and imprisoned by a Horned Demon clansman after we had been defeated.” A person answered.

“I am a martial practitioner from Dark Asura Hall. I used to be at the early stage of the Netherpassage Realm. I was a commander. Twenty years ago, I was given a mission to scout the movements of evil races in the levels beneath the Nether Battlefield. I was caught unaware…” Another person answered.

“I am a martial practitioner from the Blue Feather Association. I was also in the Manifestation Realm. While I was hunting a Nether Giant Tail Lizard on the Nether Battlefield, I ran into a Horned Demon warrior and was dealt a grievous injury. I was captured alive.” A woman clad in green and purple said sadly.

“I am…”

“I am…”

These people softly talked about their experiences with lowered heads. Once they were finished, they all fell into silence.

While they were on the Scarlet Tide Continent, they were once the elites of various forces. Even the weakest of them were at the early stage of the Manifestation Realm. They had all participated in countless bloody battles on the Nether Battlefield and fought against many nether beasts and evil races.

However, they were tragically captured and imprisoned in the Nether Realm since, hence experiencing the darkest moment in their entire lives.

When they recalled their former lives, their hearts bled.

“We can take you back to the Scarlet Tide Continent!” Qin Lie exclaimed.

“No, we can’t... and we won’t return either.” The woman said with her head bowed. Without looking at Qin Lie and Song Tingyu’s expressions, she spoke quietly. “Our bodies were infested with a kind of boring insect that prevents us from even committing suicide. The moment we have such thoughts, these parasites will activate and paralyze our bodies, making us unable to even lift a finger.”

Qin Lie recalled the way they collapsed while walking and suddenly realized that they had planned to killed themselves at that point. Yet their intentions were discovered by the borers and they were subjected to intense pain that caused them to writhe in terrible pain.

“Without the world’s spirit energy to cultivate, without spirit stones to replenish our spirit seas, our bodies and hearts were corrupted by nether demonic energy long ago. The fact that our blood has been consumed by demonic beasts, that we have parasites in our bodies, all the things that have happened... we cannot live with such a past. It is impossible for us to go back. We

only want release.” A person said softly.

“Release is all I want.”

“I just hope to die painlessly.”

“We can never go back.”

“……”

Their eyes had no will to live. There was only a strong desire for death. Their minds seemed to have withered a long time ago.

Qin Lie could not feel the slightest bit of life from their bodies. As for their hearts… they were long dead.

Small pools of tears welled up in Song Tingyu’s eyes. Biting her lower lip—not even realizing that it was bleeding—she looked deeply at these people before suddenly throwing down a bottle of pills. With a choked voice, she stated, “These pills… can help you on your way.”

She suddenly turned around and moved swiftly towards outside. “Let’s go, Qin Lie.”

Qin Lie watched them quietly pick up the pills on the floor and swallow them one by one. He watched them walk towards their deaths willingly…

He gripped his fists quietly and sucked in a deep breath. With icy coldness filling the bottom of his heart, he too turned around and left with newfound resolve.

Chapter 261: Destroy!

According to the memories Qin Lie had analyzed, he knew that the Horned Demon Race was just one of the evil races in the Nether Realm. They did not make up all of them.

The size of the Nether Realm exceeded Qin Lie's imagination. This part of the Nether Realm that connected to Scarlet Tide Continent was but a small portion of the entire Nether Realm.

He learned from the few Horned Demon warriors' memories that this particular clan of the Horned Demon Race consisted of dozens of towns and cities. Yet this clan was just a single offshoot of the Horned Demon Race. The entire Horned Demon Race was made up of dozens of similar clans.

Song Tingyu and Qin Lie had temporarily changed directions and readied themselves—not to return to Nether Battlefield immediately but to do their best in attacking and destroying Horned Demon cities and towns, crippling their offense on the Scarlet Tide Continent.

Qin Lie had analyzed the memories and had a clear understanding of the surrounding Horned Demon cities. With him leading the way, the two of them began to attack one such city.

The Terminator Profound Bomb had a clear effect when used in sieging cities. As the Terminator Profound Bombs exploded one after another, seven Horned Demon cities were flattened. The Horned Demon warriors inside the city were killed by either the

Terminator Profound Bombs or Song Tingyu.

Everywhere they went, Horned Demon cities were destroyed and many Horned Demon warriors were eliminated.

Among these cities, they had encountered many other captured humans.

These people had been imprisoned for many years. The human women were used by the male Horned Demons to release their carnal desires. The human men were used as hatcheries to raise the demonic insects of Nether Realm. The blood of both were sacrificed to the Demon God...

In the Nether Realm, these captured humans had experienced the darkest part of their lives. They could not even die as they lived a life worse than cattle.

These people had all chosen to die painlessly after Qin Lie and Song Tingyu had destroyed the Horned Demon cities.

Not a single one of them wanted to live in pain any longer.

As a result, Song Tingyu had thrown down pills to help them along their way.

Every time this happened, Qin Lie and Song Tingyu hardened their resolve to destroy the Horned Demons.

……

The outer world, Armament City.

The decrepit city walls were crawling with all sorts of ugly Nether Realm plants. The sky was perpetually dark and nether demonic energy hung overhead like thick black clouds, preventing sunlight from shining down.

Inside a cellar, Gao Yu still cultivated singlemindedly, borrowing the thick nether demonic energy to cultivate the Nine Hell Wandering Soul Record and familiarizing himself with the remnant soul of the Demon God inside the Ogre-faced Rings, merging with it little by little.

That day, Gao Yu's body suddenly shuddered as wisps of wraiths and ghosts lurked within his eyes.

There was a Soul Lake as black as ink inside his mind, seemingly formed from those wraiths and ghosts, reflecting all sorts of evil within people's hearts.

His body released an extremely dark and evil aura. The terrifying shadow of the Demon God could be faintly seen deep within his pupils.

"Aooooh!"

Gao Yu suddenly lifted his head and howled.

Seething black demonic energy wildly surged out from within his Ogre-faced Rings. As if the energy had turned into a pair of demonic wings, it suddenly pulled him into the skies.

The demonic energy seethed, flying through the dark sky, towards the evil nether passageway.

Many nether beasts in Armament Sect and the Horned Demon clansmen in the caves of Flame Volcano sensed an aura of pure evil and darkness that reached straight into their souls.

They walked out into the open and looked in the direction of the evil nether passageway, watching the dark energy of the demonic phantom surrounding Gao Yu suddenly descend into it.

A Horned Demon with six horns sprouting from the back of his head and an appearance as stalwart as a black stone, emerged from a cave within the remnants of Flame Volcano.

This man was the Horned Demon elite that Song Tingyu and Qin Lie had passed by in the evil nether passageway.

He stood at the cave entrance, his eyes dark and ice cold. He stared at the demonic phantom diving into the evil nether passageway and yelled in the language of the Nether Realm with excitement.

Many Horned Demon elites heard his cries and also grew excited. They lifted their arms and cried out as if they had gone insane.

If Qin Lie was here, he would understand the meaning behind their cheers: The son of the Demon God had descended!

Gao Yu was the son that they spoke of!

Under the cover of the dark demonic energy, Gao Yu went through the evil nether passageway and reached the Nether Realm, appearing at the gathering place of the many nether beasts and Horned Demon martial practitioners.

The moment he appeared, the nether beasts and Horned Demon clansmen who were waiting to enter evil nether passageway wore looks of pleasant surprise.

The Demon God's shadow that had appeared in the natural stone forest now formed in the dark skies of the Nether Realm. This shadow wrapped around Gao Yu and shot into the distance like a beam of black light.

Beneath him, all of the Horned Demon clansmen and nether beasts were howling madly, shivering with excitement.

The Demon God's shadow dragged Gao Yu, flying extremely fast until they reached a place incredibly rich with nether demonic energy—a cluster of mountains.

At close range, one would realize that these mountains were all carved in the shape of ancient Demon Gods. They appeared to be tearing and biting at the sky, howling as if in wild combat...

A total of five mountains carved into the awe-inspiring shapes of the ancient Demon Gods. One of those shapes resembled the Demon God's shadow that surrounded Gao Yu.

The objective of the Demon God's shadow was to lead Gao Yu to these five mountains as quickly as possible. It carried Gao Yu straight into the mountain where they vanished without a trace.

.....

At the entrance of a Horned Demon city.

With the dark sky looming overhead, Qin Lie and Song Tingyu snuck all the way to the city's entrance before Song Tingyu slowed to a stop.

She gestured for Qin Lie to keep silent before suddenly closing her eyes. An incredibly palpable soul energy fluctuation emanated from her body.

Qin Lie watched her, knowing that she was using her soul's perception abilities to ascertain the situation inside the city before to deciding whether or not they should act.

They had always done this before they attacking. Song Tingyu

would first confirm the number of elites inside the city and determine if there were any extraordinary warriors that were out of their league.

Qin Lie saw Song Tingyu suddenly frown.

“Something’s wrong…” Song Tingyu opened her eyes with doubt and confusion. “There are no Horned Demon martial practitioners in the city but there are a few human captives. Could they have known we were coming and evacuated beforehand?”

Qin Lie frowned. “If they really wanted to evacuate, they would either kill or bring the captives with them. Why did they leave them behind?”

“That’s why I said that something’s wrong.” Song Tingyu said softly.

“Did you sense any Horned Demon elites at all?” Qin Lie grew cautious.

“No, there isn’t even the slightest hint of a Horned Demon clansmen. This is incredibly strange.” The doubt in Song Tingyu’s eyes grew. She pondered for a moment before suddenly saying, “Let’s go in and have a look. We should be able to handle anyone we come across as long as they aren’t a five Horned Demon clansman. In such a small city, at this point of time, there should not be a five horned elite in the area. Let’s go take a look.”

Although Qin Lie felt that something was off as well, he did not think to object her words and nodded. “Alright. Let’s be careful.”

He took out five Terminator Profound Bombs just in case.

Having destroyed so many Horned Demon cities and killing their Horned Demon warriors, he only had eight Terminator Profound Bombs remaining.

These eight Terminator Profound Bombs were the last of his trump cards. It was also the reason why he and Song Tingyu still dared to attack Horned Demon cities.

The two of them hid their auras and slowly entered this city with serious expressions. They passed through many simple buildings built from bone and gradually headed to the largest white bone structure to the south.

The aura of the humans came from inside this structure. This was their objective.

White bones had been placed one by one to form a huge house that covered an area of almost two acres. From afar, this house was like the crouching skeleton of a gigantic nether beast, emanating a dark and evil aura.

The duo pushed open a bone door and entered the huge structure. They discovered that there were eight human girls imprisoned inside white bone cages at its center.

These girls were different from the thin bony humans they had come across earlier. These human girls had plump bodies and skin that glowed with a healthy and seductive sheen. Additionally, they were not naked. They were wearing sultry see-through gowns that wrapped around their voluptuous curves leaving very little to the imagination.

They wore silver collars around their necks. Drool dripped from the corner of their lusciously full lips, their eyes appearing blank and dim. They posed like dogs inside the bone cages, their butts jutting into the air slightly. Incredibly obvious bite marks covered their butts.

The entire room gave off an obscene odor, affecting anyone who entered.

“Go!” Song Tingyu barely glanced at the scene before a look of shock appeared on her exquisite face. She grabbed Qin Lie’s arm and dragged him outside immediately.

She knew very well that a Horned Demon warrior that could train these human girls into sex slaves was definitely the most terrifying of them all.

Only a powerful Horned Demon clansman would have the peculiar interest of toying with human girls and the leisure to do so.

She immediately understood that this was a trap—a trap

specifically aimed at them.

She also knew that their recent destruction of the Horned Demon cities had attracted the attention of high rank Horned Demon elites. Their opponents had predicted their approximate location and chose this town to lure them in.

“Whoosh! Whoosh!”

A Soul Devouring Beast that resembled mountain of flesh covered in disgusting pimples appeared. Wisps of smoke escaped from its pimples to form many savage, vile souls.

A round table made of white bone sat atop of this Soul Devouring Beast. A stalwart Horned Demon man stood atop this table. His long tail flickered through the air with earsplitting sounds.

There was an obscene look in his icy cold eyes. He stared at Song Tingyu from afar, his gaze like a wet and slippery poisonous snake exploring Song Tingyu’s shapely body.

Five horns ran down his spine!

This was a Horned Demon elite who could rival a Fulfillment Realm martial practitioner!

Chapter 262: To Go Back Or Not To Go Back...

“Go!”

Song Tingyu extended her rainbow wings, pulled Qin Lie along with one hand, and rushed towards the sky.

A Horned Demon warrior with five horns that was equal to a Fulfillment Realm human martial practitioner and a Rank Four Soul Devouring Beast were definitely not entities that she and Qin Lie could deal with.

The moment she saw the Soul Devouring Beast appear, Song Tingyu realized the reason why she hadn’t managed to sense the energy of elites in this city.

A Rank Four Soul Devouring Beast could hide their soul aura and confuse the detection of the soul. It kept her from detecting the soul energy inside the city, so she was unable to sense the five horned warrior hiding within.

“Uoooooh!”

The Horned Demon warrior with five horns opened his mouth and let out a terrifying howl. That howl felt like sharp blades and iron needles that could penetrate metal and shatter stone. Its sound wave cut straight into Qin Lie and Song Tingyu’s minds.

It even seemed to tear open holes in the sky above.

“Crack!”

Qin Lie grasped his head and felt as if his skull was about to shatter. The terrifying penetrating sound wave hurt him to the point that he bled out of seven orifices.

Song Tingyu’s lithe, normally dancing body came to a sudden stop as her flying speed slowed instantly.

Pain also showed on her exquisite face. It was obvious that the sound wave caused her considerable discomfort as well.

“Ouuuuuuuuuh!”

The Soul Devouring Beast let out a howl that sounded like a distant cry from beneath the city. Gray souls burst out of the pimples that covered it.

The souls floated out into the open and swiftly formed into many vile souls and vicious ghosts. They rode the wind towards Song Tingyu and Qin Lie. Dark, cold and evil oppressive mind energy surged like waves, layer after layer, towards Song Tingyu and Qin Lie seeking to attack their minds and destroy their hearts.

Countless evil apparitions, an endless sea of blood, and mountains made of corpses and bone instantly appeared inside Qin Lie’s mind. It was like the most horrifying purgatory or deathly

abyss of the nine hells. It corroded his soul and invaded the Soul Lake in his mind.

Qin Lie, who had reached the early stage of the Manifestation Realm had only recently formed his Soul Lake. At this moment, it was as if his Soul Lake had been tainted with an endless amount of rotting corpses and wicked ghosts.

“Qin Lie!” Song Tingyu cried out. Her voice was like a sharp sword beam that stabbed into the mind.

Qin Lie’s entire body shuddered, barely managing to gather his mind consciousness and withdraw into the Soul Suppressing Orb.

The fear, worry, and terror in his soul finally drew the Soul Suppressing Orb’s attention. A ray of purifying light capable of smothering all evil shone from the center of his forehead.

Under the light’s illumination, all evil, negative emotions, and illusions were swiftly scattered and obliterated like smoke.

His originally tarnished Soul Lake became clean and translucent once more.

Qin Lie’s eyes became clear again. He turned his head to look back, lightning flashing in his eyes and the rumble of thunder in his body.

Bolts of dark blue lightning swam around him like wildly dancing

electric serpents. The deep rumbling of thunder ran continuously throughout his body.

All of the negative emotions and intent invading thoughts from the Soul Devouring Beast were instantly reduced to smoke by bolts of lightning the moment they came near him.

Even Song Tingyu was no longer influenced by the Soul Devouring Beast's soul attack because of his Heavenly Thunder Eradication.

Thunder and lightning were the bane of all things evil. Even if Qin Lie was only in the Manifestation Realm, the moment he activated all of his thunder and lightning energy, he would still be able to nullify all of the Soul Devouring Beast's soul attack.

"Blast the ground below us with the Terminator Profound Bombs!" Song Tingyu exclaimed softly while gritting her teeth as a trace of blood trickled from the corner of her lips.

Qin Lie looked at the Soul Devouring Beast running towards them like a living mountain, looked at the Horned Demon warrior on top of its body lifting a gigantic club with an odd grin, looked at the certainty of success leaking out of his eyes...

Three Terminator Profound Bombs flew out from his palm and, like three bolts of lightning, arced towards the Soul Devouring Beasts chasing them.

“Explode!” Qin Lie’s thoughts flashed as lightning shot from his eyes.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!”

Three earthshaking rumbles came from the city below. The many large houses instantly collapsed. The wood splinters and bone dust formed a thick cloud that covered the entire area in dark gray smoke.

“Aoooh!”

For a moment, they couldn’t see the Soul Devouring Beast or the Horned Demon warrior with five horns, but they could hear an angry roar. Suddenly, the blood stained body of the Soul Devouring Beast appeared amidst the roar from the wreckage.

The Soul Devouring Beast actually managed to survive the three Terminator Profound Bombs despite the massive amounts it bled. In fact, its carnal instincts awoke as it worked itself into a frenzy.

The Horned Demon warrior with five horns still stood atop it, covered in dust and bone fragments. He looked slightly disheveled but was otherwise unhurt.

“My Terminator Profound Bomb can only kill a Netherpassage Realm expert at best and it also must be detonated at close range. The Rank Four Soul Devouring Beast is even scarier than a normal Netherpassage Realm expert and it’s a nether beast. Its physical

strength far exceeds that of a human, so it may be a little difficult to kill the Soul Devouring Beast with the Terminator Profound Bombs. It will be even more impossible to kill the Horned Demon warrior with the Terminator Profound Bombs. Its explosive power is limited and not invincible. There is almost no hope of success to destroy these two with the Terminator Profound Bomb."

He had just finished speaking when he noticed that Song Tingyu had tossed him towards the woods outside the city.

Just when he thought that Song Tingyu was going to sacrifice him and use her rainbow wings to escape alone, he realized that Song Tingyu had stopped in midair.

"Boom!"

Qin Lie's body fell into the forest. The tall trees and bushes slithered towards him as if they smelled a vicious beast covered in blood.

He destroyed the woods around him with thunder and lifted his head. He realized that Song Tingyu's entire body shined with rainbow light and rose high up into the air. Her beautiful face unleashed a blinding light.

A translucent ball shimmering with divine rainbow light appeared in her palm. Only the size of a fist, the ball held countless holes in it.

At this moment, however, every one of the small holes were shining with prismatic light. Every shocking ray of unimaginable energy contained a tremendous, divine might.

Song Tingyu gripped the round rainbow ball tightly as strings of multicolored light came out of her thin, long fingers. The light flying out of the ball slowly spread like vines, stretching to her arms, shoulders, upper body, thin waist, beautiful thighs, and ankles...

Waves of astonishing divine might emanated from her entire body in the form of cascading rainbow light. At this moment, it was as if Song Tingyu had broken through the barrier of the Fulfillment Realm. Her aura and power rose dramatically.

Qin Lie was incredibly shocked by the energy emanating from her body. It proved to him that her true strength was incredibly terrifying.

“Qin Lie! You go first! Escape in the direction we discussed earlier!” Song Tingyu glared at the Soul Devouring Beast and the Horned Demon warrior with five horns. Yet her words were directed at Qin Lie.

Qin Lie looked at the shining Song Tingyu who resembled a rainbow goddess. His expression was heavy and he still hesitated within his heart.

“Go!” Song Tingyu exclaimed softly.

Qin Lie nodded and rushed in the direction of Nether Battlefield as fast as he could.

He knew that he would only be a burden if he stayed. At this level of combat, the effect he could have was miniscule—he would only weigh Song Tingyu down.

Therefore, he quietly retreated.

His expression was incredibly dark and he felt unspeakably frustrated on the inside. For the first time, he was furious with the inadequacy of his realm.

“I do not have enough power! My Realm isn’t enough! I didn’t even have the power to participate in this battle!” Qin Lie gritted his teeth in silence and his expression grew savage. His pupils were filled with deep frustration and anger.

As he ran in the distance, he looked back repeatedly to watch Song Tingyu in the skies.

He could see that Song Tingyu was already locked in combat against the five horned warrior and the Soul Devouring Beast. Even this far away he could hear the sounds of energy clashing, see the radiant rainbow behind him, and feel a shocking amount of intense energy.

He retreated while continuously looking back.

He realized that the rainbow light in the distance was growing thinner. He could feel the energy waves that belonged to Song Tingyu grow weaker and weaker...

“This is the Nether Realm!” Qin Lie let out a low roar.

In the Nether Realm, it would be incredibly difficult for Song Tingyu to recover spirit energy. She also had to protect her entire body with spirit energy to prevent nether demonic energy from invading.

In this place, there was no way she could unleash one hundred percent of her power. She would be restrained by the environment in many ways.

The Horned Demon elite had no such limitations whatsoever and was able to unleash the full extent of his strength.

Watching Song Tingyu’s rainbow light growing weaker and weaker, sensing the life energy behind him swiftly weaken, Qin Lie’s retreating footsteps grew heavier and heavier as if they had been filled with lead.

He suddenly came to a stop.

He turned around and looked at the light flicker, sometimes bright and sometimes weak, and asked himself repeatedly, “To go back, or not to go back...”

He did not know if Song Tingyu could escape.

From his current point of view, the rainbow light that belonged to Song Tingyu was growing weaker. He felt that Song Tingyu would most likely not survive this.

If he went back, he might not necessarily be able to help her. There was even an incredibly high chance that he would be killed trying to do so.

If he didn't go back, he might be able to temporarily avoid a crisis, but he had to ask himself... Could he live with himself if he left her like this?

In the future, if he managed to survive, would the cowardly choice he made today would become his inner demon and torture him for the rest of his life?

Qin Lie sucked in a deep breath and forced himself to calm down. Logic and emotion were waging a great war within him.

Suddenly, the scene from earlier appeared in his mind—the giant structure imprisoning those female slaves. These slaves were trapped in bone cages. Their minds were lost and their eyes were only filled with lust. They were wearing collars and they lifted their butts like dogs...

These female slaves were kept alive by the Horned Demon warrior with five horns. This Horned Demon clansman had looked

at Song Tingyu with unconcealed lust.

Qin Lie shuddered.

“If I die, then so be it!” He gritting his teeth, then let out an angry roar and turned back,rushing with all his strength in the direction he had escaped from earlier.

He took out all five remaining Terminator Profound Bombs. Gripping them tightly with both hands, he locked his gaze in the direction of the city with a terrible ferocity flooding from deep within his eyes.

Chapter 263: Turning Back!

Song Tingyu floated in the air above the city clad in rainbow light, various bright and colorful ribbons twisting from her sleeves like serpents.

The bright, divine lights contained a tremendous amount of energy. Like colorful rings of light, they shined through the dark, gray sky to the city below her.

Not a single intact building, wooden or bone, could be seen in the city that had been devastated by the three Terminator Profound Bombs.

The Soul Devouring Beast crouched amidst the ruins. Its soul fragments transformed into numerous demonic beings and vile souls. They continuously formed mind blasts that could corrupt one's soul.

The Horned Demon warrior with five horns lifted a long, thick club in his hands and let out one earthshaking roar after another.

The body of the club was covered in countless ugly thorns. They exuded a thick aura of blood, violence, and hatred. The aura danced around his hands like wisps of black demonic energy, like black clouds that spread toward the sky.

The colorful rings of light that descended from Song Tingyu's body clashed against the surging demonic energy. A terrifying shockwave instantly erupted from the impact. The discharged

energy ruined the city even further, as if it had been struck by a meteor.

“Whoosh whoosh whoosh!”

The Soul Devouring Beast’s soul fragments continuously writhed and reformed in midair, slowly transforming into a pure soul state.

This soul confronted Song Tingyu in the air and unleashed an evil consciousness capable of smothering one’s soul. It cooperated with the Horned Demon warrior on the ground to suppress Song Tingyu.

“Aooooo!”

The roar of the Horned Demon warrior with five horns grew more and more intense as he discovered that Song Tingyu still had not fallen from their attacks.

He flung his club into the air. It spun, stirring the air around it, and formed a black, abyssal whirlpool.

At the center of the whirlpool, the club spun non-stop and caused the abyss inside of it to absorb a huge amount of nether demonic energy from the surroundings and wildly increase the speed of its rotation.

The thick nether demonic energy gathered from every direction and poured into the center of the black abyss inside the whirlpool.

This caused the abyss to release an evil so pure that it threatened to extinguish all traces of life.

The Horned Demon warrior suddenly sat atop the Soul Devouring Beast's true body. The five demonic horns at the back of his neck let out clumps of black flames. The moment these flames appeared, they consumed the faint light of the dark sky causing it to slowly fade.

The black flames flew into the air, devouring the light of the dark sky little by little, making the surroundings to grow dimmer and dimmer.

On the other hand, the abyss grew larger at a terrifying rate, continuously taking in the nether demonic energy around it. It was as if the black flame's appearance sped up its growth by leaps and bounds.

The rainbow light shining from Song Tingyu's body swiftly dimmed after the appearance of the black flames.

Even that divine light seemed like it would be swallowed up, as if the rainbow light's energy was being exhausted by the flames little by little...

The pitch black abyss moved slowly through the sky, lurching in Song Tingyu's direction.

It threatened to devour Song Tingyu whole!

The Soul Devouring Beast's soul let out an evil mind wave that would blot out the sky and cover the earth. It sought to entangle with Song Tingyu's soul to prevent her from concentrating and channeling her spirit art.

At this moment, Song Tingyu appeared to err on the side of caution. Her entire mind, body, and soul seemed to be corroded by the nether demonic energy, instilling a feeling of helplessness.

Her left hand subconsciously gripped her spatial ring. A deathly determined look appeared on her exquisite face—it seemed like she still had something to rely on.

She still had one last trump card!

However, just when she was about to activate her final trump card, she heard the sound of approaching footsteps.

She immediately turned around.

The footsteps belonged to Qin Lie who was actually returning from the way he went, his appearance insane with violence.

"Are you insane?!" Song Tingyu yelled out angrily.

In her eyes, Qin Lie's irrational return was simply an act of suicide. He wouldn't be able to help at all.

Qin Lie, who had suddenly lost his calm rationality and turned insane at a critical moment, did not touch her heart. She only saw him as extremely stupid.

In reality, she still hoped to escape from this situation. As the sole daughter of Alliance Chief Song Yu of the Profound Heaven Alliance, a woman who could contend with the other great forces and always have the upper hand, she had a lot of cards to play.

Even if Qin Lie did not return, her death was not necessarily guaranteed.

Yet, now that Qin Lie had suddenly returned, not only could he not be any assistance, he had even disrupted her tempo.

Song Tingyu's beautiful eyes shone with sparkling rainbow light. Her expression grew dark and uncertain. She hesitated, unable to decide whether to sacrifice Qin Lie and activate her final counterattack...

The moment that her counterattack was unleashed, the Soul Devouring Beast and the Horned Demon warrior with five horns would be severely injured even if they managed to survive. Qin Lie would definitely perish. Even Song Tingyu would suffer severe injuries and be forced lay low for a while.

The reason she asked Qin Lie to escape first was a part of her plan. In the hopes that she would be able to draw out the fight until the very last minute and activate her final counterattack,

severely injuring or even killing the Horned Demon warrior and the Soul Devouring Beast then look for Qin Lie while heavily wounded. She would then find Qin Lie, who would have escaped the bloody battle, and have him to carry her and escape this place immediately.

A huge flaw had appeared in her plan due to Qin Lie's return. The moment she activated her final counterattack, her opponent would either be severely damaged or killed, but Qin Lie would perish for sure. As for her, who would be severely injured... no one would be there to help her escape.

This was the Nether Realm after all.

If no one could hide and shelter her, who would be severely injured, then how could she possibly escape the Horned Demon Race's pursuit?

At this moment, she was not moved by Qin Lie's courageous return. Instead, she was angry at Qin Lie's irrational disobedience.

"Zzzt zzt zzzt! Pak pak pak!"

Bolts of dark blue lightning shot out from all over Qin Lie's body and surged towards the souls of the Soul Devouring Beast.

The waves of thunder energy contained within the lightning were incredibly powerful.

Even the Soul Devouring Beast had no choice but to avoid the brunt of its natural enemy. Its souls instantly shrank back into its main body.

“Aooh!”

Upon the return of its souls, the Soul Devouring Beast let out an angry howl and suddenly dove towards Qin Lie who was still on the ground. He had yet to be brought into the sky by Song Tingyu.

Qin Lie raised his head and saw a humongous shadow pressing down from above.

It was like the descent of a mountain!

A thick, terrible stench and an openly violent aura poured out of the Soul Devouring Beast’s true body. Its momentum alone was enough to cause every hair on Qin Lie to stand on end.

A Rank Four Soul Devouring Beast could rival a Netherpassage Realm expert. Moreover, a Horned Demon warrior with five horns stood atop it. How could he possibly fight against these foes?

Naturally, it would be with the Terminator Profound Bomb!

“Explode!”

Qin Lie threw all five remaining Terminator Profound Bombs

into the air and detonated them at the same time.

“Boom boom boom boom boom!”

The five Terminator Profound Bombs exploded at once, instantly forming a shockwave that compressed space itself and caused it to visibly collapse.

At this moment, it was as if the world had gone silent. Qin Lie could only watch as terrifying folds of space rippled in midair and the narrow gaps between them tore apart little by little.

He could not hear any voices at all.

Back at Armament Sect, the six Terminator Profound Bombs that exploded at the same time caused space itself to collapse. Its might was endless.

Today he exploded five Terminator Profound Bombs together and, although its might was weaker, it was just as terrifying.

Beneath the collapsing sky, Qin Lie feared that the sky might actually fall and shatter.

He saw the pitch black abyss that the Horned Demon warrior with five horns had struggled to create magically vanish into the gaps of space torn by the Terminator Profound Bombs.

He saw the Horned Demon warrior suddenly spit out a mouthful of fresh blood.

He saw countless wounds abruptly appearing on the Soul Devouring Beast's mountain-like body, as if it had been cut by sharp blades. The wounds were deep, clearly exposing bone to the open air. Blood flowed profusely.

Qin Lie saw everything above him, but could not hear a single sound until the gaps in space began to shrink upon themselves once more.

"Boom! Boooom!"

As if held at bay until that moment, only then did terrifying rumbles of thunder explode wildly.

He saw the Soul Devouring Beast's humongous body being blasted away before landing heavily dozens of meters in the distance.

He saw the Horned Demon warrior with five horns roaring angrily at the repairing gaps of space. His roar was earthshaking—his club had been lost within the folds of space and had vanished entirely!

Song Tingyu's eyes lit up.

The might of the five Terminator Profound Bombs exploding at

once was far more terrifying than that of three Terminator Profound Bombs. It had truly dealt a grievous injury to the Soul Devouring Beast.

Suddenly, she realized that the explosions of the Terminator Profound Bombs could build off of each other. At the same time, she grew furious and yelled at Qin Lie. “Why hadn’t you detonated all eight Terminator Profound Bombs at once?”

If the might of five Terminator Profound Bombs could be multiplied to such a degree, then what about eight?

Wouldn’t it be able to kill the Soul Devouring Beast once and for all and severely damage the Horned Demon with five horns, possibly even killing him outright?

“Detonating eight of them at once…” Covered in dust, Qin Lie turned to look at Song Tingyu and said, “You and I would probably be dead as well.”

Song Tingyu shuddered on the inside.

“Awoo! Awoo! Awoo!”

The angry roars of the Soul Devouring Beast’s souls resounded from afar. The Soul Devouring Beast’s main soul and its other soul fragments had gathered together to form a complete soul which floated into the air.

Its corporeal body had been severely injured by the Terminator Profound Bombs and lost all combat capability. It could only gather its soul to soar into the air, trying to murder Qin Lie at all costs.

The Horned Demon warrior with five horns also howled madly and rushed with the Soul Devouring Beast after losing his club.

He and the Soul Devouring Beast locked onto Qin Lie immediately. This time, Qin Lie was their only target!

“Even with this they still did not die…”

A feeling of helplessness grew inside him after seeing the Soul Devouring Beast and the Horned Demon elite rush toward him. After losing the Terminator Profound Bombs, he truly had no other way to fight.

“Go!” Song Tingyu softly exclaimed once more.

Qin Lie stood his ground and frowned. He said solemnly, “I’m not leaving.”

Sucking in a deep breath and preparing to sacrifice his life, he gathered all the energy within his three thunder Natal Palaces. He planned to utterly eliminate the Soul Devouring Beast’s souls with thunder and lightning!

As if detecting his suicidal intentions, the python tattoo hidden

at the back of Qin Lie's neck suddenly faded into existence.

Tiny bits of lightning swiftly gathered in the ancient and small, icy eyes of the python.

An oppressive aura flared out from Qin Lie's body. That aura gave off a deep and immeasurable feeling, one that was incredibly ancient and had been refined through the countless ages of time.

"Booom!"

The dull rumble of thunder from the Ninth Heaven resounded from inside Qin Lie's body. The rumble increased in intensity, growing louder and more terrifying!

The python tattoo on Qin Lie's neck became life-like along with the angry, rumbling thunder.

Not long after, its head shook slightly and separated from Qin Lie's neck.

Chapter 264: Thunder's Divine Might!

The python tattoo raged in tandem with the rumbling thunder. It clearly emerged from his neck, and as the thunder grew louder and louder, the python's head came out from the back of Qin Lie's neck in a swaying motion.

First, the python's head appeared. Then its body followed behind it before finally, ending with its tail...

This python that had hidden itself behind Qin Lie's neck for so long had finally shown itself amidst the earthshaking thunder.

At first, the python was only as long as an arm. However, after it appeared in midair, it began to expand madly like a balloon!

In just a short amount of time, the python had expanded to become hundreds of meters long. Its body was covered in dark blue scales and thunder roared within its scaly armor. There was even a small horn on its head. Deep within its pupils, a domineering aura that dwarfed all living beings could be felt.

A serpent covered in scaly armor with a small protrusion on its head. This was the sign that a snake was about to turn into a dragon!

"Th-this is..."

Song Tingyu suddenly froze in midair while covered in rainbow

light, watching the gigantic python that had appeared out of nowhere.

She did not notice that this python had flown out of Qin Lie's neck. She thought that this python was also a terrifying nether beast that had been tamed by the Horned Demon Race.

Even Qin Lie himself couldn't react for a time. He had not sensed the python's appearance and sudden growth in size; he only felt a small itch on his neck.

He did not notice anything was amiss. The Soul Devouring Beast's vile souls and the Horned Demon warrior with five horns who had rushed toward him, however, saw it clearly!

Their eyes were locked tightly on Qin Lie. Naturally they noticed the minuscule changes on Qin Lie's body and, by extension, the python flying out of his neck.

"Prak prak prak! Prak prak prak!"

Bolts of wide, arcing lightning that resembled the chains of the god of thunder shot out of the giant python's body. They were several hundreds of meters long and the width of a man's waist, dancing endlessly through the air.

"Swoosh!"

The giant python itself looked like a terrifying bolt of electricity

that suddenly rushed towards the Soul Devouring Beast. Thick, long bolts of lightning followed alongside it, also descending upon the Soul Devouring Beast's vile souls like a meteor shower.

Thunder and lightning immeasurably stronger than what Qin Lie was able to unleash were being controlled by the giant python. Like a god of thunder had descended, seeking to extinguish the world, thunder and lightning tore through the Soul Devouring Beast's body.

This Rank Four Soul Devouring Beast had already been severely injured by the combined force of five Terminator Profound Bombs in the first place. Its physical body had lost its ability to fight long ago. All that was left was its very soul.

The heavenly thunder from the Ninth Heaven was the nemesis of all evil souls and vengeful spirits. It could eliminate all soul intents!

"Zzzt zzt zzzt!"

Bolts of thick and long lightning struck the Soul Devouring Beast's vile soul like meteors. The explosive booming of thunder resounded continuously.

Qin Lie and Song Tingyu focused and realized that the Soul Devouring Beast's vile soul began to shrink under the onslaught of thunder and lightning. It looked like it was being purified and eradicated by the entangling lightning and thunder little by little.

They could see the Soul Devouring Beast's fear and feel its horrifying cries reach deep into their hearts and minds. Judging by the cries alone, Qin Lie already knew that this Soul Devouring Beast was done for.

"Thunder, lightning, a python..." Qin Lie shuddered as his eyes suddenly lit up with a strange light amidst the darkness. "I've seen this before... underneath the Arctic Mountain Range! There was a giant python that was frozen in ice. When my soul had left my body, I clearly felt its existence then!"

At this point, Qin Lie had also noticed that this giant python that had suddenly appeared was not flesh and blood.

Just like the Soul Devouring Beast's vile soul, this giant python that was about to morph into a dragon was also in an pure soul state.

Qin Lie suddenly realized that something wasn't right. He could feel a very familiar aura from the giant python's body. That aura... was very similar to the time he cultivated Heavenly Thunder Eradication and attracted a whole rain of heavenly thunder to crash down on him.

He recalled the time he borrowed the thunder and lightning of the Thunderblitz Trees to cultivate. He had attracted a staggering amount of thunder and lightning that was shockingly violent, but when they rushed into his body he felt very little discomfort...

Moreover, his body and Natal Palaces had only absorbed an

extremely small amount of the terrifying thunder and lightning of the Ninth Heaven after they had descended upon him.

A huge portion of that thunder and lightning had vanished mysteriously, as if it had escaped elsewhere...

The sudden appearance of the python... the powerful sensation of thunder and lightning it unleashed at this moment... the familiar heavenly thunder aura... they all brought a thoughtful expression to Qin Lie's face.

A thought gradually formed in his mind.

While doubts filled his heart and he struggled to find the answer to his questions, the giant python's soul form twisted its dragon-like body and arrived above the head of the Horned Demon warrior with five horns.

Having unleashed its thunder and lightning to destroy the Rank Four Soul Devouring Beast's soul, its focus now turned to the lone Horned Demon warrior.

An ancient and unfathomable aura that seemed to represent the might of heavens engulfed the Horned Demon warrior like an ocean or the flames of hell itself. It caused the Horned Demon warrior with five horns to lose control of his mind and fall prey to countless illusions.

The Horned Demon warrior realized that he had been brought

into an ancient world and, within this forgotten world, he watched countless ancient beasts that were the size of mountains commit atrocities throughout this land.

In that world, he was impossibly small. It was as if he could be killed at any moment. He did not feel the slightest trace of confidence...

His powerful will to fight was completely destroyed. Instead, he felt fear. He felt that it was impossible to win.

The giant python floated above the Horned Demon warrior's head, suspended in the air. Its tail released a gray gas that slowly covered the entirety of his body.

The powerful Horned Demon warrior with his five horns showed fear and worry through his eyes. His willpower seemed to have crumbled and he actually knelt on the ground as if worshipping the python.

"Whoosh whoosh whoosh!"

The Soul Devouring Beast's soul was continuously being struck by thunder and lightning. Its soul was torn to shreds by the lightning. Its memory, will, and imprint had turned into dust.

Suddenly, Qin Lie felt an itch at the center of his forehead and subconsciously looked in the direction of the Soul Devouring Beast.

An incredible soul sucking power gushed out from the center of his forehead. Its pull was clearly mighty.

The Soul Devouring Beast's soul had been purified by the thunder and lightning; its refined soul fragments suddenly transformed into rays of soul light that shot into the center of Qin Lie's forehead one after another.

Not only could the Soul Suppressing Orb intimidate a vile soul, it could even absorb soul power!

Qin Lie had confirmed this back at the natural stone forest. Now he had once again absorbed another soul of a Soul Devouring Beast through the Soul Suppressing Orb.

The soul that had been refined by thunder had no memory, will, or personal imprint. It only had the purest soul energy without any impurities whatsoever. It was the most suitable energy for the Soul Suppressing Orb to absorb.

Rays of soul light quickly disappeared into the center of his forehead.

Soon enough, the Soul Devouring Beast was nowhere to be seen as it had completely vanished.

The only thing that remained was the giant python that was suspended high in the sky like an ancient, vicious spirit on top of

the head of the Horned Demon warrior with five horns.

"I-it's capturing the memories in that guy's mind. Just like when you analyzed the memories through the Memory Fragment Crystal, it's searching for specific memories while the Horned Demon with five horns is still alive!" Song Tingyu exclaimed softly.

All of her attention had been on the giant python and Horned Demon warrior with five horns.

Qin Lie did not answer her. Instead, he focused on sensing the wonders inside the Soul Suppressing Orb. He realized that the wisps of pure soul energy belonging to the Soul Devouring Beast had been directly absorbed into the Soul Suppressing Orb, stored in an area he could not reach into.

"A strong soul energy. Extremely refined. It was obviously purified thoroughly beforehand." Inside the orb, Xue Li's halved soul noticed something out of the ordinary and communicated with Qin Lie. "Kid, what are you doing? You do not have the ability to purify such a powerful soul yet, do you?"

"I have a different method." Qin Lie answered. After discovering that he could not accurately detect where the refined soul energy was headed, he withdrew his mind consciousness.

It was then that he looked at the giant python and the Horned Demon with five horns again. Then he realized that not much time had passed at all and the Horned Demon warrior appeared

incredibly weak, having had his mind, body, and energy completely stripped from him.

He could clearly sense that the five horned warrior's soul had been severely damaged. He might not be able to recover for the rest of his life.

"The forceful stripping of memories will permanently damage one's soul. That guy is already crippled." Song Tingyu said somewhat concerned.

She still did not know where the giant python come from. She could detect a terrifying soul aura from the giant python, one that felt like the extinct savage creatures of ancient times. It caused her to feel instinctively worried.

"It... it should not attack us. I-it seems to have came out from my body..." Qin Lie gave her some words of comfort.

Song Tingyu was shocked, "I-it came out of your body?"

"That should be the case." Qin Lie nodded. "The thunder and lightning energy it unleashed was... exactly the same as when I was cultivating earlier."

While he spoke, he realized that the giant python seemed to have found what it was looking for. It withdrew the gray air around its tail and unleashed bolts of lightning towards the Horned Demon warrior with five horns.

The thunder and lightning energy discharged from its body was truly shocking. When the domineering aura that could murder all living beings had sunk into the body of the Horned Demon with five horns, it expanded like a balloon and then exploded into bits of charred black flesh. He could not be any more dead than he was now.

Qin Lie and Song Tingyu looked at each other as their expressions changed slightly. Even Qin Lie... was gradually growing worried.

“It... it really came out of your body? It won’t harm us?” Song Tingyu’s bright eyes stared at him.

Qin Lie smiled bitterly, “I’m not so sure anymore.”

Song Tingyu withdrew her rainbow wings and moved beside Qin Lie. The duo stood shoulder-to-shoulder and looked at the giant python .

The giant python seemed to have found what it was looking for from the Horned Demon warrior. Its hundreds of meters long body suddenly shrank and gradually became minuscule...

More than ten seconds later, the giant python actually diminished into the size of a finger.

Its terrifying brutality and might from before had been

completely retracted and hidden.

The pocket-sized little serpent suddenly swam through the air towards Qin Lie.

Shock appeared in Song Tingyu's eyes as she subconsciously pulled away from Qin Lie, afraid that the little snake would accidentally harm her.

Qin Lie solemnly waited as he stared straight at this shrunken, yet somewhat exquisite and cute little snake. He even quietly summoned all of its power.

It was at this moment that the little snake's eyes, each the size of a grain of rice, suddenly stared into his own.

From those tiny eyes, he could not feel even the slightest trace of ill will. After a temporary moment of surprise, Qin Lie relaxed.

This was also the same moment that the python dove back into his neck and disappeared.

Qin Lie only felt a little itch on his neck. Other than that, he could no longer feel anything out of the ordinary.

He gathered his mind consciousness and searched everywhere within his body to lock down the python's location. He even used his Soul Lake... but he still could not confirm exactly which part of his body it had hidden itself in.

Chapter 265: Universal Celestial Sealing Formation!

“It… went into your body.”

Song Tingyu glanced at his neck with a strange expression and then moved away from him.

The python was clearly of extraordinary origins and in a pure soul state. It was able to process the soul of the Soul Devouring Beast and forcibly extract the memories of a Horned Demon warrior with five horns and then explode the former’s body with lightning…

Song Tingyu felt an aura similar to an ancient and vicious being emanating from the body of the python. She had some knowledge about that era and knew just how terrifying the dominant beings of that era were.

She wasn’t sure about the connection between Qin Lie and that python. She was afraid that the python would control Qin Lie so she cautiously chose to distance herself from Qin Lie, allowing her to run away at any time.

Something that could quickly destroy the soul of a Soul Devouring Beast and was able to erase the existence of a Horned Demon fighter with five horns was beyond the limits of her ability. She had to be very careful.

Qin Lie glanced at her. “It went into my body but I… cannot find it.”

“Where did it come from? Why is it inside your body?” Sing Tingyu’s eyes were bright. After she saw that Qin Lie acted normal, she suddenly became interested. “Where have you seen it before?”

Qin Lie went silent, his brow furrowed.

Li Mu had warned him to never tell anyone about the ancient beasts sealed in ice under the Arctic Mountain Range.

When Qin Lie realized that those ancient beasts had not died, and that the ice kept their bodies and souls frozen, he decided to never tell anyone about the secret underneath Arctic Mountain Range.

“I think it would be best if we left this place.” Qin Lie said in a deep voice.

Song Tingyu stopped. She saw that he was not willing to answer. She did not force him. She nodded and said, “I’ll go free the female slaves.”

She quickly left.

Qin Lie waited at the original spot.

“Demon God Mountain Range, Demon God Mountain Range...” An imperceptible soul ripple suddenly came from his neck. The ripple was extremely weak. After persisting for a few moments, it disappeared.

Qin Lie’s body shook slightly and his eyes lit up strangely. He murmured, “Demon God Mountain Range. This enormous python wants me to go to the Demon God Mountain Range... “

He turned around and looked off into the distance. He could barely make out an area that was covered in dense nether demonic energy. That was where the Demon God Mountain Range was.

From the memories of the Horned Demons, he knew that the Demon God Mountain Range was the holy ground of the Horned Demon Race and was off-limits.

The Demon God Mountain Range was the place where the members of the Horned Demon Race worshipped the Demon Gods. The people of the Horned Demon Race would only travel towards the Demon God Mountain Range on important days and during special times. They would go and pay respects to the five mountain peaks carved in the images of ancient demon gods and pray for their protection.

In the hearts of all Horned Demons, the Demon God Mountain Range was sacred. It was their mental support, a place they revered.

They deeply believed that the souls of the Demon Gods existed in

the Demon God Mountain Range. They deeply believed that the Demon God Mountain Range had a mysterious power, and that the demon gods inside would protect them. They believed that they were the children of the Demon Gods...

Elderly Horned Demon priests would stand guard in the Demon God Mountain Range for many years devoutly offering their faith and narrating the events of the Horned Demon Race in the language of the demon gods, praying for the demon gods to appear before them. They prayed for them to help the Horned Demons kill their way into the Scarlet Tide Continent and walk onto the vast land of Spirit Realm.

“What does it want me to do at the Demon God Mountain Range...?” Qin Lie pondered. He hesitated on the inside.

Qin Lie could faintly discern that the python who had processed the Soul Devouring Beast and killed that Horned Demon warrior with five horns... had used up all of the lightning and thunder power it had absorbed. It was weak and could only rest.

“Will the Demon Mountain Range be of help to its recovery? Or is there some other wondrous ability?” Qin Lie rubbed his chin in thought.

Just as he was thinking hard, Song Tingyu returned with a dim expression.

“They...” Qin Lie stopped speaking.

“I had them truly awaken. Ah, they were very ashamed and couldn’t bare to continue living. They were like the humans we encountered before, who only sought death.” Song Tingyu sighed and said regretfully, “I could not persuade them. Their bodies and minds had been corroded by the nether demonic energy, they… ah…”

Qin Lie knew why those female slaves also chose death.

After experiencing so much in the Nether Realm, he had gradually become numb. He also recognized that the conflict between them and the Nether Realm could not be resolved peacefully and would only end with the death of either side.

“All of my Terminator Profound Bombs have been used up and the stronger Horned Demons have clearly noticed us.” Qin Lie furrowed his brow. “I do not think that we can continue attacking Horned Demon towns at the moment.”

“I am not dumb. I obviously know what to do.” Song Tingyu rolled her eyes at him and said patiently, “Why did you return just now?”

Song Tingyu already started to move ahead as she spoke, only leaving her beautiful figure for him to gaze at from behind.

Qin Lie silently followed. After thinking for a moment, he spoke honestly, “When I looked back, I saw that your rainbow light grew dim and your presence was quickly weakening. I feared that you would die…”

Song Tingyu did not stop and continued to walk forward. She said in a light tone, “Turning back... also meant death.”

“I knew that it guaranteed my death.” Qin Lie nodded and followed her closely. He said in a deep voice, “But I could not flee and have a woman fight in my stead. I would not be able to live with myself.”

“A laughable chauvinistic male attitude!” Song Tingyu snorted coldly.

“Whatever you say. In any case, I did not want you to be captured by that Horned Demon with five horns. I could not let you become like the women in the cages...” Qin Lie was silent for a while and then said seriously, “I came back. If you were already captured, and I could not rescue you, I could at least use the Terminator Profound Bomb to give you a swift death.”

Song Tingyu paused in her steps. Her body trembled slightly. She suddenly turned her head to look deeply at Qin Lie and said, “In this Nether Realm, if I really am captured, please do all that you can to kill me.”

“I will.” Qin Lie nodded lightly.

The two sank into silence once more.

They walked one after the other, gradually distancing themselves

from the town. They walked for a long time, making their way through a dense, deep forest before finding a place to use spirit stones to replenish their power.

A considerable time later, Qin Lie was the first to recover. He opened his eyes and looked at the dark sky that did not have any sun, moon, or stars. He felt an eternal coldness and desolation. He stood up, careful not to disturb Song Tingyu who was still recovering. He walked to a place where the vitality had been cut from the trees.

Qin Lie gathered his mind consciousness, reached out to touch his spatial ring, and rubbed it.

A spirit pattern pillar suddenly flew into the sky. It floated like a heaven-reaching obelisk above his head. This was the spirit pattern pillar engraved with the Nine Winding River Diagram.

He focused his mind. Channeling spirit energy, he used his mind once again. Another spirit pattern pillar shot out of the spatial ring and floated motionlessly above his head.

Then the third, the fourth, and the fifth pillars appeared. Then, finally, the sixth pillar emerged.

The six pillars floated in the air, each of them leaving the spatial ring and remained motionless, suspended in the sky of the Nether Realm.

Six spirit pattern pillars were the maximum number that he could control with his mind. It was also the limit of what he could support with his spirit energy.

Twelve spirit pattern pillars. They could form a wondrous formation called the “Universal Celestial Sealing Formation.” This formation used the twelve spirit pattern pillars as its base. The controller’s spirit energy would command the power inside the spirit pattern pillars. They would use their mind consciousness to control the pillars and channel the spirit diagram on the pillar to form a power of suppression.

At this moment, he had released six spirit pattern pillars. He was trying to see if he could use some of the Universal Celestial Sealing Formation’s power with just six spirit pattern pillars.

The six spirit pattern pillars were silent above his head. They moved slowly, shifting according to his mind consciousness. The spirit diagrams on the spirit pattern pillars started coming to life. The spirit energy he poured out flowed through the pillars, the pathways within them organizing the power inside and helping the formation slowly take shape.

A sealing power slowly radiated from the center of these six spirit pattern pillars. This power was gradually becoming more and more intense.

The wind stopped in the area between the six spirit pattern pillars. The air also stopped flowing. Sound was restricted, unable to move. Even space seemed to be locked down.

The Celestial Sealing Diagram, the Nine Winding River Diagram, the Soaring Sky Bird Diagram, the Radiant Galaxy Diagram, the Hundred Flower Chainmail Diagram, and the Ancient Wood Resurrection Diagram—all six ancient diagrams sealed the sky and, as light gathered, formed a curtain in the sky.

There were demons, countless stars, rivers, birds, flowers, ancient trees and fungi that emanated vitality. All of these entities gave off a mysterious aura. That aura slowly filled the little space amidst the spirit pattern pillars, causing it to change.

Qin Lie suddenly realized—he was able to control everything in that space!

The small space that slowly formed seemed to have been created by him. He had taken it from the world and now it belonged to him alone. He was the one that could see every detail inside and could be the master of every being in that space!

This feeling was very wondrous and filled him with intoxication. It made him feel like he was the peerless creator of that space and could bend all the rules.

This strange feeling only lasted for a moment. As his mind consciousness became greatly exhausted and his spirit energy has been furiously spent, his vision suddenly blurred.

The six spirit pattern pillars turned to streaks of light and disappeared back into his spatial ring.

Qin Lie fell down on the ground bottom first, his mind dizzy. His soul felt extremely weak.

Soul power, the power that the soul could control and use, was connected to mind energy. The reason that his soul currently felt weak was because the amount of mind energy that he had used up surpassed his limits.

“Kid, you have just stepped into the Manifestation Realm and have not completely understood the wonders of the Soul Lake, yet you dare to forcibly manipulate six of the spirit pattern pillars. You do not know your limits.” Xue Li’s voice echoed out from his soul within the Soul Suppressing Orb. “If you reach the peak of the Manifestation Realm, you may be able to manage controlling the six spirit pattern pillars and wield some of the Universal Celestial Sealing Formation’s power. As of now, you are far from that.”

“You once said that, as long as I can control six of the spirit pattern pillars, I can truly create the Universal Celestial Sealing Formation. Why not five pillars?” Qin Lie gathered a thread of mind consciousness to converse with Xue Li.

“Six is the minimum. If you are one short, the sealing formations cannot compound and you won’t be able to create the formation.” Xue Li’s words were like a rush of cold water. “It’s better for you to be cautious. Before you reach the peak of the Manifestation Realm, do not mess with the spirit pattern pillars. Otherwise, you will achieve the same result. You will exhaust all of your mind energy, your soul will become extremely weak, causing you to lose the resolve to fight.”

“Is there really no other way?” Qin Lie, asked, unwilling to give up.

“Another way?” Xue Li seemed to think about it and then responded. “If your soul is powerful enough, you can continue to maintain the spirit pattern pillars. However, you are just in the Manifestation Realm. You cannot even cultivate your soul so how are you supposed to strengthen it? Well, unless you have soul crystals. Oh, that reminds me, this orb just swallowed many pure souls. If you can merge them into your body… you might be able to manage controlling six of the spirit pattern pillars.”

Qin Lie’s eyes suddenly lit up.

Chapter 266: Demon God Mountain Range

Increasing soul power...

Xue Li's words truly made Qin Lie realize that it was only when he had enough soul power would he be able to withstand the burden of controlling the spirit pattern pillars.

The Soul Suppressing Orb had swallowed the pure souls of the Soul Devouring Beast and stored them in the deepest depths of the orb. If he could absorb those souls that were pure and without any impurity, he would be able to control six spirit pattern pillars at once.

Qin Lie's heart beat faster.

Collapsed on the ground, his eyes were narrowed in thought. Then he gathered a wisp of mental power to search for the souls inside the Soul Suppressing Orb.

That wisp of consciousness instantly went into the vast world inside the orb. In that space, the four basic ancient spirit diagrams still hung high up in the sky. The glacial peak picture scroll of the frost concept that came from under the Arctic Mountain Range was also there.

In this world, there was a barrier that blocked off a new space.

The pure souls that had been sucked in were put into the space

that was sealed. Qin Lie might be able to absorb those pure souls and also... look at his memories that had been sealed.

"Right now, my mind consciousness is too weak. I cannot break through the barrier. However, I am now in the Manifestation Realm. After I recover, I might be able to try." Thinking inwardly, he prepared to take back that wisp of consciousness.

Yet, just as his mind was about to withdraw, he felt clear soul fluctuations from inside the Soul Suppressing Orb.

A soft, refreshing soul power instantly flooded straight out of the little sealed space in the Soul Suppressing Orb like a warm spring or a gentle wind.

That pure soul power that came from the Soul Suppressing Orb seemed to reach into the depths of his soul.

Qin Lie felt relaxed, as though he was soaking in a heavenly hot spring. The exhaustion of controlling the six spirit pattern pillars instantly vanished.

His Soul Lake seemed to have been cleansed, becoming bright and clear like a mirror, as though it could reflect any change in his body.

"Soul power! Is this the soul power from the Soul Devouring Beast?" Qin Lie instantly realized and hurriedly stopped his stray thoughts. Maintaining a clear mind, he used his mind to feel the

wondrous changes in his soul and savored the wonders involved.

Waves of clear soul fluctuations spread from his body. These fluctuations were very small to start with and then gradually increased.

Some time later Song Tingyu, who had been recovering her strength using spirit stones, sensed these soul fluctuations and suddenly opened her eyes. She looked around in confusion and started to search.

She looked over at Qin Lie who was sitting in the distance. She saw that Qin Lie was cultivating and recognized the clear soul fluctuations coming from his body.

“This is…” Song Tingyu had an incredulous expression.

Usually, only martial practitioners who broke through to the Netherpassage Realm would be able to convert their soul into an ethereal form. Then the soul would come out in its true form.

It was only the martial practitioners in this realm that would have a relatively deep understanding of the soul and could truly use a spirit art to cultivate it. They could strengthen their soul in order to increase their perception and their understanding of the spirit energy of the world so they could use their soul to study the martial way. They could use the soul accumulate experience their physical body could not…

While martial practitioners in the Manifestation Realm could form their Soul Lake, the Soul Lake was just a reflection of the soul and not its actual form. It was a mirror that could only help the martial practitioner recognize themselves but would not possess very strong soul fluctuations.

Yet, Qin Lie was currently giving off very strong soul fluctuations.

Those soul fluctuations were so strong they could compare to those of a Netherpassage martial practitioner. They were similar to truly strong individuals that had formed their souls.

This surprised Song Tingyu.

“This guy has an enormous python inside of his body that can release lightning and thunder, can control the spirit pattern pillars, has the Terminator Profound Bombs, possesses spatial spirit artifacts and, right now, in the Manifestation Realm, he has such strong soul fluctuations.” Song Tingyu’s curiosity grew even more as she looked at Qin Lie with glittering eyes.

She always felt that there seemed to be a layer of mystery shrouding Qin Lie. She wanted to take away that layer and learn just how many secrets Qin Lie had.

She looked at Qin Lie like this from a distance.

A long while later, Qin Lie opened his eyes. There seemed to be

electricity in them, and he felt energetic.

Qin Lie saw Song Tingyu in front of him. His brow creased slightly as he asked, “Have you recovered?”

“Not yet.” Song Tingyu smiled brightly.

“Then you…” Qin Lie’s expression was puzzled.

“I was disturbed by the strong soul fluctuations you gave off so I came to see. Right now… has your mind consciousness grown greatly?” She asked probingly.

Qin Lie’s eyes narrowed as he checked. He nodded and said, “It increased by a fair amount.”

“Which method did you use?” Sing Tingyu suddenly became interested. “You are just in the Manifestation Realm, how can you cultivate your soul?”

Qin Lie was silent.

He really could not speak about these matters. He would not tell outsiders about the abilities of the Soul Suppressing Orb.

For as long as he could remember, he knew that his soul was stronger than those of normal people. It seemed that, before the age of ten, his soul had been tempered through a wondrous

method.

When he was in the Natal Opening Realm, Qin Lie could accurately feel the existence of mind consciousness and learn to inscribe spirit diagrams.

This was where he differed from other people.

Seeing him go silent, Song Tingyu knew that he would not explain and was greatly disappointed. “You are so mysterious. How much are you hiding?”

“I want to go to the Demon God Mountain Range.” Qin Lie changed the topic.

“The Demon God Mountain Range!” Song Tingyu was shocked. “Why would you think of going to the Demon God Mountain Range? That place is a restricted area of the evil races; it is where they worship their evil gods. According to the memories you analyzed, there could be pieces of the Demon God’s soul in the Demon God Mountain Range... I cannot understand why you would want to go there!”

“The python inside my body seems to want me to go to the Demon God Mountain Range. I do not know why.” Qin Lie was honest this time.

Song Tingyu looked deeply at him, her eyes glittering with strange specks of light. A moment later, she nodded and said,

“Alright then. We’ll make a trip to the Demon God Mountain Range! I will risk my life and go with you!”

Qin Lie was shocked.

“We have already made too much of a commotion. Strong Horned Demons will try to kill us at any price. They should already know our goal of going to the Nether Battlefield. If we suddenly change directions and go to the Demon God Mountain Range, we might have an easier time.” Song Tingyu explained.

“Then let’s go to the Demon God Mountain Range!” Qin Lie shouted.

The two instantly acted.

In this strange world without a sun, moon, or stars, the two were unable to calculate the time. They did not know how long they walked. Then, one day, they finally arrived at the border of the Demon God Mountain Range.

“Such thick nether demonic energy! Such a gruesome Demon God peak!” Looking at the five mountain peaks shrouded in thick nether demonic energy, Song Tingyu felt the surroundings and then shouted lightly.

“Boooom!”

An ear-splitting roar of thunder came from inside Qin Lie’s body.

The python tattoo that had concealed itself within his neck suddenly appeared.

In the next moment, a blinding bolt of lightning instantly wrapped around Qin Lie. It pulled him directly towards the Demon God Mountain Range.

Chapter 267: Lightning Pool!

Five soaring mountain peaks were situated in the center of the thick nether demonic energy. An oppressive, profound, mysterious, and strange presence continuously swirled between them.

From afar, the five mountains resembled five giants that were roaring at the world and seemed to be challenging the heavens.

If one moved closer, they would find that the five mountain peaks were carved in the forms of enormous demons. Each giant demon was extremely lifelike and even the bulging muscles on their bodies were clearly defined.

These were the five ancient, evil gods that the Horned Demon clan worshipped!

At this moment, at the border of the Demon God Mountain Range, there were many members of the Horned Demon Race gathering.

Some of these people had two horns on their head, while others had three, four, and even five. They were gathered on the outskirts of the Demon God Mountain Range. Their expressions were feverish as they kowtowed continuously towards the Demon God Mountain Range.

Multiple days later, the Demon God’s shadow with its curled horns and vast wings furiously made its way through the evil

nether passageway with Gao Yu. It passed by many towns and the Horned Demon clansmen saw them.

So these people came and gathered next to the Demon God Mountain Range. They hoped to see the shadow of the evil god and to receive orders from it... they had come in sincere worship.

“The Son of the Demon God!”

“The Son of the Demon God has come!”

“Our clan will rise again! We will finally step back onto our homeland!”

Many Horned Demon warriors cheered in the surroundings of the Demon God Mountain Range. Their expressions were excited and filled with fanaticism.

At this time, an ear-splitting roar of thunder came from a remote corner of the mountain range.

Within the roars of thunder, a thick dragon-like bolt of lightning carried a person. It shot towards the Demon God Mountain Range.

The Horn Demon warriors that were at the corners of the Demon God Mountain Range looked at the sky in a daze. They saw the dazzling lightning flash by and yelled out in shock. They were all puzzled.

“This... is this another Son of the Demon God or an evil god awakening?”

“Out of the five great evil gods, is there one shrouded in lightning?”

“Yes!”

“……”

The noise travelled among those pilgrims. Many Horned Demons grew even more excited and shouted loudly in the language of the Nether Realm.

“Another Son of the Demon God!”

“Another Demon God awakening!”

“The heavens have blessed our clan!”

“This is a miracle!”

Among the furious cheers of the Horned Demons, Qin Lie was carried to the center of the Demon God Mountain Range by the lightning formed by the enormous python.

Amidst the light of the blinding lightning, Qin Lie looked down. He found that the five mountain peaks were all carved into the appearances of the ancient demon gods. They were all waving their claws and baring their teeth with vicious expressions, looking ferocious and terrifying.

One of the Demon Gods was like the one that Gao Yu had woken up in that stone forest. There were wings on his back and curved horns on his head. This one was mid bellow, roaring at the heavens.

Just as this sight astonished him, the lightning pulled Qin Lie and landed on another mountain peak.

This mountain peak was carved into a head that seemed to belong to a dragon or a snake but the body was that of a giant person.

The muscles on the surface of the giant were like mountain ridges. All of them were long and thick. Its body also had mysterious patterns that resembled lightning. There were black scales on its neck and under its arms. There were strange spikes on its shoulders that were like hedgehog spikes—this was an evil god with a snake head.

“Krrk, krrrk, krrrk!”

Qin Lie’s feet landed and the stone under him shattered to pieces.

Rumbles of thunder emerged from his body and floated towards the head of the evil god with a snake head.

Snake-like plants had originally been growing on the top of the mountain. When they grew together, they looked like thick hair of the evil god.

As Qin Lie landed, the python on his neck suddenly flew out. It immediately released thousands of bolts of blinding light. The electrical light was filled with a violent lightning power that could destroy life, instantly killing off those plants.

“Bam! Bam! Bam!”

The python that was formed continuously released fluctuations of thunder and used heavenly thunder to strike the head of the snake.

Rocks started to crumble and the top of the mountain, the head of this evil snake, gave out a shocking boom. Shattered fragments of stone rolled down the mountain.

Qin Lie’s heart was beating quickly. He looked at this ancient python that was using its soul to destroy the head of the evil god. He did not know what this vicious beast really wanted to do.

The five mountain peaks that were carved in the figures of the demon gods were covered up by the thick nether demonic energy. Here, Qin Lie’s mind was suppressed. He needed to continuously

circulate his Frost Arts and use the extreme ice to freeze and protect his body to prevent the nether demon energy from corroding him.

Yet this enormous python that was covered in lightning, the nether demonic energy did not affect it at all. Its pure soul power, and the thunder and lightning it formed, would not run out because of the nether demonic energy.

“Boom!”

An earth-shaking explosion suddenly came from the stone next to him. Qin Lie turned to look and found that the enormous python had used the power of thunder and lightning to create a giant hole in the head of this demon god.

—A hole that reached into the head of the demon god!

“Whoosh whoosh!”

The enormous python that was in a soul state, but was shrouded by lightning, suddenly looked at Qin Lie.

The meaning in its eyes was clear—Follow me in!

It wanted Qin Lie to go into the hole with it, into the head of the evil god and inside the mountain.

Qin Lie's brow furrowed slightly.

"Enter!"

A furious soul fluctuation suddenly came from the enormous python. In the next moment, before Qin Lie could react, he found that a bolt of lightning had wrapped around his waist and he was pulled inside the hole.

He landed in the head of the evil god—the inside of the mountain.

"Zzzt zzt zzt! Pak pak pak! Boom boom boom!"

Once he entered, he could hear all sorts of sounds. Thunder roared, lightning flashed, and explosions rang out when they collided.

An enormous rock cavern full of blinding light suddenly appeared in his eyes. The rocks in this cavern were like white pieces of jade. They appeared clear and transparent when reflected in the brightness of the lightning and refracted blinding light.

The stone cavern was several acres large. There was a small pool in the center and statues set up around the pool—all of them were the statues of the snake-headed evil god!

They were like the evil god except shrunk by a few hundred times. Nine of them surrounded the pool and spat lightning

towards it.

The enormous python that had summoned Qin Lie and forcibly pulled him here flew straight into the pool as soon as it entered. It twisted in the pool and changed as it furiously swallowed the pool's blinding liquid.

Qin Lie took a glance and his expression changed drastically. He suddenly yelled, "Lightning pool! This is lightning pool!"

He had heard his grandfather mention the lightning pool before. According to his grandfather, if the power of lightning was condensed to an extreme, it could turn into liquid. The liquid was lightning!

Qin Shan once said that, in the deepest part of the nine cloud layers, at the core that was covered in furious heavenly lightning, there was a lightning pool—the Lightning Pool of the Ninth Heaven!

The thunder and lightning of the Ninth Heaven were tempered hundreds of times, repeatedly purified and condensed. This formed the Lightning Pool of the Ninth Heaven—the core of the thunder and lightning.

If Qin Lie, who cultivated Heavenly Thunder Eradication, could cultivate to the state that he could cause thunder and lightning to appear with a thought, he would be able to pass through the deepest part of the clouds and search for the Lightning Pool of the Ninth Heaven in the most restless place in the sky. He could

immerse himself in that lightning pool to cultivate.

That way, Heavenly Thunder Eradication could be cultivated to a degree that even its creator could not measure!

If thunder and lightning power could be likened to spirit energy, then a lightning pool was a martial practitioner's spirit sea. It was a martial practitioner's Natal Palace—the place where one's power was condensed and purified.

The lightning pool was the true essence of lightning!

"This lightning pool... it is not formed from lightning of the Ninth Heaven, but there was a being that cultivated thunder and lightning power who had tempered their power repeatedly and, after refining it countless times, formed this power source!" Qin Lie looked at the pool of liquid lightning. He looked at the nine evil gods that were spitting liquid and suddenly understood.

The Horned Demons worshipped an ancient demon god. This demon god was skilled in the power of thunder and lightning. It gathered its pure thunder and lightning to form the lightning pool and put it in this mountain peak. The enormous python tracked it down.

"This enormous python..."

Qin Lie stilled and looked at the python in the lightning pool. He then looked at the nine evil god statues around the lightning pool.

He wanted to confirm if these two were connected or if they were the same being.

Yet when he looked closely, he found that the enormous python and the snake-headed demon being were not the same—there were clear differences in their appearances.

“Hoosh, hoosh, hoosh!”

When the enormous python swallowed the pool’s liquid, it made strange sounds. It twisted around in the lightning pool and clearly seemed very pleased. Its eyes that shone with intelligence suddenly glanced at Qin Lie.

Its meaning was clear—enter the lightning pool!

It wanted Qin Lie to also go into the lightning pool!

Qin Lie’s body shook. He did not hesitate at all as his expression turned into one of excitement. He hurriedly approached the lightning pool and reached out to touch the liquid in the lightning pool.

When his fingertip touched the liquid, countless bolts of dense lightning turned to wisps of pure power that climbed up his finger. They went from his finger to his palm, then his arm, upper body, abdomen, and lower body…

He just had one finger in the pool but, in a short few seconds, his

entire body was wrapped in lightning.

A few moments later, an enormous lightning ball shrouded his entire body.

Thousands of streaks of lightning coursed through his muscles, veins, blood, flesh, cells, fibers, and bones. Countless booms of thunder roared in his heart, chest, brain and mind; his body instantly started to tremble.

He suddenly seemed to see a great ancient era when the world had not formed yet and thunder and lightning rampaged through the void like a storm. Here, even the sun, moon, and stars had yet to form. There were no living beings, no plants, nor mountains or oceans—just empty space, an eternal void...

Yet in this era that was so long ago it could not be measured, the first hint of thunder and lightning had formed. They moved through the void and rampaged across the empty world. They brought life to this eternally empty void.

The thunder and lightning were like a typhoon that endlessly ravaged the void. Many strikes collided and produced blinding sparks. When the sparks spread, they shot through space in a direction that was an unknown distance away. When they merged with unknown vibrations, they seemed to create a chaotic consciousness!

In the very beginning, vicious lightning that could annihilate all souls and destroy the world seemed to have created life and

wondrously stimulated living consciousness!

Qin Lie was completely veiled in an enormous ball of lightning. Under the blows of the lightning and the roars of thunder, he was in contact with the core essence of the lightning. He was seeing wonders that beings of this era would probably never get to witness.

Chapter 268: The Mountain Shatters And The Evil God Emerges!

“Booom! Boooom!”

A cataclysmic rumbling suddenly roared out from within the snake-headed demon-shaped mountain. One giant stone fragment after another began to fall as obvious cracks appeared atop the peak.

A myriad of cracks resembling deep stone paths formed. It was as if they sought to destroy this mountain which the Horned Demon Race viewed as sacred—as if they wanted to destroy the figure of the evil god that they believed in.

As many of the Horned Demon warriors gradually realized that the situation was getting worse, their previous state of ecstasy had turned into their present state of fear.

In the center of the Demon God Mountain Range, amidst the lush, dense forest, numerous frail looking, elderly Horned Demon clansmen struggled to stand. They were the self-proclaimed servants of the Demon Gods who had started the tradition of sacrificing to the Demon Gods and were considered to be wise sages by the warriors of the Horned Demon Race.

Currently, many of the priests among the self-proclaimed servants of the Demon Gods watched as the snake-headed demon-shaped peak continued to break apart. Their faces were filled with fear and anxiety.

Suddenly, they all looked up towards the sky and began to emit shrill, ear-splitting screams.

One terrifying fluctuation after another shot out from amidst the center of the dense layer of nether demonic energy, revealing the depths of the clouds. From within the nether demonic energy, which was as black as ink, a myriad of vile souls suddenly began to cascade out.

Each vile soul was around ten meters tall. Before death, each one had been some kind of powerful nether beast. Their souls had been pulled out and turned into this kind of vile soul—a vile one which would eternally protect the Demon God Mountain Range and prevent the trespassing of any outsiders.

At this moment, upon having realized that the snake-headed, demon-shaped mountain peak was falling apart, clearly not intact like they had thought, these priests of the Horned Demon Race finally decided to call out the vile souls.

Upon hearing the shrill cries of the priests, the Horned Demon warriors who had originally not dared to enter finally surged in from outside the Demon God Mountain Range.

Like a tide, they streamed towards the mountain with the peak shaped like a snake-headed demon.

Within another mountain peak.

This mountain peak had been carved into a terrifying demon god with two curved horns and a pair of wide wings.

It was the mountain peak which Gao Yu and the Demon God's shadow had entered.

Within this mountain peak, approximately where the heart of the demon god carving would have been, there was an enormous altar.

The altar covered about six thousand six hundred and sixty six square meters and had been constructed using numerous white bones of nether beasts. A countless number of human skulls were piled up at the foot of the altar. A seemingly endless, ghastly, evil aura permeated the surroundings of the altar.

At this moment, Gao Yu sat atop the altar with his eyes closed.

From within the countless white bones that made up the altar, one gloomy white wisp of soul intent after another began to emerge. Upon emerging, the soul intents began to form various ancient symbols which contained secrets of evil and entered Gao Yu's body.

Atop Gao Yu's forehead, the Demon God's shadow began to perpetually shrink and enlarge like a huge silhouette which had been created by the illumination of flickering fire. Then it disappeared, returning to Gao Yu's forehead.

As Gao Yu sat atop the altar, ancient symbols and imprints continued emerging from within the white bones and flying into his body, as if attracted to his body by some force.

—He was in the process of receiving an ancient evil inheritance.

The Demon God's shadow and Gao Yu, who was focused on accepting the legacy, paid no attention to anything that was happening outside. They ignored the quaking of the earth, the trembling of the mountain, and the shrill cries of the Horned Demon clansmen.

At the same time that Qin Lie was completely enveloped by the ball of lightning and trying to comprehend the essence of world destroying lightning, Gao Yu was receiving the Evil God's legacy.

"Crack crack crack crack! Crack! Boom!"

The mountain peak shaped like a snake-headed demon suddenly began to shake violently, causing boulders to roll down its sides as it began to slowly collapse.

Under the gazes of the Horned Demon clansmen, this evil god mountain peak continued to fall apart, quickly losing height.

Like a fatty who visibly lost weight, the mountain peak gradually became shriveled and small. Suddenly, the snake-headed demon carved into the peak bent in an incredibly strange manner.

It remained that way until old Horned Demon priests and Horned Demon warriors with three to four horns arrived from outside of the mountain range. They watched as the vile souls formed from the souls of vicious beasts constantly charged at the peak of the mountain only to be turned to ash by lightning.

Strange sounds began to resonate from within the mouths of the priests wielding white bone scepters as they began to chant in the ancient language of the Nether Realm.

One vile soul after another began to gather high up in the sky and look down from above, as if they were helping the priests observe the scene within the cave.

An extremely clear picture suddenly appeared above all of their heads—in the center of the lightning pool within the cave, Qin Lie was enveloped by a sphere of thunder and lightning. He was using the liquid of the lightning pool to aid in his cultivation. The giant python was growing larger and larger as it devoured the liquid of the lightning pool.

The liquid within the lightning pool rapidly dried up, seeming as if the bottom would be revealed at any time.

“Arghhhh!”

Upon seeing this, the old priests of the Horned Demon clan finally understood what had happened.

Tears fell from their eyes and they began to emit crazed, piercing screams. The white bone scepters in their hands shook wildly, releasing wave after wave of evil soul fluctuations.

“Boom!”

An earth-shattering rumble that sounded as if could destroy the heavens resonated out from the crumbling mountain peak. Several giant boulders fell as the entire mountaintop collapsed amidst clouds of stone powder.

The peak had suddenly crumbled and fragmented into pieces.

As for Qin Lie within the giant ball of lightning, the sound of these great tremors caused him to suddenly awaken.

He shuddered violently as he saw rocks fly around him wildly. He watched as the numerous statues of the evil god beside the lightning pool exploded around him and turned into nine wisps of misty smoke, which then turned into remnant souls that flew below Qin Lie.

Within the sphere of lightning, Qin Lie subconsciously looked below him and was stunned.

At this moment, he was no longer within the heart of the mountain but atop the head of the Evil God!

He was atop the actual body of the Evil God!

With the collapse of the mountain, the snake-headed Evil God had emerged from within it. He was tens of meters tall and had the enormous body of a demon and the head of a snake. Strange sharp spikes grew from its shoulders and its neck was covered in scales. Within its pair of ice cold eyes that could penetrate to the bone, one could see that an actual soul and consciousness was forming!

It was as if this Evil God was actually alive!

It had actually been hidden within the depths of the mountain, sealed within its heart!

The lightning pool was like a hat which had been covering the Evil God's head. Qin Lie and the python had been atop its head this entire time, constantly stealing away its power!

The nine remnant souls didn't enter the Evil God's mind. Nobody knew how many thousands or even tens of thousands of years this Evil God had slumbered but, at this moment, it was slowly waking up!

At the foot of the Evil God were the numerous old priests of the Horned Demon Race. They were still waving their white bone scepters and chanting their spells loudly.

As for the vile souls that had been summoned, they were seemingly suppressed by some power and restrained. They were

unwillingly thrown into the snake mouth of the Evil God.

They were being devoured one after another!

The Evil God's consciousness continued to grow as the nine remnant souls condensed into one. Upon devouring the vile souls, this soul seemingly became increasingly restless.

The Evil God seemed like it was about to awaken!

Qin Lie's expression changed.

He hadn't known that, within this Demon God Mountain Range, each mountain contained the body of an Evil God—the bodies of the slaughtered primordial Demon Gods!

From the humanity's perspective, these were Demon Gods. They were the most evil, sinister beings, and were considered the sources of all evil.

However, in the eyes of the evil races of the Nether Realm, they were respectfully addressed as Demon Gods and also known as evil gods. These beings were their guardians and the ones who had bestowed power unto them. They were also their ancestors!

The evil races of the Nether Realm worshipped these Evil Gods who had been sealed within these mountain with utmost reverence. Steeling their own beliefs, ideals, and souls, individuals of these evil races had wandered throughout the vast unknown world, searching for the scattered remnant souls of these Evil

Gods. Following the will of the Evil Gods, they searched for wisp after wisp of soul in an effort to help the Evil Gods reform their souls and emerge within this world once again!

The nine statues which had contained the remnant soul fragments of the snake-headed Evil God had been created through countless years of devout worship by the evil races. The evil races had combed the various battlefields of the Nether Realm and gradually gathered and condensed wisps of soul fragments to form these sculptures.

The lightning pool was one of the mystical areas of the Nether Realm. The thunder energy within had been accumulated through an extremely difficult process and was extremely pure. Through daily refinement and condensation of this energy, it had gradually formed the lightning pool. They had done this so they could help nourish the remnant souls and allow them to gradually recover so that, one day, the Demon God would be able to awaken once more.

However, with the arrival of Qin Lie and the giant python, their plans had been completely ruined. The countless years of accumulation of lightning energy had been stolen and devoured.

They had been completely denied of the fruits of their hard labor!

This truly angered them, causing them to not hesitate at all and help condense the remnant souls immediately. Even if they had to use a messy method to awaken the Evil God, they still had to kill the perpetrators.

“Leave!”

The moment that the bottom of the lightning pool could be seen, its liquid running dry, the giant python transmitted a single thought to Qin Lie as it opened its mouth and enveloped him in one bite.

The giant python’s body swelled to ten times its original size, becoming a hundred meters long purely through the gathering of thunder and lightning. As for Qin Lie, who was still enveloped within the lightning sphere, he was in the giant python’s mouth as it carried him and fled toward the distant Nether Battlefield.

In a corner of the Demon God Mountain Range...

Song Tingyu’s body cautiously shrunk, a look of horror appearing upon her face as she observed the changes occurring in the Demon God Mountain Range. She watched as the mountain peak crumbled and a primordial Evil God emerged from within, swallowed the vile souls, formed its consciousness, and gradually awoke...

She had been completely frozen with shock. She had never expected that Qin Lie entering the Demon God Mountain Range would have incited such a heaven shaking, earth shattering change and actually awakened a primordial Evil God!

By this time, all of the Horned Demon warriors had already rushed into the Demon God Mountain Range while the old priests continued chanting at the sky.

Right when the primordial Evil God's consciousness was about to fully form, as it was about to awaken, the python had suddenly inflated in midair, turned into a floating giant python, and swallowed the thunder sphere containing Qin Lie, fleeing towards the Nether Battlefield.

As for Song Tingyu, she had been abandoned by Qin Lie and the giant python...

"Over there! Over there! There is still one more person!" Qin Lie shouts suddenly echoed over from the distant sky, rumbling out from within the giant python's mouth.

The giant thunder python's body shook. It seemed reluctant but, after a moment of hesitation, it changed directions midair and began to fly towards Song Tingyu's location.

Song Tingyu raised her head and looked up at the gray, hazy sky, watching the dazzling lightning python's hundred meter long body slither over through it. She felt an extraordinarily powerful aura begin to surge from its body as it followed Qin Lie's command. Her heart suddenly began to quiver.

It was the first time her heart had given birth to such feelings...

"Bring her with us! Then we can flee from here!" Qin Lie was still screaming.

The giant python's enormous body bolted over, arriving behind Song Tingyu's head and suddenly spitting out a streak of lightning. Like a lasso, the lightning wrapped around Song Tingyu's feminine figure. Suddenly it retracted like a tongue, bringing her to Qin Lie's side in a flash

Surprisingly, the lightning which wrapped around Song Tingyu wasn't violent at all. Instead, it was mild and gentle like water. Shock emerged within the eyes of the terrified, pale Song Tingyu. She was extremely amazed by the the python's skill in controlling lightning.

"Go!" Qin Lie shouted.

The giant python flew back into the sky and adjusted its direction, once again fleeing towards the Nether Battlefield. It cut through the sky like a gigantic streak of lightning, passing over the Demon God Mountain Range.

Just when the python was about to leave the area of the Demon God Mountain Range, the mountain peak which Gao Yu was receiving an evil inheritance in suddenly collapsed!

Amidst the rolling stone fragments, a pair of hideous, demonic hands that were tens of meters long pierced through the larger chunks of stone that flew around in the air and suddenly grabbed the giant python's tail.

Countless streams of jet black demonic energy quickly entangled the giant python's body like encroaching vines as the hideous

demon hands forcefully pulled it back.

"Boom!"

The hundred meter long giant python made from thunder, lightning, and a soul consciousness was abruptly jerked from the sky and thrown at the feet of the snake-headed Evil God.

The Evil God which had bestowed its inheritance to Gao Yu was actually the first one to wake up and make a move!

Chapter 269: Kid, Let Me Borrow Your Body!

“Boom!”

The giant python that was hundreds of meters long sparked with lightning, writhing at the foot of the snake-headed Evil God.

The enormous boulders that had piled up due to the explosion of the mountain peak were shattered to pieces. Fragments flew all over amidst the earth-shaking explosions.

Qin Lie and Song Tingyu were inside the mouth of the giant python. Having been thrown around as well, they were dizzy and could not determine which way was up.

The enormous python that was formed from thunder, lightning, and pure soul energy seemed to become tangible. It rolled around in the stones, crushing them.

The enormous python gave an angry howl that resounded from the depths of its soul. This giant python twisted and then charged back into the sky.

It once again hovered above the Demon God Mountain Range!

Seeing it appear in the horizon, the Horned Demon warriors and old Horned Demon priests howled in fury and channelled their

power.

At this time, strange stones, spiked clubs, iron hammers, skulls, bone knives, and white bone arrows came like a storm towards the giant python.

Within the mouth of the enormous python, Qin Lie and Song Tingyu's complexions changed color. They felt a very powerful and frightening nether demonic energy coming from the weapons that filled the sky.

The two noticed that there were two Horned Demon elites with five horns each among the horned demons below them. They were some of the strongest individuals among the evil races—comparable to Fulfillment Realm practitioners!

These two had thrown out a skull and a bone knife.

The skull and the bone knife were extremely fast. They carried thick negative fluctuations that could not be weakened. Auras of malice, insanity, bloodlust, savagery, and destruction roiled like an ocean—as though it could drown everything.

Even the enormous python seemed to be slightly wary of the skull and the bone knife. Seeing the two, it moved its tail in order to avoid them.

It was obvious that the skull and the bone knife were not the same as the other weapons. After the first attack missed, waves of

souls emerged from them. The souls were flickering and only had the simplest of objectives—to destroy. The souls directed the knife and the skull to shake in midair and then changed direction to attack the enormous python once more.

All of the other weapons fell from the sky when the enormous serpent became illusory.

Among them, only the skull and the bone knife did not fall, continuing to make a new round of attacks.

“What is going on?!” Xue Li’s shocked voice resounded in Qin Lie’s mind. “Kid, where are you? What are you doing? Why do I feel the aura of an evil god?!”

“I am in the Nether Realm, in the Demon God Mountain Range where the evil races perform their sacrifices. There is an Evil God that seems to be waking up...” Qin Lie sent a wisp of his consciousness into the Soul Suppression Orb to answer Xue Li, but his attention was still preoccupied as he watched the skull and the bone knife.

He felt a tidal wave of evil radiating from the skull and the bone knife. These two weapons seemed to have souls. They gave him a deep feeling of terror.

The skull and the bone knife spun, stirring up the nether demonic energy in the Demon God Mountain Range and drawing it to them. The energy seemed to increase the power of these two weapons and helped them in their objective to kill the giant

python.

"Demon God Mountain Range—you've awakened a Demon God!" The half of Xue Li's soul shouted in shock from inside the Soul Suppression Orb. "You, boy, are really crazy. You have only just cultivated to the early stage of the Manifestation Realm and you dare to charge into the Demon God Mountain Range and even disturb a Demon God! You are insane, you don't want to live!"

Qin Lie couldn't bother to respond. At this time, his attention was focused on the changes of the mountain range below. He was waiting for the enormous python's decision.

The giant python moved above the Demon God Mountain Range. It did not seem to be in a hurry to leave. It had fallen from the sky earlier as though something had gripped its tail and was now enraged. As it avoided the skull and the bone knife, it seemed to lock onto something...

"Zzzt zzzt zzzt!"

Suddenly, lightning sparked in the eyes of the snake-headed Demon God's cold and dull eyes.

At this moment, the enormous python that was circling through the air seemed to finally see an opportunity and actually charged at the Evil God from the sky.

It seemed like it wanted to get something from the Evil God at the

moment that it woke up... Like it wanted to take something even more important from the Evil God.

“Awoo!”

An enormous howl that seemed to shatter the skies came from the mountain peak that Gao Yu was on. The Evil God at the center of the tumbling stones began to walk.

Before this, the Evil God had been covered in the stones when it pulled the giant python down. It had disappeared and did not attack again.

It seemed to be waiting for Gao Yu’s succession to finish and for Gao Yu to merge with all of the Demon God’s consciousnesses.

Seeing that the enormous python was taking the chance to attack its fellow, incomplete Demon God, it was became furious and shot out of the stones.

A pair of great wings that seemed to cover the world suddenly flapped. As this enormous demon walked, it shot straight into the sky. With rolling demon energy that seemed to be able to destroy everything, it furiously shot at the giant python.

Waves of immeasurable soul consciousness spread from this enormous demon. It was like a black abyss that threatened to swallow the soul body of the enormous python.

The snake-headed Evil God seemed to realize something in this moment. It suddenly howled and streaks of lightning shot out of its serpentine mouth—black lightning!

The black lightning had the savagery of heavenly thunder but the darkness and evil of nether demonic energy. It burned with black-colored flames and instantly swallowed the enormous lightning python.

The black lightning struck the giant python, giving off a blinding light and making it appear as though its soul body was being burned by pitch black flames.

The other Evil God also approached with its waves of black demonic energy, as though it was going to tear apart the giant python.

From their position in the python's mouth, Qin Lie and Song Tingyu could not see a thing. Their were surrounded by pitch black lightning and roiling flames. They were covered by swathes of demonic energy and could not see any light.

They only felt fierce tremors which were caused by the enormous python's was furious writhing. It furiously howled from its very soul as it struggled against the ancient Evil Gods.

"Kid! Let me out! Quick, let me out of here!" Xue Li's howled from within the Soul Suppressing Orb. He seemed so excited that he was going crazy. "Let this half of my soul out! Quick! I can help you!"

Qin Lie was dizzy from being thrown around inside the mouth of the enormous python. He could not tell which way was up or see any light.

He started to become muddle-headed.

At this time, hearing the shouts of Xue Li, his usually reliable intelligence seemed to loosen.

In a daze, a wisp of his consciousness opened the lightning seal inside the Soul Suppression Orb and released half of Xue Li's soul.

"Muahahaha! Muahahahaha!" Xue Li's soul howled furiously. He then roared in Qin Lie's mind. "Kid, let me borrow your body!"

The next moment, Qin Lie saw a bloody shadow in his Soul Lake. That bloody shadow seemed to spread into the water.

It quickly spread in his Soul Lake.

His thoughts, consciousness, will, and soul suddenly seemed to lose control at the same time!

Xue Li had turned against him!

"Kid, you don't have to worry. I have no interest in your body, but heavenly thunder is roaring and lightning is coming down

outside. Even if it's me, I would not dare to come out in a soul form, so I can only temporarily use your body. Your body does not have to fear being killed by lightning and thunder!" Xue Li's voice resounded inside his mind. Then Qin Lie noticed that he walked out of the python's mouth. "Kid! It is hard to find a battle of this level in the world! You will benefit from participating in the battle with my help! Watch closely!"

Qin Lie's body suddenly flew out of the giant python's body. Among the terrifying rumbling of thunder, he fell straight towards the Demon God Mountain Range.

"In order to have you get a closer look, I will also open my soul to you!" Xue Li shouted.

Qin Lie's mind suddenly shook. He discovered that he had returned to his body. He could feel any change that was occurring in his body. He could feel the blood in his body furiously flowing like a flood.

He could see his muscles and veins continuously expanding as the blood flowed. He could see drops of blood appearing on his fingertips.

He could feel every minuscule change inside his body. He could see everything in the surroundings. He could see the demonic clouds shifting in the air and the streaks of blinding lightning. He could see three enormous figures flash amongst the demonic clouds that drew in demonic energy.

Yet he could not control himself.

When Qin Lie sent out his thoughts, his body would not respond. He could see, he could think, but he was not able to control his body.

Right now, the primary control of his body rested with someone else—Xue Li.

Xue Li was using his body, using his blood to make something...

He could see that blood was flowing from all ten of his fingertips. The blood that came out condensed and did not fall through the air. The blood that came out from his body in drops twisted in the air as they were forming something.

It was a diagram—a strange diagram that was as complex as the blood vessels in a human's body.

The threads of blood were like the blood vessels of a person. Drawn with the flow of his blood, these threads formed a strange picture in the air.

This was a forbidden art of the Blood Fiend Sect!

Qin Lie was suddenly curious—what did this diagram of the human circulatory system do?

“You will know soon enough! Haha!” Xue Li knew what he was thinking and replied—in Qin Lie’s voice.

It was as though Qin Lie was answering his own question.

“Thump thump! Thump thump! Thump thump!”

Qin Lie suddenly heard the strong sound of his heart beat. He saw that the Horned Demon warriors were all looking at the sky at this time.

Strong heartbeats came from those Horn Demon warriors. They seemed to be affected by the forbidden art; the blood inside their bodies was burning!

Yet they did not realize it.

But Qin Lie knew.

He could clearly feel that, as the hearts of those Horned Demons beat rapidly, their blood boiled due to the strange picture of the circulatory system—a picture that was drawn out with his blood.

Qin Lie saw blood seep out from one of the Horn Demon’s orifices. The blood flowed out as though it could not be stopped, eventually forming a stream.

Then a second Horned Demon’s blood did the same. Then a

third, and a fourth, and a fifth...

He noticed that, other than the Horned Demon Warriors with five horns, the ones with three horns, four horns, and two horns were bleeding from their orifices.

Initially, they did not seem to realize that their blood was leaving them. It was as though they did not feel it.

It was only when the first shout occurred. Then, all the Horned Demons started to shout. They jumped and scampered in terror. They tried to cover their mouths, ears, eyes, and noses.

They needed to stopper where the blood escaped.

Yet the blood still seeped out between their fingers in spurts and streams that fell to the ground.

It was an extremely bizarre and terrifying scene.

Chapter 270: The Four Ferocious Beings!

Within the Demon God Mountain Range, a river of blood flowed at the feet of the Horned Demon clansmen.

Despite the tragic screams, roars, and attempts of the Horned Demon clansmen to stop the flow of fresh blood, it continued to flow out from between their fingers.

“Hehehe!” Xue Li’s strange laugh resonated out from Qin Lie’s mouth.

Qin Lie’s vision was clear as he watched the blood that flowed out from the Horned Demon clansmen gradually condense and consolidate.

Before long, a blood colored demon shadow slowly rose from within the pool of blood.

Qin Lie’s body turned into a streak of bloody light as he shot over from a distance. Accompanied by the strange diagram of what seemed to be blood vessels, he instantaneously merged into the blood colored demon shadow.

In that instant, Qin Lie’s body suddenly began to feel strange. It was as if his body’s arteries, veins, and blood had become closely linked with the giant blood colored demon shadow.

He immediately realized that his body, soul, and even his

dantian's spirit seal had already merged with the blood colored demon shadow to form one entity. It was as if he had become the core of the blood colored demon shadow's heart, brain, and soul... as if he were in control of it.

Amidst the tragic howls of the Horned Demon clansmen, all of their blood had condensed and formed into this giant blood colored demon shadow. Its body was formed from their refined blood and was powered with the energy from their fresh blood. It basically stepped on the corpses of their fellow clansmen as it arose from within the pool of blood.

An extremely thick aura of evil and blood began to emanate from the blood colored demon shadow's body, causing a bloody mist to permeate the nearby surroundings. It also incited the blood of the Horned Demon clansmen, making them feel as if their blood was boiling.

"Awoo!"

Within the blood colored demon shadow, Qin Lie suddenly howled. The giant blood demon began to slightly resemble Qin Lie as it suddenly rushed into the sky.

The hundred meter long python and the two Evil Gods still fought in the air above the Demon God Mountain Range, clashing amongst the roiling demonic clouds, black lightning, and black flames.

The giant python had been gradually losing strength. It had no

flesh and was purely a soul after all. It also had less strength to begin with and fighting for a long time within the Nether Realm was not the wisest choice.

Amongst the roiling black flames and demonic clouds, the giant python's body was like a streak of blazing lightning which was gradually shrinking and losing power...

Song Tingyu, who was still enveloped within its mouth, could clearly feel the thunder and lightning energy on its body. The python continuously bit and spit out lightning, filling the sky with a fading light and explosive rumbles of thunder as its body seemed to become smaller and smaller.

Just when Song Tingyu turned her dazed head around, as she began to worry for the giant python, she saw that a bloody shadow had suddenly emerged within the roiling demonic clouds.

A giant, blood colored demon. With sharp claws of blood, it forcefully tore apart the cover of demonic clouds and violently charged into the fray—it joined the fight between the giant python and the two Evil Gods!

This level of fighting caused even Song Tingyu's heart to tremble as a feeling of powerlessness emerged within her.

"Muahahaha!"

The sound of extremely loud laughter resonated from within the

giant blood colored demon. Amidst the deafening laughter, the demon suddenly rushed at the Evil God with black wings—the Evil God from which Gao Yu was currently receiving inheritance from!

River after river of blood descended like shooting stars., They wrapped around the Evil God's body like ribbons of blood, fiercely binding its body and wings. They forced the conscious body to abruptly be pulled down.

Traces of extreme shock suddenly emerged within Song Tingyu's beautiful eyes as she stared at the giant blood colored demon.

From the savage laughter which resonated out from within the giant blood colored demon, she realized that it was none other than Qin Lie!

This discovery caused her to become stricken with horror. She condensed her soul into a fine strand and then inspected further. She saw that this giant blood colored demon shared faint points of similarity with Qin Lie, as if it were Qin Lie after his figure had been blown up several times and then covered with a layer of blood...

Song Tingyu's eyes began to brighten as her mind grew increasingly confused. She continuously thought to herself, "Could that actually be Qin Lie?" However, she wasn't able to come up with a clear answer.

"Awooo!"

After being dragged down, the Evil God with black wings roared at the sky as it suddenly threw away the giant thunder python, instead turning its attention towards the giant blood colored demon.

At this moment, the bloody shadow swept past. Streaks of blood shot out, slamming into the black demon energy and causing enormous explosions.

Four titans fought within the Demon God Mountain Range, shrouding the sky in darkness. Massive, raging fluctuations of energy oscillated outwards, striking terror into the hearts of the Horned Demon clansmen and filling their eyes with fear.

The emergence of the giant thunder python and giant demon had caused feeling of dread to emerge within them. They couldn't fathom where the two terrible entities confronting their Evil Gods had come from.

Even the old Horned Demon priests had become completely silent—they had also been been dazed by this shocking battle.

Within this giant blood colored demon, Qin Lie was unable to control his body and circulate energy to use skills. He couldn't even move his fingers.

He could, however, watch and think. Therefore, he was able to perceive this stunning battle with his Soul Lake.

Scene after scene emerged within his Soul Lake, the surface of which was as clear as a mirror. The giant thunder python fought the snake-headed Evil God and the giant blood colored demon fought the winged Evil God with curved horns.

As these four entities fought each other to the death, they used various types of energy and displayed all sorts of forbidden arts and secret techniques. As the seals and formulas changed ever so faintly, they all emerged within his Soul Lake.

Xue Li seemed to be deliberately taking care of him. Moreover, he was constantly changing angles so that Qin Lie could see everything that was happening around him even more clearly.

He was like a bystander who had come as close as possible to watch the most violent area of the great battle between four powerful entities.

“At the Manifestation Realm, one must observe the manifestations of life. One must glimpse the most wondrous and rare mysteries and use their heart to touch it and their soul to feel it. One must use their Soul Lake to reflect and continuously analyze...” As Qin Lie silently pondered as he watched, thinking about the profound cultivation methods of the Manifestation Realm. He observed with his eyes and soul, then recorded his perceptions onto his Soul Lake.

Subconsciously, he entered the state of Thoughtless Tranquility. His soul consciousness, Soul Lake, mind, and body had all become focused on perceiving the wondrous, subtle changes which were happening around him. His mind and body were one.

In a trance, mystical illusions continuously emerged atop his Soul Lake. For a while, he focused his senses on the giant thunder python. Then he focused on his own giant blood colored demon and then finally the two Evil Gods...

They presented him with different experiences, allowing him to feel as if he were the embodiment of these entities. These feelings were wondrous, yet hard to describe. He repeatedly feasted on new profound methods of fighting.

Qin Lie gradually immersed himself within his senses...

Amidst the Demon God Mountain Range, four great entities viciously fought amongst roiling demon clouds, bursts of thunder and lightning, and raging black flames. The terrifying currents of energy produced by the fight seemed to cause the entire Nether Realm to tremble.

The main city of the Horned Demon Race—Black Horn City. A powerful, Horned Demon warrior with six horns stood in a wide, borderless plaza. He shouted passionately, giving a rousing speech in the language of the Nether Realm.

In the plaza, the majority of the Horned Demon martial practitioners were mounted atop nether beasts and listening intently.

They were carrying out their final preparations before entering the evil nether passageway and attacking Scarlet Tide Continent.

At this time, a strange glimmer suddenly emerged within the eyes of the Horned Demon warrior with six horns. He abruptly turned and looked towards the Demon God Mountain Range.

He stopped trying to rouse his soldiers and let out a shrill cry. Using a pure black, borderless cloth, he wrapped up his body and charged straight towards the Demon God Mountain Range like a streak of black lightning.

Meanwhile, an elderly Horned Demon clansman sat in a cemetery within the Horned Demon Clan's burial grounds. He was currently saying something to the souls of the corpses of his fellow clansmen.

He also had six demonic horns!

As he talked, he suddenly felt the giant fluctuations of energy within the Demon God Mountain Range. He immediately stopped his deep discussion with the souls and opened his eyes, revealing a pair of pitch black pupils. He flew out of the cemetery towards the Demon God Mountain Range.

"Oooooooo! Oooooooo! Oooooooo!"

The old Horned Demon priests brandished their white bone scepters and began to release wave after wave of soul fluctuations as if summoning something.

As they did, ghosts and ghouls began to emerge from within the small hills and peaks which dotted the outer boundaries of the Demon God Mountain Range and rush towards the two Evil Gods. Like water merging with a great sea, the ghosts and ghouls merged with the bodies of the two Evil Gods.

The nearly exhausted power of the Evil Gods, as well as their tired souls, were almost instantaneously replenished.

The two Evil Gods became lively once again. Their auras became vast like the ocean once more and their strength seemed to be inexhaustible.

“Zzzt zzzt zzzt!”

At this time, the originally hundred meter long giant thunder python had shrunk to one-third its original size, reducing its length to only thirty meters.

The size of the giant blood colored demon also decreased, having been halved in the middle of battle.

As for the two Evil Gods, upon receiving replenishment from the ghosts and ghouls, their figures that had originally shrunken suddenly began to magically grow again.

“It is indeed the Nether Realm after all. Since we are fighting them within the Demon God Mountain Range, it is nearly impossible to obtain victory.” Xue Li’s voice resounded within Qin

Lie's mind, "There are six horned Horned Demon elites coming! Before they arrive, we must flee from the Demon God Mountain Range. These six horned fellas are not much weaker than the avatars of these Evil Gods. Let's leave!"

"Leave!" A soul fluctuation condensed from thunder and lightning also came over from the giant thunder python's body.

The giant thunder python and the giant blood colored demon instantly reached a tacit understanding, both suddenly fleeing from the battle and rushing in the direction of the Nether Battlefield.

"Awooo!"

The two Evil Gods both let out mighty roars as they gave chase.

As for Qin Lie's physical body, it gradually tore out of the giant blood colored demon from between the eyebrows and slightly emerged at this moment.

As the giant blood colored demon constantly looked behind them, Qin Lie was able to see that the two Evil Gods wildly pursued them, one moving quickly and the other moving slowly.

The speed of the Evil God with curved horns and wings was extremely fast since it could fly. It looked like a dense, indestructible demonic cloud as it closed the distance between them, its speed increasing the closer it got.

“After being replenished by the ghosts and ghouls, the strength of these Evil Gods have quickly increased. Moreover... eh?” Xue Li exclaimed as he suddenly sensed something. He suddenly shouted, “No! Something’s wrong! This Evil God, this Evil God’s remnant soul consciousness has finished merging with its inheritor! Within this Evil God’s avatar is its successor and it has already succeeded in merging its remnant soul and power! Not good!”

As Xue Li’s words descended, Qin Lie set his senses upon the Evil God behind him. An endless evil fluctuation rose from within the Evil God’s body.

While the giant blood colored demon was still looking backwards, Qin Lie discovered the blurry figure of a human within the depths of the Evil God’s eyes.

Within the body of this Evil God was Gao Yu. He was within the heart of the Evil God—a heart which was as black as ink!

Gao Yu’s naked body and limbs were all within the black heart!

Cluster after cluster of pitch black demon energy flowed through the black heart and Gao Yu’s body. At this moment, Gao Yu had basically assimilated with the Evil God!

His soul had fallen into a trance and was constantly merging with the remnant soul of the Evil God, comprehending the many skills and techniques of the Evil God.

The eyes of the Evil God had become his eyes as well. Through the eyes of the Evil God, he stared at the giant blood colored demon in front of him.

The giant blood colored demon suddenly turned its head back yet again. At this moment, Gao Yu abruptly saw a familiar figure in between the blood demon's eyebrows—it was Qin Lie!

Chapter 271: Gazing From Afar

Gao Yu had been receiving his inheritance inside the body of the Evil God. When the evil god suddenly smashed the mountain peak and pulled the thunder python out of the air, Gao Yu woke up.

After that, the soul fragments of the Demon God's shadow, its thoughts, its memories, and all kinds of mysterious and profound characters flooded out of the sacrificial altar into his body, his veins, his bones, and his mind to merge with his body even faster.

The speed of his assimilation increased.

When the Evil God flew out for the second time and grappled with the thunder python, a great amount of combat experience and insights became large amounts of memories that quickly flowed into his mind.

It was at that time that Gao Yu was sucked into the black heart of the evil god and came into complete, raw contact with the Evil God.

Gao Yu continuously absorbed memories from the Evil God, pieces of its soul, large amounts of combat experience, and ancient knowledge. Then he finally accepted the inheritance of the Evil God in its entirety.

In that moment, Gao Yu was the Evil God. He was able to use his thoughts, his power, and his limbs to control the body of the Evil God!

The enormous body of this Evil God could be accurately controlled and used to cast all kinds of lost, secret arts.

When he opened his eyes and went to follow the will of the Evil God, to tear the enormous blood colored demon and the thunder python into pieces, he saw Qin Lie in the brow of the blood demon.

Gao Yu suddenly froze.

A string of thoughts appeared in his mind. He looked closely, wanting to make sure that the person at the blood demon's brow was Qin Lie.

He quickly confirmed it.

It was undoubtedly Qin Lie!

At this moment Gao Yu, whose blood, flesh, and soul had a strange connection with the Evil God, suddenly resisted the will of the evil god with his own will!

"Boom!"

The Evil God flapped its black wings that resembled black clouds as its enormous body suddenly fell from the sky.

It landed on a few hills, causing them to crumble and the earth to

shake.

“Hmm!” Xue Li’s voice resounded in Qin Lie’s mind again. “Strange... the person who has finished receiving that Evil God’s legacy seems to have turned on his master! The successor of this Evil God is resisting the will of the Evil God and has refused to chase us!”

Between the brows of the blood demon, Qin Lie stuck his head through a window in the blood and looked behind him.

He saw the incomparably frightening aura of the Evil God suddenly wither after its previous continuous surge.

Then it landed with a boom on the ground.

He felt a trace of anger and saw savagery in the eyes of the Evil God.

He also saw a blurry figure in those eyes that slowly became clear...

Gao Yu was using his soul consciousness to control the body of the Evil God. As his own influence spread, his shadow became clearer and more evident in the eyes of the Evil God.

“Gao Yu!” Qin Lie suddenly shook.

He finally understood why the Evil God would strangely fall from the sky and did not chase after him even after its power grew.

It was Gao Yu!

Gao Yu was hidden in the body of the Evil God. At that crucial time he used his soul consciousness to pull on the Evil God and disturb the Evil God's soul, causing it to then fall from the sky due to a loss of control.

Gao Yu's figure became clear in the pupils of the Evil God. From inside the Evil God's pupils he also saw Qin Lie. He saw Qin Lie's joy and also his urgency...

"You recognize him?" Xue Li's voice resounded inside Qin Lie's mind.

"He's a friend of mine! A very good friend!" Qin Lie shouted.

"So that is the reason. I was wondering why the Evil God gave up on chasing us." Xue Li's voice was slightly surprised. "I had not expected the successor to this Evil God to be your friend. Very interesting. This friend of yours has a strong mind. He has just received the inheritance yet dares to betray his master... ha, if he falls into the deep abyss of evil, he could possibly become a great calamity."

Qin Lie was silent. He only gazed at Gao Yu in the eyes of the Evil God, watching as his figure became blurry again.

He already guessed that the clarity of Gao Yu in the Evil God's pupils meant that Gao Yu was in control. If he became blurry, then the Evil God was in control...

And, right now, Gao Yu was undoubtedly not in control. He didn't know what Gao Yu, who received the inheritance and then immediately betrayed his master, would suffer for resisting the will of the Evil God.

"Don't worry, nothing will happen to the boy. It is extremely difficult for an Evil God to choose a successor. The successor of the Evil God is responsible for bringing the Evil God back to life. No matter what that kid does, the Evil God will not abandon him," Xue Li said.

Hearing him say this, Qin Lie felt slightly reassured.

In Icestone City, when everyone had been trying to kill him, it had been Gao Yu that killed the martial practitioners of the pavilion at a crucial time and helped him escape onto Commerce Street. Gao Yu helped a blood covered Qin Lie make it to Li's Shop.

Today, in this Nether Realm, when the Evil God's aura was growing, it fell at its strongest time.

—Once again, it was Gao Yu who saved him.

Qin Lie looked deeply at Gao Yu's figure that gradually blurred in

the eyes of the Evil God. He was deeply moved and resolved—regardless of whether or not Gao Yu fell into the abyss of evil, as long as he, Qin Lie, was alive, he would help Gao Yu recover himself!

“Hah, pretty good determination. Have you thought it through, though? There will be a day when this boy called Gao Yu will become the public enemy of the continent, more hated than even the evil races of the Nether Realm. If everyone wants to kill him, what will you do?” Xue Li said with a cold smile.

“If that day ever comes, I will pay any price to save him. No matter who wants to kill him, I will do my best to interfere!” Qin Lie shouted.

“If you do that, you will become enemies with the world!”

“That does not matter!”

“Hah! Good boy! You have quite the courage!”

As Qin Lie and Xue Li’s soul conversed, the blood demon was like a bloody red arch in the sky that flew towards the Nether Battlefield.

Drops of fresh blood occasionally dripped to the ground. The body of this blood demon was quickly shrinking.

“This blood golem is formed from fresh blood. When the power

in the blood is used up, it will disappear." Xue Lie's soul fluctuations started to settle. "I'm also a bit tired, so I'll return to your orb."

The bloody mark inside Qin Lie's soul lake seemed to be cleansed by water. It slowly grew faint and then disappeared.

Xue Li's presence quickly sank into the Soul Suppressing Orb and Qin Lie recovered the ability to move.

Once he regained control, he discovered that the blood demon wrapped around him resembled a piece of ice left in the sun. It was quickly melting, dissolving in droplets of blood.

Qin Lie's body rapidly fell through the sky.

"Prak prak!"

A long streak of lightning came from the body of the shrunken python and wrapped around him, pulling him back into the mouth of the python.

Qin Lie's body was covered in blood as he appeared beside Song Tingyu. He was with her in the mouth of the python once again. He looked through the opening of the mouth into the distance.

"Qin Lie, was that your voice that came out of the blood demon just now? You were inside the blood demon, right?" Song Tingyu's eyes shone as she stared at him unblinking. "Were you controlling

the blood demon during the battle?”

Qin Lie did not make a sound, responding with silence.

He always used silence to respond to things he did not want to answer. He used his actions to tell Song Tingyu she asked something she should not have.

“You!” Song Tingyu glared at him. She snorted. “I’ll remember this!”

Qin Lie remained silent.

Song Tingyu seemed to be angry with him and did not make a sound nor look at him.

An hour later, the body of this thunder python shrunk by half once more.

When they reached a dense patch of forest, a soul fluctuation made from lightning came from the body of the python. In the next moment, the python spat Qin Lie and Song Tingyu towards the forest. Then its body rapidly shrank to the size of a thumb and burrowed back into Qin Lie’s neck to hide.

“I’m tired…”

Qin Lie rubbed his head. He could understand the last message

from the python. He knew that much of the thunder and lightning energy the python had absorbed from the lightning pool had been expended in the fight.

He actually had a whole pile of questions about the Evil God, about the Demon God Mountain Range, about the enormous python itself...

Yet Xue Li and the enormous python, who could answer his questions, were resting at the same time and told him that he should not disturb them. Qin Lie wanted to cry.

Then he realized that he was also extremely exhausted.

Falling into the forest, he watched the branches of those vicious plants like incoming teeth. He wanted to attack but found that his eyes were blurry and his mind was dizzy. Even his body was swaying, and unable to stand properly.

He instantly understood the state of his body—he had lost too much blood.

The forbidden art of Blood Fiend Sect that Xue Li used to gather the blood of the Horned Demons and make a blood golem—he had cast it with the blood in his own body.

Since the loss of blood surpassed the tolerance of his body, he now felt dizzy and out of strength.

But they did manage to escape. Knowing this, he relaxed. When his mind relaxed, his consciousness blurred and he slowly fainted.

Chapter 272: Almost Broke It...

Qin Lie felt as though he had a very long dream.

In the dream, he could not make out the appearance of the person beside him and was unable to recognize them.

In the dream, he continued to learn, learning all kinds of strange languages, different types of speech, deceit and calculation, adjusting to all kinds of environments...

In the dream, there were people that taught him great amounts of knowledge. He needed to soak inside a large medicinal pool all day to have the medicinal fluid clean out the impurities in his body. Great care was taken with his three daily meals; what he could eat and drink was strictly monitored at all times...

In the dream, he was like a puppet with no choice but to accept all this.

In the dream, he seemed to be restrained and deprived of any freedom.

He had a feeling that he would be broken by that invisible pressure. He felt terror and helplessness as though his soul would crumble.

He covered his chest and breathed deeply, trying hard to wake up from the dream.

Qin Lie suddenly opened his eyes.

He was beside a lake that was filled with clear water, lying beside a wet stone. Glittering stones covered the bottom of the lake.

In front of him, Song Tingyu's body was covered in a haze of rainbow light. She was soaking in the lake and using the water to wash her body.

Those rainbow lights completely shrouded Song Tingyu's beautiful body so he could not see a thing.

Qin Lie looked forward and then moved his gaze away. He furrowed his brow and used his consciousness to probe his body.

He quickly found that, other than being slightly weak from excessive blood loss, there was nothing wrong.

His thoughts shifted and he took out some dried meat from his spatial ring. Beside the rock, he slowly swallowed. There were scenes of the four great beings fighting in his Soul Lake. He was immersed in it and could use his mind to feel it. He could feel the world-shaking battle and the exquisite manipulations of the power that the four great beings performed.

A long time later, he noticed that Song Tingyu had come next to him. He opened his eyes wider and, when he looked at Song Tingyu who had finished bathing, his eyes lit up.

Song Tingyu's curvy body was covered in a spirit armor that flowed with light. The spirit armor seemed to be made from a kind of transparent jade material, glowing and glittering. The spirit armor was also skin tight and exposed all of her seductive curves.

The spirit armor left her white arms, half of her legs, and her long, white neck exposed.

These exposed areas were covered in exquisite adornments like a star pendant, a five colored precious stone, or a beautiful piece of jade. It expressed her noble, elegant presence beautifully.

Her long hair was wet and hung off her shoulders. When she moved her head, droplets flew like diamonds.

"What, have you never seen a woman before?" Song Tingyu covered her mouth and smiled. Her beauty was like hundreds of flowers in bloom, bright and enchanting.

"How long have I been unconscious?" Qin Lie slowly focused.

"If we were to count according to our time, you were unconscious for two days and one night, so a relatively long time. It is rare for normal martial practitioners to be unconscious for so long." Song Tingyu wiped at her wet hair, a beautiful smile playing at the corner of her lips as she spoke. "You were very interesting when you were unconscious. You were talking in your sleep about escaping some place and what other people had arranged for you..."

Her eyes glittered brightly. She looked meaningfully into Qin Lie's eyes and observed the minute changes in Qin Lie's expression.

Qin Lie froze, clearly stunned.

A long while later, when he refocused again, he asked her, "Where are we now?"

Song Tingyu was very disappointed. She did not see anything unusual from Qin Lie's face. "We are almost at the Nether Battlefield. I took you and hurried to leave the Demon God Mountain Range at the fastest possible speed for the last two days. I was afraid that the Horned Demon warriors and the two Evil Gods would catch up so I did not dare to linger."

"Oh." Nodding, Qin Lie became silent again. A long while later, he asked, "Are you confident that we can pass through the Nether Battlefield?"

"The Nether Battlefield is between Nether Realm and Scarlet Tide Continent. It is vast and has seven levels in total. We usually set up a defense line on the fourth level and are active below it. The lower three levels are very close to the Nether Realm and the nether demonic energy is very strong. There are also many Nether Realm elites, demon insects, and nether beasts stationed there so we will not go..."

Song Tingyu's brow furrowed as her expression became serious. She carefully explained the state of the Nether Battlefield. "We

need to pass through the Nether Battlefield from the bottom level and go upwards. We should be able to go back to the Scarlet Tide Continent if we can get to the fourth floor. But the lower three levels... not many humans would go there and would die if they did, so I am not very confident."

"There are seven levels in total. The bottom three are the closest to the Nether Realm and are full of strong individuals." Qin Lie murmured under his breath, his expression grave.

"Ding!" The crisp green bracelet on Song Tingyu's left hand suddenly gave a soft sound like glass breaking.

Her face suddenly changed as she shouted, "They haven't given up!"

Qin Lie was shocked.

"There is an old Horned Demon that has been constantly chasing us. This geezer is very strong and the area covered by his soul is extremely vast. There were a few times where he almost detected us." Song Tingyu's brow furrowed and a seven colored sphere suddenly appeared in her hand. "This geezer moves at a very fast speed. It seems that he has guessed our general position. We can only hide."

Circular waves of light came from the round ball. The rainbow light formed a bright eggshell of light that covered her body.

“Come in.” She waved her hand at Qin Lie. “That geezer’s not the same as the nether beasts that you encountered before. His perception is extremely terrifying. As long as there is vitality and even the tiniest of soul fluctuations, he can detect them. That geezer has six horns and cultivation akin to the Fragmentation Realm. He is very scary.”

“A six horned warrior!” Qin Lie was astounded. He did not hesitate and hurried into Song Tingyu’s barrier of light.

Like a drop of water merging into the sea, there was only a small ripple on the light barrier as it sucked his body in.

The light barrier was very narrow and just perfect for holding Song Tingyu while still having some extra space. After Qin Lie entered, however, this ball of light was clearly too small...

“This Flowing Rainbow Shield was specifically forged for me and perfect for holding me alone. Any more and it is a much tighter fit. You... stay close to me and do not expose your body to the outside. If you leave the protective range of the Flowing Rainbow Shield, that old Horned Demon will be able to sense you.” Song Tingyu bit her lips, her eyes bright and shining as she ordered Qin Lie.

At this time, Qin Lie was shoulder to shoulder with Song Tingyu, and already very close but even so, half of his arm was not able to come in.

“I, uh...” Qin Lie had an awkward expression.

“Idiot…” Song Tingyu rolled her eyes and pulled his arm roughly.

Qin Lie and Song Tingyu suddenly pressed together in a spooning position. Song Tingyu was in front and he was in back. They were tightly pressed together in this position.

In this position, he and Song Tingyu were both covered by the Flowing Rainbow Shield and his arm was not exposed.

“Hold my waist…” Song Tingyu said.

“This…” Qin Lie hesitated. “Miss Song, we…”

“Cut the nonsense. I’m going to take you and jump into the lake. The water can hide the Flowing Rainbow Shield! What are you thinking about?” Song Tingyu scolded in a low voice.

Qin Lie understood with a guilty expression. His arms wrapped around Song Tingyu’s slender waist.

His hands came around Song Tingyu’s flat stomach and he could feel the softness and warmth of Song Tingyu’s waist…

“Grab on tighter, I’m about to go down.” Song Tingyu said.

There was trace of red on her white neck. Qin Lie’s head was behind hers and he could see it clearly.

Qin Lie subconsciously tightened his hands.

His lower half naturally came into contact with Song Tingyu's bountiful behind. He could clearly feel it. Under his pressure, it clearly changed shape and retreated flexibly...

Qin Lie's mind shook. A fire of uncontrollable lust rose within him. His lower body quickly reacted and rose as well.

"You bastard!" Song Tingyu instantly felt the change between his legs and cursed in a low voice. Her neck was so red it almost seemed to be bleeding. Before Qin Lie could react, she suddenly flew up. The Flowing Rainbow Shield rose in an elegant curve and landed in the water next to them, sinking to the bottom of the lake.

Strangely, the bright rainbow barrier of light disappeared once it came into contact with the water.

From the outside, Song Tingyu and Qin Lie's figures seemed to disappear from the world.

Any signs of life and soul aura fluctuations were completely concealed. It really was uncanny.

Yet inside the light barrier underwater, Qin Lie suddenly grunted in pain. His hands pressed at his lower half, his forehead covered in sweat, but he did not dare to make a sound.

Previously, his lower half had been upright and pressed against Song Tingyu's beautiful bottom...

When Song Tingyu abruptly carried him into the sky and then dove into the water, Song Tingyu's behind went with her. When she landed, her bottom suddenly came down as well.

Landing directly on Qin Lie's elated lower half...

Qin Lie's upright part was pressed between the space of her behind. When she pressed, she almost broke it.

That heart-piercing pain was even more painful than a thousand lightning bolts.

Qin Lie's head went cold with sweat.

Yet he could only grunt, unable to voice his pain. He could only swallow the hardship—it was Qin Lie that could not control himself and his impulses. He had been the one to first touch the other and it was only fair for him to be unfortunate.

Song Tingyu, whose back was to him, bit her lips as he grit his teeth in pain.. Her shoulder shook and her eyes were filled with smugness. She suppressed the impulse to laugh, taking pleasure from his predicament. "Bastard, you dare to touch me? Hmph, now you know the consequences."

Chapter 273: The Wooden Sculpture's Change

Inside the rainbow barrier at the bottom of the lake, Qin Lie's chest pressed against Song Tingyu's back.

Qin Lie did not dare to move a muscle. He did not even dare to wildly imagine things. His body leaned stiffly against Song Tingyu's back and he did not utter a word.

He felt a hint of wariness towards this unpredictable woman. He did not know if she would do something unthinkable in the next moment, so he was careful.

A pleased smile rose to Song Tingyu's lips as her shoulders shuddered slightly. Her eyes were filled with the colors of victory.

"Swoosh swoosh!"

Before long, the sound of distant footsteps across grass drew near.

Qin Lie grew more and more cautious, not even daring to let his thoughts stray. He hurriedly held his breath and focused his mind, evening out his breathing to adjust the blood flow of his body.

"Don't worry. Inside the Flowing Rainbow Shield, he would not be able to hear us even if we speak." Song Tingyu smiled

disdainfully with her back against him. “As long as you don’t act carelessly, you will not get yourself into trouble. Heh…”

“This Horned Demon elite with six horns has been pursuing us for a while now?” Qin Lie switched the topic.

“Yes. Ever since you fainted, he has been chasing us constantly. This old horned geezer is incredibly powerful. He seems to be extremely well-versed in soul scouting; there were a few times when we were extremely far apart but his soul aura was still able to find us.” Song Tingyu also grew serious, withdrawing her smile upon talking about a strong enemy. She said seriously, “This geezer would probably be a wall in our path. If we can’t go through him, we will not even be able to reach the Nether Battlefield.”

“A Horned Demon elite with six horns is the rival of a Fragmentation Realm expert. That’s way too scary.” Qin Lie also paled.

“He’s here!” Song Tingyu exclaimed softly.

The lake was incredibly clear. Beneath its surface, both Song Tingyu and Qin Lie could see everything above them.

Inside the lake, Qin Lie raised his head and clearly saw a thin-looking old Horned Demon. He wore a dark gray long robe and appeared to be floating over from afar like a ghost.

The old man was formidable at about two and a half meters tall.

He was probably a very strong Horned Demon warrior when he was young.

Yet now his figure was very thin. Ghost fire seemed to burn deep within his pupils as he walked over, giving off an incredibly terrifying soul intimidation power.

He simply stood beside the lake with a look of considerable doubt. He seemed to be confused as to why the prey he detected earlier had disappeared from his senses.

So he sat down on the stone floor and shut his eyes. He grabbed something inside his dark gray sleeves with one hand, seemingly casting some kind of evil race secret art.

Ripples suddenly appeared on the surface of the lake. They spread out like an unfolding carpet, inch by inch towards the surroundings.

The air, the surface of the lake, and the surface of the land were all filled with an incredibly dense soul aura. It was as if a huge web had spread out from the old man's body and gradually covered every inch of the surrounding space.

"This is a type of soul searching technique. Any living being within the area will be discovered by him as long as they have a soul." Song Tingyu appeared to be very familiar with the Nether Realm's evil races. "This guy's an elite with six horns. Unless we've reached the Fragmentation Realm ourselves, there is no way we can hide from his soul detection. Heh, thank goodness I have

the Flowing Rainbow Shield or we would not have been able to escape this time…”

Qin Lie listened closely to her explanations and inwardly let out a sigh of relief. This woman definitely came from Profound Heaven Alliance alright; she carried a whole trunk of valuable artifacts with her.

While he thought that, the spatial ring in his hand suddenly reverberated slightly.

Qin Lie was shocked. He then let out a wisp of mind consciousness and slipped inside the spatial ring.

Inside the small space within the spatial ring, the wooden sculpture suddenly lit up. That wooden sculpture was the only thing his grandfather had left for him. It was carved in the shape of Qin Shan and the complicated magic composite spirit diagram inscribed inside could match with his thunder and lightning arts to form a web of thunder and lightning.

The wooden sculpture inside the spatial ring seemed to have detected something. It glowed faintly, appearing restless. This caused Qin Lie to feel secretly surprised—just what was causing the wooden sculpture inside the spatial ring to move?

He was incredibly shocked on the inside.

He subconsciously looked towards the old man and saw that he

seemed to be gripping something inside his wide sleeves. That thing that he could not see seemed to have caused the change in the wooden sculpture...

Qin Lie was incredibly curious to know exactly what was hidden within the old man's sleeves, but he did not pull away from the Flowing Rainbow Shield. He did not even dare to take the wooden sculpture out of the spatial ring—he was afraid that he would alert the old man.

Naturally, Qin Lie did not say anything to Song Tingyu about the strange movements of the wooden sculpture inside the spatial ring. He did not explain the oddity to her.

He only noticed that the old Horned Demon with six horns shuddered slightly as the ghost fire deep within his pupils suddenly jumped and became excited... the old man seemed to have discovered something.

The old Horned Demon seemed to have lost control over his emotions. A light of incredible shock flashed across his eyes. He suddenly rose to his feet.

The old man began to walk aimlessly around the lake and the surrounding region. He looked everywhere as if trying to lock onto something.

Unfortunately, he wasn't able to confirm the Flowing Rainbow Shield's position.

After a very, very long time, this old Horned Demon left with a look of helplessness.

An hour later, Song Tingyu let out a soft sigh and said, “...I don’t feel him. He should’ve left already. We will leave immediately.”

“Sploosh!”

Song Tingyu’s shapely body passed through the lake’s surface, still wrapped inside the Flowing Rainbow Shield, and stood lithely on the shore.

Meanwhile Qin Lie was left at the bottom of the lake. He glared at Song Tingyu in irritation before hastily exiting the lake completely drenched.

“Little thief, this is my punishment to you. It’ll serve as a warning when you think of taking advantage of me,” Song Tingyu said smilingly.

“My clothes are wet. I will have to change before we leave.” Qin Lie snorted once and began taking off his clothes right in front of Song Tingyu, paying no heed to her surprised cries.

“You bastard!” Song Tingyu scolded but, seeing that he had already stripped his upper body of clothing, she hurriedly turned around.

“Splash!” She had only just turned around before water poured

down on her head from the sky.

She had just withdrawn the Flowing Rainbow Shield, so she was immediately drenched by the lake water. The perfect and attractive outline of her curves were instantly exposed.

“Now we’re even!” Qin Lie chuckled with an odd tone before immediately running in the direction of the Nether Battlefield still baring his upper body.

“You vengeful brat!” Song Tingyu screamed while both anger and laughter mingled within her eyes. She glared furiously at Qin Lie, first covering her body with a wisp of hot energy before chasing after him. “Bastard, stop right there!”

Two hours after the duo had left.

The old Horned Demon had actually reappeared beside the lake bit by bit, as if a fragmented soul was gathering unto itself.

It was as if he had never left this place…

He still sat on the stone ground, but now his expression was calm. Black demonic light flashed inside his deep and dark pupils.

“Oooooo! Oooooo!”

He suddenly let out a low whistle as if summoning someone,

informing him of his own location.

After a very long time, yet another Horned Demon clansman arrived alone.

This incredibly tough Horned Demon elite was a six horned warrior!

He was the six horned elite from Black Horn City who had been rallying an army and was about to lead his men to attack Scarlet Tide Continent but, after he detected the strangeness at Demon God Mountain Range, he had wrapped himself in a pitch black cloak and left.

“Uncle, have you found them?” The Horned Demon elite asked the old Horned Demon in the language of the Nether Realm after he arrived.

“Duo Luo, do you think that young human man looked like a certain someone?” The old man suddenly asked.

“Look like someone? Who?” The Horned Demon man called Duo Luo asked doubtfully.

After the two Horned Demons had rushed to the Demon God Mountain Range, they only needed to absorb the remaining memories of their dead clansmen that hadn’t completely dissipated to realize what had happened.

Therefore, Qin Lie and Song Tingyu's appearance were deeply imprinted in their minds.

"Do you think he looks like... the Venerable One?" The old man's expression was incredibly solemn. While he said this, he took out an item from his sleeves—a wooden sculpture!

A wooden sculpture that looked exactly the same as Qin Lie's!

The only difference was that the wooden sculpture he held was obviously smaller than the one that Qin Lie had. It was only half as large.

Other than that, there were no visible differences between Qin Lie's wooden sculpture and this one—they were both carved with the life-like appearance of Qin Shan.

Initially shocked when the old Horned Demon took out the wooden sculpture, Duo Luo actually knelt on one knee in respect.

—he actually knelt at the sight of Qin Shan's wooden sculpture.

Chapter 274: Spatial Compartment

“Uncle, now that you mention it, that human youngster does look quite similar to the Venerable One.”

Duo Luo, the Horned Demon warrior with six horns, knelt and saluted Qin Shan’s sculpture once before standing up again. His deep, dark eyes gazed carefully at the wooden sculpture.

“He has the Venerable One’s keepsake with him!” The old man exclaimed.

Duo Luo’s expression changed as he couldn’t help but cry out, “The Venerable One’s keepsake?! Uncle, are you sure?”

“I am not one who can confirm that, but this can!” The old geezer gripped the wooden sculpture in his hands tightly. Demonic light blinked deep within his pupils. “The Venerable One once promised our race that he would one day open the evil nether passageway and allow my race to return to their homeland. Our race also made an agreement and a promise with the Venerable One at that time!”

Duo Luo’s expression was solemn as he said, “But we have not communicated with the Venerable One for a very long time, have we?”

“As long as the Venerable One is alive, the agreement will not be broken. Even if he has died, as long as the keepsake exists and as long as they are willing to acknowledge it, then the agreement is still valid!” The old man pondered and thought seriously for a

moment before saying, “The Venerable One is not one who breaks promises. For the past few years, he should have been looking for the evil nether passageway and attempting to open it. Now, the evil nether passageway has been opened and this human youngster who possesses the Venerable One’s keepsake has even fallen from the passage to the Nether Realm. All of this… may very well be the Venerable One’s arrangements. The passage was likely opened by the Venerable One. The fact that he allowed this youngster to step into the Nether Realm may very well be a signal to us!”

“What signal?” Duo Luo asked.

“He is telling us that he has upheld the agreement and helped us open the evil nether passageway!” The old man said word by word.

Duo Luo’s tough body abruptly shuddered. “In that case, the Venerable One is requesting us to uphold our side of the agreement as well?”

“That should be the case.” The old man’s tone was affirmative.

“That human youngster has caused a huge commotion among our race. He has even acted recklessly at the Demon God Mountain Range. If he came under the Venerable One’s arrangements, he shouldn’t be provoking us, should he? He doesn’t seem to know the truth…” Duo Luo asked again.

“Yes, he probably doesn’t know the truth but, since he holds the Venerable One’s keepsake with him and looks like the Venerable One, then he must be someone close to the Venerable One. It may

be that the Venerable One does not wish for him to know about the agreement between us and thus kept the kid in the dark." The old man guessed.

"Then what do we do now, Uncle? That youngster is probably trying to return to the Scarlet Tide Continent through the Nether Battlefield. Are we going to stop them?" Duo Luo asked.

"Since the Venerable One has kept him in the dark, it is probably to keep him from knowing too much. That is why I have not exposed him and tried speaking to him even though I detected the keepsake on his body just now." The old man said thoughtfully. "If the Venerable One does not wish for him to know, then we shall respect his wishes. The fact that he has carried the keepsake down to the Nether Realm and caused such a huge commotion at the Demon God Mountain Range, alerting you and I, may be the Venerable One's orders. He is telling us that he has upheld the agreement and opened the evil nether passageway."

"We let them leave, then?" Duo Luo confirmed again.

The old man nodded, "Notify the men at the Nether Battlefield. The warriors in the bottom three levels are to let them through without leaving behind any trace."

Duo Luo nodded and said, "Understood."

……

A few days later.

Qin Lie and Song Tingyu arrived at a huge, towering mountain. The gigantic mountain stabbed deep into the thick clouds. The surrounding area was thick with nether demonic energy.

The duo stood at the foot of the gigantic mountain. They were a little surprised that they could not see its peak.

“Qin Lie, are you sure that we must enter the Nether Battlefield from this mountain’s peak?” Song Tingyu’s eyes shone with a strange light.

“If the memories I analyzed are correct, then this mountain peak, which the Horned Demon clansmen call the ‘Sky Stairway,’ is the way to the Nether Battlefield. According to their memories, as long as we move along the mountain and head all the way towards the sky, we will be able to arrive at the lowest floor of the Nether Battlefield…” Qin Lie chose his words carefully and said quietly, “That is to say, the Nether Realm where the Horned Demon Race live is right beneath the lowest floor of Nether Battlefield.”

Song Tingyu shuddered a little while exclaiming softly, “Then do you know where the Nether Battlefield is in the Scarlet Tide Continent?”

“Where?” Qin Lie was confused.

“The bottom of the Purple Mist Sea.” Song Tingyu’s expression

was odd.

Qin Lie also went blank for a moment.

A rather clear image suddenly appeared in his mind—it was a spatial structure diagram.

Beneath the deep, immeasurable depths of the Purple Mist Sea, there was an entrance that reached straight to the Nether Battlefield.

There were seven levels of the Nether Battlefield in total and they were right at the bottom of the Purple Mist Sea. The bottom of the seven wide levels of Nether Battlefield was actually the Nether Realm's "Sky Stairway," mountain peak that connected to this region...

Purple Mist Sea was at the edge of the Scarlet Tide Continent. The depths of the sea were several meters deep and the underground several meters beneath it was called the Nether Battlefield. There was no telling exactly how deep or wide the seven levels of Nether Battlefield were and, if one was to go beneath it, they would reach the dark gray skies of the Nether Realm. If they went further, they would reach the vast lands of the Nether Realm.

Qin Lie suddenly realized just how magical the evil nether passageway was. They had passed through the evil nether passageway and who knows how much of a dimensional distance from the Scarlet Tide Continent to reach the Nether Realm

directly. Just how wondrous of a feat was this?

With the existence of evil nether passageway, the evil races of the Nether Realm did not have to go through the “Sky Stairway” to enter the Nether Battlefield. They did not need to go through the seven levels of the Nether Battlefield and pass through several thousand meters of water to reach the backlands of the Scarlet Tide Continent. They could go directly to Armament Sect.

“The boundless universe is truly miraculous. It is only today that I have gotten a clearer understanding of the gap between the Nether Realm and Scarlet Tide Continent. Space... is truly mysterious and immense. Unfathomable secrets are contained within it.” Song Tingyu exclaimed.

“Let’s go. We need to avoid the Horned Demon clansmen as much as possible. The mountain peak is so high that it may not be so easy to climb up to the final level of the Nether Battlefield.” Qin Lie raised his head and looked at the mountain peak covered by thick clouds. “We don’t know if there are Horned Demon elites watching over the mountain peak either. If there are, then it will be troublesome to deal with them...”

“How would there be no elites standing guard at this time?” Song Tingyu let out a quiet sigh. “You’ve caused such a commotion in the Demon God Mountain Range that, if I were a Horned Demon clansman, I would’ve been furious as well. They’re not stupid; they must have guessed that we would be returning through the Nether Battlefield. I predict that there will be Horned Demon warriors with five horns standing guard at the mountain peak. They are just waiting for us to fall into their trap.”

“Then we…” Qin Lie’s expression was heavy.

“We will have to charge through by force! At this time, it may be that the opponent has not yet organized powerful defenders to stand guard over the entrance. If we continue to delay until a Horned Demon warrior with six horns shows up, then it will truly be a dead end for us.” Song Tingyu’s expression became a gaze of determination. “If it is just a five horned warrior, there is hope for us to charge through using everything I have and unleashing my forbidden arts. However, I will be weakened for a time after unleashing the forbidden arts. You will have to protect me from all harm in the bottom three levels of the Nether Battlefield. If you can’t, then all that’s left for us is death.”

“I will do my best.” Qin Lie exclaimed softly.

Qin Lie was secretly shocked. He did not expect that Song Tingyu actually still had a trick up her sleeves. Even up against a five horned warrior that can rival a Fulfillment Realm expert, she had the confidence to break through the entrance with her forbidden arts and lead him into the Nether Battlefield. This alone showed how strong this woman was.

“Let us recover our strength before we climb the mountain. We may run into Horned Demon elites at any time upon entering this mountain.” After carving out a cave beneath the foot of the mountain, Song Tingyu climbed in before waving for Qin Lie to come in as well “What kind of spirit materials do you need to forge the Terminator Profound Bombs? List all of the ingredients and I’ll see if I have them in my spatial ring. If I do have them, then it

would be best if you could forge a few more Terminator Profound Bombs. They would be very useful as a last resort when we charge into the Nether Battlefield."

"Oh. Pay attention then..." Qin Lie also knew how effective the Terminator Profound Bombs would be when they charged through the Nether Battlefield later. He no longer had any misgivings, knowing it was in order to return to the Scarlet Tide Continent alive. He told her all the ingredients required to forge the Terminator Profound Bombs.

Song Tingyu narrowed her eyes. Her long eyelashes shook slightly and her eyes shone with a divine light. She listened to Qin Lie seriously.

When Qin Lie finished stating all of the spirit materials he needed, she let out a bright smile. "Heh, what a coincidence, I have all the spirit materials you need. In fact, I have quite a bit of them. Take a look..."

Rays of rainbow light shot out of the spatial ring on her translucent, jade-like finger. Spirit materials were put on display one by one amidst the light.

They were all the spirit materials required to forge a Terminator Profound Bomb!

Qin Lie was dumbfounded for a moment before he stared deeply at Song Tingyu and said in shock, "You seem to have prepared this long in advance."

“Profound Heaven Alliance wishes to acquire the method to forge the Terminator Profound Bomb, therefore... I prepared a little bit of all thunder type supportive materials.” Song Tingyu did not deny it and smiled. “Originally, I was going to trade with Armament Sect. We would provide the materials and Armament Sect would forge the Terminator Profound Bombs. Then, we would purchase the final product for a price. That is why I have these materials prepared. Yet I had not expected that the trade I had planned for would be completely rejected by you...”

“Your plan was very thorough and your preparations were sufficient.” Qin Lie looked at the materials on the ground and thought for a moment before saying, “This cave is a little too small, and it is not secure enough. We need additional cover to prevent spirit energy from escaping...”

Qin Lie had a furnace and a source of fire in his spatial ring. He wasn’t lacking in anything. As long as the stone cave was wide enough and well hidden enough to prevent the Horned Demon clansmen from discovering them, he could begin forging at any moment.

“Not a problem at all. I can solve all of that for you.” Song Tingyu continued to carve the stone cave with her sharp blade to make it wider. Then she blocked the stone door and covered it up with some wild grass. She used many magical, ribbon-like jade sheets to form a miraculous barrier that covered up their aura...

Before long, a cave similar to the one Qin Lie used in Armament Sect was completed under her hard work.

Song Tingyu had even formed a magic barrier surrounding the cave that could prevent sound and spirit energy aura from leaking.

“How is it? Can you begin now?” After finishing up all these, she asked smilingly.

“I can.” Qin Lie nodded. “Now the only thing left is for you to leave.”

“It is too dangerous outside. I have exhausted myself greatly so I’m going to rest inside the cave.” Song Tingyu rolled her eyes at him before sitting down at the side. She took out spirit stones, closed her eyes, and began replenishing her strength.

—it was obvious that she wasn’t going to leave.

Qin Lie thought to himself, hesitating for a moment. This was the Nether Realm and Song Tingyu wasn’t an artificer after all. So he did not insist on driving her away and began forging the Terminator Profound Bombs.

He did not notice that Song Tingyu had opened her eyes a tiny bit, allowing her to observe his every movement while he attentively merged the spirit materials with his furnace.

Song Tingyu secretly recorded every movement he made, every method he used, the order every spirit material was placed in, and even every minuscule pause.

Chapter 275: Ultimate Blood Ground

Song Tingyu had prepared very well. The materials inside her spatial ring for making the Terminator Profound Bomb was more than what Armament Sect had given Qin Lie.

This was of great surprise to Qin Lie. He finally recognized that Profound Heaven Alliance was truly a Copper faction and that their foundation and accumulation was not something that Armament Sect could rival.

But he did not have much time. He would not be able to forge all of the materials into Terminator Profound Bombs.

There was also no need for doing so.

Within the white cold mist, the smelting furnace that was bright red from the heat gradually cooled. Inside the stone cavern, thirteen Terminator Profound Bombs appeared.

—These were what Qin Lie had hurried to make.

“There are still a lot of materials and I know that we are short on time. It is best for us to charge into the entrance of the Nether Battlefield before the Horned Demon warriors gather.” Song Tingyu looked at the Terminator Profound Bombs and their finished spirit diagrams, her eyes bright as she said, “I will not have any use for the rest of the materials. If you can follow my previous suggestion after we leave and forge them into Terminator Profound Bombs to sell to Profound Heaven Alliance, then you can

put these materials away now.”

Qin Lie was slightly shocked. “You are not afraid that I will take them and refuse?”

“No.” Sing Tingyu smiled cunningly.

Qin Lie nodded and did not hesitate in putting away all the remaining spirit materials into his spatial ring. “If we can return to Scarlet Tide Continent alive, it is possible for me to sell a portion of the Terminator Profound Bombs to Profound Heaven Alliance. According to you, you are my fiancée. I still need to rely on this connection so that Mo He of Eight Extreme Temple will not make trouble for me.”

Song Tingyu’s eyes whirled with light. “Right, even if it is just to deceive Eight Extreme Temple, we should work closer.”

“Let’s go up the mountain and charge into the Nether Battlefield!” Qin Lie shouted.

With the thirteen Terminator Profound Bombs in hand, he felt more confident. Unless there were Horned Demon warriors with six horns guarding the entrance, he had the confidence to get inside with Song Tingyu’s moves and these thirteen Terminator Profound Bombs.

“If you can reform the blood demon or summon that thunder python, we could break through the protection of the entrance

more easily," Song Tingyu said probingly.

"Just like your forbidden arts, some things... cannot be used as much as we wish." Qin Lie did not respond with silence this time and gave a general answer.

Song Tingyu nodded lightly as though she could understand the difficulty. "We should be careful."

The two prepared and then walked out of the cavern at the base of the mountain. They used the bracelet on Song Tingyu's hand to feel the soul fluctuations in the area as the two carefully walked towards the mountain peak.

The mountain peak that the Horned Demons called the "Sky Stairway" did not just reach deep into the clouds, but was also extremely steep and thick. It almost thrust straight up into the sky and there were no level paths for them to climb up.

In order to get up the mountain quickly and not waste energy on climbing, Song Tingyu had to use the Rainbow Wings. She held Qin Lie's hand and then flew up into the shadow of the mountain.

Qin Lie held one of her hands and, in his other hand, he held a Terminator Profound Bomb, ready to deal with bad situations.

Miraculously, when they were climbing the mountain, Song Tingyu felt the aura of many Horned Demons but did not encounter them.

Their luck seemed pretty good.

The “Sky Stairway” peak was extremely high. Song Tingyu flew with Qin Lie for a long time using the Rainbow Wings.

The two of them had to stop multiple times on the mountain, recovering and replenishing spirit energy in order to maintain fighting condition to deal with any situation that might occur.

Just like this, the two of them flew along the “Sky Stairway.” It was unknown how long they had flown when they suddenly saw dark red land mass above their heads.

There were many bridges woven from vines running along the steep mountain peak. The bridges were paths that went towards the dark red, rocky land mass.

Qin Lie and Song Tingyu looked above them and discovered that the bridges were webs that spread outwards from the mountain peak. They reached towards the mass of earth that was dark red—this was for evil races to climb up and reach flat ground.

The dark red land mass situated in the dark mist seemed endless. It seemed to be an enormous island floating in the air.

This mountain peak called the “Sky Stairway” stabbed into the very center of the island as though it came out of a large well.

Qin Lie and Song Tingyu exchanged a look and felt shocked. They were surprised that there were no Horned Demon warriors guarding this place.

The two of them continued to go up and finally landed on a bridge that was heading towards the surrounding earth. Through the bridge, they went on to this dark red island and then, when they looked at the “Sky Stairway” in the middle of the mist, they had a different feeling.

They were sure that this dark red land mass was the deepest level of the Nether Battlefield.

When they looked now, they saw that this layer of the Nether Battlefield had an extremely deep abyss that was filled with mist. The “Sky Stairway” inside the abyss was an enormous mountain that thrust out of the center of the abyss.

In the deepest level of the Nether Battlefield, the ground was sanguine red as though it had been dyed with blood, giving off a heavy feeling.

The two looked into the distance and found that wherever they looked was this dark red, barren landscape. Above their heads was dark red sky which gave the feeling of blood.

Standing here, Qin Lie felt uncomfortable all over. Smelling the air on this level that seemed to be tinged with blood, the energies inside his body gradually became disorderly. Even his heartbeat seemed to beat heavily.

“Qin Lie! This is the deepest level of the Nether Battlefield. It is not safe here.” Song Tingyu also felt her energies change upon arrival. She felt as if she were suffocating. “It might be that the evil races and Eight Extreme Temple are fighting ferociously on the Nether Battlefield and all of the elites have been sent to the top two levels. Since no one is guarding this place, maybe the elites did not know that we would come…”

Song Tingyu knew that these explanations were not plausible but she really could not think of a reason why there weren’t any Horned Demon warriors standing guard here.

“No matter what the situation is, this place is not safe. Of course, the top two levels… might be more dangerous.” Song Tingyu took a deep breath to regulate her slightly rushed breathing. “We must head to the fourth level to meet up with the martial practitioners of the Scarlet Tide Continent. Only the fourth level is considered safe so we have to keep flying. You see, the Sky Stairway is not the peak. We need to keep flying along this mountain. If there are no accidents, we will reach the next level. Maybe there will be people on the next level.”

Hearing her speak, Qin Lie looked at the Sky Stairway in the deep abyss and found that Song Tingyu’s words were correct.

This enormous mountain that reached from the Nether Realm below did not end here and was still rising up, heading deeper into the clouds.

“Heavens, just how tall is this mountain?” Qin Lie was astounded.

“It is ridiculously tall. The tallest mountain in the Scarlet Tide Continent, Skypiercing Mountain, is not worth mentioning compared to the height of this Sky Stairway. I really did not think there would be such a tall mountain in the Nether Realm. It surprisingly seems to penetrate the two worlds.” Song Tingyu clicked her tongue in wonder.

After the two sighed in wonder, they prepared to head along the Sky Stairway to the next level at Song Tingyu’s suggestion.

At this time, Xue Li who had been silent for while suddenly contacted him of his own accord using half of his soul inside the Soul Suppressing Orb. “Kid, you... where are you now? Such thick blood spirit energy!”

“The deepest level of the Nether Battlefield.” Qin Lie’s brow furrowed as he responded with his soul.

“Nether Battlefield? What place is that?” Xue Li clearly did not know much about the forbidden places in the Scarlet Tide Continent.

Qin Lie gave a simple explanation.

“Let my soul out!” Xue Li requested.

Last time in the Demon God Mountain Range, when Qin Lie had been dazed, he had taken off the lightning restriction on Xue Li inside the Soul Suppressing Orb.

After that, Xue Li had come out and used his soul to take over Qin Lie's body. He used Qin Lie's blood to cast a forbidden art and used the blood of the Horned Demons to form a blood demon and help Qin Lie fight the Evil God.

Xue Li would have been able to escape then but, after the matter, Xue Li had returned to the Soul Suppressing Orb on his own. He also went into the lightning restriction willingly.

Qin Lie was puzzled by this, but at the same time, he believed that if he gave this half of Xue Li's soul its freedom, the other wouldn't necessarily try to escape—Xue Li seemed to have a certain dependence on the Soul Suppressing Orb.

So, when Xue Li made this request, Qin Lie only hesitated slightly and then removed the restriction.

Song Tingyu had been examining Qin Lie when he went silent. When she found that Qin Lie was frowning and hesitating, she guessed that Qin Lie was probably communicating with a certain being inside his body...

So she stared hard at Qin Lie.

Then she saw a thread of bloody light fly out from the middle of

Qin Lie's brows.

The bloody light transformed between her and Qin Lie, turning into the bloody soul shadow of an old person. Since the soul was not complete, the shadow was not very clear. However, from the terrifyingly vicious aura that came from it, Song Tingyu instantly knew that the information from Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple was wrong—the old demon called Xue Li had not completely left Qin Lie!

"Is this Elder Xue Li?" Song Tingyu shouted, her expression shocked.

"Hahaha! Hahaha!" After Xue Li's soul came out, he laughed strangely as he spun in the air. He flew around like a bloody streak as though he was trying to confirm something.

He did not pay attention to Song Tingyu.

After a while, Xue Li's soul blood shadow started to laugh as he returned from a long ways off. "Ultimate blood ground! Haha, this is an ultimate blood ground!"

Xue Li seemed extremely excited. "My Blood Fiend Sect had searched for countless years in hopes of finding an ultimate blood ground to establish the sect. It was a pity that I was imprisoned and could not fulfill this wish. I had not expected this first level of the Nether Battlefield would be the cultivation treasure ground that my Blood Fiend Sect dreamt about!"

Chapter 276: Xue Li's Temptation

"Ultimate blood ground?"

Qin Lie was puzzled. Looking at Xue Li's excited expression, he could guess that this level of the Nether Battlefield was special and would be of great help to the cultivation of the Blood Spirit Art.

"Ah, if my body were here and I used this ultimate blood ground, I would only need half a year to recover to my peak strength!" Xue Li was full of regret as he shouted, "If I knew that you could find this wondrous ground, boy, I would have been willing to delay my trip and stay by your side longer. Pity, such a pity..."

Xue Li's bloody soul shadow was slightly blurry. However, he was not the same as other beings that could only communicate through the soul. After he came out of Qin Lie's Soul Suppressing Orb, Xue Li could shout and speak loudly. He did not seem like a soul form, but a real person.

Song Tingyu was secretly shocked when this half of Xue Li's soul was released. Her eyes stuck on Xue Li as she carefully examined him.

"What is an ultimate blood ground?" Qin Lie asked.

"A wondrous ground that is mixed with fresh blood and the spirit energy of the world!" Xue Li looked at the dark red ground beneath him and then at the dark red sky above his head as he explained to Qin Lie.

“These places are usually the site of intense and spectacular fighting. Countless beings will have been killed, the blood will have flowed and dyed the ground red, and the blood energy that comes out of the blood will have merged into the clouds and turned the sky red. There is power within the blood of truly mighty individuals. The blood is mixed into the ground and the air, gradually merging with nature spirit energy. Since the geography is unique, the malevolence, killing intent, and all of such impurities will have been cleansed and turned into pure blood spirit energy…”

Xue Li explained the formation of the ultimate blood ground in detail.

Qin Lie and Song Tingyu focused on listening. They were curious about this ultimate blood ground and did not know its uses.

“The formation of an ultimate blood ground is very complex and needs the correct time, geography, and people. It needs a bloody battle and the of blood of countless strong individuals spilled. The battlefield should be dangerous to start with, have great amounts of the world’s spirit energy, and have a naturally formed purifying formation…”

Xue Li looked at him. “In conclusion, the formation of an ultimate blood ground is extremely difficult. My Blood Fiend Sect has searched for many years and never found an ultimate blood ground to serve as the site of our sect. I had not expected that half of my soul would find one in this ghastly place after being imprisoned for thousands of years. It really is unexpected.” He

sighed.

“Qin Lie, it is not good for us… to stay here long.” When Xue Li was sighing, Song Tingyu came next to Qin Lie and quietly reminded. “The Horned Demon warriors might come at any time. It is not good for us to stay at this place for long if we want to get back to the Scarlet Tide Continent quickly.”

Qin Lie nodded lightly to show that he understood.

He was also puzzled as to why the journey was so smooth. He didn’t understand why there were no warriors standing guard at this level of the mountain in the Nether Realm.

This clearly did not make sense.

“Kid, are you interested in cultivating the Blood Spirit Art?” At this time, Xue Li’s half-soul glanced at him and said in a stern tone.

“Blood Spirit Art?” Qin Lie’s brow creased. He shook his head and said, “I’m not interested. I do not want to become an inhuman monster that needs to consume blood to survive the later stages.”

“Consume blood to survive?” Song Tingyu’s expression changed in shock.

“Kid, it seems that you have some misunderstandings about my Blood Fiend Sect’s Blood Spirit Art.” Xue Li made a sound and explained to him seriously, not caring that Song Tingyu was

present. “The people that drink blood are willing to fall. They are being controlled by their own obsessions. Look at the people in Blood Spear. They also cultivate the Blood Spirit Art, aren’t they fine?”

“Fine? The founder of Blood Spear, You Hongzhi. Was he even a person by the end? And Blood Shadow and Liang Yangzu, what were they like by the end?” Qin Lie objected.

“Hah, that is because the version of the Blood Spirit Art I gave You Hongzhi was not the original version. I wanted to slowly take control of him so I let it occur. The Blood Spirit Art that I cultivate will not have problems like that. If one has a strong mind, they would not have to worry about backlash from the blood fiend.”

Xue Li said enticingly, “The Blood Spirit Art is a spirit art that cultivates blood, a rare method in all of Spirit Realm. Through continuously refining blood, increasing the power of one’s blood to strengthen one’s body, and accumulating power, the blood fiend power of the Blood Spirit Art comes from blood. It does not conflict with the spirit sea’s Natal Palaces and naturally does not conflict with the spirit arts you cultivate. You can use the Blood Spirit Art to refine your blood and get a completely new power on the side!

“The thunder spirit art you cultivate can use lightning and thunder to refine your body, bones, muscles, veins, and even organs, but it is difficult to refine blood. However, the Blood Spirit Art of my Blood Fiend Sect is specifically for refining blood. It can merge power into your blood and make up for your deficiencies in this area.

“Look at me. As a controller of blood, I can use my blood essence to force the blood of others to explode, to use the blood of others to form blood demons, and to cast the secret arts of the Blood Fiend Sect. Have you ever seen me actually drink blood in order to survive and lose my mind?

“There are many uses of the Blood Spirit Art. When cultivated to the extreme, as long as your blood is not completely refined and even if you lose your physical body, you can make another one from your blood.

“Also, other than the great power of the Blood Spirit Art, there is also a great increase in perception. You can even use blood essence to feel the movement of others and their position over tens of thousands of miles.

“Also…”

In order to persuade Qin Lie, Xue Li stated all the benefits of cultivating the Blood Spirit Art.

Qin Lie was not moved but, to the side, Song Tingyu’s eyes glittered. She seemed to be moved by Xue Li’s words as she said, “Senior, am I able to cultivate the Blood Spirit Art?”

Xue Li glanced at her and responded rudely, “You have no value to me.”

Song Tingyu was not offended by his humiliating words. She said with a smile, “We can discuss this. Whatever Qin Lie can give you, is it something that I and Profound Heaven Alliance can give you as well?”

She was trying to recruit Xue Li in front of Qin Lie.

Yet Xue Li clearly did not think highly of her. He said with a strange laugh, “Girl, what the boy can give me is something that you and the power behind you cannot. Don’t play your little tricks on me. I’m older than your Profound Heaven Alliance, are you sure that you want to make a transaction with me? Aren’t you afraid that I will eat you and not leave a bone behind?”

“Haha, senior really likes to joke. With senior’s present state... you do not seem to have the power.” Song Tingyu was not afraid and her words flowed. She said with a slight smile, “If senior wants to talk about a partnership, you can find me at any time for a discussion. I have the power to represent Profound Heaven Alliance. Maybe Qin Lie has some things that we do not but I believe we possess things that Qin Lie does not. Don’t you think so?”

Xue Li was slightly shocked and he examined Song Tingyu again. Then he nodded slowly and said with certainty, “Girl, you are a skilled talker.”

“Senior, many thanks for the praise,” Song Tingyu said with a light laugh.

“Kid, what do you think?” Xue Li did not continue speaking about working with Song Tingyu. He looked at Qin Lie again. “In this ultimate blood ground, as long as you cultivate the Blood Spirit Art, I have a way to help you improve quickly.”

Qin Lie had been thinking for a long while. At this time, he looked directly at Xue Li and shouted, “Why do you want me to cultivate the Blood Spirit Art so badly? Is it because you know that something will happen to your body? Are you afraid that your original body will not be able to come back so you want to nurture a suitable body that you can take over? Will I become your new body?”

“Haha! Hahaha!” Xue Li laughed at him and did not refuse the words. “I actually do have considerations about that. However, you are not the most suitable body. You cultivate too many spirit arts. You have lightning, frost, and magnetism mixed together in your body. Even if you cultivate the Blood Spirit Art now, it would not be as pure as my original body. If you are talking about backups, that person called Lang Xie from your Blood Spear is my top choice. I even gave him a copy of the Blood Spirit Art in hopes that he would cultivate it and become my best choice.”

Xue Li stated his intentions clearly, without concealing anything.

Qin Lie’s and Song Tingyu’s expressions changed. They were shocked by his viciousness and mercilessness.

“It is not so simple to merge a soul into a new body. Even if my cultivation and soul are stronger than yours, if you are strong enough and have the willpower, I might be killing myself and end

up with my soul destroyed."

Xue Li snorted coldly and then said, "In the same vein, if Lang Xie is powerful enough at the time and I am trying to forcibly control his body, it is possible that he can do the same. I would be completely controlled by him and turned into a blood slave. In this world, there is nothing that is certain and there is no absolute good or evil. I do have my own selfish desires in giving him a copy of the Blood Spirit Art, but he also benefited. He can completely avoid the wrong path that his master, You Hongzhi, took. He can improve his cultivation and strength to a deeper level. When I find him in the future, I might be the one to lose. There is a great possibility that he could kill me."

Qin Lie and Song Tingyu both became silent.

They had a new understanding of this Xue Li. They felt that, while this old demon was vicious and cruel, he had a bottom line to his actions.

According to him, he had evil thoughts and selfish desires about Qin Lie and Lang Xie. However, he was also taking a risk and it was not as though he did not contribute at all. He wasn't just demanding from others.

"Winner always takes all. If Lang Xie wins, he can take everything I have. He will receive the secret cultivation arts of Blood Fiend Sect. If he does not have the skill and I erase his soul, taking over his body, it will be because he was not strong enough. That means that he cannot truly succeed my Blood Fiend Sect, so he cannot blame his death on me," Xue Li said coldly.

“You already have a candidate. Why do you still want me to cultivate the Blood Spirit Art?” Qin Lie was shocked.

“Not all eggs should be put into one basket.” Xue Li laughed strangely. “If Lang Xie dies along the way, you would become my alternative. Also, this is the ultimate blood ground. I can use a secret method to help you refine your blood. In the future, your body might not be lacking compared to Lang Xie’s...”

“Haha, Qin Lie. So you are the backup.” Song Tingyu laughed teasingly.

“Backup...” Qin Lie rubbed his nose and suddenly said, “Are there really no side effects of the Blood Spirit Art?”

“As long as your will is strong, there are no side effects!” Xue Li was certain.

“Oh. Then there is no harm in cultivating it.”

Chapter 277: Blood Crystal Altar

At the bottom level of the Nether Battlefield.

Under the dark red sky, a giant blood crystal altar that appeared to be forged from Blood Essence Stone shone with translucent blood red light.

The blood crystal altar was translucent and crystalline. Qin Lie was inside of it, surrounded by wisps of bloody light.

The blood crystal altar was about two thousand five hundred square meters, shaped like a three story round tower. Qin Lie was located deep within the altar as if he had been frozen and sealed within its blood crystal.

Meanwhile, half of Xue Li's soul was like a blood-colored ghost suspended high atop the blood crystal altar.

Ripples of turbulent waves emanated from Xue Li's soul, spreading to the surroundings like the tide of the sea.

Wisps of rich and refined blood spirit energy flowed like hundreds of thousands of rivers to the sea, attracted by his soul fluctuations and gathering from all over the place.

The more the blood spirit energy got closer to Xue Li's soul, the closer they were to the blood crystal altar, the purer they became as they were cleansed and refined.

Gradually, the blood spirit energy gathered unto itself to form mist. From mist they condensed to form bloody vapor and, a while later, they had turned into crystalline droplets of blood!

The blood droplets fell like rain onto the blood crystal altar.

The light within the blood crystal altar grew more and more bright and dazzling. The blood spirit energy was so thick that it was suffocating, yet actually carried an absolutely inconceivable clean and sweet smell.

Not far away from the altar, Song Tingyu's eyes glittered with an awed light. She had been sitting quietly all this time and the expression of shock on her face that looked like she was about to faint hadn't faded in the slightest.

Just a few days ago, she had seen Xue Li executing some kind of secret arts with her own eyes, continuously gathering the blood spirit energy from this so-called "ultimate blood ground." He had continuously gathered spirit energy and refined the spirit energy of the blood into literal liquid blood. Through Qin Lie's frost powers, this bloodwater was magically frozen and shaped into the blood crystal altar.

Once the blood crystal altar was built, the might of Xue Li's secret art increased greatly. It was as if Xue Li's soul energy had covered the entirety of the ultimate blood ground, pulling all of the existing blood spirit energy over to help Qin Lie cultivate his Blood Spirit Art and refine his blood, assisting him in filling his blood with the

surging energy.

Song Tingyu could feel magnificent blood energy coming from Qin Lie's body inside the blood crystal altar. She knew that, with every passing second, Qin Lie's blood became more refined and powerful.

This feeling was so incredibly distinct.

"Blood crystal altar. Ultimate blood ground. Blood spirit energy, Blood Spirit Art, Blood Fiend Sect..." Song Tingyu muttered while her face let out a look of deep worry.

She suddenly realized that this Xue Li, who had suddenly appeared on the Scarlet Tide Continent, might bring a change to the Scarlet Tide Continent that would shock everyone.

.....

At the Demon God Mountain Range.

The old Horned Demon's eyes were deep and quiet, thinking god knows what as he stared at the demonic body that had appeared after the two Evil Gods had collapsed.

The snake-headed Evil God, the devil-winged Evil God were now much shorter when compared to the three other tall mountains. They looked a bit off.

After Qin Lie, the gigantic thunder python, and Xue Li had slipped away, the two Evil Gods had become quiet once more, standing in front of the Demon God Mountain Range. It was as if they had exhausted all the energy in their bodies or entered a kind of hibernation.

“Uncle, the Evil Gods are fine, aren’t they?” An old priest gripping a white bone scepter asked carefully.

There were many Horned Demon priests and warriors who were also looking at the old demon in awe.

It was obvious that this old demon’s status was special among the Horned Dem Race. He was deeply trusted and respected by these clansmen.

“The Evil Gods have just exhausted their accumulated energy and fallen asleep once more. However, this kind of sleep will not last. It won’t be long before they awaken once more.” While his ghost eyes burned, the old demon stared deeply at the Evil God that Gao Yu was in. “The Son of the Demon God has already arrived and successfully received his legacy. This means that the remnant souls of the Demon God that were scattered across the world are already slowly gathering. Moreover, the evil nether passageway has already been opened. The moment our race returns to our homeland has arrived…”

“Our race will definitely return to our homeland!”

“Our gods will definitely awaken!”

Hearing his assurance, the Horned Demon priests and warriors all stirred and hooted excitedly.

The old demon’s eyes shone with fanatic light as he rallied his men before finally arriving at the outer edge of Demon God Mountain Range, ready to meet Duo Luo who was about to march for evil nether passageway.

Outside the mountain, the densely packed Horned Demon Elites and nether beasts were all ready to go.

Duo Luo, who looked as stalwart as a mountain, was seated above a Bloodthirsty Blade Demon. Upon seeing the old demon, Duo Luo’s figure abruptly blurred before suddenly appearing beside him. Then he saluted respectfully and said, “Uncle, I am about to head for the Scarlet Tide Continent. Before I leave, I would like to tell you the latest news.”

“Speak.” The old demon said with narrowed eyes.

“I have learned their identities from Scarlet Tide’s Ka Meng. The one holding the Venerable One’s keepsake, the human youngster who looks a lot like the Venerable One, is called Qin Lie. He is the newly appointed sect master of an Armament Sect above the evil nether passageway. He knows how to forge artifacts just like the Venerable One and the evil nether passageway was coincidentally opened by him. Uncle, it appears that your assumptions were completely accurate.” Duo Luo said in awe.

“A youngster who shares the same surname as the Venerable One, holds his keepsake, knows how to forge artifacts, and even opened the evil nether passageway…” The old man nodded, “It appears that there is no mistake. This youngster was likely sent down by the Venerable One to inform us that he has fulfilled his promise to us.”

“The human girl is called Song Tingyu. Her father is the alliance chief of the Copper force above our heads, Profound Heaven Alliance.” Duo Luo’s face darkened as he said coldly. “That so-called Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Hall has been obstructing our return for many years already. Many of our clansmen have died horribly in their hands. Uncle, what do you think of this girl?”

“They haven’t left after so long?” The old demon was slightly surprised. “Haven’t you made it so that they are allowed to pass unhindered?”

“They stayed at the bottom level and did not leave. That youngster seems to be cultivating some kind of spirit art and the human girl is also staying beside him. I have listened to your orders and informed our clansmen to avoid that area as much as possible. We have been waiting for them to leave this whole time, but it seems that they are still on that level…” Duo Luo explained.

“The human youngster who holds the Venerable One’s keepsake must be the Venerable One’s close relative. We cannot let anything happen to him otherwise we will not be able to explain things to the Venerable One once we meet him. As for that human girl, you

know what to do. However, you must remember not to disturb the Venerable One's family, especially since he is cultivating at the moment. Plan carefully on your own accord." The old demon pondered for a moment before instructing carefully.

"I know what to do." Duo Luo grinned and answered with cold eyes.

"Mn. Now go and do what you must. When you meet Ka Meng up there, tell him not to be reckless. Observe the situation first and await our arrangements down here before deciding on the next step," the old man said calmly.

"Don't worry, Uncle. I have kept in contact with Ka Meng all this time. He will not act recklessly for the time being." Duo Luo guaranteed.

"Good. That is good."

.....

Inside the blood crystal altar, Qin Lie soared freely within the blood crystal sealed with thick blood spirit energy while cultivating the Blood Spirit Art.

He felt like he was being flooded by a sea of blood. It was a strange feeling, like the sealed parts of his body were drenched in thick, pure blood again and again.

Inside the blood crystal altar, the blood vessels in Qin Lie's body were like great unrestricted rivers. The blood inside him flowed turbulently as he continuously gathered blood spirit energy into his body with the energy channeling method of the Blood Spirit Art.

The liquid blood energy gathered by Xue Li was incredibly refined without the slightest trace of hostility or negative aura. They were like extremely purified gems with no impurity at all—it was the purest essence of blood spirit energy!

Inside the blood crystal altar, it was as if Qin Lie had connected every blood vessel in his body with the essence of blood spirit energy according to the Blood Spirit Art Xue Li taught him. He had refined, ablated, and sunk into his own blood.

All of Qin Lie's blood looked like boiling water amidst the bloody light. It was as if it were burning and unleashing a terrifying, turbulent amount of blood energy. The energy contained within his blood radiated an incredibly refined and destructive power that caused Qin Lie to feel both surprised and excited.

This was a completely new kind of energy—the energy of blood—and the Blood Spirit Art was also an incredibly rare cultivation spirit art. It specialized in the tempering of one's blood to bring forth tremendous strength from it.

Qin Lie concentrated entirely on cultivating.

Xue Li's soul was like a bloody ghost that hovered above the

blood crystal altar. He appeared to also be borrowing the ultimate blood ground to cultivate.

Suddenly, Xue Li's soul twisted as ripples of soul energy spread out as if searching for something.

Song Tingyu could sense this change very clearly as she opened her eyes and looked at him in surprise.

"The seventh wave." Xue Li looked at Song Tingyu suspiciously. "This is the seventh wave of Horned Demon clansmen..."

Song Tingyu was shocked. It was only at this moment that she noticed that something was amiss. "This is the seventh wave already?"

"Yes."

"Then why have they not rushed us? Senior, is it because they were intimidated by your power that they did not dare to come closer? Is it because of your existence that we have not met anyone along the way? Were they wary and afraid to harm us all this time?" Song Tingyu asked with her understanding of the situation.

"Hehe!" Xue Li chuckled strangely in a low tone. His glittering bloody eyes circled around Song Tingyu's body. "Little girl, you have a secret contact with these Horned Demon clansmen, don't you? Just what exactly is your objective bring this stupid little kid to the Nether Realm? Do you think that you can keep me in the

dark?”

“I do not understand your meaning, senior.” Song Tingyu frowned deeply.

“Stop feigning ignorance.” Xue Li laughed coldly. “I have been hiding my aura all this time, so there’s no way the other party could detect my existence unless they stood right in front of me. Otherwise, with the strength of my soul, it wouldn’t be possible for the likes of them to see us. They obviously know that you are here and yet they do not come closer, simply observing from afar. If it wasn’t for that stupid kid Qin Lie, they naturally would have come for you. Just what kind of deal do you have with them?”

“You have misunderstood, senior. Profound Heaven Alliance and the Horned Demon Race have been fighting each other for a long time. How could I possibly have any connection with them?” Song Tingyu pleaded her innocence.

“You know in your heart whether I’ve blamed you wrongly. As long as that kid is fine, I’m too lazy to comment anyway. Do what you want.” Xue Li snorted once and no longer bothered with Song Tingyu. He seemed to firmly believe that she had a secret understanding with the Horned Demon Race.

Song Tingyu felt wronged and just as she attempted to explain, she discovered that Xue Li had become quiet once more.

“Is what he said true? Have the Horned Demon clansmen come over seven times?” Song Tingyu also turned doubtful. Along the

way, her journey with Qin Lie had been unusually smooth. It got to the point that she couldn't believe they could arrive at the bottom level of the Nether Battlefield so easily and still enjoy such a long period of calm.

"He suspects that I have an understanding with the evil races? I know myself, so of course it isn't me. In that case... who can it be?" She suddenly looked at Qin Lie inside the blood crystal altar. "Could it be him?"

Song Tingyu's expression became strange as her gaze grew more and more complex. She felt as if she was engulfed in thick mist and found it difficult to view the situation before her.

This rarely happened to her.

"Qin Lie. Oh, Qin Lie..." Song Tingyu gazed at the blood crystal altar and muttered. The light in her eyes glittered continuously, thinking about god knows what.

Chapter 278: Main World

Through the tempering of the blood spirit energy and the blood crystal altar built from the freshly crystallized blood, the bloody light inside gradually dimmed.

The blood crystal altar also gradually faded to a translucent color. The blood energy inside had been completely absorbed by Qin Lie's body.

Inside the now colorless altar, Qin Lie's entire body was blood red like he had been sculpted from blood crystals. Bloody light glittered from his body.

Tremendous waves of turbulent blood energy emanated from his body. There was a strange, sweet smell within the thick blood energy which actually smelled nice.

Qin Lie slowly opened his eyes.

A captivating bloody light flashed deep within Qin Lie's pupils. He focused his mind consciousness and suddenly let out a soft shout.

"Cr-cr-crack!"

The altar shattered, exploding into many crystal fragments. With a blood red body, Qin Lie walked out from inside the altar.

Visible traces of blood were absorbed into his body like sponge absorbing bloodwater. Before long, no trace of blood could be seen on his body.

His skin had turned back to normal.

“Kid, how do you feel?” Xue Li’s laughter came over at the right time.

The faint shadow of his soul floated over like a bloody flame. He flew over from the shattered altar and hovered in the air beside Qin Lie.

Qin Lie narrowed his eyes slightly and used his Soul Lake to observe his entire body. Feeling the tremendous energy flowing inside his blood, he channeled the Blood Spirit Art slightly and immediately discovered that every drop of blood in his body was boiling. A turbulent, violent energy burst out of the boiling blood, emanating a thick blood fiend aura.

This is the power of a blood fiend!

A blood fiend’s power came from one’s blood. It instantly circulated throughout his entire body. It was just an instant, but Qin Lie’s eyes had already shone with a scarlet bloody light. A powerful and fearsome aura gushed out from inside his body.

A new and strange feeling that enabled him to control another person’s blood quietly appeared inside his heart. A confidence was

born inside of him. He was certain that his blood could supply him with endless amount of energy like a river of blood.

"It's a slightly strange feeling. It seems that this kind of blood fiend power allows me to maintain a powerful blood energy and all of my physical strength." Qin Lie quietly sensed for a moment before looking at Xue Li. "There really aren't any side effects?"

"Relax. As long as you cultivate according to my teachings, I can guarantee your safety." Xue Li chuckled strangely before sighing. "It is unfortunate that you cannot stay at this place to cultivate or the speed of growth of your Blood Spirit Art would have been tremendous. As of now, I have only helped you cleanse and temper all the blood in your body with the blood crystal altar, Your blood has been refined and will enable you to truly succeed in the cultivation of your Blood Spirit Art..."

"It's not like this ultimate blood ground will disappear. If necessary, we may be able to come back to seclude ourselves and cultivate." Qin Lie frowned.

"If you can absorb more blood spirit energy and temper it with your own blood to form a few droplets of blood essence... now that is what you call an infinitely useful magic." Xue Li shook his head. "But you have just tempered your blood and need a period of time to get used to it. Before you can become familiar with the Blood Spirit Art and attain an understanding of the wonders of blood, you will not be able to grasp the key to forming your blood essences even with my guidance. This step will have to wait."

Qin Lie also felt a little regret.

According to Xue Li, blood essence was the essence of blood. Combined with various Blood Fiend spirit arts, it could unleash a lot of shocking abilities.

Back at Armament Sect, the reason Xue Li was able to form a blood slave with Blood Shadow's blood and cause Liang Yangzu to suffer backlash from his own blood was because he had executed a technique with his own blood essence.

"Qin Lie... it has been four months since we came down to the Nether Realm." Not far away, Song Tingyu's eyebrows betrayed a hint of urgency. "We have been here for too long. The people in the Scarlet Tide Continent have probably assumed that we're dead. We do not know the current situation there as well. In my opinion, don't you think we should return sooner?"

She was obviously feeling a little impatient.

"Girl, why don't you tell us what kind of secret agreements you have with the evil races?" Xue Li chuckled and said casually. "Relax, I am different from the denizens of the Scarlet Tide Continent. I have no bias against the races of the Nether Realm."

"No biases? What do you mean?" Song Tingyu was shocked.

Qin Lie's expression changed slightly. He looked at Song Tingyu, then at Xue Li, before asking doubtfully, "What do you mean by that?"

“From the moment you entered the ultimate blood ground, there have been more than ten waves of Horned Demon clansmen who came over to spy on us. They obviously know of your location, yet they did not come over and merely observed from the dark. Tell me... why do you think they’re acting this way?” Xue Li laughed coldly. “Don’t you find it strange that you are able to come all the way here smoothly without being surrounded or pincered by your opponents?”

QIn Lie’s expression darkened at his reminder as he looked towards Song Tingyu abruptly. “Is it you?”

“Profound Heaven Alliance has been fighting against the Horned Demon Race for many years. The two of us have also worked together to kill many Horned Demonl clansmen. How can it possibly be me?” Song Tingyu’s face was bitter. “What? You don’t believe me even now?”

Qin Lie looked deeply at her and pondered for a long time before his expression returned to normal. He then asked Xue Li, “Senior, shouldn’t you tell me about the Demon God Mountain Range already? You said that the Evil Gods of Demon God Mountain Range are just avatars. In that case, you should have some level of understanding about the Demon God Mountain Range and the evil races of the Nether Realm, right?”

He did not delve deeper into the reason why the Horned Demon Race had not attacked them.

“Nether Realm, evil races, Demon God Mountain Range... Hehe.” Xue Li looked at him and Song Tingyu before saying indifferently, “My true body had left a long time ago but, before he walked out of the Scarlet Tide Continent, he paid a little attention. He discovered that the moment the evil nether passageway was opened, all of the martial practitioners in the entire continent panicked. Judging from this, you do not have a deep understanding of the Nether Realm. You’re not familiar with the various races of Nether Realm either...”

Qin Lie and Song Tingyu nodded.

“The bodies of the Evil Gods at the Demon God Mountain Range are but one of their many avatars. Moreover, every Demon God has many avatars. There are just too many of them at the Demon God Mountain Range in the Nether Realm.” Xue Li explained carelessly.

Both Qin Lie’s and Song Tingyu’s eyes glittered as they put on attentive looks. They were both very interested in the secrets of the Nether Realm and the evil races.

“Judging from your looks, you really don’t know anything?” Xue Li was surprised.

They nodded repeatedly.

“Then I’ll explain in detail.” Xue Li pondered for a moment, organizing his words before he began to explain the inner workings of the Nether Realm.

“There are many small worlds on the perimeter of the vast Spirit Realm, inside the gaps between space and beneath the Nine Hells, and the Nether Realm is one of them. Strictly speaking, the Nether Realm is also a part of Spirit Realm.”

“Our Spirit Realm is vast and boundless. Ours is the main world and those small worlds at the rim of Spirit Realm are reliant on its support to exist. They can be considered as sub worlds that were born from Spirit Realm. In these small worlds, there live many races who are different from us. These races do not share our appearance, our way of life, our culture, or our cultivation methods. They are vastly different from us.

“However, they are just as sentient as we are and they are high level beings just like us as well. They also have flesh, blood, souls, emotions, ideals, and desires.

“They are also living creatures. They are, essentially, no different from us.

“However, just as the people from the Scarlet Tide Continent have conflicts, clash with each other, and are split into many different forces and factions, the different races and living beings in this vast Spirit Realm face a similar problem as well—conflict is everywhere.

“The evil races of the Nether Realm and the other races from other smaller worlds have all warred against us before. It was said that, during a great war that was fought many years ago, the many Evil Gods of the Nether Realm’s evil races had been smashed to pieces—to the point that even their souls had been scattered across the world.

“At first, the Nether Realm’s evil races would commute back and forth from Spirit Realm and trade with our continents. There were even many evil race clansmen who lived in the continents. However, after the five Evil Gods perished, the Nether Realm suffered a massive defeat and all of their clansmen were exiled back to the Nether Realm. The many evil nether passageways that connected to Spirit Realm were also sealed. They were strictly forbidden from returning to Spirit Realm.

“However, it must be said that the Evil Gods of the Nether Realm are rather special. Even if they were smashed to bits, even if their souls perished, they could still reform themselves through their secret arts.

“The Demon God Mountain Range has avatars formed by the five Evil Gods. It is the place where their clansmen offer their souls, their beliefs, their sacrifices, and their worship. It is said that the five Evil Gods can acquire energy from countless evil race clansmen through the avatars at the Demon God Mountain Range. They can slowly gather their remnant souls through their worship, bit by bit, and eventually awaken through their avatars. When the souls of the Demon Gods are gathered again, then they would be able to truly awaken the five Evil Gods and have them resurrect.

“The Horned Demon clans and the Demon God Mountain Range you were at previously are but one of many instances. According to my knowledge, a single Horned Demon Race has tens of similar clans and every clan has a Demon God Mountain Range of their own. The Horned Demon Race is but one of the few great evil races in the Nether Realm. A rough calculation says that there should be more than a hundred Demon God Mountain Ranges in the entire

Nether Realm, which also means that there are more than a hundred Demon God avatars."

At this point, not only was Qin Lie completely frozen in shock, even Song Tingyu looked like she would faint hearing Xue Li's words.

It would appear that even she did not know about these details at all.

"More than a hundred Demon God Mountain Ranges and every Demon God Mountain Range has five mountains that are the avatars of Evil Gods! The two Evil Gods that we met earlier were just their awakened avatars..." Song Tingyu's eyes flashed with the color of fear.

"What are you scared of?" Xue Li swept a glance at her and sneered. "Even at their strongest, the five Evil Gods had been blasted to smithereens. The evil races in Spirit Realm were also exiled back to the Nether Realm. What is there to be afraid of?"

"Ah." Song Tingyu exclaimed.

It was only then that she realized that even the powerful evil races of the Nether Realm were still exiled from Spirit Realm. That meant that there must be a terrific power in their world that could intimidate the entire Nether Realm.

"According to my knowledge, the reason the five Evil Gods of the

Nether Realm suffered a terrible defeat and were eliminated, the reason all of their clansmen were chased out of Spirit Realm, was simply because they had angered a Gold rank force! A single Gold rank force would be able to sweep through the entire Nether Realm and slaughter every evil race in it! It appears that the Gold force that even I had only heard about from rumors could actually have eliminated all the races in the Nether Realm. They escaped that terrible fate because someone had pleaded for mercy on their behalf. The evil race of the Nether Realm were only exiled and forbidden from entering Spirit Realm ever again." Xue Li snorted coldly.

The moment he said this, both Qin Lie and Song Tingyu were greatly shocked.

Chapter 279: End Of The Sky Stairway

Xue Li hadn't even finished speaking before both Qin Lie and Song Tingyu were shocked to the very core.

A world, a powerful race that was nearly exterminated because they angered a Gold rank force. Just how powerful was this gold rank force?

Qin Lie and Song Tingyu did not say anything for a long time.

"The outside world is extremely huge. Nothing is impossible. It is a very normal thing to cooperate and communicate with foreign races so, in my eyes, there is no problem at all if you share a relationship or work with the Horned Demon Race."

Xue Li swept over Song Tingyu with another glance and said carelessly, "On our side, clansmen of foreign races would often come over to trade cultivation materials. There were even many specific places on our continents specifically loaned out for foreign races to live in. There is no clear division between races there at all. What we have, the small world does not. What they have, we may not have as well. Trading with each other benefits the both of us..."

"Trading with the foreign races?" Song Tingyu was secretly surprised. "Do you really do that in your world?"

"Is it that rare?" Xue Li's expression was disdainful. He taunted, "The reason the two of you cannot understand is because your

views and the world you live in are just too small. The Scarlet Tide Continent is just a small continent after all. It is only dominated and controlled by two Copper rank forces. Your location... is also somewhat secluded. Even the few continents around yours live in similar worlds. There are only Copper rank forces in communication with each other."

"What kind of place did you live in, senior?" Song Tingyu's eyes glittered.

"If you want to listen I can talk for several days and nights but, before you truly step into those lands and experience things for yourself, it will be very hard to understand." Xue Li looked at Qin Lie and said in a bewitching tone, "Kid, cultivate properly. As long as your realm is sufficient and you are powerful enough, you will be able to walk out of this place and go to a bigger, wider world, experiencing even more extraordinary sceneries."

Qin Lie's heart thumped.

Song Tingyu was also fascinated by the depiction.

"Another wave of people have come." Xue Li suddenly frowned and said.

He looked at Song Tingyu again. Song Tingyu pleaded innocent with a hurt expression, "It really isn't me. I do not have any secret deals with them. I don't know why they aren't attacking us."

“Forget about it. Let’s just leave this level first and return to the Scarlet Tide Continent as soon as possible.” Qin Lie exclaimed.

“Okay!” Song Tingyu wanted to do so a long time ago.

“Kid, I’m going back into your body. It is only in this ultimate blood ground that I can allow my soul into the open for such a long time. Once we leave this place I won’t have much energy, so I can only go back into the orb again.” Seeing that the two had made up their minds to leave, Xue Li did not dally any longer. He turned into wisps of blurred bloody light and slipped into Qin Lie’s forehead immediately.

Then Song Tingyu extended her rainbow wings and carried Qin Lie with her, flying at top speed towards the Sky Stairway.

After a long time, the duo arrived at the “Sky Stairway.” Watching the mountain that stabbed into the clouds, they had flown straight up into the sky just like before.

Along the way, even Song Tingyu could detect the aura of quite a number of Horned Demon clansmen. However, those foreign clansmen that caused them worry did not come after them in the end.

Their journey upwards was still as smooth as ever.

Some time later, they arrived at the upper level and discovered that it was still not the end of the Sky Stairway.

They could still use the Sky Stairway and head up another level. This time, they did not stay and continued up towards the peak.

Yet another period of time had passed and today they appeared on yet another upper level.

Looking at the bald mountain peak and gray sky, the duo knew that they had finally reached the peak of the “Sky Stairway.”

This mountain peak called the Sky Stairway by the evil race of the Nether Realm actually passed right through the Nether Realm and three levels of the Nether Battlefield. It actually reached right up to the third level of the Nether Battlefield!

“It is already impossible to measure exactly how high it is.” Song Tingyu sighed.

“Mn.” Qin Lie looked at the gray sky and brown land. “This is the third level of the Nether Battlefield? Will we be safe as long as we climb up one more level?”

“That’s right. One more level and we’ll reach the thick layers of defensive lines set by Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple. We are the ones who are in control on the fourth level. It is no longer a level that the evil race of the Nether Realm can control.” Song Tingyu had a feeling that they had finally seen the dawn of light. “Sigh, no wonder the Horned Demon warriors all headed to the evil nether passageway once it had been unsealed. We may not have been surrounded and attacked by Horned Demon

elites along the way but it was still a very difficult and long journey. It really isn't anywhere as convenient and easy as the evil nether passageway."

"How do we go up from this level?" Qin Lie asked.

"Find a tornado that connects the land and the sky." Song Tingyu pointed suddenly after looking at the gray sky. "That's the spot!"

Qin Lie focused and saw that there was a gray, blurry tornado that looked like a mountain penetrating through both the land and the gray sky. It twisted madly, lurching forward as if to swallow everything on the ground.

"Tornadoes like these are the passages that connect to the level above in all of the Nether Battlefield." Carrying him with her, Song Tingyu flew away from the peak of the Sky Stairway and charged towards the tornado. "Be careful. Prepare to fight against Horned Demon clansmen at any moment. I can feel a lot of life auras nearby..."

Qin Lie nodded lightly. "I know."

After cultivating the Blood Spirit Art, his detection of blood auras had become incredibly acute. The moment they reached the mountain peak, he could clearly sense that there were quite a few powerful blood energies near their position.

There were many Horned Demon warriors with three or four

horns. There were also some blood energies that were unusually powerful. They were probably the five horned warriors of the Horned Demon Race.

Qin Lie had gripped the Terminator Profound Bombs in his hand a long time ago. The moment those powerful blood auras came close, he would throw them out without hesitation and blast a path into the Scarlet Tide Continent.

The duo carefully headed towards the tornado.

Amazingly, the many Horned Demon clansmen far away did not seem to notice them. They did not move towards their location.

Therefore, they were able to smoothly arrive at the tornado.

Once they drew close, Qin Lie watched the tornado as tall and wide as a mountain and felt the powerful strength of the raging wind inside it. He watched the tornado streaking across the world like a humongous gray dragon, devouring huge rocks, trees, and dust from below. He listened to its shrill howl. He felt secretly shocked on the inside and asked, “How do we go from here?”

“Hold on to me tightly. Once it swallows us up, let it bring us to the level above!” Song Tingyu yelled loudly amidst the howling winds.

Qin Lie immediately acted according to her words and gripped her hands tightly. They stood facing each other and waited for the

tornado to flood over them.

The stones and dust around them began to fly. Large stones, odd trees with jagged leaves, and even unknown violent energies slowly rushed in from all directions.

Amidst the raging wind, Qin Lie felt incredibly small. He subconsciously gripped Song Tingyu's hands tighter, fearful that they would be blown apart and thrown to some foreign land.

"Don't worry, it won't be dangerous." Song Tingyu suddenly took out her Flowing Rainbow Shield and pulled Qin Lie inside it. With the protection of the Flowing Rainbow Shield, the shrill howls of the wind and the terrifying, earthshaking commotion suddenly disappeared as if they were isolated.

The Flowing Rainbow Shield began to spin madly inside the tornado. It was as if it was slowly lifted towards the sky by a gigantic whirlpool.

Due to the spinning of the Flowing Rainbow Shield, the duo gripping each other's hands had to hug each other tightly and press against each other to avoid being thrown out of the Flowing Rainbow Shield.

The Flowing Rainbow Shield wrapping around them was like a big goose egg formed from prismatic light and rolled inside the tornado until their heads were spinning.

There were raging flows of gray wind beside them as they rolled along with many huge stones and ancient trees. However, those

objects always maintained a certain distance away from them as if they would never collide with each other.

“Everything that was pulled in will stay the same distance from each other that they were prior to being dragged in. We are rolling around, but those huge trees and rocks are also rolling in the same direction and at the same speed. Therefore they normally would not run into each other, so there’s nothing you need to worry about.” Song Tingyu actually had the leisure to console him inside the Flowing Rainbow Shield. “Although I do not know why those Horned Demon clansmen have chosen to let us go, we are finally safe now and go home. It’s been almost half a year. I wonder what’s happened up there now…”

“Boom!”

A huge rock the size of a millstone suddenly rolled over from the side as if it were specifically aimed at Song Tingyu’s back and rammed into it.

Before she could finish, the Flowing Rainbow Shield instantly shattered and the huge rock rammed her until her entire body shook. The corner of her mouth instantly flowed with two streams of startling blood.

“Aren’t we safe from collisions?!” Qin Lie lost control and cried out.

Yet another huge rock rolled from the side and, as if it were aimed, it ran into Song Tingyu’s back yet again.

“Oof!”

Song Tingyu let out a dull sound and could not stop herself from spraying a mouthful of blood. The blood sprayed all over Qin Lie’s face.

Her beautiful face had suddenly turned pale. “Someone’s trying to kill us. The huge rock was pulled into our direction by someone. Those Horned Demon clansmen are truly despicable. The reason they hadn’t acted earlier was because they chose to kill us at this spot a long time ago!”

Many tree branches that were shaped like jagged saws were originally quite far away from them. However, they suddenly changed direction inside the raging and turbulent tornado, hurtling towards them just like those huge rocks.

“Dammit!” Song Tingyu exclaimed and released godly rainbow light from her entire body to form layers of thick defensive barriers to defend against the impact.

“Boom! Boom! Boom boom!”

The huge rocks, tree trunks, and unknown steel chunks had all turned into life threatening weapons. They hurtled from all directions towards the barrier formed from godly rainbow light.

The light in Song Tingyu’s eyes faded bit by bit. The blood

energy inside her body was also swiftly depleting. “Six horns, it’s a Horned Demon warrior with six horns…”

Qin Lie’s expression abruptly paled. Inside the head spinning tornado, his eyesight blurred and he was unable to catch the shadow that flashed once before disappearing.

Seeing that Song Tingyu was already severely injured, Qin Lie could only wrap his arms tightly around her body. He would use his own body to cover her entire person and prevent her from being attacked again.

Amazingly, after he had covered Song Tingyu’s body with his own, those sharp weapons rushing over from every direction suddenly slowed like war horses who were restrained from charging.

Although the nearest huge rock was doing its best to withdraw its speed and momentum, it still hurtled over. The rock’s target was still Song Tingyu, specifically the back of her head that Qin Lie hadn’t managed to cover yet.

Qin Lie used every bit of his strength to instantly shift his body and endure this blow, which would kill Song Tingyu, with his back.

“Boom!”

An unimaginable pain tore through his back. A terrifying energy

that was like a dam bursting instantly gushed into every bone in his body.

Qin Lie spat a mouthful of fresh blood. His head, which was already spinning thanks to the tornado, went blurry.

Chapter 280: Return

Dazed, Qin Lie felt as if his entire body was submerged in water. His clothes were all wet.

Slowly opening his eyes, he realized that he was inside a very shallow puddle. The water was very muddy and it wasn't deep. It only reached up to his waist.

There were aquatic plants about a man's height growing out of the seemingly boundless puddle at first glance. The plants were dark green and delicate, dancing to the wind.

"You woke up?" Song Tingyu's attractive and gentle voice came from the aquatic plants behind him.

Qin Lie turned around to look and saw her part the dense overgrowth of plants and walked over from in between.

Her perfect bodice was covered by an orange dress. Her long skirt was not completely drenched by water and it stuck closely to her enchanting body. It highlighted the attractiveness of her partially concealed voluptuous curves, causing one to feel their blood rushing on the inside.

Yet her complexion didn't look too good. She seemed to be a bit pale and even her usually breathtaking eyes seemed to be somewhat dim and lightless.

He only needed a glance to know that her injuries were probably severe. “Where did you go?”

“I woke up before you and I was worried that the Horned Demon elites would come after us, so the moment I woke up, I walked around in a circle.” Song Tingyu looked tired. Her beautiful legs swayed in the water as she gradually arrived beside Qin Lie and said, “We have arrived at the fourth level. Do you feel anything different about your breathing?”

Qin Lie sucked in a breath and softly exclaimed with a strange light in his eyes, “There’s a bit of nether demonic energy in the air, but it is very thin. The aura in this place... are the nature spirit energy and nether demonic energy coexisting with each other?”

“Mn. From this level onwards, the nether demonic energy and nature spirit energy will mix and reach every corner. This is also why the Nether Realm’s evil races and our human race can coexist in this place.” Song Tingyu pointed at the aquatic plants beside her. “This is the Demon Cleansing Orchid. They absorb nether demonic energy and release air that we can breathe normally. The Demon Cleansing Orchid and Demon Armor Insects function as polar opposites. This kind of grass has powerful reproductive capabilities. We only need to plant tens of Demon Cleansing Orchid in a puddle we’re in and, in just a few months, they will cover tens of acres.”

Listening to her words, Qin Lie couldn’t help but pay serious attention to the aquatic plants beside him. When he looked closely, he realized that there were many small holes on the leaves of this kind of aquatic plant.

These small holes seemed to inhale and exhale constantly, like a human's mouth and nostrils.

Qin Lie put his nose closer and smelled. His eyes brightened slightly as he said, "How miraculous."

The Demon Cleansing Orchid was absorbing thin nether demonic energy while releasing fresh air. No wonder the air in this puddle made him feel so comfortable.

While he was observing the Demon Cleansing Orchid curiously, Song Tingyu's eyes were also quietly focused on him...

Inside the tornado on the level below, Song Tingyu had suffered the continuous attacks of the Horned Demon elites. They had used stones, giant trees, and all kinds of unknown pieces of sharp iron to attack her indiscriminately. The Flowing Rainbow Shield, which had powerful concealment abilities but average defensive power, instantly exploded. Her back suffered multiple heavy attacks. Caught off guard, she was severely injured in an instant.

At the time, the spirit energy on her body was about to collapse. She wasn't able to summon even the last bit of her strength. Just when she thought that she would die for sure, it was Qin Lie who had hugged her tightly in his arms, using his own body to endure those attacks instead...

At that moment, she was completely covered up by Qin Lie. Amidst the raging tornado, her face was pressed tightly against Qin

Lie's chest, and she actually felt unimaginably safe and secure... she had never felt this kind of feeling before.

She knew that a huge rock had hurtled towards the back of her head. She knew that it was the only place unprotected by Qin Lie.

She saw Qin Lie twisting his body, suddenly shifting his position with all his strength and using his back to bear the killing blow in her place...

It was then that Qin Lie's entire body shook greatly and he spat blood, fainting from the blow immediately. The raging shockwave caused her own body in Qin Lie's embrace to shake as well.

Yet she knew that, at that moment, there was another part of her that shook slightly... her own heart.

"What's wrong?" Qin Lie looked at her in surprise and asked doubtfully, "Why aren't you speaking? You look strange. What is it? Are your injuries too severe?"

"They are quite severe. I'm afraid that I can't freely use my powers for a short while. I must nurse my dantian's spirit sea before I can fight again." Song Tingyu recovered and asked softly, "How about you? You fainted even earlier than I did inside that tornado. How are your injuries?"

Qin Lie went blank and only recalled now that he was injured himself. He quickly checked his own body condition.

His mind consciousness looked inside his body. All the miniscule changes of his innards, muscles, nerves, bones, and so on—they were all reflected in his Soul Lake. With his Soul Lake acting as a mirror, he could clearly view everything inside his body.

Then he realized that his back bones were clearly cracked. The skin and flesh at the center of his back were in tatters, the nerves all over his body were in pain, and even his dantian's spirit sea was in great turmoil...

He let out a bitter laugh and said helplessly, "I am hurt pretty badly as well. Be it my body or my dantian's spirit sea, they have all suffered a huge blow. The energy that the enemy had infused into the huge stone had even rushed into my dantian's spirit sea after it struck my body. It disturbed my spirit sea and it has not calmed down. I also need some time to sort it out before I can channel spirit energy and recover."

"You knew that the person attacking us was a Horned Demon warrior with six horns and you knew that his target was probably just... me. Why? Why did you protect me? That final strike... was incredibly frightening. It was enough to even take your life. Why did you block it for me?" Song Tingyu's eyes were immeasurably deep. She had a confused and complicated expression and asked Qin Lie, staring at him quietly.

"Why?" Qin Lie went blank for a moment before shaking his head, somewhat at a loss. Under her deep gaze he said, "I don't know either. I didn't think about it at the time and I didn't have the time to think about it. I just did it."

A ripple appeared in Song Tingyu's heart. The light in her eyes brightened bit by bit as her voice grew gentler and gentler. "So you're saying that you didn't think about it at all. You just instinctively did it?"

"Yeah, that's probably the case. I'm not really sure." Qin Lie answered casually.

However, Song Tingyu suddenly turned silent.

She no longer looked at Qin Lie. Instead, her head was slightly bowed and an indecipherable expression appeared on her beautiful face. She seemed to be confused, pleasantly surprised, tense, and excited... it was unclear.

Seeing that she was quiet, Qin Lie also did not ask any further questions and instead stood in the puddle. He was already beginning to nurture his dantian's spirit sea to heal his body's injuries.

The mess in his dantian's spirit sea needed to be sorted out slowly. Otherwise, a poor flow of spirit energy could become a factor that led to the instability of his Realm. Therefore, it needed to be resolved first.

However, when Qin Lie was ready to stabilize his dantian's spirit sea, he realized with a thought that the blood in his body had poured out a tremendous amount of blood spirit energy.

Inside in his Soul Lake, he could see traces of scarlet blood energy that evaporated and rose from inside his blood with a sweet smell. It began flowing into the cracks of his bones, the tattered skin and flesh at the center of his back, and the nerves throughout his entire body.

The pain on his body swiftly abated as the traces of blood energy spread.

The blood spirit energy was like a spirit medicine that warmed the wounds, flowing inside his body constantly, helping him to treat the injuries inside his body and soothe the weakness in his nerves...

Although his dantian's spirit sea was still distressed, his physical injuries had swiftly stabilized under the effects of the blood spirit energy...

An exuberant blood energy emanated from his body once more. Not only did it cause him to feel pleasantly surprised on the inside, but even Song Tingyu had detected the changes inside his body. She subconsciously raised her head to look at him and said, "Your blood energy is swiftly recovering. Blood energy is the force of life itself. It is the foundation of flesh and blood. Blood energy is the best at recovering one's physical injuries. The Blood Spirit Art you cultivate is truly a very magical spirit art..."

Qin Lie's eyes suddenly lit up as he exclaimed softly, "Blood energy is the force of life itself. It can recover the severe injuries of

one's physical body, nurture the body, and stabilize one's wounds. Heh, it looks like that old man Xue Li didn't lie to me after all. This Blood Spirit Art is pretty impressive!"

"Do you know the main reason why Eight Extreme Temple and Profound Heaven Alliance wanted to eliminate Armament Sect?" Song Tingyu rolled her eyes at him.

"It's obviously because Armament Sect threatened your positions." Qin Lie said bluntly.

"That's right. It is because Armament Sect threatened our positions. However, if those artificers had only poured their hearts into forging artifacts, how could they possibly become a threat to us?" Song Tingyu's expression grew serious. "What we're truly afraid of is Blood Spear—of Lang Xie himself! Blood Spear's continuous growth, Lang Xie's power, and his terrifying potential are what we're truly afraid of. All of this was born from the Blood Spirit Art you cultivate. It is this spirit art that made Blood Spear, made Lang Xie, and gave Lang Xie the qualification to threaten us!"

Qin Lie's expression shuddered.

"A blood spirit art, one that was tampered with no less, had caused Fire Spear to evolve into Blood Spear and become the most terrifying force on this continent. From this, we can see exactly how magical and frightening this spirit art is. The reason we wanted to eliminate Armament Sect was to obtain this Blood Spirit Art..." Song Tingyu looked at him, "Now do you know how powerful and terrifying this spirit art is?"

Qin Lie nodded lightly.

“Someone’s coming.” Song Tingyu’s eyebrows shot up as she looked in another direction, while rubbing the bracelet on her arm.

Qin Lie’s expression changed slightly as he subconsciously took out a Terminator Profound Bomb, ready to use it against the newcomers.

“Don’t be too tense. These newcomers should either hail from Eight Extreme Temple or be martial practitioners from their subordinate forces.” Song Tingyu sensed slightly and said, “Their cultivation isn’t high either. They’re only at the Natal Opening Realm or the Manifestation Realm.”

Qin Lie inwardly let out a sigh of relief.

“Let’s go. We will close in on their position and ask them about this place. We will find out the location of the tornado to go up another level.” Song Tingyu pointed in a direction before frowning slightly. She softly instructed, “Don’t tell them that you’re Qin Lie from Armament Sect. As for me, I am not Song Tingyu from Profound Heaven Alliance. You have killed too many people from the five forces back in Armament Sect. If they discover who you are, there may be some trouble. As for me, my status in Profound Heaven Alliance is special and I have offended quite a lot of people from Eight Extreme Temple. This may cause problems as well…”

“You are afraid of Natal Opening and Manifestation Realm martial practitioners?” Qin Lie looked surprised.

Song Tingyu rolled her eyes at him and said quietly, “I obviously would not usually be afraid of them. However, my current condition is terrible and I haven’t had the time to fully recover. There is no way I can act carelessly, so it’s best if there is no conflict at all.”

“Oh.” Qin Lie understood her meaning.

Chapter 281: Seeing Wealth Provokes Evil Designs

A group of six martial practitioners appeared from the dense aquatic greenery in front of them. The six conversed openly, having no idea that Qin Lie and Song Tingyu were closing in on them.

“This area is pretty far from the center of combat. The evil races would not send their men to this place, would they? What’s there to check?” a frank voice exclaimed.

“Yeah, it’s a complete waste of time to come here and investigate,” a woman agreed.

“My master said that the lower level’s tornado passed through this place, and he’s worried that the evil race clansmen might have been sent here. That’s why he asked us to come over and have a look. Hmm, we’ll just circle the area randomly, that’s all. There’s no need to worry too much.”

“…”

The six spoke amongst themselves and roamed everywhere within the gloom. From time to time, they would talk about the surroundings, appearing rather relaxed.

Qin Lie glanced at Song Tingyu beside him with a questioning gaze.

Both of them were hidden within a bush of aquatic plants, carefully obscuring their bodies while observing the group from afar. She lowered her voice and said, “Some of them are from Blue Feather Association and the rest seem to be from Purple Mist Sea. Their Realms can’t be considered high. Four of them are in the early stage of the Manifestation Realm, one is in the middle stage of the Manifestation Realm, and there’s even one in the Natal Opening Realm…”

Qin Lie watched attentively and quickly identified the realms of the six with her guidance.

“Blue Feather Association and Purple Mist Sea are both subordinate Black Iron forces of Eight Extreme Temple. After the evil nether passageway opened, Dark Asura Hall, Seven Fiends Valley, Dark Shadow Tower, and other forces who are subordinate to us evacuated the Nether Battlefield to fight around the evil nether passageway,” Song Tingyu explained softly. “Therefore, the martial practitioners who currently operate in the Nether Battlefield are all from Eight Extreme Temple and their subordinate forces. Eight Extreme Temple isn’t too friendly with Profound Heaven Alliance, so the both of us will have to be a little more careful.”

Qin Lie nodded quietly, indicating that he understood.

“Let me deal with this.” Song Tingyu took out a thin, flesh-colored mask and carefully pressed it onto her beautiful face. The moment she put on the delicate mask, her extraordinarily beautiful face was covered.

Qin Lie turned around and realized that the jade white skin color on her face had become lightless and dim. Her nose, her red lips, her cheeks, and the rest of her face were transformed, each the to a specific degree... into a normal looking face.

She took out a copper mirror and, after carefully checking and seeing no obvious flaws, smiled at Qin Lie . She said, “There’s no other way. I am too famous in the Scarlet Tide Continent. Many people will recognize me on the spot. If I walked out without a disguise, anyone would know who I am.”

“Mn, I can see that,” Qin Lie said indifferently.

Song Tingyu’s exquisite beauty was unique. Almost no one would forget her if they saw her even once.

She also frequented Eight Extreme Temple and participated in many grand meetings between Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple. Therefore, there were many people who could recognize her. In order to avoid unnecessary trouble, it was a good idea to disguise herself for a while.

“Cough cough...”

After confirming that she had not missed anything else, Song Tingyu then coughed softly and willingly exposed her position to the other party.

“Who is it?”

“Who goes there?”

“Who’s hiding here?”

All six men and women were around thirty years old. After hearing her cough, they all grew wary.

“We are from Seven Fiends Valley,” Song Tingyu exclaimed.

After hearing that it was the voice of a human, the six let out a clear sigh of relief. The leader Ren Nan waved his hands for everyone else to follow while he raised his voice and yelled, “You people from Seven Fiends Valley, why have you not evacuated? Weren’t you, Dark Asura Hall, and Dark Shadow Tower supposed to leave for the evil nether passageway not long ago?”

Ren Nan was tall and broad. He was thirty five years old with a thick mustache, at the middle stage of the Manifestation Realm, and was a Purple Mist Sea martial practitioner.

There were also three other martial practitioners at the early stage of the Manifestation Realm. They hailed from Purple Mist Sea as well and were Ren Nan’s junior brothers.

The remaining Blue Feather Association martial practitioners were all women. One was at the early stage of the Manifestation Realm while the other was at the late stage of the Natal Opening

Realm. They appeared to be around twenty years old, looking beautiful and rather attractive.

The six of them formed a small team that was responsible for inspecting this region and confirming that there were no evil races who snuck in from this direction.

Since there were two women from Blue Feather Association, Ren Nan and the others flattered them both greatly along the way and didn't really feel bored. He didn't treat this mission seriously either.

Unlike Blue Feather Association and Purple Mist Sea, Seven Fiends Valley was the subordinate force of Profound Heaven Alliance. In the Nether Battlefield, the subordinate forces of Eight Extreme Temple and Profound Heaven Alliance more or less rubbed each other the wrong way.

Ren Nan had come across people of Seven Fiends Valley quite a few times. There were even a few times where they fought privately against each other, so when he heard that the other party hailed from Seven Fiends Valley, he didn't look too happy. His hand wave was also an indicator that his group should not be too welcoming of the other party.

The group of six, four men and two women, came across the puddle in a circular formation.

Song Tingyu's expression was calm as she and Qin Lie automatically walked forward and appeared before the six. She did

not wait for the six to surround them in a half circle.

Ren Nan's ferocious eyes swept across Song Tingyu's and Qin Lie's bodies before finally falling upon Song Tingyu's attractive, soaking wet body...

She might have covered up her face, but she had not managed to cover up her perfect body. Her figure alone was still infinitely attractive.

The rest of the three Purple Mist Sea martial practitioners were just like Ren Nan, sweeping their glances wantonly across Song Tingyu's body. Finally Ren Nan asked, "Why are you here?"

"We had previously been sent back to spy on the movements of the evil races. We were trapped by a chaotic magnetic field and were not able to escape until now." Song Tingyu was prepared as she opened her mouth and said, "Only now did we realize that all of our people from Seven Fiends Valley had disappeared. We are not sure what happened either."

There were plenty of chaotic magnetic fields on this level. Not a single one of them listening to her explanation actually doubted her words.

"So you didn't know about the evil nether passageway being opened, then?" Dan Yue from Blue Feather Association asked.

"We do. When we returned to investigate, we already knew that

the evil nether passageway had been opened. We also knew that we were to leave in a few days. If we hadn't gotten trapped, we would've returned in time to leave with the people from Seven Fiends Valley," Song Tingyu explained.

"I don't think I've seen the two of you in the Nether Battlefield before. What are you called? Which valley in Seven Fiends Valley are you from?" Ren Nan frowned.

"I come from Water Fiend Valley, my name is Song Yu. He is from Earth Fiend Valley, he is called..." Song Tingyu looked at Qin Lie once before saying, "He is called Zhang Jiao."

"Song Yu, Zhang Jiao... I've never heard of these two names before." Ren Nan lowered his head and thought for a while before looking at the others. "Have you heard of these people?"

"I've heard of Song Yu. There is such a person in Water Fiend Valley," his junior brother said.

"I think I've also heard of Zhang Jiao from Earth Fiend Valley before. It seems that he's pretty powerful." Blue Feather Association's Dan Yue paid attention to Qin Lie and reevaluated him. "Zhang Jiao seems to be the nephew of the valley master of Earth Fiend Valley. It is said that he cultivates a spirit art of earth and is very powerful."

Qin Lie was inwardly surprised, subconsciously looking to Song Tingyu. He didn't think that Song Tingyu would actually be telling the truth. There actually was a Song Yu and a Zhang Jiao in Seven

Fiends Valley. It appeared that this woman had deep knowledge of the martial practitioners of her subordinate forces or she wouldn't be able give out these two names so easily.

"Song Yu. Zhang Jiao. Your people from Seven Fiends Valley have evacuated from the Nether Battlefield. Right now, we of the holy temple have been assigned to prevent the evil race from entering. Therefore, you must listen to us now," Ren Nan exclaimed.

"Oh." Song Tingyu nodded slightly. "We just want to leave the Nether Battlefield as soon as possible..."

"We will arrange it." Ren Nan said evasively, "Let's get out of this puddle first."

"Mn, let's leave first. I feel uncomfortable after being submerged in water for such a long time," Dan Yue also said.

Qin Lie and Song Tingyu followed behind these six. After they walked for a distance, they finally arrived on shore.

On the shore, there were a few simple tents. These tents were obviously made by these six. After arriving, they left Qin Lie and Song Tingyu outside while whispering to themselves in the tents, seemingly discussing something.

Qin Lie's realm was insufficient and the tent was a little too far from them. He couldn't hear what they were saying.

Yet he saw that Song Tingyu's eyes were growing icy cold. Even the corner of her lips were marred with a hint of iciness...

"What are they saying?" Qin Lie lowered his voice and asked.

Song Tingyu extended her long hands and opened them in front of Qin Lie, asking softly, "What did you see?"

"A pair of hands," Qin Lie answered.

"That's it?" Song Tingyu looked at his eyes and shook her hands once more.

Her hands were clean and white, with a soft luster similar to that of gems. Her fingers were all thin and delicate. They were incredibly nice to look at.

Qin Lie watched carefully and, after a moment of hesitation, said, "Your hands look pretty nice..."

The trace of a smile leaked out of Song Tingyu's eyes as she coyly rolled her eyes at him with a playful pout. "Idiot, that's not what I meant!"

"Then what are you talking about?" Qin Lie's face was a complete blank.

“Never mind, never mind.” Song Tingyu looked helplessly at Qin Lie’s reaction. Then, she withdrew the smile in her eyes and said, “They saw the rings on our hands. Spatial rings... are as valuable as a city. They are something most Manifestation Realm martial practitioners could not have. They were discussing what kind of methods they could use to acquire our spatial rings...”

Qin Lie’s expression darkened.

“It was my mistake. Although I’ve been here before, the experts around me were as plenty as clouds at the time, and due to my status and identity, I have never really come in contact with the lower class before. Although I know that Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple martial practitioners often clashed against each other in both the open and the shadows, I did not think that the grievances would be so deep...” Song Tingyu sighed softly.

“How goes their discussion?” Qin Lie said coldly.

“The two women from Blue Feather Association aren’t too agreeable with an overly ruthless method and wish to use a gentler way. They want to put drugs in our wine, make us lose consciousness, take our spatial rings, and be done with it. However, the four people from Purple Mist Sea think that this will leave them open to future trouble, since they think that ‘Zhang Jiao’ enjoys a little fame at Earth Fiend Valley. They are afraid that trouble will find them in the future, so they think that they should just kill us immediately after drugging us.” Song Tingyu frowned slightly.

“If they really are going to act later, will you be able to kill them?” Qin Lie thought for a moment before asking.

“I can, but my injuries will deepen, and later on it will be very troublesome to recover from.” Song Tingyu smiled bitterly.

“How about this?” Qin Lie took out a Terminator Profound Bomb.

“This is simple and effective.” Song Tingyu laughed softly before shaking her head. “But it may disturb even more people in our surroundings. It will also be troublesome if they find out that we are the ones who killed them.”

“Then what do you think we should do?” Qin Lie hmphed.

Song Tingyu pursed her lips into a smile and did not answer immediately. She continued to listen attentively before nodding a while later and saying with a cold voice, “They have finally come to a consensus.”

“What is it?” Qin Lie asked.

“The two women have been convinced.”

Chapter 282: Ruthless Move

“Junior Sister Song. Brother Zhang. You must not have been able to rest well while you were trapped. Come, drink some liquor and eat some meat. Let’s have a nice chat.” Ren Nan and his three junior brothers walked out of the tent smiling while holding wineskins.

The two women from Blue Feather Association also let out a thin smile and accompanied them to Qin Lie and Song Tingyu’s side.

“Let’s drink some wine first.” Ren Nan came over and carelessly threw each of them a wineskin. He said warmly, “Sigh, after the evil nether passageway opened, the evil races have been attacking rather fiercely as of late. Who knows how much conflict will happen in the future. We must appreciate the days where we can live to our fullest and afford to treat ourselves, don’t you say?”

“Right. We have wine and we have meat. To indulge and enjoy is truly living!” a person laughed.

“Yeah, no one can say what will happen in the future. We should appreciate every day,” Dan Yue also said.

“Big Brother Ren’s words make sense.” Song Tingyu accepted the wineskin, nonchalantly echoing him, and began taking small gulps from it.

The gazes of the six were all concentrated on her swallowing motion. They appeared a little nervous.

Qin Lie hmphed coldly in his heart before picking up the wineskin himself and began drinking in a bold and reckless manner.

The hot, spicy liquor flowed down his neck like a tiny stream and reached his chest straight away.

He, who had taken a Profound Heaven Alliance antidote earlier, was not afraid of the poison in the wine at all. Therefore, he was not worried in the slightest, and in just the blink of an eye, he had already finished all of the wine inside the wineskin. After letting out a burp, he even exclaimed, “Now this is enjoyment!”

“Hah, brother Zhang sure is a spirited person. No wonder you were able to become so famous within Earth Fiend Valley that even we have heard about you,” Ren Nan praised.

“You’re being too kind.” Qin Lie carelessly threw the empty wineskin back at him. Narrowing his eyes and watching the joy in the eyes of Ren Nan, Dan Yue, and the others, he laughed coldly on the inside.

Ren Nan and Dan Yue did not answer immediately. Instead, they paid attention to Song Tingyu, and when they saw Song Tingyu take little gulps and also finish the entire wineskin, the joy in their eyes grew even stronger.

Previously, their gazes on Song Tingyu and Qin Lie’s spatial rings were subtle, seemingly wary on the inside.

Yet after Qin Lie and Song Tingyu had finished drinking all the liquor inside their wineskins, the greed in their eyes gradually became clear. It was so obvious that anyone could see.

"Junior Sister Song. Brother Zhang. The two of you must have significant backgrounds at Seven Fiends Valley, don't you?" Gu Wanli from Purple Mist Sea smiled cheerfully and came closer, sitting beside Song Tingyu and staring at the ring on her finger. "Not everyone can wear a spatial ring..."

"Spatial ring?" Song Tingyu casted a glance at him before laughing softly and shaking her head. She extended a long finger and shook it, saying, "This is not a spatial ring. This is just a normal ring. I wore it simply because I thought that it looked nice."

"A normal ring?" The smile on Gu Wanli's face froze.

Qin Lie swept a glance over Song Tingyu and chuckled on the inside. He was going to watch how this woman toyed with Ren Nan's group.

"Naturally, it is just a normal ring." Song Tingyu took off the ring without reluctance and very generously offered it to Gu Wanli. Her eyes shone with cunning as she said, "If you don't believe me, you can check it yourself, Big Brother Gu."

Gu Wanli's expression was odd as he accepted the ring and checked it thoroughly. He then used his mind consciousness in an

attempt to enter it but then discovered that the ring was solid. There really wasn't a small, independent space inside it.

After inspecting it for a moment, he wordlessly handed the ring to Ren Nan with an ugly look on his face.

Ren Nan's smile had already disappeared. He frowned deeply and thoroughly inspected the ring several times . Afterwards, he then handed the ring to Dan Yue with an ugly expression.

Dan Yue accepted the ring and could not see anything special about it either. This must have been a normal ring and not at all the spatial ring they had imagined.

"Brother Zhang, the one on your hand?" Gu Wanli then looked at Qin Lie again.

"It is the same as hers, just a normal ring. She made it herself." Qin Lie grinned and exchanged a glance with Song Tingyu before he began speaking his mind, "We... are engaged, so we made rings for each other. The ring you're holding was forged by yours truly. Mine was carved from gems by her, and although it isn't a spatial ring, it holds a special meaning for the both of us. That is why we wear them all the time."

Song Tingyu rolled her eyes at him coyly, seemingly blaming him for taking advantage of her. However, she did not unveil the lie and instead echoed him with a small smile, "Mn, the rings we wear, we made for each other. They may not be spatial rings, but they are very important to us."

The moment the two of them said this, Ren Nan and the others looked as if they had swallowed a fly.

“F*ck, to think that they are just some useless couple’s tokens of love. What a complete waste of my efforts!” Anger welled in Ren Nan’s stomach. “Those two pills were worth a lot of spirit stones. What a complete waste!”

“What terrible luck. And here I thought our luck had arrived. Who would’ve thought that they were just two poor tramps!” Gu Wanli was also swearing.

“I knew it. How could a Manifestation Realm martial practitioner possibly have spatial rings?” Dan Yue looked disappointed. “Never mind. In that case, let’s not complicate things any further.”

The moment she saw that they weren’t spatial rings, her determination from before was immediately shaken. They already thought that there was no need at all to kill Song Tingyu and Qin Lie without reason.

“What? What are you guys saying? What are you planning to do?” On the other hand, Song Tingyu looked utterly alarmed as fear abruptly showed in her eyes, giving Qin Lie no choice but to praise her acting skills on the inside. “Zhang Jiao, let’s leave, they bore ill towards us! Hmm…”

When she stood up, Song Tingyu’s attractive figure suddenly staggered like she was drunk.

The shock and fear in her eyes grew even thicker as she screamed, “Y-you’ve poisoned our liquor! How dare you treat us like this? You will all die!”

Qin Lie sat quietly to the side as he watched Song Tingyu’s superb acting, once again praising her quietly on the inside.

“Big Brother Ren?” Dan Yue looked to Ren Nan for his opinion.

Ren Nan’s expression was dark as he coldly stared at Qin Lie, then at Song Tingyu. Seeing Song Tingyu’s staggering but unbelievably sexy figure, he suddenly said, “In for a penny, in for a pound! If we allow them to live today, they will still hold a grudge against us and definitely will not let us rest easy in the future. We might as well kill them and be done with this forever!”

“Mn.” Gu Wanli also agreed.

“I will inspect this Song Yu thoroughly before killing her and see if she’s hiding anything good on her body!” Ren Nan abruptly stood up as his fiery gaze swam across Song Tingyu’s attractive figure. The raw lust shining in his eyes was completely obvious.

Under the gaze of the other five, he went forward, pulled Song Tingyu’s hand, and dragged her into the closest tent.

Dan Yue and the other woman from Blue Feather Association obviously knew exactly what Ren Nan meant by “thoroughly

inspecting” Song Yu...

However, even though their expressions changed slightly as they looked intensely at the tent and heard Song Tingyu’s screams, they still chose to keep quiet in the end.

“Hehe, that woman may look pretty average, but her figure is unbelievably good. I’ve seen plenty of women, but I’ve never seen one whose figure alone is enough to cause one’s blood to rush through their veins and make them fail to suppress the lust in their bodies. No wonder Big Brother Ren couldn’t control himself.” Gu Wanli looked at the tent, listened to the cries coming from inside, and praised.

The other two men from Purple Mist Sea were also looking at the tent with a look of envy. They seemed to be waiting for their turn once Ren Nan finished his business.

Qin Lie sat to the side and did not move. He stared darkly at the tent, and as he listened to Song Tingyu’s exaggerated cries, murderous intent slowly gathered inside his body.

Although he knew that, with Song Tingyu’s skill, there was absolutely no chance that she would be taken advantage of... Although he knew that she was obviously just making a fool out of Ren Nan... Although he knew that Ren Nan would definitely be dead soon, Qin Lie still could not control the anger in his heart.

He didn’t know why, but when he thought Ren Nan might be touching Song Tingyu inside the tent, Qin Lie immediately felt

angry and blood rushed to his head.

"How is it? You can't handle it, can you?" Gu Wanli came forth and chuckled oddly beside Qin Lie. "The woman you're engaged to is being violated and yet you can't move because you were poisoned... Do you feel like it's better to die? Do you feel so much pain that you'd rather not live?"

"So much pain I'd rather not live..." Qin Lie said softly.

Suddenly, he attacked like lightning and instantly grabbed Gu Wanli's neck, lifting his entire body into the air.

While Gu Wanli kicked madly, doing everything he could to pull Qin Lie's hand away, a thick stench of blood that almost felt solid abruptly gushed from Qin Lie!

Qin Lie's eyes gradually shone with a luster that was as scarlet as blood. He stared at Gu Wanli like a vicious primal beast staring at his prey.

Gu Wanli was overwhelmed with terror as he let out strange muffled cries, doing his best to struggle.

"You!"

The expressions of the two remaining Purple Mist Sea martial practitioners and the Blue Feather Association women abruptly changed as they stood up.

“Crack!”

The crisp sound of bones breaking came from Gu Wanli’s neck. Gu Wanli’s head curved backwards unnaturally.

Qin Lie threw Gu Wanli’s body away carelessly, like he was some kind of rotten meat.

He looked at the remaining four people, then looked at Dan Yue. “Two spatial rings are enough to make you lose your humanity and discard everything?”

Dan Yue’s expression was ugly.

“Big Brother Ren! Big Brother Ren!” The two Purple Mist Sea martial practitioners lost control and screamed.

Then, they suddenly realized that Song Tingyu’s high and low cries had stopped.

When they subconsciously turned their heads to look, they saw that a perfectly tidy Song Tingyu came out from inside the tent, dragging Ren Nan by his hair like a dead dog.

Ren Nan’s eyes and expression were filled with extreme terror. He had been trying to speak all this time while gripping his throat.

However, he wasn’t able to let out a single sound in the end.

Blood flowed out mercilessly from the gaps of his fingers that pressed against his throat—his throat had been slit.

“Big—Big Brother Ren!” The quartet only looked at him once before they cried out in fear.

Chapter 283: Meeting Yi Yuan Again

Watching Song Tingyu and seeing that not even her long skirt had wrinkles on it, Qin Lie knew then that Ren Nan probably didn't even get a chance to touch her body.

He didn't know why, but after realizing that Ren Nan had not touched her, Qin Lie suddenly felt relaxed and calmed down for no reason.

"Big Brother Ren!" Dan Yue and the others cried out.

At this moment, they finally understood that this man and woman, Zhang Jiao and Song Yu, were definitely not some small fries that they could toy around with however they liked.

Song Tingyu smiled sweetly as attractive rainbow light circled inside her eyes. She swayed her way to the group and carelessly tossed Ren Nan, who had drawn his last breath, forward.

She had dumped him right beside Gu Wanli's body.

"What are you so hasty for?" She glared at Qin Lie coyly. "The poison on Gu Wanli's body was going to trigger in a moment. If you had just a bit more patience and waited just a little longer, wouldn't you have been able to save some energy?"

Qin Lie smiled lamely and did not explain.

“What? Did you feel uncomfortable hearing me get attacked by that guy inside the tent? Do you feel very angry?” Song Tingyu came forward with shining eyes as she teased him in high spirits, “Could it be that you’ve really fallen for…”

“No!” Qin Lie cut her off.

“Hehe.” Song Tingyu giggled prettily. While twisting her thin waist, she casually arrived beside Dan Yue and extended a hand. “Return my ring, will you?”

The ring that was first passed to Gu Wanli for inspection, then to Ren Nan for another round of inspection, had finally been passed to Dan Yue.

She was incredibly disappointed after inspecting it herself and realizing that this ring was not a spatial ring. However, this ring looked so green that it appeared to be covered in dew, and it was a beautiful, high grade jade carving in its own right. There were even faint flowery patterns inside the jade that looked incredibly beautiful. This ring was incredibly attractive when judging it as an ornament alone.

Therefore, after realizing that the ring wasn’t a spatial ring, Dan Yue had not tossed it away irresponsibly. Instead, she had worn it openly on her finger.

She found herself rather fond of this ring and kept it for herself.

Now, seeing that Song Tingyu had extended a hand to ask it back from her, Dan Yue's expression became incredibly ugly. Looking at Song Tingyu somewhat fearfully, she stiffly took off her ring and returned it to Song Tingyu's hand.

The ring that looked so green it appeared to be covered in dew seemed to fit Song Tingyu's finger incredibly well. It even let out a sudden, faint green halo as a very strange wave of energy rippled outwards...

"S-spatial ring! It is a spatial ring!" someone cried out.

Dan Yue's eyes lit up. She looked upset, seemingly blaming herself for not recognizing a treasure.

She didn't realize that, at this moment, every bit of her skin glowed with a green color that grew deeper and deeper...

Song Tingyu shook a finger in front of Dan Yue and said with a smile, "Not just anyone can touch my ring, much less wear it thoughtlessly."

She had just finished saying this when the girl from Blue Feather Association beside Dan Yue couldn't restrain herself and cried out, "Sister Dan Yue, your... your skin has turned green. You—you look terrible!"

Dan Yue paled in fear and immediately realized that something was wrong. She abruptly looked towards the dead Gu Wanli and

Ren Nan and realized in great shock that their bodies were all glowing with a green light and had turned deep green in color.

They were obviously poisoned!

Out of the six, she, Ren Nan, and Gu Wanli were the only ones who had inspected this ring. It was at this moment she finally understood the meaning behind Song Tingyu's words.

The reason Song Tingyu wanted Qin Lie to wait a bit longer was because Ren Nan and Gu Wanli were eventually going to be killed by the poison. There was no need at all for Qin Lie to act unnecessarily.

"Junior Sister Song, we were possessed by greed. Please spare our lives!" Dan Yue cried out in fear.

"This was all because Ren Nan thought to rob you. It has nothing to do with us!" The remaining two Purple Mist Sea martial practitioners also cried out.

Everyone realized that something was wrong by now.

Qin Lie did not say a word and watched how Song Tingyu would handle this matter from the sidelines. He felt no mercy towards these people at all nor would he form an opinion no matter how Song Tingyu decided to deal with them.

If it wasn't for the fact that Song Tingyu's Realm was impressive

and could listen in on their conversation, Qin Lie might have fallen for the trap. He could have been robbed and murdered by this group.

When Song Tingyu had toyed with them, saying that the ring was just a normal token of love, Ren Nan and Gu Wanli still had lustful thoughts and attempted to kill them.

When Ren Nan had dragged Song Tingyu into the tent, the two women from Blue Feather Association had chosen to keep quiet...

In his heart, Qin Lie had already sentenced them to death!

“Hehe, someone like you wants to wear my ring?” Song Tingyu smiled at Dan Yue and shook her head lightly. Then she said, “How could you wear my token of love? If you wore it, then you have no choice but to die...” She glanced at Qin Lie.

Qin Lie let out a dry laugh.

“Mmph...” Dan Yue spasmed all over. Her originally white skin had become a dark green, and a frightening and hideous expression took form on her face.

Song Tingyu leisurely walked away from her, returned to Qin Lie’s side, and said with a smile, “There are three more who were not poisoned. I cannot act, so I’ll let you handle them.”

Qin Lie nodded lightly.

Earlier, Qin Lie realized that, even if his dantian's spirit sea was in turmoil, he could still borrow the power within his blood to fight. The blood fiend energy formed inside his body by the Blood Spirit Art was enough for him to deal with the current situation.

Additionally, if he really couldn't handle them, he still had the Terminator Profound Bombs.

"Eh?" Song Tingyu suddenly exclaimed softly and looked into the distance, saying, "Someone else is coming."

Qin Lie frowned slightly and immediately took out a Terminator Profound Bomb, ready to deal with the new situation at any moment.

He knew the martial practitioners who currently operated in the area were either from Eight Extreme Temple or their subordinate forces. The other party would definitely side with Ren Nan and Dan Yue, not with him and Song Tingyu.

Therefore, he had to be prepared to face the most unfavorable of situations. When the situation looked bad, he would blast his way out with a Terminator Profound Bomb.

"Where's Ren Nan? First Aunt wants to ask him about something. Have him bring his ass over now!" A voice Qin Lie was familiar with came from afar, and before long, Yi Yuan led five Purple Mist Sea martial practitioners to appear behind Qin Lie.

Yi Yuan wore a purple tight suit. He was still holding the same umbrella, but his face had lost its usual cheerfulness and was instead replaced with a fierce, blade-like gaze shooting out of his eyes. His entire presence was extremely felt.

The current Yi Yuan had finally broken through his limits and entered the Manifestation Realm!

When he walked over, a terrifying aura flowed out of his body. It was unbelievably intimidating.

It was not just the five people behind Yi Yuan that looked at him with respect. When he walked over, the two Purple Mist Sea martial practitioners who followed Ren Nan and the remaining Blue Feather Association woman all looked at him in awe.

However, there was also pleasant surprise mixed with this awe. They had found their hope of surviving.

At this moment, Qin Lie and Song Tingyu had their backs to Yi Yuan, so when he came over, he did not pay much attention and assumed that Qin Lie and Song Tingyu were Ren Nan and Dan Yue.

When he discovered Dan Yue, Gu Wanli, and Ren Nan's glowing green bodies, only then did Yi Yuan's expression change slightly as he coldly exclaimed, "What is this?"

"Yi Yuan, it's like this. These two..." The woman from Blue

Feather Association seemed to hold some admiration towards Yi Yuan and hurriedly embellished the situation.

She said nothing about their methods to acquire their spatial ring or that Ren Nan had dragged Song Tingyu into the tent in attempt to rape her. She only said that Qin Lie and Song Tingyu had gone insane, suddenly poisoning and killing Ren Nan, Gu Wanli, and Dan Yue. She turned the truth around completely and poured all the blame on Qin Lie and Song Tingyu.

The other two Purple Mist Sea martial practitioners also nodded their heads non-stop in cooperation. They both said that Qin Lie and Song Tingyu had attacked them in a frenzy with the intent to kill, not caring for the treaty between Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple at all.

Once the trio had finished explaining their twisted truth, they suddenly froze and looked at Yi Yuan in shocked surprise.

At this moment, Yi Yuan had long since stood beside Qin Lie. His gaze was as fierce as a blade and focused onto Qin Lie's face intensely. He did not say anything for a long time.

The trio was frozen in place. The five Purple Mist Sea martial practitioners behind Yi Yuan also noticed that something was off and said nothing.

A faint smile tugged at the corner of Song Tingyu's lips. She stared at Yi Yuan and Qin Lie staring each other down.

After a long time, Yi Yuan let out an expression that appeared to be one part tears and one part laughter. He shook his head and sighed softly, “Long time no see.”

Qin Lie snorted coldly, “We definitely haven’t seen each other in a long time!”

Yi Yuan smiled bitterly. He knew that Qin Lie still held a grudge against him and had yet to forgive him. After sighing on the inside, he nodded and said, “I was at fault for that matter, but it was all for Lian Rou. I didn’t have a choice either. Before I left the city, I told you before that I will be waiting for you to take revenge against me at any time you want…”

Qin Lie frowned and stared at Yi Yuan before him with a somewhat complicated expression.

“What is this?” Yi Yuan asked again.

“They saw our spatial rings and planned to rob and kill us. Unfortunately, their skills are lacking.” Qin Lie explained everything in just a few short words.

“Yi Yuan! It’s not like that!” the woman from Blue Feather Association cried out.

Yi Yuan turned around to look at her in disgust, “Who the hell are you? You think you’re qualified to interrupt me when I’m talking to a friend?”

Waving his hands, Yi Yuan spoke coldly and mercilessly, “I have butted heads with Ren Nan for a long time. It’s good that he’s dead. I no longer need to look at his face and feel annoyed. Hmm, take care of the remaining three. When we get back, just say that they were slaughtered by the evil races.”

The five people behind Yi Yuan looked only to him for orders. When they heard his words, their expressions turned cold as they quietly took out their spirit artifacts and moved closer to the trio, step by step.

The trio lost control and screamed in fear. They didn’t seem to think that Yi Yuan would dare to kill them. Instead, they swore at Yi Yuan, saying that he was helping the enemy at the expense of his allies.

“Let’s find a place to talk.” After leaving his five subordinates to take care of business behind him, he motioned Qin Lie towards a hill in front of them.

Qin Lie followed him with an overcast expression.

Song Tingyu smiled cheerfully, disregarded normal etiquette, and openly followed Qin Lie, arriving beside Yi Yuan.

“You are Profound Heaven Alliance’s Miss Song Tingyu, right?” When she came over, Yi Yuan only took a glance before exposing her identity instantly.

“You truly are the person in Purple Mist Sea with the greatest potential. Heh, if Eight Extreme Temple refuses to accept you in the future, you can come to Profound Heaven Alliance. The Song Family will accept you.” Song Tingyu smiled lightly.

“Miss Song, you do not need to worry about someone like me.” Yi Yuan had regained his usual cheerfulness. He smiled faintly and said, “I would like to talk about a few things with Qin Lie in private. Please give me a little face, Miss Song. I hereby thank you first.” He bowed in respect.

Qin Lie also looked at her.

“Oh well. Seeing as you’re so polite, I’ll walk around for a bit.” Only then did Song Tingyu walk away leisurely.

……

Chapter 284: A Friend In Need Is A Friend Indeed

On a dirt hill, Qin Lie and Yi Yuan stood shoulder to shoulder.

“Come, drink some of this specialty from my Purple Mist Sea—Cold Mist Jade Fluid. This wine is made from taking the cold mist on top of the Cold Winter Sea and mixing it with nineteen different kinds of fruit juice.” Yi Yuan took out a jade wine jar and handed it to Qin Lie with a smile. “This Cold Mist Jade Fluid is definitely multiple times better than the liquor that Ren Nan gave you. Also, I did not poison it so you do not have to worry when drinking it.”

Qin Lie snorted and then took the beautiful wine jar. Without hesitating, he put it to his mouth and gulped.

The Cold Mist Jade Fluid was cool when it entered his mouth and had a strange minty flavor. Upon reaching his stomach, threads of cold spread from his belly and seemed to cool the fire burning inside.

A while later, he could feel a slightly chilled, fruity fragrance coming from his mouth.

That kind of cold even had a wondrous effect of adjusting the mind, relaxing it and eliminating frustration.

Qin Lie carefully savored it and inwardly praised it . Without

realizing it, he took a few more sips.

When this Cold Mist Jade Fluid entered his stomach, the cold feeling spread throughout his body and had an indescribable effect on the stability of his wounds. This astounded Qin Lie and made him immediately understand the value of this Cold Mist Jade Fluid.

“This wine is probably very rare in Purple Mist Sea, right?” Qin Lie shook the wine jar. Looking at the blue-green wine inside, he asked casually.

“The Cold Mist Jade Fluid is made for Eight Extreme Temple specifically by Purple Mist Sea and only as tribute for major individuals of Eight Extreme Temple. In our Purple Mist Sea, very few can obtain this kind of beautiful wine, and I am one of them.” Yi Yuan smiled faintly.

“Ren Nan does not have the qualifications?” Qin Lie said in shock.

Yi Yuan smiled and nodded. “He is not qualified.”

Qin Lie became silent for a moment. He took another mouthful of the Cold Mist Jade Fluid and then suddenly said, “Back at Armament City, if you had been willing to tell me the situation and confess that it was a trap for Lang Xie and Feng Rong, I think that I still would have gone.”

“Blood Shadow, Liang Yangzu, Di Shijiu, and Yuan Tianya... their true targets were Lord Lang Xie and Instructor Feng Rong. You... were just extra. If I told you that, you might have gone because you owe Senior Sister Tang and Lian Rou, but Lang Xie and Instructor Feng might not have gone into the danger. Especially, Lord Lang Xie. He is not a rash person.” Yi Yuan’s expression was bitter. He sighed lightly. “No matter. I have already betrayed Armament Sect and returned to Purple Mist Sea.”

“The matter of conning and fooling me will not be dismissed like this!” Qin Lie snorted coldly.

Yi Yuan smiled and said with a nod, “If you want to settle the score, I’m free at any time.”

After he said this, his expression suddenly became serious. He said in a grave voice, “However, I have pulled you over this time because I have an urgent matter to tell you. This matter concerns that woman of yours...”

“Who?” Qin Lie’s brow creased.

“Ling Yushi,” Yi Yuan shouted lightly.

Qin Lie’s expression suddenly changed. “What happened?”

“The matter of you and Miss Song disappearing in the evil nether passageway spread half a year ago. Now, almost everyone knows of this.” Yi Yuan looked deeply at him and explained, “In the minds

of many people, you and Miss Song are already buried in the Nether Realm and definitely unable to survive.”

Qin Lie nodded with a dark face.

“Jiu Liuyu and many of the strongest of Seven Fiends Valley died at your hands. You also personally cut off one of Shi Jingyun’s fingers. Because of these matters, after the Ling sisters returned to Seven Fiends Valley, there have been people opposing them. The Ling clansmen that live with the two sisters on the lands of Seven Fiends Valley are also facing bad circumstances...” Yi Yuan slowly explained.

“Originally, because Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple spoke up and resolved the danger to Armament sect, people in Seven Fiends Valley who dislike the Ling sisters did not dare to move. It was also because of your strength. Since you have the Terminator Profound Bombs, lead Armament Sect, command Blood Spear, and have an unspoken agreement with Profound Heaven Alliance, they did not dare to move. They were afraid of making you go crazy and retaliating using the Terminator Profound Bomb.”

“Yet, when you and Miss Song fell into the Nether Realm you were undoubtedly dead in their eyes. They naturally did not have to consider the threat that you posed. This caused the people from Seven Fiends Valley whose friends and relatives died by your hands to finally act against the Ling sisters and the people of the Ling Family, unable to contain the hate in their minds.”

“Seven Fiends Valley!” Qin Lie snorted coldly. “What did they

do?”

“Originally, they wanted to kill the clansmen of the Ling Family and the Ling sisters.” Yi Yuan looked at Qin Lie’s icy eyes and said, “But Xie Jingxuan, Tu Shixiong, and others of Dark Asura Hall put pressure on Seven Fiends Valley. Ying Xingran on Armament Sect’s side also pressured them after he woke up, so Seven Fiends Valley did not dare to be so vicious.”

Qin Lie sank into silence with a furrowed brow.

He was surprised that Xie Jingxuan would come out and protect the Ling sisters after finding he was “dead.”

Before the battle between Armament Sect and the five forces started, Xie Jingxuan had met him once with Tu Ze and Zhuo Qian. They wanted to persuade him to leave Armament Sect as soon as possible.

Yet he and Xie Jingxuan had not reached an agreement.

Afterwards, the two left without resolving the differences. Xie Jingxuan also cut ties and said that she would not have mercy when she attacked Armament Sect.

Qin Lie had also thought that, after that event, Xie Jingxuan probably hated him and would not give him any face.

He had not expected that after his “death,” when Seven Fiends

Valley was going to kill the Ling sisters, Xie Jingxuan would come out and put pressure on Seven Fiends Valley so they did not dare to be so outrageous.

"I did not expect this woman to be reliable at such a crucial time..." Qin Lie's mood was slightly complex.

As to Tu Shixiong of Dark Asura Hall, Qin Lie knew that he would only have come out because Tu Ze and Zhuo Qian begged him in private.

"Ying Xingran who woke up..." Qin Lie went quiet.

After a moment, he continued to ask, "And then?"

"After being pressured from so many sides, Seven Fiends Valley did not dare to kill the Ling sisters. However, they are now forcing Ling Yushi to marry Li Zhongzheng and Ling Xuanxuan to marry Bu Xiang of Fire Fiend Valley." Yi Yuan saw Qin Lie's expression darken and his heart jumped. He still added, "With the status of concubine..."

The thick aroma of blood suddenly spread from Qin Lie's body. Yi Yuan focused and found that Qin Lie's eyes flickered with a bloody light, like a vicious beast that was going to charge and swallow someone whole.

"You don't have to be too agitated. This is just Seven Fiends Valley. The Ling sisters are still unharmed at this time." Yu Yuan

hurriedly urged, “Seven Fiends Valley is pressuring the Ling sisters, but they have not caved. The Ling Family is still in a standoff against them. I heard that Tu Ze and Zhuo Qian are already hurrying towards Seven Fiends Valley. Supposedly, they are going to take the Ling sisters and their family away from Seven Fiends Valley to go cultivate at Dark Asura hall. If this is accomplished, then nothing will happen to the Ling sisters.”

“No one from Armament Sect has gone to receive them?” Qin Lie asked in a deep voice.

“Ying Xingran is naturally the sect master of Armament Sect after he was saved by Profound Heaven Alliance while you, in their view, have already died in the Nether Realm.” Yi Yuan twisted his mouth and said with a cold smile, “You are still not clear on what kind of person Ying Xingran is?”

Qin Lie’s brow furrowed.

“He is a qualified sect master. Everything he does is for the prosperity of Armament Sect! Yet he is too calculating, too pragmatic. This means that he does not have any kindness!” Yi Yuan said without any courtesy. “In the past, he saw the potential of Liang Shaoyang and did nothing even though he knew that Liang Shaoyang tried to kill you twice. He instantly changed his attitude when you killed Liang Shaoyang and displayed your peerless potential. He does not favor Senior Sister Tang anymore. When he knew that Blood Shadow had imprisoned Senior Sister Tang and Lian Rou, he still stopped me from telling you. He was afraid you would have an accident so he abandoned Senior Sister Tang and Lian Rou!

“Right now, you are dead in their minds! All of your potential, the great value you have for Armament Sect, all of that is gone with your death!” Yi Yuan scornfully said in a cold voice, “You think that he will be like Tu Ze and Zhuo Qian and do so much for a ‘dead’ person? I have heard that he only pressured Seven Fiends Valley because Elder Mo Hai and Instructor Feng Rong asked him to.”

“What about the three reverends?” Qin Lie inhaled deeply.

“Them?” Yi Yuan shook his head and laughed. “In your eyes, are they any different from Ying Xingran? If you were unable to move the twelve spirit pattern pillars, you would be worthless in their eyes! When Liang Shaoyang used the Eclipse Insects to harm you in the past, do you think that the three reverends did not know?”

Qin Lie was silent.

“The reason that I left Armament Sect with no regard for my honor is because Ying Xingran and the three reverends are not worth my blood and sweat. Frankly said, they only have the strength of Armament Sect on their minds. For the prosperity of the sect, they will sacrifice anyone. If you do not have value, they will also sacrifice you.” Yi Yuan bowed his head and grimaced.

“Do you have any more Cold Mist Jade Fluid?” Qin Lie reached out towards Yi Yuan.

Unconsciously, he had drank a whole jar. The worries on his

mind increased as Yi Yuan spoke.

“This is the last jar.” Yi Yuan handed him another jar with a pained expression. Then he said, “In Armament sect, the ones worth interacting with are Elder Mo Hai, Instructor Feng Rong, Senior Sister Tang, and Lian Rou. Elder Tong might barely qualify. As for the others… they should be just like that as well. In the eyes of the sect master and the three reverends, there are no people. There is only the sect. If you think about it, you will know what kind of people they really are.”

“Gulp gulp!”

Qin Lie did not utter a word and only drank deeply. He drank half of the jar in one go and then suddenly stood up. “Take me to the passage entrance. I need to return to the surface as soon as possible. I need to go to Seven Fiends Valley.”

“No problem.” Yi Yuan smiled faintly.

“Song Tingyu and I have special identities and you are a member of Purple Mist Sea. I killed Yu Dai and cut off Su Ziying’s finger. Aren’t you afraid that something will happen… since you have done this?” Qin Lie looked at him deeply.

“No one knows who you are.” Yi Yuan turned and looked behind him. “There was only that woman from the Blue Feather Association who was a part of Ren Nan’s group. She might have been able to guess some things, but they are already dead. The people with me will not ask any questions, they trust me. Even if I

betray Purple Mist Sea right now, they would still follow me…”

“You can arrange for us to leave without a trace?” Qin Lie asked to make sure.

“As long as you do not shout that you are Qin Lie of Armament Sect and Song Tingyu of Profound Heaven Alliance, there will not be a problem,” Yi Yuan said confidently.

Qin Lie nodded. After a moment, he said, “If we leave successfully, we clear the debts between us!”

“Deal!” Yi Yuan grinned brightly.

……

Chapter 285: Invitation

Dark Fiend Valley.

Sisters Ling Yushi and Ling Xuanxuan were called into the valley's Procedural Hall by the new valley master, Sheng Meilan.

"I have talked with Gold Fiend Valley and Fire Fiend Valley. As long as you two sisters are willing to marry Li Zhongzheng and Bu Xiang, your Ling Family can still stay in Seven Fiends Valley. Otherwise, no matter how large the world is, there won't be a place for the Ling Family!" Sheng Meilan said with a cold face.

She had been Jiu Liuyu's junior sister and had a cultivation of the early Netherpassage Realm. Furthermore, she had never been on good terms with Jiu Liuyu. Since her cultivation and personal reputation were lower than Jiu Liuyu's, her status in the valley had always been under Jiu Liuyu.

After Jiu Liuyu was killed by the Terminator Profound Bomb at Armament Sect, she became the eldest person of the valley. In order to quickly stabilize the state of Seven Fiends Valley, she managed to get the position of valley master of Dark Fiend Valley.

When Jiu Liuyu had been alive, she had not liked the Ling sisters nor Lu Li. Now that Jiu Liuyu was dead, she was naturally even less polite.

Selling the Ling sisters as concubines to Li Zhongzheng and Bu Xiang was a secret agreement she had with Gold and Fire Fiend

Valleys. It was to repay the valley masters of Gold Fiend Valley and Fire Fiend Valley for supporting her ascension to the position of Dark Fiend Valley Master.

"Valley Master, we..." Ling Yushi raised her head. She looked at Sheng Meilan and wanted to argue.

"Do not speak!" Sheng Meilan waved her hand and said impatiently. "I do not care if you are willing, this will be the result! Either you sisters and the Ling Family are destroyed together, or you marry Li Zhongzhen and Bu Xiang as concubines and accept this low status. Serve them well and maybe your Ling Family will manage to survive."

Ling Yushi's and Ling Xuanxuan's expressions were ugly. Suppressing the anger they felt inside, the two sisters walked out of the hall.

"Tch, I knew this would happen one day. Two country bumpkins that managed to ascend to Dark Fiend Valley with one step... do they really think they are something special?"

"Ling Town? Ha, a little place that isn't even Limestone rank. Can the people that come from it be allowed in public?"

"I think that it is a step up for them to be concubines for Li Zhongzheng and Bu Xiang. If it weren't for Dark Asura Hall meddling, they should have died with the other members of the Ling Family already."

Outside, Sheng Meilan's female disciples spoke with scorn and looked disdainfully at the sisters.

"You!" Ling Xuanxuan was furious, and her eyes seemed to sprout fire. "When Master had been here, did you dare to say such things?"

"Little whore, if it wasn't for that old crone protecting you, would you sisters have been able to survive in Dark Fiend Valley until now?" One person walked forward and shouted with a hateful expression.

"What are you chatting about?" At this time, Lu Li walked over from the side. Her icy eyes swept across the aggressors and she said in a harsh voice, "If I hear someone disparaging my master again, do not blame my sword for being blind!"

Sheng Meilan's female disciples changed expressions when they saw Lu Li come over. They did not say anything else.

Presently, Lu Li had stepped into the early stages of the Manifestation Realm. Because of her exceptional talent and her own astounding power, all the valley masters thought of her highly.

Even Sheng Meilan, who was now the valley master of Dark Fiend Valley, did not dare to go overboard when interacting with Lu Li.

“Senior Sister Lu,” Ling Yushi and Ling Xuanxuan called softly.

“Let’s go.” Lu Li looked coldly at the crowd before her brow furrowed and she walked towards the outside of the valley.

When they were far from Dark Fiend Valley, Lu Li suddenly stopped beside a clear pond. She turned her head and said, “I have already relayed your predicament to Xie Jingxuan of Dark Asura Hall and that Second Hall Master Tu Shixiong. Xie Jingxuan is presently at Profound Heaven Alliance and does not know of this matter, but her subordinate Liang Zhong has returned a message saying that he will tell her as soon as possible. Tu Shixiong replied saying that he will arrange for his son and a commander to come and take you to live in Dark Asura Hall.”

“Many thanks, Senior Sister Lu.” Ling Yushi bowed slightly.

Ling Xuanxuan’s face was also full of gratefulness.

“Truthfully, you should not have returned. When Tu Shixiong gave the invitation, you should have gone to Dark Asura Hall. At that time… Qin Lie was still here and the people of the valley would not dare to bully you.” Lu Li’s expression was as cool as usual. “Now that Qin Lie has died in the Nether Realm, the people in the valley do not have any more reservations. It is fortunate that Xie Jingxuan, Tu Shixiong, and others have come out. Otherwise, your situation would be even worse.”

“I…” Hearing her mention Qin Lie, Ling Yushi bent her head, her eyes dim. She said softly, “At the time, I did not know how to face

him. Master treated me well. Even though I knew that there would be great trouble in returning to the valley, I had to come back to mourn for Master. I had not expected that... that something would happen to him...” Ling Yushi started to choke up and tears came out of her eyes.

“Big Sis, don’t feel sad. Maybe Qin Lie is still alive? It has only been half a year without news of him. Maybe no one can prove that he has died in the Nether Realm?” Ling Xuanxuan comforted.

But Ling Yushi’s shoulders still shook.

Both she and Lu Li knew just how inadequate Ling Xuanxuan’s comfort was.

Qin Lie wasn’t someone strong in the Fulfillment Realm or the Fragmentation Realm. Suddenly falling into the Nether Realm, the core lands of the evil races... was there any hope of survival?

Because of this, in the minds of Ling Yushi and Lu Li, Qin Lie had already died.

.....

In the southeastern part of the Scarlet Tide Continent, there was a vast, misty purple sea. The surface of the sea that was shrouded in purple mist and there was an island—Ghost Isle.

At the very center of Ghost Isle, there was an enormous, dry well.

The well was several acres large and was so deep that the bottom could not be seen.

On this day, as strong howls came out, two people emerged from this enormous, dry well.

It was Qin Lie and Song Tingyu.

“We finally see the light of day.” Song Tingyu landed gracefully beside the well and looked at the bright stars in the sky. She sighed emotionally. “It is this sky that looks the best. A sky without a sun, a moon, and stars looks dead. It feels stifling.”

Both the Nether Realm and the Nether Battlefield did not have any of these. The sky was forever gray and without light.

The two had been forced to stay in the Nether Realm and the Nether battlefield for half a year. Under such a heavy and stifled environment, they had missed the sky with their own celestial bodies, and fresh air filled with the spirit energy of the world.

Now, under Yi Yuan’s help, they went through the tornado that connected the top and bottom layers of the Nether Battlefield to finally return to the Scarlet Tide Continent.

“That Yi Yuan isn’t bad. He doesn’t just have very good cultivation potential. He is also very smart and has good skills.” Song Tingyu breathed the fresh air and took out a jade crystal from her spatial ring to summon the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly.

As she channelled power into the crystal to activate it, she said, “Our Profound Heaven Alliance once created a list of the martial practitioners with the most potential in the subordinate forces of Eight Extreme Temple. We either tried to tempt them to join Profound Heaven Alliance beforehand or we tried to kill them. Yi Yuan is one of the people on that list, and I have a deep impression of him…”

Qin Lie’s face was dark. Looking at the dots of light in the sky, he said, “You and I have endured hardship together in the Nether Realm, after you summon the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly, bring me to Seven Fiends Valley first.”

“No problem.” Song Tingyu did not take off the mask on her face so her appearance was still average. Her eyes, however, flickered brightly. “I won’t just take you to Seven Fiends Valley. I will help you save your little lover and resolve the conflict.”

“On what conditions?” Qin Lie reflexively asked.

“Conditions?” Song Tingyu was shocked and she shook her head. She said with a smile, “Conditions are unnecessary. For me, this is only a minor matter. Seven Fiends Valley is a subordinate power to Profound Heaven Alliance and I have more influence than Xie Jingxuan…”

“You heard all of it?” Qin Lie snorted.

“Ah… accidentally. I really wasn’t doing it on purpose.” Song Tingyu stuck out her tongue.

“I don’t believe you.” Qin Lie glared at her.

“Let’s go to a more remote place. This is the entrance to the Nether Battlefield and there will be people occasionally entering and exiting. There are many boats on the north side of Ghost Isle that go to the mainland, but we have the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly, so we do not need to go there. You can just follow me.” Song Tingyu beckoned to him and walked towards a denser part of the forest.

Qin Lie followed immediately.

An hour later, they arrived at the southeastern corner of Ghost Isle. At an enormous cliff face, the two of them overlooked the surface of the sea shrouded in purple mist. With the stars glittering above their heads, they sat down next to each other.

Looking at the sea and the sky filled with constellations, Song Tingyu was silent.

A distracting fragrance slowly spread from her body and mischievously creeped into Qin Lie’s nose. Under the starlight, listening to the roar of the sea and smelling the fragrance, Qin Lie felt emotional thinking about what he had experienced in the past six months with Song Tingyu.

Song Tingyu was definitely a woman who knew how to scheme. She had high status, astounding charisma, immense personal strength, and extraordinary skills.

On the journey, as his understanding of this woman deepened, Qin Lin increasingly realized how scary this woman was. He believed that if this woman wanted to reach a goal, she would have countless ways and would definitely succeed in the end.

This woman was not one that any man could control...

“What are you thinking about?” Just as Qin Lie was deep in thought, Song Tingyu turned to look at him and smiled brightly.

The mask on her face had been taken off some time before then. That peerlessly beautiful face that could seduce anyone gave off a holy light under the shine of the moon and stars. It astounded Qin Lie.

“No-nothing...” Qin Lie stammered.

“There is one thing that Yi Yuan was right about.” Song Tingyu laughed softly, her eyes glittering. “Ying Xingran and the three reverends of Armament Sect only have Armament Sect in their minds. To secure the sect and let it prosper, they are willing to sacrifice those that have no value. Truthfully, I do not have any good feelings about artificers. All the artificers that I know are cunning people that have strange habits, are selfish, and only think about themselves at crucial times...”

Qin Lie sighed lightly.

“But you… are not the same as them.” There was a complex expression deep in Song Tingyu’s clear eyes.

“How am I different?” Qin Lie said cooly.

“Haha,” Song Tingyu did not respond and gave an invitation with a slight smile. “Qin Lie, Ying Xingran has once again become the sect master of Armament Sect and they have not done anything while your little lover is in danger. In their minds, you are ‘dead’ and have no value at all, so it is not worthwhile to do anything for a ‘dead’ person. Since that is the case, you do not need to work for Armament Sect. After you take care of matters at Seven Fiends Valley… why don’t you come with me to Profound Heaven Alliance?”

Chapter 286: Just Who Are We, Really?

There was a large town outside Dark Fiend Valley. The people who lived inside it were all inner valley elders and relatives of core disciples. The Ling Family's clansmen were also living inside that town.

After coming out of Dark Fiend Valley, Ling Yushi and Ling Xuanxuan headed towards the town.

When they arrived at a huge house in the southern corner, the two sisters saw many martial practitioners dressed in red and gold roaming around the house.

"They are from Gold Fiend Valley and Fire Fiend Valley!" Ling Xuanxuan glanced at them once as her beautiful face looked angry, "They're monitoring us!"

"Let's go in first." Ling Yushi sighed softly. Under the gazes of the Gold Fiend Valley and Fire Fiend Valley martial practitioners, she entered the big house with her younger sister.

"The First Miss and Second Miss have returned," someone among the Ling Family clansmen announced loudly.

"Yushi. Xuanxuan. Did you see those people outside?" Ling Chengzhi came in from the backyard and asked with a heavy expression.

“We saw them.” Ling Xuanxuan scoffed. “What are they here for? Are they here to cause trouble?”

“Sigh…” Ling Chengzhi sighed and brought the two sisters to the backyard.

In the backyard, the Ling Family elders, Ling Feng, and many other Ling Family clansmen had actually gathered.

“Just now, Gold Fiend Valley’s Qiu Xudong came over to warn us not to leave the town during this period of time.” Ling Chengzhi’s expression was dark. “Qiu Xudong told us that the sooner we forget about escaping, the better. He says that if we dare act recklessly, Gold Fiend Valley and Fire Fiend Valley’s martial practitioners would definitely not take it lightly.”

Ling Yushi’s beautiful face turned slightly. “It appears they know that Dark Asura Hall is going to send someone to aid us.”

“What’s going on?” Ling Chengzhi frowned and asked.

“Senior Sister Lu Li sent word about us being threatened to Dark Asura Hall and Armament Sect. Armament Sect did not respond, but Dark Asura Hall replied to us. I heard that Tu Shixiong had arranged for his son to lead his subordinate commanders to aid us in leaving Seven Fiends Valley,” Ling Xuanxuan explained before saying quietly, “They’re giving Qin Lie face, which is why they are coming to assist us…”

The moment she brought up Qin Lie, all the clansmen in Ling Family suddenly turned quiet in unison.

After a long time, Ling Feng shook his head and sighed softly. Sadness and pain gushed from his eyes.

“It looks like they do know about this.” Ling Chengzhi thought for a while and also said, “Qiu Xudong also said that we should cease our unnecessary struggle. He said that no one can change the Ling Family’s fate. They say that the fact that Ling Family being able to survive until now was the biggest concession Seven Fiends Valley could make...”

The numerous Ling Family clansmen all slumped, looking helpless after hearing his words.

“Little Shi. Xuanxuan. Why don’t you... submit for the Ling Family?” Ling Family Elder Ling Bo said tremblingly, “The Ling Family is too weak and small. In a place like Seven Fiends Valley, anyone can eliminate us. After the Ling Family has gone through so many terrible things, we have already lost too many clansmen. Why not make a small sacrifice so that the Ling Family can continue to exist?”

“Yeah, how can the Ling Family possibly go up against Seven Fiends Valley? Without your master looking out for us, we have no way to survive here at all!” the other elder, Ling Xiang, also echoed.

“First Miss. Second Miss. Just sacrifice a bit for the Ling Family,

okay?”

“If your father was still alive, he would do the same thing for the family’s survival.”

“Yeah.”

“……”

Many cowardly Ling Family clansmen were frightened after Qiu Xudong came over and threatened them. They even discovered that the Gold Fiend Valley and Fire Fiend Valley martial practitioners were eying them greedily on the outside, obviously harboring ill intentions.

To survive, they took the initiative to try and persuade Ling Yushi and Ling Xuanxuan. They wished that the two sisters would obey Sheng Meilan’s arrangements and marry Li Zhongzheng and Bu Xiang as concubines.

—They did not want to die.

“Silence!” Clan elder Ling Kangan furiously glared at Ling Bo and Ling Xiang and yelled, “Haven’t Little Shi and Xuanxuan done enough for the family? If it wasn’t for Little Shi and Xuanxuan, Ling Family would’ve been made a hideous mess by Du Haitian and succumbed to his plots long ago! It is because of Little Shi and Xuanxuan that we were able to come to Seven Fiends Valley and have a safe place to rest and recuperate. It is also because of Little

Shi and Xuanxuan that we have lived rather comfortably for the past few years."

"Without the First Miss and Second Miss, the Ling Family would've been slaughtered down to the last man back at Icestone City." Ling Feng snorted. "It is because Lu Li gave the First Miss and Second Miss face that she attempted to lead the Ling Family away from Icestone City and kept the Ling Family out of trouble."

"Mn, without the two misses, the current Ling Family would not exist."

"The First Miss and Second Miss have sacrificed a lot already."

There were plenty of Ling Family clansmen who could distinguish between right and wrong and chose this moment to yell their thoughts, standing up against Ling Bo, Ling Xiang, and the others.

"If it wasn't for the Ling Family still being here, Little Shi and Xuanxuan could've chosen not to come back." Ling Kangan glared at the people who had shouted earlier. "One of the reasons they came back was to mourn Jiu Liuyu and return their master's favor. They also came back to protect the clan. If they hadn't come back, everyone here would've been slaughtered by Seven Fiends Valley long ago!"

Hearing these words, many of the Ling Family clansmen became silent. The people who were calling for the sisters to sacrifice themselves also went silent, bowing their heads in shame.

“Little Shi. Xuanxuan. Y-your hair...” Ling Chengzhi looked surprised.

He realized that, after Ling Yushi and Ling Xuanxuan lost control of their emotions, their brilliant, black hair would gradually change colors... They would become a very strange, deep purple.

Even the pupils of the two sisters glowed a faint purple hue. It was incredibly rare.

He had even assumed that the two sisters cultivated some rare spirit art.

“The color of my hair, is it?” Ling Xuanxuan picked up a wisp of hair and said casually, “I don’t know why, but as of late, the moment I lose control of my emotions, my hair becomes purple in color. I... I already thought it was a bit odd back at Armament Sect. It happened out of nowhere and I don’t know why ...”

“Little Shi, you too?” Ling Chengzhi asked in surprise.

“Mn. When Qin Lie pulled out the spirit pattern pillars back at Armament Sect, causing the evil nether passageway to open and the nether demonic energy inside to spread out, I already felt somewhat uncomfortable. It was as if... as if my blood was boiling...” Ling Yushi thought carefully about the situation and described while frowning, “My hair turned purple at that time.”

When Ling Yushi and Ling Xuanxuan had spoken up to this point, the crowd realized that Ling Feng had abruptly shuddered as his eyes suddenly shone with an intimidating light.

They subconsciously looked at him, then realized that Ling Feng's short, inch long hair had actually turned faintly purple as well!

"Ling Feng!" Ling Chengzhi screamed. "Why are you like that as well?"

"M-me too?" Ling Feng seemed to be recalling something just now and suddenly lost control of his emotions. However, he did not seem to realize that his own hair had become purple in color.

After Ling Chengzhi pointed at him and cried out, he suddenly came to a realization. He realized what happened from the people's shocked eyes.

"How can this be... how can this be..." the clan elder Ling Kangan murmured in confusion.

"Ling Feng, when Little Shi and Xuanxuan talked about the changes of their hair, why did your expression change so greatly?" Ling Chengzhi exclaimed.

"I recalled something Qin Lie's grandfather told me in the past..." Ling Feng suddenly said.

“What is it?” Ling Chengzhi asked.

“It’s been so many years. At the time, my Fire Cloud Hammer had broken and I went to Grandpa Qin Shan have it fixed.” Ling Feng concentrated hard to recall the past memories. “When Grandpa Qin Shan helped me repair my Fire Cloud Hammer, he asked me to draw blood from my finger and drip it on the Fire Cloud Hammer. At the time, Grandpa Qin Shan had stared at the few drops of blood with an incredibly odd expression. He then told me something strange…”

“What is it?” Clan elder Ling Kangan questioned urgently.

“He said that I have no idea who I am at all. He also said that all the Ling Family clansmen have no idea who they are. He said that the reason he came to Ling Town and stayed at Herb Mountain was to look for something and confirm a certain matter. He said that he hadn’t found the thing he was looking for, but seeing my blood, he said that he had finally confirmed what he wanted to confirm…”

“What did he confirm from your blood?” Ling Kangan asked in surprise.

“I also asked him this, but he neither explained this to me, nor did he say what he confirmed.” Ling Feng worked hard to remember. “He only told me that, one day, my hair and pupils may turn purple. He said that, if that day truly comes, I have no need to panic.”

Once Ling Feng said everything up to this point, all the Ling

Family clansmen had turned pale with fright.

“H—how… how did he know this would happen? How did he know?” Ling Kangan said, scared out of his wits.

Ling Yushi and Ling Xuanxuan had also noticed that something wasn’t right. They also grew worried and uneasy as they looked deeply at Ling Feng.

“At the time, I had only assumed that he was blabbering nonsense and that he was going senile, so I didn’t treat it as anything important at all. I also quickly forgot the things he said then. It is only today, when the hair of the First Miss and Second Miss turned purple that I suddenly remembered this—remembered his words.” Ling Feng subconsciously pulled at his own hair with a dark expression. He thought hard like a trapped beast, trying to search for the old memories.

“The reason Qin Shan came to Ling Town was definitely not so simple! If he said that everyone in Ling Town does not know who they really are, then he must know! He chose to come to Ling Town, so he must know the uniqueness of the Ling Clan. Yet why did he never tell us anything?” Ling Kangan was distressed, as if he was on fire. He stared fixedly at Ling Feng. “What else? What else did he say?”

“I can’t remember anymore. At the time, I thought he was just blabbering nonsense, so I did not pay attention to what he said back then! Dammit, I can’t remember. I just can’t remember no matter how much I try!” Ling Feng hugged his head and cried out in pain.

His short hair had already turned from faint purple to a deep purple color just like Ling Yushi and Ling Xuanxuan.

“Qin Shan! Just what was Qin Shan’s objective for staying in Ling Town for five years?!” Ling Kangan’s breathing was rapid. “Why was he able to predict that your hair and eyes would one day turn purple? Why did he say that all of the Ling Family have no idea who they are?”

“Just who are we, really?”

Chapter 287: Herb Mountain's Bizarre Diagram

The Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly was like a ray of prismatic light that carried Qin Lie and Song Tingyu away from Purple Mist Sea's Ghost Isle.

They flew all the way towards Seven Fiends Valley.

The Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly was originally a Rank Five spirit beast that was known for its incredible speed. The time it took to leave Ghost Isle and exit Purple Mist Sea's sphere of influence was only about two hours.

When the sun rose during the second day, the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly appeared above the sky of Ling Town. It needed to pass through Ling Town, Icestone City, and Dark Asura Hall to head from Ghost Isle to Seven Fiends Valley...

"Let's stop here for a moment," Qin Lie suddenly exclaimed above Ling Town.

Song Tingyu was garbed in a bright, rainbow dress. In the glow of dawn she shone with a clear, godly light that complemented her attractive figure, making her look like a celestial being untouched by the mortal world.

Hearing Qin Lie's request, she gave a light smile before softly tapping the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly.

“Go there.” She pointed at Herb Mountain.

Like a bolt of rainbow that shot down from the sky, The Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly landed steadily on top of Herb Mountain before prostrating down on its own so that Song Tingyu and Qin Lie could easily descend.

“This is Herb Mountain, right?” Song Tingyu examined the small hill and looked at the weeds that grew everywhere, saying, “It looks like this place was abandoned after the Ling Family clansmen migrated. I heard that you cultivated in here in the past?”

“Mn, I was here for seven or eight years.” Qin Lie got off the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly and stepped onto the waist tall weeds of Herb Mountain’s peak. From this angle, he could see Ling Town.

After all the clansmen had left, Ling Town was now completely empty. Looking down from the top of the mountain, the town appeared dead silent without a single trace of life whatsoever.

The spirit plants that were here in the past were also dug away by other people after no one remained on this mountain to take care and raise them.

Walking down from Herb Mountain’s peak along the small path, Qin Lie arrived at the mountainside. Seeing the cave that was blocked by many rocks, Qin Lie sighed nostalgically.

“I heard that you lived simple-mindedly for five years.” Song Tingyu’s beautiful eyes glittered. “You and your grandfather spent most of your time inside Herb Mountain. You were cultivating, so… what was he busy with then?”

Qin Lie came around.

Back then, he had been cultivating hard in the state of Thoughtless Tranquility. He didn’t actually consider exactly what his grandfather was busy with.

He only remembered that his grandfather would often go missing and walk around the Arctic Mountain Range. Sometimes he would come into Herb Mountain and talk about cultivation or explain some tips and taboos on artifact forging while Qin Lie was cultivating.

His grandfather had been with him in Ling Town for a full five years, yet during these five years, he actually had no idea what his grandfather was busy with…

Frowning, Qin Lie roamed around Herb Mountain and stared at the caves, hoping to discover some traces or clues.

He knew that his grandfather had probably not returned yet. With his current fame in the Scarlet Tide Continent, it would not be difficult for his grandfather to find him whenever he truly returned.

“Eh?!”

On the other side of Herb Mountain, Song Tingyu let out a soft exclamation as if she had realized something extraordinary.

Qin Lie immediately rushed to her side.

Behind Herb Mountain, a strange octagonal diagram had been carved into the surface of a smooth, flat boulder with a sharp tool..

This diagram looked like it was made from many bones. A white skull adorned every corner of the octagon.

Inside the octagon, there were wisps of wraiths and souls gathered together like clumps of smog.

There was a fist-sized hole at the center of the octagonal diagram. It looked like something could fit inside it.

At first glance, the diagram gave off an eerie, sinister feeling. It caused people to feel an oppressive kind of fear, as if they were looking deep into the purgatory of the nine hells.

“Was there such a diagram here in the past?” Seeing Qin Lie’s arrival, Song Tingyu frowned and asked, somewhat surprised. “I don’t know why, but I feel very uncomfortable looking at this diagram. Just what kind of person carved this onto the stone?”

“There was definitely no such diagram in the past.” Qin Lie walked forward and concentrated on the diagram.

Suddenly, a sinister, evil energy emanated from the bizarre octagonal diagram when he got closer.

The octagon formed from the eight souls—the empty sockets of its realistic skulls seemed to glow with a tiny light. The wisps of wraiths and lost souls inside the octagon writhed as if they were about to awaken.

Song Tingyu abruptly paled as she cried out, “What powerful evil mind energy!”

Qin Lie also shook all over.

The wooden sculpture, the only thing his grandfather had left him, suddenly flew out of his spatial ring uncontrollably. The moment the wooden sculpture came out, it actually fit right into the center of the octagonal diagram.

The hole at the center of the octagon seemed to be made for the wooden sculpture. The leg portion of the wooden sculpture fit perfectly into the center of the octagon without difficulty.

At first glance, it was as if his grandfather was standing amidst the wisps of wraiths and lost souls, receiving their worship.

“Ah!” Song Tingyu covered her mouth and screamed.

Qin Lie was also shocked beyond words.

They watched the wisps of wraiths and lost souls abruptly turn into wisps of glittering motes of light that slipped into the sculpture after it had fit itself into the center of the diagram.

Even the sockets of the eight skulls suddenly glowed with a green flame that resembled a will-o’-wisp. As if attracted by the wooden sculpture, they too gushed into into it.

Meanwhile, Qin Shan’s sculpture formed an attraction force of its own, absorbing the octagonal diagram’s spots of light and green flames. It was as if it were receiving some kind of magical signal...

“Prak!”

Once the wraiths, lost souls, and fire in the skulls were absorbed by the sculpture, the bizarre octagonal diagram suddenly exploded.

In the blink of an eye, the eerie, hideous diagram was destroyed by a kind of power that seemed to have already been there.

Other than the wooden sculpture that was still plugged into the hole, the octagonal diagram from before was completely wiped out with not a trace left to be seen.

That wooden sculpture inside the hole returned to normal. There was neither the slightest bit of luster nor the smallest hint of any special mind energy.

However, be it Song Tingyu or Qin Lie, both were looking at the wooden sculpture with deep fear in their eyes.

The duo just stared at the wooden sculpture and kept quiet for a long time.

“Qin Lie, just how much do you… know about your grandfather?” Song Tingyu asked quietly after a long time.

Qin Lie extended his right hand and continuously made a grasping motion above the wooden sculpture, hesitant as to whether or not he should grab the wooden sculpture.

Hearing Song Tingyu’s question, he turned around with a bitter expression. A trace of loneliness flashed across his eyes. “My grandfather aside, I… don’t even know myself. I don’t know who I am, I don’t know my background, and I don’t know who my parents are…”

Song Tingyu looked shocked. “You…”

“I do not know anything.” Qin Lie sucked in a deep breath, loudly crying out before pulling the wooden sculpture abruptly out of the hole.

The wooden sculpture was still a wooden sculpture. Its texture felt the same and did not feel any different in his hand.

However, when Qin Lie slipped his mind consciousness inside it, he realized that there was now a new ball-shaped light inside the wooden sculpture's composite spirit diagram. The clump of light was formed from wisps of lost souls and wraiths. Ghostfire burned inside it, and there was an incredibly powerful mind energy emanating from it.

The mind energy in the clump of light made Qin Lie realize that it contained a huge amount of information.

He gave it a serious thought and realized that the octagonal diagram was probably a secret art used to transmit information. The wraiths, lost souls, and ghostfire were all a special type of information.

Whereas the wooden sculpture could gather the information inside that transmission secret art into one whole.

Thinking up to this point, he gradually came to an understanding and guessed the secret behind all this.

The person who inscribed this octagonal diagram was trying to transmit information to him or his grandfather...

The powerful mind energy inside the wooden sculpture carried a dangerous aura that made Qin Lie feel instinctively fearful of it. It

also let him know that, for now, he must not touch this energy carelessly—he did not have the power to receive this information.

This meant that the transmitter wasn't his grandfather, because his grandfather would not know about his realm. He would not leave such a powerful magnetic mind field that Qin Lie didn't even dare to come in contact with.

Therefore, only a single possibility was left—that person was trying to transmit information to his grandfather.

"Q-Qin Lie..." Song Tingyu edged some distance away from him and asked tentatively, some wariness etched between her eyebrows. "What did you discover?"

The evil and strangeness of the octagonal diagram surprised even her. After that, the wooden sculpture's changes, the wisps of wraiths, lost souls, and ghostfire seeping into the wooden sculpture... The diagram's explosion, Qin Lie's ownership of the wooden sculpture...

This series of changes caused Song Tingyu to gradually grow anxious, and when she looked at Qin Lie once more, she felt that his entire person had sunken amidst a deep mist of mystery and evil that prevented her from figuring him out no matter what.

Since she could not measure him, she grew cautious and wary.

"This octagonal diagram is probably a transmission method.

Someone... tried to transmit something to my grandfather and the wooden sculpture in my hand had formed a clump of light that absorbed all of the mind consciousness." Qin Lie frowned deeply. "However, the energy inside the clump of light is too dangerous. With my cultivation, I do not dare to touch it yet."

He knew that, with Song Tingyu's intelligence, she must have noticed something, so he didn't try to intentionally hide the fact and spoke the truth.

"If your realm isn't enough and you don't dare to touch it... erm, if you don't mind, can I have a look at it?" Song Tingyu's eyes lit up as her curiosity was piqued. "I am only half a step away from entering the Fulfillment Realm. Perhaps I can test it and possibly help you, right?"

This was the first time she stated her cultivation level in front of Qin Lie. The peak of the Netherpassage Realm, only a step away from the Fulfillment Realm.

During this half year, Qin Lie had asked about her cultivation level multiple times, but every time she simply smiled and did not answer, keeping it a secret to the end.

Today, in order to clarify the information hidden inside the wooden sculpture, she had actually told him her true Realm of her own accord—from this, one could see exactly how curious she was about the information inside the wooden sculpture.

"...The peak of the Netherpassage Realm. You actually have a

higher realm than that old hag Jiu Liuyu and are stronger than Yuan Tianya and Di Shijiu." Qin Lie looked at her like she was a monster. "Is it because that you're good at preserving your youth and your actual age is actually already seventy or eighty years old?"

"What kind of nonsense are you spouting?" Song Tingyu didn't know whether to laugh or cry as she rolled her eyes at him and said, "I'm just two years older than you. You're twenty one this year, right? I'm only twenty three years old. How did I suddenly become seventy or eighty? You little brat, next time you suspect my age again, big sister will use drugs to immediately turn you seventy or eighty years old!"

"Twenty three years old at the peak of the Netherpassage Realm. How exactly do you cultivate?" Qin Lie stared at her.

"My cultivation talents are good in the first place and my father is the alliance master of Profound Heaven Alliance. He raised me without caring about the cost. I also ran into plenty of extraordinary incidents along the way, which is how I came to have my current success." When speaking of her cultivation level, she also became proud. "In our Scarlet Tide Continent, there is no one around my age who can match my realm. Among my peers, no one can beat me one on one either. Xie Jingxuan and Nie Hong are not my match. Even Eight Extreme Temple's Zhang Chendong would have to unleash the secret arts of Eight Extreme Temple, at the huge price of severely injuring himself, to battle me or there's no chance of him beating me either."

"So you mean that you are unrivaled among your peers?" Qin Lie

said in shock.

“In the Scarlet Tide Continent, I am unrivaled among my peers,” Song Tingyu said confidently.

Chapter 288: A Dust Covered Letter

“How about letting me take a look at your wooden sculpture? Perhaps I could be of assistance to you?”

Song Tingyu gazed at Qin Lie, her face full of anticipation. She took the initiative and stuck out her hand as she said in a sincere tone, “Relax, I will help keep your secret. Besides, weren’t you the one who wanted to find your grandfather? Didn’t you want to know anything that could possibly be connected to him?”

Qin Lie gripped his wooden sculpture, his brows furrowing as he inwardly hesitated.

After pondering for quite a while, he once again looked deeply into Song Tingyu’s eyes and then finally handed the wooden sculpture over to her. “Be careful.”

“Relax, relax.” Song Tingyu’s eyes brightened. Having received Qin Lie’s trust, she was extremely happy as she received the wooden sculpture. After slightly adjusting her position, she attempted to use her mind consciousness to delve into it.

Qin Lie began to tense up as he looked at her unwaveringly, hoping she would find something.

However, a moment later, he saw Song Tingyu’s smile stiffen.

“What’s wrong?” Qin Lie asked in surprise.

Traces of rosiness emerged on Song Tingyu's porcelain cheeks as her expression became slightly embarrassed. "It seems... it seems my mind consciousness cannot even enter it. Let me try again..."

Song Tingyu stubbornly tried again.

She condensed another wisp of mind intent, but as soon as it touched the wooden sculpture, it was once again blown away by some invisible force.

It seemed as if her mind intent was blown away as soon as it neared the wooden sculpture because it wasn't recognized. She was not able to penetrate into the sculpture with her mind intent at all.

After trying and failing several times, a bitter smile emerged on Song Tingyu's pretty face. She handed the wooden sculpture back to Qin Lie and helplessly said, "It seems I am unable to help you because this wooden sculpture has some seal on it which only allows your mind consciousness to enter..."

Hints of surprise surfaced in Qin Lie's eyes as he silently held the wooden sculpture.

Half a day later, Qin Lie stored the wooden sculpture back into his spatial ring and mindlessly wandered around Herb Mountain once more. After finding no irregularities, he had Song Tingyu bring him back to Ling Town.

Walking through the empty streets of Ling Town and looking around at the continuous rows of small houses, Qin Lie sighed.

All of the members of the Ling Family had moved to Icestone City during the conflicts between martial practitioners and the spirit beasts of the Arctic Mountain Range.

Then, because he had killed Du Haitian and his entire family, the Ling Family had been forced to leave Icestone City and move to the territory of Seven Fiends Valley.

Currently, having been expelled from their homes and forced to rely on others, the days of the Ling Family in Seven Fiends Valley were naturally quite difficult.

Qin Lie walked all the way to the small house which had been his. Pushing open the dusty little door, he stepped into the cobweb filled house. His mood began to worsen.

Years ago, this had been the place where he had convinced Ling Yushi to leave him and go to Seven Fiends Valley with Jiu Liuyu. At the time, he had felt that his decision was correct as he believed that Ling Yushi and Ling Xuanxuan would be able to live more splendid lives if they followed Jiu Liuyu to the Black Iron Seven Fiends Valley.

Fast forward several years and the Ling Family was now a ghost of its former self. Moreover, Jiu Liuyu had died at his hands, causing the members of Seven Fiends Valley to despise Ling Yushi and Ling Xuanxuan because of their connection to him.

Now that he had returned here, he couldn't help but reminisce about the decision that he made that year. He couldn't decide whether he had been right or wrong for persuading Ling Yushi all those years ago.

He had spent seven years living in this little house. During the last two of those years, a girl had appeared within it...

Even though he was considered a fool, the girl had still come and cleaned for him, washed his clothes, and filled the water for his baths. Although she was wordy and spent entire days speaking to herself, the girl was kind-hearted and had never done anything malicious to him.

Scenes of the past depicting two people alone together suddenly began to flash through his mind.

Within the house, Qin Lie suddenly became startled.

A long while later, he finally arrived beside the little wooden bed that he used to sleep in. There he saw a letter atop the edge of the bed, one which was completely covered in dust. However, he could still make out the familiar characters in the letter.

Somewhat stunned, Qin Lie picked up the letter and opened it. Concentrating, he began to read the contents of the letter.

"Qin Lie, after leaving Icestone City, just where did you go? I

searched for you for a very long time, traveling to Icestone City, then the stone forest mentioned by Gao Yu, then the Arctic Mountain Range, then Herb Mountain...

"I went to all of the places that you could have gone, but I was still unable to find you.

"I hope that you are okay and that you are still alive and well. I hope that you remember the words you once said to me.

"In this very place, you once told me that you would one day come to Dark Fiend Valley and find me.

"Master is becoming increasingly irritated and worried, so I must return to Dark Fiend Valley now, but remember that I will always be waiting for you.

"I will wait for the day where you fulfill your promise to me. I will forever wait in Dark Fiend Valley until the day comes where you reappear in my life.

"You must come for me.

"Remember, there will be someone waiting for you—someone who has been waiting all this time and will still be waiting for you..."

This letter had been left here by Ling Yushi after Qin Lie had gone missing following the events which occurred in Ling Town.

She had ignored the disapproval of her master and secretly left Dark Fiend Valley by herself to bitterly search for him in the area surrounding Icestone City, the stone forest, the Arctic Mountain Range, and Ling Town.

From the letter, Qin Lie could sense just how long Ling Yushi had searched for him, unknowing that he had been cultivating underground in the depths of the Arctic Mountain Range the entire time.

In the end, she had been forced to return due to Jiu Liuyu's increasingly irritated orders. However, before she had returned, she had come to this wooden house where the two of them had made so many memories and stayed for a while.

Here, she had written her letter and left it behind.

She hoped that, one day, Qin Lie would find and read it.

Today, Qin Lie had finally returned to his roots and, although a few years late, finally saw this letter.

This letter hadn't contained any sentimental phrases of love, yet intense feelings of affection still arose from each paragraph, sentence, and word, revealing the writer's deep love and worry...

Within the little house, Qin Lie gripped the letter as scenes of the past once again began to flash through his mind. Subconsciously, he began to tightly clench the letter in his hands.

A very long time later, he stored the letter away into his spatial ring, treating it like a treasure. With large steps, he walked out of the wooden room and rushed outside. To Song Tingyu who was standing outside, he said, “Quickly bring me to Dark Fiend Valley!”

……

“Li Zhongzheng! Bu Xiang! What have you two come here for?”

Within the Ling Family residence in a town outside of Dark Fiend Valley, Ling Xuanxuan was angrily shouting.

Gold Fiend Valley’s Li Zhongzheng and Fire Fiend Valley’s Bu Xiong had clearly agreed to come here together.

Numerous martial practitioners from Gold Fiend Valley and Fire Fiend Valley stood outside. Their arms were crossed and they all had cold smiles on their faces as their eyes greedily looked in.

“I’ve come to visit my concubine.” Bu Xiang was quite fat and had a mole right by his mouth. A light of lust flickered within his small eyes as he looked at Ling Xuanxuan’s tender, sensual body. “You’re quite spicy. Recently, I can’t help but always dream of you. Today I planned to go to Dark Fiend Valley to find you, but since you weren’t there, I could only come here.”

“Yushi, I came to visit you,” Li Zhongzheng politely said in a loud voice.

Upon hearing Li Zhongzheng's loud cry, an expression of disgust emerged on the beautiful face of Ling Yushi who was in the backyard.

Nonetheless, she still walked out of the backyard. Arriving in the front yard, she saw Bu Xiang pestering Ling Xuanxuan and her eyes suddenly went cold. She shouted, "Senior Brother Bu! Please have some self-control!"

"Self-control?" Bu Xiang grinned and laughed wickedly, "I say, sister, Xuanxuan will be my concubine in just a few more days. Whatever I want to do, I will be able to do it. Even if it's you, you will still not be qualified enough to control me."

"Shut your mouth! Who ever agreed to your terms?" Ling Xuanxuan cursed, "Stupid fatty, you better stop dreaming. Even if I die, I will never marry you!"

Bu Xiang's expression suddenly became sinister as he began to laugh coldly. He glanced at the Ling Family members who were emerging from the backyard and said, "If you two sisters dare to resist, not only will you two die, but your entire Ling Family will follow!

An indifferent smile also emerged atop the face of Li Zhongzheng, who was currently standing off to the side. Only… his smile also contained traces of malevolence.

As Bu Xiang's threats resounded in the yard, all of the Ling

Family members suddenly went silent.

"Yushi, it's not that we want to threaten you. This matter... has already been decided by our superiors. It was approved by all of the major valley masters. Moreover, if not for me desperately fighting for your cause, your Ling Family would have been unable to remain within Seven Fiends Valley. They wouldn't have even been able to leave alive," Li Zhongzheng earnestly said.

"Your desperate efforts were not just so I would become your concubine?" Ling Yushi said coldly, her eyes dim.

"That... if it were a year ago and Granny Liu was still alive, you could have been my main wife." Li Zhongzheng shrugged, then helplessly chuckled and said, "However, at the time, you refused. Because of that Qin Lie or whatever, you refused to marry me. At this moment, your status is no longer enough. To be my concubine... is already after my struggles and desperate efforts, and can be considered to be a great boon. To be honest, based on what my master said, you are currently not even fit to be my concubine..."

"Ling Xuanxuan, do you truly believe you can be a concubine?" Bu Xiang wickedly grinned and began to cackle as his lust filled eyes fell onto Ling Xuanxuan's exquisite figure. He chuckled and said, "If not for your pure spirit energy, your cultivation of a fire type spirit art, and the fact that your body will help my cultivation, do you believe that you would still be my concubine? To be honest, me taking you as my concubine is only so that I can use your body to help further my cultivation. When you are no longer of any worth to me, I will directly put you to rest so that you can't even be

a concubine anymore!”

“Bu Xiang! I’m going to f*cking kill you!” Ling Xuanxuan crazily shouted.

As her emotions experienced such great change, her long, shiny, black hair quickly became a deep purple. A faint purple color also emerged within her eyes.

As she circulated her spirit art, she suddenly began to feel as if the blood in her body was boiling. Within her blood vessels, an extremely strange power which she had never experienced before emerged. The power was dark and evil and caused her to feel extremely restless.

A fireball condensed within her palm. What used to be a scarlet colored fireball was now suddenly a deep purple.

As soon as the deep purple fireball appeared, an extremely terrifying and overbearing power immediately burst out.

This power was ghastly and horrifying, not even Ling Xuanxuan herself was able to control it!”

“Swish!”

The fiercely blazing purple fireball suddenly flew out from Ling Xuanxuan’s palm amidst her rage and directly enveloped Bu Xiang right when he opened his mouth to call for help!

The little fireball had almost instantly turned into a raging sea of purple flames. Bu Xiang's fat body immediately began to burn intensely.

Bu Xiang suddenly began to shout in terror as he wretchedly rolled around within the sea of flames and tried to extinguish the purple flames on his body.

At this moment, all of the Ling Family members became stunned. They watched blankly as Bu Xiang became submerged within all of the raging purple flames. They also observed Ling Xuanxuan who had been shocked into a daze by her own display of power.

Ling Xuanxuan had actually dared to kill someone!

At this moment, practically all of the members of the Ling Family became distraught as they thought of the great calamity which was about to befall the Ling Family.

"Ahhh! Save me! Save me, ahhh! You little whore, I'm going to kill you!!!"

Bu Xiang desperately shouted as he rolled on the ground.

The mass of Fire Fiend Valley practitioners quickly streamed in from outside, carrying buckets as they continuously threw water onto Bu Xiang and tried to put out the purple flames on his body.

Strangely, the purple flames were not extinguished by the water and continued to blaze.

As for Bu Xiang's wretched cries, they gradually stopped. He had quickly been reduced to a black husk of charcoal.

—And like this, Bu Xiang died a wretched death.

……

Chapter 289: The Eruption Of The Ling Family!

The move had just been too sudden. One second, the martial practitioners of Gold Fiend Valley and Fire Fiend Valley had still been coldly observing. The next, they discovered that Bu Xiang had been engulfed in purple flames.

Well water was thrown over Bu Xiang's body but shockingly had no effect on the raging flames. Everyone could only watch as Bu Xiang was burned to a black crisp.

As for the purple flames, they continued burning Bu Xiang's body. It seemed as nothing could extinguish them until the flames themselves ran out of energy.

At this moment, all of the Ling Family members had lost the will to live as the feeling of despair emerged within them.

While Bu Xiang was publicly the apprentice of Fire Fiend Valley's valley master, Gu Tong, he was actually Gu Tong's illegitimate child.

This fact was one which many had privately confirmed numerous times.

Because Bu Xiang's cultivation realm was low and his talent was also very ordinary, he had originally been in a Limestone force under Seven Fiends Valley's jurisdiction. However, ten years ago,

Gu Tong had travelled there and said that he saw talent in Bu Xiang and recruited Bu Xiang as a disciple of Fire Fiend Valley.

Afterwards, Gu Tong spared no expense as he helped Bu Xiang cultivate. Still, Bu Xiang's advancement was slow that, even today, he was only at the middle stage of the Natal Opening Realm.

This caused many to become speechless.

However, Gu Tong's love for Bu Xiang only increased. He continued giving large amounts of cultivation materials to Bu Xiang so that Bu Xiang could use them.

Only when rumors about Bu Xiang being Gu Tong's illegitimate child spread did everyone finally understand why Gu Tong treated Bu Xiang so favorably.

Now that Ling Xuanxuan had turned Bu Xiang to ashes, just how could the Ling Family possibly survive?

"Sis, I-I didn't mean to do this..." Upon realizing that Bu Xiang had indeed died, Ling Xuanxuan also began to panic as she shrilly cried, "I really didn't mean to do this, but I wasn't able to control the fireball. I didn't think that these flames would suddenly become so fierce."

Ling Xuanxuan was indeed quite intelligent. Upon seeing Bu Xiang's burnt corpse, she immediately knew that she had forcefully brought the Ling Family onto a path of no return.

She was very clear on the fact that the Ling Family had been cast into a calamitous situation because of her rash and impulsive move.

“Bu Xiang died, Bu Xiang died!” The expression of a martial practitioner of Fire Fiend Valley greatly changed as he astonishedly shouted, “Dammit! Valley Master’s going to lose his shit!”

“Yushi, this…” At this time, Gold Fiend Valley’s Li Zhongzheng also began to panic as his hands and feet began to tremble and fidget. He thought for a moment, then said, “It’s over for the Ling Family. There is no longer any way to shelter you all any more.”

“Notify the valley master!” the martial practitioners of Fire Fiend Valley clamored.

“Ling Yushi, your younger sister has damned your Ling Family to perdition. I am no longer able to protect even you. However, I shall ask Fire Fiend Valley’s valley master to allow me to care for you for several days before you are executed!” Li Zhongzheng then recomposed himself, calming down as he sucked in a deep breath and said, “I shall give you a few wonderful days to reminisce, hehe!”

Every member of the Ling Family could perceive the lust hidden in Li Zhongzheng’s words. Upon hearing them, they all became enraged.

Li Zhongzheng had coveted Ling Yushi for many years and had

wholeheartedly tried his best to get her. Through the usage of various means, he had finally managed to force Ling Yushi to become his concubine.

However, because Ling Xuanxuan had suddenly erupted and killed Bu Xiang, Li Zhongzheng knew that even he no longer had a way to keep Ling Yushi alive.

Thus, he would make another request. He would ask Fire Fiend Valley's valley master to give Ling Yushi to him for a few days before she was executed.

He would be able to do whatever he wanted.

"Big Sis! Since our Ling Family cannot escape from this unharmed, let's... let's fight them!" Perceiving the evil thoughts encompassed within Li Zhongzheng's words, a crazed glow emerged within Ling Xuanxuan's now purple pupils.

The glow caused even Li Zhongzheng to feel frightened as he subconsciously put some more distance between him and Ling Xuanxuan.

Ling Yushi had remained silent all this time.

Surprisingly, following the sudden change in events and Li Zhongzheng's expression of his dark thoughts, all she had done was deeply stare at Li Zhongzheng and the martial practitioners of Fire and Gold Fiend Valley in complete silence.

Her pupils had also gradually turned a deep purple while her beautiful long hair had begun to wildly flutter behind like turbulent waves even though there was no wind.

No one knew, but the moment Ling Xuanxuan had suddenly erupted and killed Bu Xiang, the blood within Ling Yushi's body had also begun boiling.

She was even more enraged than Ling Xuanxuan had been. The flame within her heart was like a seed which had taken root in her blood and rapidly grown...

Raging flames burned in her blood and mind. As if they had burned away some sort of restraining seal, her mind now experienced a great shock.

Afterwards, her pupils had also turned purple, and she discovered that everything she saw in the world around her had become abnormal.

She had suddenly become able to see the flow of spirit energy within the muscles and veins of each of the martial practitioners from Gold and Fire Fiend Valley. In her eyes, strand after strand of dazzling lines now protruded out from each martial practitioner's bodies. These lines originated from bright spots within their muscles and veins and were the spirit energy coursing through each martial practitioner.

When she looked at Li Zhongzheng and his two lust filled eyes, she knew exactly what he was thinking.

Not only could she see how her opponent circulated their spirit energy, she could also see through their thoughts. She now could clearly see into the minds of others.

The moment the anger of the Ling Family members had erupted, she had looked at Li Zhongzheng. The anger suppressed in her heart had suddenly, through some inexplicable way that even she couldn't comprehend, directly pierced into Li Zhongzheng's mind.

Like a flash flood, anger and hatred crashed into Li Zhongzheng's heart and mind.

It was some kind of secret mind technique!

Li Zhongzheng's entire body began to violently tremble. A look of profound shock emerged within his eyes as he looked at Ling Yushi. Out of nowhere, he felt as if the girl which he had thought to be gentle and elegant had unexpectedly turned into a primeval beast.

In an instant, the purple flames which had previously turned Bu Xiang to ashes seemingly appeared in his mind. Although they scattered at first, they became increasingly tempestuous.

A terrifying image of him being drowned in a sea of these purple flames emerged within his mind as he clutched his head and began to scream. He looked at Ling Yushi, his face full of fear as he began to back away from her.

At this moment, Ling Yushi had turned into a ferocious ghoul in Li Zhongzheng's eyes. She had become an evil god who dictated whether he lived or died.

Under everyone's astonished gazes, Li Zhongzheng continued to back away, his body trembled intensely for some inexplicable manner.

As he backed away, everyone became aware that Li Zhongzheng's spirit, body, and mind were all rapidly being exhausted, as if some unseen creature of evil were gradually devouring his soul and willpower.

"Wh-what in the world is happening?" Ling Chengzhi dazedly said. He looked at Ling Xuanxuan for a while, and then, when he turned to look at Ling Yushi, his gaze become bewildered.

"Perhaps... perhaps it is because of their changes?" family elder Ling Kangan pondered as he gradually comprehended what was happening.

"Ling Feng! Ling Feng, you..." shouted someone else in shock.

Ling Feng, who was originally seen as an inconspicuous figure within the Ling Family, had, out of the blue,y begun to gasp for air, inhaling mouthful after mouthful. As if he suddenly turned into an enraged, ferocious beast, a frightening look of madness took shape on his face.

When Bu Xiang and Li Zhongzheng had been threatening the Ling Family, Ling Feng had silently glared at the two.

He stared for quite a while. As if he had fallen into a pit of hatred, the only things he could see were scenes of him killing the people of Gold and Fire Fiend Valley.

Thus, this is what he had done.

Ling Feng, who cultivated a fire aspect spirit art,, grasped his Firecloud Hammer and, all of a sudden, charged at a Gold Fiend Valley martial practitioner.

The Firecloud Hammer was only a Common Grade Two spirit artifact, and thus it was a spirit artifact that wasn't even worth mentioning in the eyes of the martial practitioners of Seven Fiends Valley.

After arriving in Seven Fiends Valley, Ling Feng had suddenly broken into the early stage of the Natal Opening Realm. He originally had the opportunity to receive a higher grade spirit artifact, but he had become too used to the Firecloud Hammer and thus was too reluctant to throw it away.

Today, after taking out his Firecloud Hammer once again, he immediately felt a wondrous connection between his blood and veins.

Over the last few years, he had been mocked countless times because of his beloved Firecloud Hammer. Even though he had fought, using it many times, he had never felt such a wonderous feeling before.

When he rushed towards the Gold Fiend Valley martial practitioner, he felt as if the Firecloud Hammer in his hand had become a part of his body, as if it had become an extension of his arm. It was like one of his own limbs...

After infusing his energy into the Firecloud Hammer, flames began to pour out like a surging river. However, the flames were also a deep purple!

A river of dark purple flames followed Ling Feng's every move, stormed towards the martial practitioners of Gold and Fire Fiend Valley.

During this moment, tragic cries continuously arose as the river of purple swept past the martial practitioners, setting a great number of these Natal Opening Realm practitioners ablaze.

Their fates were to be the same as Bu Xiang's. They were unable to extinguish the flames on their bodies. No matter what they attempted, the end result was the same, and all they could do was scream and shout in terror.

Meanwhile, Li Zhongzheng, who had been clutching his head and retreating as if he had seen a ghost, had already withdrawn out of the residence.

He was the only one who hadn't been enveloped within the river of purple; he was the only one whose body wasn't on fire.

Following Ling Xuanxuan and Ling Yushi, Ling Feng had also erupted and begun displaying great power.

Within this part of the residence, only the burning bodies of the martial practitioners of Gold and Fire Fiend Valley who were bitterly and tragically screaming amidst the sea of flames remained.

Upon seeing how everything had completely turned around so abruptly, the members of the Ling Family couldn't help but look at Ling Yushi, Ling Xuanxuan, and Ling Feng with expressions of profound astonishment.

They had no clue as to what had just transpired and had no clue what they should do next.

It was like this until Ling Yushi finally calmed down and commanded, "All members of the Ling Family immediately leave this town and the territory of Seven Fiends Valley as quickly as possible!"

"Move! Now!" Ling Kangan also recovered. "Leave everything behind, all that matters is that we survive. However far we manage to escape, so be it. Each survivor is important!"

Under the constant shouting of Ling Kangan and Ling Chengzhi, all of the members of the Ling Family began to realize that awaited them at this place was death.

Without any preparations whatsoever, they all ran out of the residence while the martial practitioners of Gold and Fire Fiend Valley were still screaming in agony. Under the shocked gazes of the town residents, they all began to move towards the edges of Seven Fiend Valley's territory.

As for Li Zhongzheng, who had fallen into despair and backed out of the residence, he gradually awoke from his nightmare and quickly ran back to Gold Fiend Valley to request an audience with Gold Fiend Valley's Valley Master Jia Songlin.

At the same time, the news-bearing Fire Fiend Valley martial practitioners who had left first were also passing the information to Gu Tong.

"I'll slaughter every last member of the Ling Family!" Before long, Gu Tong's crazed, angry voice resounded within Fire Fiend Valley.

Not long after, Gold Fiend Valley's Valley Master Jia Songlin, also learned of what had taken place at the Ling Family residence through Li Zhongzheng.

Thus, the entire upper echelon of Seven Fiends Valley promptly learned of the Ling Family's revolt and escape.

Under various orders, all of the powerful practitioners of Seven Fiends Valley were dispatched to chase after the fleeing Ling Family.

Chapter 290: Ling Yushi's Change

"Your main task is to recapture the Ling Family clansmen. Kill anyone unrelated on the spot!"

This was the order the subordinate martial practitioners received after all the valley masters had sat down and discussed the matter in detail.

All of Seven Fiends Valley's martial practitioners had marched out.

In the forest, headed towards Dark Asura Hall, the Ling Family clansmen were all exhausted and sweating all over.

They had been on the move for an hour straight.

During this hour, everyone ran as fast as their legs could carry them without rest. The young carried the old and children on their backs, unleashing their potential while holding onto the hope that they survive this crisis.

Everyone knew that those from Seven Fiends Valley would definitely not let this matter to rest. They all knew that what would happen the moment Seven Fiends Valley's martial practitioners caught up to them.

Therefore, they ran with everything they had.

Soon after, the first wave of pursuers closed in on them. It was a group of Earth Fiend Valley martial practitioners. The leader was at the early stage of the Manifestation Realm.

They had recently returned from elsewhere and just happened to pass through that forest. The moment they received the information, they chased down the Ling Family clansmen immediately.

“There are pursuers!” Ling Yushi had already acutely detected the existence of enemies while they were still a ways away. She alerted everyone beforehand.

“We will stay back and fight!” Ling Feng declared solemnly.

“Mn.” Ling Yushi nodded heavily.

The other Ling Family clansmen continued onto Dark Asura Hall. Meanwhile, Ling Yushi, Ling Xuanxuan, and Ling Feng stayed back.

“I may not know why our bodies have undergone such a change, but there is one thing that I can be sure of. This transformation has greatly increased our abilities!” Currently, Ling Yushi was much calmer than she would have been in the past in such a critical situation. “We have to survive if we want to find out what happened to our bodies. We can no longer make amends with Seven Fiends Valley. Do your best to take them out as soon as you see them.”

Once she finished saying this, she realized that both Ling Feng and Ling Xuanxuan were staring at her in surprise.

She subconsciously touched her cheeks and asked doubtfully, “What’s wrong?”

“First Miss, you are… slightly different than before,” Ling Feng said softly.

“How so?” Ling Yushi asked in surprise.

“I can’t quite explain. You seem to have become more confident, stronger, more… decisive, and ruthless…” Ling Feng looked at her deeply, “After your hair and eyes changed, it was obvious your temperament did as well.”

“Sis, you used to be too gentle, used to be not confident enough, used to dislike combat, and expected everything to not work out.” Ling Xuanxuan continued on, “But now, you have gained the quality of a leader. You have become extremely confident in yourself. Anyway, I can also feel that you’re a little different…”

“The situation has forced me to become like this. I must become strong, or the Ling Family will not survive this crisis.” Ling Yushi nodded her head lightly.

While waiting, Ling Yushi continuously explained, one after another, how far their pursuers were from them, where they were approaching from, their numbers, their strength and weaknesses…

They were very away, but she seemed to be able to see who they were and even know what they were thinking.

When those people neared, under her soft exclamation, both Ling Feng and Ling Xuanxuan charged out at the same time.

Fifteen minutes later, the group of seven Earth Fiend Valley martial practitioners, who had exceeded them in numbers and cultivation were all killed by them.

The trio stood amidst a floor of bodies. Staring at the fearsome seven who now laid on the floor, never to get up again, while smelling a scorched smell, they were all shocked by their own abilities.

“I-is this really our doing?” Ling Xuanxuan murmured distractedly while staring at the purple flames seeping out of her fingertips and sensing its fearsome strength.

Meanwhile, Ling Feng gripped his Fire Cloud Hammer tightly and exclaimed, “My Fire Cloud Hammer is most definitely better than Common Grade Two! It seems that it is only now that this Fire Cloud Hammer has begun to truly display its true power! Who exactly is Grandpa Qin Shan? How did my Fire Cloud Hammer, forged by his hands, become so powerful after my hair color changed?”

“Everything will be made clear if we meet Grandpa Qin Shan again one day. But now, we have not escaped danger yet. Go, let’s

reconvene with the clansmen and continue our escape!” Ling Yushi said calmly.

……

On top of the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly.

Qin Lie and Song Tingyu sat side by side. Song Tingyu was playing with a white jade pendant in her hand. While looking at the white clouds beside her, she casually said, “There’s not too much for you to worry about. With your grandfather’s skills, he should be safe.”

The duo flew over the mountains while sitting on the rainbow butterfly. Along the way, Song Tingyu would occasionally ask Qin Lie about his grandfather. Qin Lie only replied randomly with noncommittal responses.

His responses had not increased Song Tingyu’s understanding of his grandfather by much—if even Qin Lie did not understand himself and his grandfather, then how could she possibly hope to come to an understanding?

“If the people from Seven Fiends Valley dare act recklessly, don’t blame me for using Terminator Profound Bombs and wiping Seven Fiends Valley off the face of Spirit Realm!” Qin Lie suddenly spouted such a line without warning.

Song Tingyu’s expression changed slightly and immediately

understood that, currently, Qin Lie's grandfather was the last thing on his mind.

What was on his mind was Seven Fiends Valley and Ling Yushi's safety...

"Don't act recklessly!" Song Tingyu exclaimed hurriedly.

She was very familiar with the terror that was Terminator Profound Bomb after fighting with Qin Lie all the way from Nether Realm to Nether Battlefield. She even knew that using multiple Terminator Profound Bombs simultaneously would result in a synergistic effect and would cause their explosive power to become even more terrifying.

It was extremely clear to her that if Qin Lie truly lost control and ignited all of the Terminator Profound Bombs in his possession... Seven Fiends Valley might really be wiped out in its entirety.

"If she is fine, then Seven Fiends Valley is fine. If she is in trouble, then Seven Fiends Valley will have to suffer my wrath!" Qin Lie snorted coldly.

"Don't be impulsive. I can handle this. Can you let me handle this?" Song Tingyu took the matter to her own hands willingly. "I can guarantee the Ling Family's safety!"

"That will be the best," Qin Lie said with a dark face.

“I will contact Profound Heaven Alliance and find out what the current situation with Seven Fiends Valley is. I’ll do my best to take control of the situation as soon as possible.” From Qin Lie’s dark expression, Song Tingyu could see trouble looming on the horizon. Suddenly, she turned quiet and, with the white jade pendant in her hands, contacted Profound Heaven Alliance.

An obvious wave of mind energy emanated from her body. Like an invisible wind, it flew into the distance and vanished.

After a while, Song Tingyu’s body shook as she opened her eyes with a hint of shock in her eyes.

“How is it?” Qin Lie asked urgently.

“You won’t believe me if I told you.” Song Tingyu’s eyes were odd as she sucked in a deep breath and said, “That Bu Xiang who was to marry Ling Xuanxuan was burned to death on the spot. That Li Zhongzheng who was to marry Ling Yushi went insane and delirious as a result. The fifteen Gold Fiend Valley and Fire Fiend Valley martial practitioners inside the Ling Family’s house were all burned or killed. Every single one of the three waves of martial practitioners that Seven Fiends Valley had sent out after the Ling Family were all eliminated, and the strongest martial practitioners among them were in the middle stage of the Manifestation Realm!”

“How is this possible?” Qin Lie cried out in shock, “Could it be that Tu Ze and Zhuo Qian caught up and helped the Ling Family? There’s not a single person in the Ling Family who has reached the Manifestation Realm. How can they possibly do all of this?”

“Dark Asura Hall’s people have not met up with them yet. It was all done by the Ling Family.” Song Tingyu was also moved on the inside. “Even I don’t believe it. Not even those valley masters of Seven Fiends Valley believe all of that.”

A strange light flashed inside Qin Lie’s eyes.

After a while, he exclaimed in a low tone, “Do you think you still can stop Seven Fiends Valley’s pursuit of the Ling Family?”

Song Tingyu smiled bitterly. “I’ll do my best to mend things.”

If the Ling Family hadn’t suddenly broken out, if Bu Xiang hadn’t died, if Li Zhongzheng hadn’t gone insane, if so many Dark Fiend Valley martial practitioners hadn’t died, then with her influence alone, she was confident that she could clean up this matter easily.

But now, even she felt that this matter was a little tricky.

“How long before we catch up to the Ling Family?” Qin Lie asked again.

“Two hours.” Song Tingyu thought for a while before changing her words, “No, just over an hour will suffice!”

She suddenly slapped the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly below her and exclaimed, “Don’t you be lazy!”

Rays of rainbow light was slapped directly into the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly's body from her hand.

The Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly's speed grew faster as if it had been injected with drugs.

Like a rainbow in the sky, it carried both Qin Lie and Song Tingyu at top speed to where the Ling Family was.

Qin Lie, out of nowhere, hmphed coldly.

"What are you hmphing about? It's not that I'm not doing my best, but it strains my Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly greatly to fly at top speed." Song Tingyu curled her lips and, in a whining manner, said, "I'm heading to save your little lover and not my man, you know? Seriously, you make it look like I owe you or something."

Chapter 291: End Of The Line

“Everyone, let’s rest for a minute.”

Inside the mountain forest, Ling Yushi said so to her clansmen while putting down a young girl she was carrying on her back who was around six to seven. After that, she wiped the sweat seeping out of her forehead.

She knew that this wasn’t the ideal time to stop, but she had to take the physical condition of her clansmen into account, especially considering how tired they were from running for such an extended period of time. If they didn’t stop to rest, then some of her clansmen might even die from sheer exhaustion before the martial practitioners of Seven Fiends Valley reached them.

Not far away, the Ling Family’s clan elders, Ling Bo, Ling Xiang, and Ling Kangan were all deathly pale.

In the end, the trio who were carried by the youths of the clan still found the long trip a little more than they could handle. As of this moment, they were holding themselves up against trees and vomiting. It was so severe that it was as if they would end up expelling their own innards.

The moment they, as a group, came to a stop, many people laid flat on the ground, not wanting to move even a finger.

Others were hurriedly looking for a place to relieve themselves.

“Yushi, Xuanxuan, Little Feng, come over.” Ling Chengzhi waved his hands at the trio.

The trio arrived by Clan Elder Ling Kangan’s side.

Ling Kangan, who had recovered a little and was now wiping the filth from his mouth turned his head and looked at them weakly.

However, his murky eyes were currently shining with an excited light, “The Seven Fiends Valley martial practitioners chasing after us were all killed by you all? Truly?”

Ling Chengzhi was also gripping his fist and looked incredibly excited.

It was as if he had seen something that could renew the Ling Family’s hope.

“You aren’t the only ones who find this hard to believe. Even we are still confused and unsure if we are the ones who did it.” Ling Feng gripped his Fire Cloud Hammer tightly. Ever since he discovered that the Fire Cloud Hammer had become infinitely powerful, he was no longer willing to put it away. Instead, he held it at all times and toyed with the weapon tirelessly. “I believe that Grandpa Qin Shan came to us back then with some purpose in mind. It was not without reason.”

Ling Chengzhi and Ling Kangan both nodded inwardly.

At this point, they all guessed that Qin Shan must be an extraordinary person. Otherwise, there was no way he would know the secrets of Ling Family and be able to predict that some of their hair would one day turn purple.

“Unfortunately, Grandpa Qin Shan isn’t around. Otherwise, all of the mysteries could be solved.” Ling Yushi softly sighed.

“Little Shi, Xuanxuan, Little Feng, you must be strong!” Ling Kangan’s expression was a little more animated. “As long as we survive this crisis and can figure out the secrets of your bodies, the Ling Family… may truly be able to rise to power. One day, the Ling Family may even be able to become a force as powerful as Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple!”

The moment those words came out of his mouth, everyone grew enthusiastic as if they could already see the picture he depicted in their heads.

“Clan elder! Clan elder! Little Yun! Look at Little Yun!” It was at this moment someone cried out from behind the crowd.

Ling Kangan, Ling Chengzhi, Ling Yushi, and the others hurriedly turned their heads and looked at the little girl who was only around eleven to twelve.

She was called Ling Yun. Her talent in cultivation was relatively good, she was known for how lively and bold she was. Reflecting her talent, she had already reached the fourth level of the

Refinement Realm.

Currently, Ling Yun already knew what kind of danger the Ling Family would face. She had a frown on her face the entire trip and became even quieter than before.

While they were escaping from the town, she had suddenly fallen sick to a fever and someone else ended up carrying her.

However, her fever had subsided before anyone realized it. She herself had cried out, claiming that she was already fine and no longer needed to be carried.

The person carrying her had thought that she was forcing herself, but it was only when they took a closer look that they realized that her eyes and hair had turned purple similar to Ling Yushi, Ling Xuanxuan, and Ling Feng's...

This was the fourth person in the Ling Family to experience this change.

Ling Kangan and the others arrived in front Ling Yun with shining eyes and asked, "Little Yun, how do you feel?"

"Nothing much. It's just that my fever is gone and I feel very relaxed. I feel like my head is clearer too." Ling Yun was a dainty and cute girl with twintails shaped like goat horns on her head. She was currently touching her now purple hair, her eyes forming crescents due to her wide smile. "I like this color."

“It looks like these changes really aren’t just a special case. Considering the three of you experienced a change and Ling Yun changed as well… the others should also be able to experience the same change . It must simply be based on the individual’s speed of conversion.” Ling Kangan forcefully suppressed the excitement in his heart and solemnly exclaimed, “This time, as long as we survives this crisis, I believe that we will truly be able to rise up and become force that no longer needs to depend on others or eke out a living under someone else’s protection.”

“This is the dream that we as a clan have held for many years!” Ling Chengzhi also exclaimed.

The surrounding Ling Family clansmen had also become excited, the hope growing within them because of Ling Yushi and the other’s changes.

However, the Ling Family’s clansmen excitement was shattered by Ling Yushi’s next words.

Ling Yushi exclaimed while frowning, “Not good! More people from Seven Fiends Valley are coming! This time, this time, heavens, there are Netherpassage martial practitioners!”

Everyone felt a terrifying despair akin to dropping from heaven to hell after hearing “Netherpassage martial practitioners.”

The Netherpassage Realm was a power at the level of experts such as Jiu Liuyu. To the Ling Family, Netherpassage Realm

martial practitioners possessed incomparable power that could easily destroy a Limestone force like Nebula Pavilion with a simple flick of the arm.

How would the Ling Family be any different?

“Detestable heavens!” Ling Kangan furiously stared at the heavens and, starting to stagger, yelled, “You obviously want to destroy the Ling Family, yet why did you allow us a sliver of hope before we perish? Are you toying with us?!”

Ling Chengzhi too felt a great sense of defeat.

With how the eyes and hair of some of the Ling Family had changed color, combined with the astonishingly rapid rise in Ling Yushi and the other two’s combat strength which resulted in the martial practitioners of Seven Fiends Valley being slaughtered, Seven Fiends Valley finally realized that the Ling Family wasn’t just a bunch of weaklings. They came to the conclusion that the Ling Family might someday reach greater heights.

But while they were all excited, thinking how their previous sealed fate might change, Seven Fiends Valley had already dispatched martial practitioners in the Netherpassage Realm.

They would destroy the last vestiges of their hope!

The feeling of being dragged down from the sky caused him to feel so depressed that his spirit almost completely broke down.

“It’s not one, but several... several Netherpassage Realm martial practitioners. Ling Yushi’s purple eyes shone with deep despair. She gritted her teeth tightly at the realization that what awaited the Ling Family was the infinite abyss of despair.

No matter how much her, Ling Xuanxuan, and Ling Feng’s power had increased, they were merely Natal Opening Realm martial practitioners.

How could they possibly contest those in the Netherpassage Realm?

“Shen Meilan!” someone exclaimed.

“Jia Songlin!” another Ling Family clansmen cried out.

“Gu Tong!” Ling Kangan was shocked.

The valley master of Dark Fiend Valley, Gold Fiend Valley, and Fire Fiend Valley had led their subordinate experts to surround the Ling Family from three different directions, thus cutting off their escape route completely.

“None of you from Dark Asura Hall are allowed to take a step into this place. Otherwise, don’t blame us for disregarding our relationship!” Jia Songlin looked at where the members of Dark Asura Hall were and scoffed with a dark face.

The Ling Family abruptly turned around to look in front of them.

Before long, Tu Ze, Tu Mo, and Zhuo Qian had led Tu Shixiong's subordinate experts from Dark Asura Hall there and quietly arrived.

The reinforcements from Dark Asura Hall had finally arrived.

However, the moment they saw that the valley masters of Gold Fiend Valley, Dark Fiend Valley, and Fire Fiend Valley had personally led their experts to surround the Ling Family, Tu Ze and Tu Mo were both stunned.

Exactly how did the Ling Family, a group that could not even be considered a Limestone force, cause all three valley masters to come from Seven Fiends Valley? Shouldn't they be able to completely take out the Ling Family by just sending any one of their subordinate experts?

Just what had happened here?

"The Ling Family killed my disciple, Bu Xiang, and sixteen Fire Fiend Valley martial practitioners. One of them was even in the Manifestation Realm!" Fire Fiend Valley's Gu Tong had eyes that burned like fiery flames. "The Ling Family must be exterminated completely. I will fight anyone who dares to stop us to the death!"

"The Ling Family has caused Li Zhongzheng to go insane and killed twelve men from Gold Fiend Valley. They must be

exterminated!” Jia Songlin exclaimed.

“This is Dark Fiend Valley’s personal matter, it’s us dealing with our own traitors. If Dark Asura Hall dares interfere with this, do not blame us for being heartless!” Shen Meilan also exclaimed severely.

All three valley masters from the three great valleys had proclaimed their stance in unison. This caused all the Dark Asura Hall newcomers to be intimidated.

“Young sirs, I think we shouldn’t act carelessly in regards to this matter…” Tu Shixiong’s subordinate commander softly advised.

“Little brother, the three valley masters on the other side are as powerful as our father. If we forcefully interfere with this matter, not only do we not have the power to intervene and achieve our objective, we may even cause a huge load of trouble in the future. What do you think?” Tu Mo looked at Tu Ze.

Tu Ze and Zhuo Qian looked at each other and smiled bitterly.

They could never have imagined that the Ling Family had caused so much trouble and killed so many people.

Originally, the Ling Family had always been bullied and wasn’t really given much importance by Seven Fiends Valley. They believed that they could mediate this matter and quietly slip the Ling Family away from Seven Fiends Valley. This way, they

shouldn’t anger Seven Fiends Valley too much.

But now, Tu Mo and that commander aside, even Tu Ze and Zhuo Qian had grown hesitant.

The situation had completely spiralled out of their control. With the force they currently had, they could only watch from the sidelines.

Therefore, they did not come to the Ling Family’s side. Instead, all they did was stand in place, not moving at all.

This also crushed the Ling Family’s last hope.

“Brother Jia, what do you think? Should we just kill all of them?” Gu Tong turned around to look at Jia Songlin.”

Jia Songlin nodded.

“About that, didn’t Profound Heaven Alliance send us a message and ask us to be patient?” Shen Meilan mentioned a little anxiously.

Before they came over, Profound Heaven Alliance had suddenly ordered them to capture the Ling Family clansmen alive and decide their fate after Profound Heaven Alliance’s men had arrived.

Shen Meilan did not know where the order came from, but she

rather respected and feared Profound Heaven Alliance and thus believed that they should listen to Profound Heaven Alliance's orders.

"Sister Shen, if Profound Heaven Alliance are to cast down blame, Brother Gu and I will take responsibility." Jia Songlin looked at Shen Meilan and said with a low tone and dark face, "Gold Fiend Valley and Fire Fiend Valley have suffered terrible losses. We showed no mercy, yet the Ling Family suddenly underwent a change and unleashed their hidden fangs. This Ling Family may not be as simple as they seem. To be safe and ensure that the Ling Family doesn't take revenge on Gold Fiend Valley and Fire Fiend Valley, we must kill them now even if we go against Profound Heaven Alliance's orders!"

Shen Meilan now understood what he meant.

So it was the Ling Family's sudden show of strength that had caused Jia Songlin and Gu Tong to grow cautious. They were afraid that the Ling Family would become strong and take bloody revenge against them if they escaped this time.

Therefore, they planned to eliminate them while they were still weak.

Shen Meilan thought carefully and discovered that she had also been cast in an unfavorable light in the matter of forcing Ling Yushi and Ling Xuanxuan to marry Bu Xiang and Li Zhongzheng. The Ling Family must hate her as well.

Because of this, she quickly came to a realization and also said, “Big Brother Jia and Big Brother Gu are more insightful than I. I was naive. In that case, let us ignore Profound Heaven Alliance’s orders and destroy the Ling Family first!”

The three had come to the same conclusion.

Chapter 292: Purple Blood!

“They’re right in front of us!”

Song Tingyu stood up on the Flowing Rainbow Butterfly. Her hair danced wildly amidst the raging wind, giving her a wild and heroic look.

“Relax. I asked Profound Heaven Alliance to tell Seven Fiends Valley not to act recklessly. Seven Fiends Valley is our vassal force. They would not normally dare to disobey Profound Heaven Alliance’s orders.”

Looking at Qin Lie’s dark expression, Song Tingyu comforted him, “When we reach there, I will be the face while you be the heel with the Terminator Profound Bomb. We should be able to resolve this matter this way…”

She already had the perfect plan in her heart.

“If Seven Fiends Valley dares to harm them, then don’t blame me for repaying violence with violence!” Qin Lie snorted coldly.

“It’s okay. It’s definitely going to be okay, don’t worry.” Song Tingyu continued to persuade him and guaranteed verbally, “I can solve this. Leave it to me!”

Qin Lie kept quiet.

The Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly gradually soared lower, diving from the tall skies towards the top of the forest. Both Song Tingyu and Qin Lie could already clearly see the scenery beneath them. They could see the trees in the forest and the mottled sunlight beneath.

“Faster!”

Song Tingyu’s expression abruptly changed as she slapped the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly again, urging it to go faster.

Qin Lie’s pupils abruptly shrank. “What did you sense?”

“N-nothing…” Song Tingyu smiled unnaturally.

She could see from the extraordinary changes of energy and airflow that they were right in front of them, and that combat was underway.

Therefore, she had grown anxious. She urged the rainbow butterfly below her to rush to the battlefield as quickly as possible, wanting to prevent the matter from worsening any further.

She saw that Qin Lie had already taken out three Terminator Profound Bombs beside her, and as a result, she felt some bitterness in her heart…

“Zing zing zing!”

Bright rays of rainbow light swam across the forest like shadows of dragons, blasting the numerous large trees to bits.

The cold-faced Qiu Xudong, channeling his spirit art and holding a silvery whip in his hands, only needed to shake his hands once before a silver light shot out of his weapon.

Qiu Xudong, in the late stage of the Manifestation Realm, wielded a Profound Grade Three spirit weapon, the Silver Dragon Whip. He was already powerful in the first place and, when he unleashed the high grade spirit artifact, was absolutely intimidating.

Both Ling Xuanxuan and Ling Feng cultivated a fire spirit art. The duo had joined hands to unleash purple flames as their defensive line in an attempt to block Qiu Xudong's attack. However, they were blasted by the silver light until their flesh and skin were ripped apart.

These silver lights were just the shadows of the Silver Dragon Whip and not even the actual item approaching them.

Ling Yushi stood at the side. She was not as weak pessimistic, or passive as she acted in the past when everyone in the Ling Family could not see any hope.

Rather, she stared closely at Qiu Xudong, looking deeply into his eyes. Suddenly, she gathered the anger, hatred, and refusal to give up in her heart into a strange mind blast that shot straight into Qiu Xudong's mind.

The silver shadow of the whip that filled the sky went out of control all of a sudden while all the dragon-shaped shadows scattered uncontrollably in every direction.

“Slap slap slap!”

The trees cracked and the earth was scarred wherever the dragon-shaped shadows of the silver whip went.

Tu Mo, his band of Dark Asura Hall martial practitioners, and the people from Fire Fiend valley and Dark Fiend Valley all paled at the sight of the whip’s shadows rushing towards them and retreated backwards.

“Xudong, what’s going on with you?” Jia Songlin asked in surprise.

Qiu Xudong’s capabilities were something he was very familiar with. He did not think that Qiu Xudong would lose control in combat and make such a low level mistake.

Qiu Xudong shuddered and promptly looked at Ling Yushi in surprise. He said with a slightly changed expression, “She is just a Natal Opening Realm martial practitioner, yet she could actually channel a mind consciousness attack—and such a powerful one no less!”

“You’re saying…?” Jia Songlin looked shocked.

“This girl from the Ling Family can already use mind blasts skillfully. Forget the fact that she is still in the Natal Opening Realm—even some Netherpassage Realm martial practitioners probably do not have mind energy as powerful as hers!” Shen Meilan’s expression was ugly. She had been staring closely at Ling Yushi this entire time and realized that her purple eyes were flashing with a light that made her anxious. Furthermore, she detected an immense and pure energy coming from Ling Yushi’s eyes.

It was the kind of power that could only be sensed and used by a Netherpassage Realm martial practitioner after forming their true soul—soul power!

“Why did she suddenly become so terrifyingly powerful? Exactly what is this Ling Family hiding? Why are they able to ignite such terrifying potential in such a desperate situation?”

It was now that Shen Meilan had started to feel fear.

“Let’s see if you have truly cultivated your soul energy?” Shen Meilan’s eyes went cold.

A wisp of light that was like a cold star shone from inside her pupils. The light grew brighter and brighter, colder and colder while carrying a cold and dark aura with it.

When Ling Yushi locked eyes with her, her mind suddenly exploded as if she was stabbed with countless icy cold icicles. They

stabbed into her mind and consciousness, her nerves and brain.

"Pfft!"

Ling Yushi's realm was too far apart from Shen Meilan's after all. It was only a glance, and she was already severely injured, resulting in her spitting out a mouthful of blood.

"Purple blood!"

She Meilan cried out.

The faces of every Seven Fiends Valley martial practitioner changed at this moment as they looked completely shocked by the fresh blood Ling Yushi had spat out.

"Look at Ling Xuanxuan's and Ling Feng's bodies!" someone reminded them.

It was only when they paid attention to the duo that they realized that purple blood was seeping out of the wounds Ling Xuanxuan and Ling Feng suffered!

"What kind of monsters are the people of the Ling Family?" Shock filled Qiu Xudong's face.

Everyone else thought this as well.

Even Dark Asura Hall's Tu Mo, Tu Ze, and Zhuo Qian were intimidated by this unbelievable turn of events.

The Ling Family clansmen actually had purple blood inside them. Their blood was different from everyone else's!

"Demons! They are demons! They must be!"

"The Ling Family are outsiders! They are demons!"

"They are actually from a foreign race!"

The Seven Fiends martial practitioners all cried out at once. They looked fearfully and anxiously at the Ling Family clansmen and retreated together.

Humans would instinctively feel fear towards the unknown, and right now, in their eyes, the Ling Family clansmen who bled purple blood from their bodies were without a doubt unknown monsters.

"Kill these outsiders! Kill them!"

"Kill! Kill them all! They must be an evil race from the Nether Realm! They are monsters hiding among us!"

"This must be the truth!"

“Kill!”

“Kill!”

Every Seven Fiends martial practitioner suddenly became courageous after their initial hesitation.

Without waiting for Gu Tong, Jia Songlin, or Shen Meilan’s orders, these people all rushed towards the Ling Family. As if to hide their fear from before, they all wore mad looks on their faces.

“Boom!”

It was at this moment that an earthshaking rumble exploded between them.

The center spot between the Ling Family clansmen and Seven Fiends Valley martial practitioners was the collision point of those madly rushing practitioners. Wind blew and stone rained. Trees instantly turned into dust, bodies were torn apart, and heads rolled everywhere like balls.

This was the might of the Terminator Profound Bomb’s explosion.

The countless Seven Fiends Valley martial practitioners who were clamoring to exterminate the Ling Family had lost more than half of their number just as they rushed into the open.

The rest of the men who were ready to follow behind those people looked at the huge pit between the Ling family clansmen and them. They looked at the corpses that had been blown up into a piled up gory mess inside the pit by the Terminator Profound Bomb and suddenly felt as if their feet had something weighing a million pounds attached to them. They could no longer take even a single step forward.

Jia Songlin, Shen Meilan, and Gu Tong all wore ashen faces as they shuddered.

The Ling Family clansmen looked at the great pit at the center with looks of fear, still unable recover from their shock.

They had never seen the Terminator Profound Bomb themselves. Furthermore, they neither knew who the Terminator Profound Bomb belonged to nor what the appearance of the Terminator Profound Bomb meant.

Yet Ling Yushi and Ling Xuanxuan knew. Dark Asura Hall's Tu Mo, Tu Ze, and Zhuo Qian also knew, so they were all livid with joy as they searched in every direction for the person who was rumored to have perished in the Nether Realm...

"Fwoosh fwoosh fwoosh!"

The sound of the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly flapping its wings resounded from above their heads. A black shadow that was like a dark cloud beneath the sunlight landed on the ground beside

them.

They subconsciously looked towards the sky.

Rainbow light wrapped around the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly as Qin Lie let out an angry howl before jumping down as lightning and thunder immediately started to surround his body.

He landed like a bolt of lightning between the Ling Family clansmen.

“Qin Lie!”

“Qin Lie!”

“Qin Lie!”

The Ling Family clansmen cried out joyfully, the people from Dark Asura Hall cried out strangely, and the people from Seven Fiends Valley cried out fearfully.

“Didn’t I tell Seven Fiends Valley not to act recklessly?” It was only now that Song Tingyu’s yell rang out from the sky. Like a goddess formed from multiple rainbows themselves, she too gradually descended from the sky.

She landed right between the Ling Family and Seven Fiend Valley’s martial practitioners.

“Miss Song.”

“Miss Song.”

“Miss Song.”

Jia Songlin, Shen Meilan, and Gu Tong’s expressions changed as they hurriedly came forward and saluted.

“No need for pleasantries.” Song Tingyu waved her hand before looking at the giant pit at the center and the bodies inside it. She criticized the trio, “You asked for this. Do you know what kind of disaster Seven Fiends Valley would face if the Ling Family clansmen were really slaughtered by all of you?”

“Miss Song, the Ling Family has killed too many of our people!” Gu Tong gritted his teeth and said.

“Would such a thing have happened if you hadn’t cornered them so much?” Song Tingyu scoffed.

“Miss Song, the Ling Family isn’t from our race. The blood in their bodies is purple!” Shen Meilan screamed.

The moment she said this, even Song Tingyu went silent. She turned around to look at Ling Yushi, Ling Xuanxuan, and Ling Feng—at their purple hair, purple eyes, and the purple blood on

their bodies.

Song Tingyu's eyes shone with a strange light with deeply locked eyebrows as she wracked her brain, attempting to think of a way out of this.

If they did not have purple blood or the title "foreign race," Song Tingyu would have had the confidence to deal with this matter. Now, even the higher-ups of Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple would pay attention to the Ling Family and treat this matter seriously.

...Foreign race. Anything would become complicated the moment this accusation was made.

The situation was worsening in a direction which even Song Tingyu could not control. She was beginning to feel that the situation was getting tricky.

"Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple has been battling the evil races of Nether Realm all this time. We have lost many people in those battles. Everything we do is to stop the evil races from entering this land and preventing them from invading us." Jia Songlin looked at her, "But who knew that an evil race... had actually hidden themselves right beside us. Miss Song, I think you should consult your father about this matter."

Song Tingyu turned around and glanced at Qin Lie.

Qin Lie said nothing. He simply took out all the Terminator Profound Bombs from his spatial ring to make his intentions clear.

Song Tingyu's headache worsened.

Chapter 293: Song Tingyu's Response

Those not of my race will not be of the same mind. This was how many people thought about other races.

Even though Xue Li had said that other races were recognized and could live in harmony with humans on the continent that he was from, the martial practitioners of the Scarlet Tide Continent clearly had not reached that level.

Since Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple had been fighting the evil races of the Nether Realm for so many years, the Black Iron and Limestone forces under them also thought of the other races as evil beasts and tried to do all they could to stop them from coming in.

This could be seen from how nervous and anxious Eight Extreme Temple and Profound Heaven Alliance became after the evil nether passageway had been opened.

If the Ling Family was stuck with the title of foreign race, then it would be difficult for even Song Tingyu to defend them. If she forcibly suppressed this matter and allowed Gu Tong, Sheng Meilan, and Jia Songling to spread the news that the Ling Family were from another race...

Then all of Profound Heaven Alliance could not predict what consequences would occur, not just Song Tingyu.

Jia Songlin calmed down because of this and seemed to be certain

that the Ling Family was going to die.

“Miss Song, the evil nether passageway has already been opened. We have been facing off against the Nether Realm recently. At this time, any person of another race can be a threat to us. The Ling Family... has purple blood in their bodies. They are definitely not human. I think that your father has more of a right to decide how to take care of them.“ Gu Tong expressed his attitude.

“Please, Miss Song, treat this with care!” Sheng Meilan agreed.

Even Tu Mo and the group from Dark Asura Hall had serious expressions and furrowed brows.

When the subordinates of Tu Shixiong learned that purple blood flowed inside the bodies of the Ling Family clansmen, their intentions of saving the Ling Family started to waver.

Many of them had followed Tu Shixiong to the Nether Battlefield and fought against the evil races of the Nether Realm.

Many of their brothers had died tragically at the hands of Horned Demon warriors. They did not have any good feelings about evil races. This caused them to be biased against the Ling Family.

Song Tingyu looked at the martial practitioners of Seven Fiends Valley and then at the people of Dark Asura Hall before looking at Qin Lie. She saw Qin Lie silently take out a Terminator Profound Bomb.

She knew that Qin Lie had made a decision and sighed inside. Then, she nodded and said, “I will ask my father.”

She silently took out the messaging jade pendant and closed her eyes. A strong mental fluctuation spread from her body...

“Qin Lie.” Ling Yushi reached out and grabbed Qin Lie. Joy added a sparkle to her purple eyes.

Qin Lie gripped her little hand in return. From her soft and shiny skin, he felt a flush of astounding power.

“Purple hair, purple eyes, and purple blood...” Qin Lie looked deeply at her. His thoughts were chaotic and he was also shocked.

He had never expected that such a transformation would happen to the people of the Ling Family in such a desperate situation. Having cultivated the Blood Spirit Art, he could feel an uncommon fluctuation from Ling Yushi, Ling Xuanxuan, and Ling Feng’s purple blood.

Those vibrations were clearly caused by power moving restlessly... this meant that, while the three had not cultivated the Blood Spirit Art, their blood still contained a great and incomprehensible power!

“You might not believe it, but I recently had the feeling that you were still alive...” Ling Yushi’s eyes were extremely soft and she

managed to laugh at this time. “My feeling came true. You are really alive, this is very good.”

In the midst of fleeing for her life, her hair and eyes had changed. A certain power that was hiding in her body slowly woke up. In such a hopeless circumstance, a certain power of hers quickly increased!

She seemed to be able to see into the minds of other people and see how they channelled the spirit energy in their bodies. It was as though she now had the ability to read minds and a wondrous perception...

Just as everyone thought Qin Lie had died long ago, she felt that Qin Lie was living well. She had felt that Qin Lie was coming near... as expected, Qin Lie came.

“Qin Lie!”

Ling Feng, who held the Firecloud Hammer, came next to Qin Lie. Looking deeply at him, Ling Feng suddenly shouted.

“Big Brother Ling Feng.” Qin Lie grinned and exchanged a look with the other before nodding deeply.

Nothing needed to be spoken.

“Qin Lie, my sister secretly cried a few times when she heard that you fell into the Nether Realm,” Ling Xuanxuan said.

Qin Lie was speechless and couldn't help but turn to look at Ling Yushi. Ling Yushi had a light smile and was not as bashful as in the past. She said openly, "At the time, I assumed you were dead."

"Qin Lie! Aren't you guys too calm?" Zhuo Qian glared from the other side and called towards Qin Lie. She indicated for him to pay attention to Song Tingyu and be on his guard against the people of Seven Fiends Valley.

Tu Ze's eyebrows were also motioning for Qin Lie to be more careful at this time.

Other than Ling Yushi, Ling Xuanxuan, and Ling Feng, the hearts of the other members of the Ling Family were up in the air. They all had panicked expressions and were worried that the Ling Family would experience a calamity at any moment.

Looking at Zhuo Qian and Tu Ze, and then at the expressions of the other members of the Ling Family, Qin Lie then reacted and had a strange look in his eyes.

He suddenly realized it. Ling Yushi, Ling Xuanxuan, and Ling Feng had changed.

In the past, Ling Yushi, Ling Xuanxuan, and Ling Feng would be careful in their actions because the Ling Family was small and weak. Whenever they encountered a great danger, they would be anxious and nervous,not knowing what to do.

Yet, right now, they were facing the threat of Seven Fiends Valley and possibly an attack from Profound Heaven Alliance and the trio who had purple blood were calm and composed. They did not show any terror and uncertainty at the thought of being killed.

This amazed Qin Lie.

“Did the change in hair, eyes, and blood also cause their personalities to change?” he unconsciously thought.

What he did not expect was that he was also similarly composed. It seemed that, in his subconscious, he did not think highly of the Alliance Chief of Profound Heaven Alliance, Song Yu.

Song Tingyu suddenly put away the messaging jade pendant.

Everyone’s attention gathered on her. They wanted to know what attitude that Alliance Chief Song Yu held towards this matter.

A strange expression appeared on Song Tingyu’s alluring face. She looked at the Ling Family members and her brow furrowed slightly.

The Ling Family members felt their hearts skip a beat and their expressions all changed.

“Three valley masters, please come over. I wish to chat with you alone.” Song Tingyu abruptly walked towards the woods off to the side.

When Gu Tong, Jia Songlin, and Shen Meilan heard her say this, their expressions became joyous. They had already guessed the result and understood that Song Yu had given a clear answer, so he had Song Tingyu talk with them alone to decide what to do with the Ling Family.

They also noticed that Song Tingyu’s brow had furrowed slightly when she looked at the Ling Family…

“I just knew that the Alliance Chief would also have the same enmity towards foreign races!” When Gu Tong walked beside Song Tingyu, he looked at the people from the Ling Family with a dark expression. Inwardly, he had already decided on the death of the Ling Family.

Jia Songlin and Shen Meilan also had cold smiles. They praised the wisdom of Song Yu as they went into the woods after Song Tingyu.

“Qin Lie…” Ling Yushi called lightly.

Qin Lie did not make a sound. His eyes only looked at Song Tingyu. He saw that, before Song Tingyu entered the woods with her back to him, she had made a strange cutting movement with her hands at her waist.

The two had worked together in the Nether Realm for more than half a year and had a deep understanding of each other's little movements and their meanings.

From Song Tingyu's cutting movement, he understood her intentions. His eyes narrowed slightly as he gripped the Terminator Profound Bombs and silently added a thread of lightning and thunder power.

"No matter what they decide, I will take you away from Seven Fiends Valley's territory. As long as Song Tingyu does not interfere... these valley masters cannot withstand the explosive power of my Terminator Profound Bombs," said Qin Lie to Ling Yushi after he turned around.

Ling Yushi nodded slightly. "I know..."

"Qin Lie!" At the front, Tu Ze pointed in a direction and changed expressions indicating for him to hurry and escape with the Ling Family.

—In the gap of time that Song Tingyu had called the three valley masters away.

Yet Qin Lie smiled at him and shook his head. He did not do so.

"Qin Lie!" Ling Chengzhi said urgently.

"Mi-Miss Song! What are you doing?!"

“What are you doing?!”

“You dare disobey your father?”

At this moment, Gu Tong, Jia Songlin, and Shen Meilan started screaming in unison.

At the same time, Qin Lie suddenly threw out four Terminator Profound Bombs.

He threw them in the direction of those three.

After the four Terminator Profound Bombs flew out, Qin Lie’s left hand flicked and three also Terminator Profound Bombs landed in the area that the Seven Fiends Valley martial practitioners were gathered at.

“Boom boom boom boom! Boom boom boom!”

An earthshaking explosion first came from where Gu Tong and the others were, then another came from where the martial practitioners of Seven Fiends Valley were.

In the uproar, Qin Lie covered himself in lightning, bellowing as rock and sand flew.

The spirit pattern pillars floated above his head with a

magnificence of the legendary Sky Lifting Pillars as the Terminator Profound Bomb's explosive wave spread out. It was extremely spectacular as the pillars released divine light.

alyschu: Sky Lifting Pillars are divine pillars from Chinese lore.

"Do not let anyone from Seven Fiends Valley escape!" Song Tingyu shouted from within the woods. "Do not let them spread news of this. If the people of Eight Extreme Temple learn of this, it will be very troublesome. Tu Mo, have your people kill the martial practitioners of Seven Fiends Valley. This is an order from my father!"

The martial practitioners of Dark Asura Hall were dumbstruck by this abrupt change. When Song Tingyu had taken Gu Tong and the others into the woods, they thought the group was discussing what to do with the Ling Family. They had not expected that it was for Song Tingyu to temporarily trap the three valley masters in the woods so Qin Lie could kill them with the Terminator Profound Bombs—this was completely beyond their expectations.

Now Song Tingyu was shouting for them to cooperate and kill the people of Seven Fiends Valley. She also said this was an order from Song Yu...

They felt that this was not quite right, that something was fishy. They were hesitating and did not know whether to trust Song Tingyu or not.

"Kill!" Tu Mo was silent for a few seconds and responded shortly after. "Miss Song represents Profound Heaven Alliance. Her orders

definitely are correct! Even if they are wrong, she will take the blame. We are only following orders. This has nothing to do with us!”

When these words came out, the martial practitioners of Dark Asura Hall were reassured and charged at the martial practitioners of Seven Fiends Valley.

Chapter 294: Going In For The Kill!

In the woods, Gu Tong, Shen Meilan, and Jia Songlin's bodies were heavily injured by the explosions of the Terminator Profound Bombs.

Gu Tong and Jia Songlin were at the point where their breathing was shallow. Only Shen Meilan had reacted in time and put out a defense-type spirit artifact. Even though the light shield created by the spirit artifact instantly shattered and she was still heavily injured, compared to Gu Tong and Jia Songlin, her injuries were not fatal.

Song Tingyu had lured the three into the woods. Once they arrived next to Song Tingyu, they felt layers of restrictive power over their bodies.

When they realized what was happening and shouted in shock, Song Tingyu had decisively left.

The four Terminator Profound Bombs did not betray Song Tingyu's expectations and accurately fell from the sky to explode between the trio.

"Miss Song, you... you dare to protect another race! Even if it is Profound Heaven Alliance, your Song Family does not have complete control!" Half of Shen Meilan's body flowed with blood as she channelled her spirit art. A warm, icy blue light slowly healed her wounds. Within the deep pit formed by the Terminator Profound Bombs, she pointed at Song Tingyu and shouted angrily.

Gu Tong and Jia Songlin's bodies had been split open and their bodies were completely black. As though they had been constantly struck by lightning, their bodies continuously squirmed and blood spilled out of their mouths.

The two did not even have the energy to speak.

Song Tingyu had retreated early and now stood elegantly in her bright dress at the edge of the pit where Shen Meilan was.

A natural smile was on her alluring face. She looked down at Shen Meilan who had a harsh expression on her face and said in a soft voice, "Valley Master Shen, of course my Song Family cannot control Profound Heaven Alliance. Even my father would not be able to make the decision by himself on a matter concerning a foreign race. Just as you have said, he would have to ask the opinion of the Xie and Nie Family. So I didn't even speak of this matter to my father. Attacking you is just my personal decision."

"Y-you dare… you dare to do this?!" Shen Meilan seemed to shout with all her strength.

"Why do I not dare?" The smile on Song Tingyu's face did not fade as she said idly, "You are not as important as you think. Seven Fiends Valley is just a Black Iron force under the command of Profound Heaven Alliance. We have a dozen or more subordinate forces like you. You three are just valley masters of Seven Fiends Valley. Do you really think you are someone important?"

Gu Tong and Jia Songlin who were convulsing heard Song Tingyu's words and trembled even more violently.

It was as though they had received great stimulation.

Song Tingyu had a small smile as she walked next to Shen Meilan. She moved in front of Shen Meilan and said in a light voice, "In my eyes, the value of you three added together is not as high as Qin Lie's. As for the foreign races... I have a different philosophy than my father. I will slowly change their thinking about foreign races. I will have Profound Heaven Alliance slowly grow stronger through the foreign races. You... because you hate the Ling Family so much, you will disturb my plans. You might tell Eight Extreme Temple about the state of the Ling Family, so I have to eliminate you."

Shen Meilan's expression shook.

At this time, Song Tingyu's long hand pressed against her face.

In Shen Meilan's eyes, that exquisitely proportioned little hand slowly grew larger and covered her vision.

"Bam!"

A ball of bright rainbow light exploded like fireworks and flashed in Shen Meilan's eyes.

Shen Meilan's face was struck by the fireworks. Her face bloomed

into a bloody flower.

As the blood flower blossomed, Shen Meilan's life slowly ebbed away.

Song Tingyu laughed lightly. Turning, she walked towards Gu Tong and Jia Songlin.

After being seriously injured, Gu Tong and Jia Songlin saw Song Tingyu easily kill Shen Meilan despite the fact that they could hardly move. They were filled with terror. They realized that the only daughter of Profound Heaven Alliance's leader was not just the most beautiful woman of the Scarlet Tide Continent, she also had the heart of a snake.

"Mi-Miss Song..." Gu Tong's voice was hoarse and weak. "I can sw-swear to forget everything that happened today, to forget the purple blood flowing in the Ling Family, and I swear, I swear my allegiance to the Song Family and will never leak what happened today. Please... please, Miss Song, have mercy and let me live."

"Miss Song, please have mercy!" Jia Songlin also begged.

After Shen Meilan was killed, the two finally understood. While they were the seven masterminds of Seven Fiends Valley, they were worth nothing in the eyes of Profound Heaven Alliance.

They also realized that if Song Yu ever found out that Song Tingyu had killed the three of them behind his back, he would only

lecture her with a few words and say that she was fooling around.

So they woke up. They understood no negotiation was possible between them and Song Tingyu and how had no qualifications to threaten Song Tingyu.

They felt deep regret.

Yet Song Tingyu's education from childhood meant that if she decided to do something, she would be crisp and clean. She would not accept any restraints or obstacles.

Even if she were to do something wrong, she still had to do it cleanly and not leave any flaws.

In her eyes, it would be a flaw to leave Gu Tong and Jia Songlin alive.

So she did not hesitate to go in for the kill.

……

On the other side.

Qin Lie used his mind to manipulate the six spirit pattern pillars to cast the "Universal Celestial Sealing Formation." He activated the spirit diagrams on the surfaces of the spirit pattern pillars and released their power.

Under the clear sky and burning sun, the six pillars floated into the sky like six mountain peaks. Curtains of light came from above the pillars and formed strong barriers that landed like enormous, closed doors, sealing them from every direction.

Starlight shone, fierce beasts howled, long rivers flowed through, and heaven and earth became locked.

”Seal!”

Qin Lie pointed at the sky above the Seven Fiends Valley martial practitioners.

The pillars turned into six streaks of light that suddenly split up and landed at six points to seal that area.

“Bang!”

Qiu Xudong, who had been attempting to escape, hit the light curtain head on. Sparks of light flew, and a burst of power flooded, pushing him back.

He was unable to break through the barrier.

“Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang!”

Even more Seven Fiends Valley martial practitioners charged at

the surroundings from within the giant pits. They were all dizzy, stopped by the barrier.

More than half of the martial practitioners that came from Gold, Fire, and Dark Fiend Valley had been killed by the Terminator Profound Bomb. The remainder, after hearing the shocked screams of Shen Meilan and the others, knew that the situation was bad, so they wanted to escape.

Yet, in the area of the “Universal Celestial Sealing Formation,” their attempts were futile.

“Charge in and kill!” Tu Mo ordered.

The martial practitioners of Dark Asura Hall charged inside the Universal Celestial Sealing Formation with Qin Lie’s guidance. With Ling Yushi, Ling Xuanxuan, and Ling Feng, they charged at the remainder of the Seven Fiends Valley martial practitioners.

Qin Lie stood to the side. Light flashed through his eyes as he responded to the spirit pattern pillars mentally.

This was the first time he had truly used the spirit pattern pillars to face an enemy.

At this moment, his mental thoughts were wrapped around the spirit pattern pillars like chains. Using the method that Xue Li had taught him, he manipulated them and activated the spirit diagrams inside each pillar.

Then, the pillars released a vast and powerful energy fluctuation one after the other. As the curtain of starlight landed, as the energy rivers criss-crossed to seal the sky, as the fierce beasts flapped their wings and howled... he found that each spirit pattern pillar seemed to have merged with his body.

The spirit pattern pillars became spirit artifacts that seemed to be connected to his life. They were able to listen to his mind, understand his thoughts, and change according to his wishes perfectly.

There had never been an artifact that gave him such a wondrous feeling, nor had there ever been an artifact that could cooperate with his actions like this.

“Spirit artifacts that can merge with the owner are the best spirit artifacts. Only then can they truly release all of their power.” Qin Lie understood. His understanding of forging increased.

“Miss Song!”

“Miss Song!”

“Miss Song!”

Tu Mo, Tu Ze, and Zhuo Qian, as well as the other martial practitioners of Dark Asura Hall, saw Song Tingyu come out of the woods. Looking at her beautiful composure as she squeezed into

the formation, they called out.

“I have come to lend a helping hand.” There was a reassuring smile at the corner of Song Tingyu’s mouth. With a raise of her hand, rainbow ribbons flew out of her sleeve.

The rainbow ribbons were like serpents and dragons that slithered through the air. They gave off astounding energy fluctuations as they chased after the martial practitioners of Seven Fiends Valley.

Any Seven Fiends Valley martial practitioner that was targeted by a rainbow ribbon would be tightly tied up by the ribbon shortly after. Their waists would be restrained until they broke and they died from suffocation.

Even Qiu Xudong, who had reached the late stages of the Manifestation Realm, was not an exception. He died from being wrapped up by a ribbon.

This shocking change of events quickly calmed down. All of the people from Seven Fiends Valley, including the three valley masters, were unable to escape.

“You are Tu Mo? Come over.” As Qin Lie closed his eyes and sat down to put away the six spirit pattern pillars, Song Tingyu beckoned him.

Tu Mo came over cautiously. When he arrived in front of Song

Tingyu, he respectfully bowed. “Is there anything else that Miss Song needs?”

“I do not want you to leak today’s events. The strangeness of the Ling Family… I would not like it if other people knew.” She looked in the direction Dark Asura Hall and said, “These people… if any of them do not have a trustworthy mouth, I hope you can take care of them beforehand.”

Tu Mo’s heart went cold and he hurriedly patted his chest as he promised, “Miss Song, do not worry, the subordinates of my father are definitely reliable! Those with loose mouths would not have been able to come with me to Seven Fiends Valley to help the Ling Family. These people are definitely reliable and would not dare to speak nonsense!”

“Are you sure?” Song Tingyu asked seriously.

“I am certain,” Tu Mo seriously responded.

“Oh.” Song Tingyu nodded lightly. “You should know who worked from behind the scenes so that your father could become the hall master of Dark Asura Hall.”

“It is Lord Song Siyuan!” Tu Mo said respectfully. He paused and then continued, “The Tu Family only exists today because of the Song Family’s support. Both me and my father know this well!”

“Haha, since you understand, then I will truly do away with my

worries.” Song Tingyu nodded in satisfaction.

Chapter 295: The Clash Between Two Women

In response to Qin Lie's summon, a spirit pattern pillar turned into a ray of light and fell into the spatial ring on his finger.

A beautiful image of glittering starlight that was like a vast overflowing galaxy was suddenly reflected in his Soul Lake.

Lustrous and brilliant stars filled the vast starry sky like countless shattered diamonds. There was a kind of magnificence behind it that hid infinite secrets and moved people's hearts.

Yet another spirit pattern pillar had transformed into light and vanished inside his spatial ring.

The heavenly rivers twisted like streams that converged into the sea, forming a beautiful picture. It slowly spread within his Soul Lake.

One spirit pattern pillar after another vanished into his spatial ring. Many different scenes and images were reflected inside Qin Lie's Soul Lake.

Qin Lie's mind, will, and soul seemed to sink into the Soul Lake to sense the many different worlds and to understand the secrets contained within the images. It was as if he was experiencing many new, peculiar, and magnificent scenes.

The Manifestation Realm required a practitioner to see all manifestations of life. Only by experiencing different scenes could a practitioner recognize their true selves and have their realms grow.

At this moment, Qin Lie was submerged within the beautiful sceneries inside his Soul Lake, as if he were acting within many, completely new segments of life.

Many images had appeared inside his mind while his eyes were closed. His soul seemed to be split into six parts, experiencing all sorts of things in six different worlds.

“Qin Lie…”

Ling Yushi walked forward and spoke softly, trying to wake him from the trance.

“Don’t disturb him.” Song Tingyu walked over from the position where the Dark Asura Hall martial practitioners were gathered. While the Ling Family was about to speak up and salute her, she lifted her hand, motioning for them to “keep quiet,” and explained to Ling Yushi, “Qin Lie should be undergoing comprehension. This isn’t the right time to disturb him. If you wake him, then he’ll miss an opportunity.”

Hearing her words, Ling Yushi quickly stopped herself. After carefully moving away from Qin Lie, she bowed at Song Tingyu slightly and spoke with neither haughtiness nor humility, “Thank you, Miss Song.”

Song Tingyu's eyes were bright as she looked at Ling Yushi deeply. It was as if she wanted to see right through Ling Yushi's heart.

Under her somewhat overbearing gaze, Ling Yushi remained calm and collected. There was a surprising calm hidden deep inside her purple eyes.

She actually did not feel at all inferior when matching eyes with Song Tingyu. She even carried a faint smile at the corner of her mouth. Her smile was so quiet and natural that even Song Tingyu was a little surprised.

There were very few women who could remained so cool and collected under her gaze, much less Ling Yushi with her humble birth and Natal Opening Realm.

This made Song Tingyu think of Ling Yushi more highly.

"You don't have to thank me. The reason I did this was for Qin Lie, not because I feel any good will towards the Ling Family," Song Tingyu said straightforwardly.

Ling Yushi nodded slightly and smiled. "I know."

"Forgive me, but... exactly where did the Ling Family come from?" Song Tingyu grew more and more surprised. She discovered that Ling Yushi was slightly different from the

information she knew.

She had specifically investigated Qin Lie before, so naturally she had also investigated this Ling Yushi who had deep relations with Qin Lie. Through the information she acquired, she knew that Ling Yushi's cultivation was low and her birth was common and humble. She was as gentle as water and her character was a little weak. She was prone to have a pessimistic attitude during a predicament, and she lacked initiative and resolve when she worked...

This information had allowed her to gain an understanding of Ling Yushi long ago. It allowed her to feel as if she had gotten a feel for Ling Yushi's character.

Now that she faced Ling Yushi in person, Song Tingyu suddenly realized that Ling Yushi was incredibly calm in front of her. Every word and action, every frown and smile seemed to be filled with confidence.

The Ling Yushi before her was obviously very different from the Ling Yushi in the information. This caused Song Tingyu to feel some doubt.

"I'm sorry, I do not wish to talk about the Ling Family's matters," Ling Yushi replied.

"Oh, I understand." Song Tingyu looked at her a few more times and discovered that she couldn't spot anything strange in her eyes. Seeing that Ling Yushi wasn't willing to say any more and knowing

that she wouldn't be able to ask anything from her, Song Tingyu kept quiet and no longer spoke.

……

"What's the situation over there?" A short distance away, Tu Ze looked at the crowd of Ling Family clansmen and the seated, motionless Qin Lie, asking with an odd expression.

Tu Mo had just sternly instructed everyone around them not to leak anything that had happened today. At this moment, while listening to Tu Ze's question, he looked at Song Tingyu and Ling Yushi before looking at Qin Lie. Then he exclaimed with surprise in a small voice, "It can't be that these two women were… butting heads against each other for Qin Lie?"

The moment he said this, Tu Ze, Zhuo Qian, and the Dark Asura Hall martial practitioners all let out strange light in their eyes.

"This brat! He sure has some skill, alright!" Zhuo Qian praised from the bottom of her heart.

"Song Tingyu is the Song Family's great miss and Song Yu's only daughter. To think that this fellow Qin Lie could get her to be jealous for him. Even if he dies, it'll be worth it!"

"Second Young Master, your friend is really impressive. Miss Song is definitely the most or second most beautiful girl on our Scarlet Tide Continent. Back at the Nether Battlefield, I had the

fortune of meeting her once, and during the next few days my head was completely muddled, filled with only her figure…” Seeing that Song Tingyu’s attention was not on them, a Dark Asura Hall commander also lowered his voice and chuckled. “Even now, the goddess of my dreams… still wears her looks!”

“Miss Song’s beauty is without equal on the entire Scarlet Tide Continent, there is no doubt about this. Every man who has met her once before would not be able to forget her.” Another Dark Asura Hall martial practitioner expressed his opinion while salivating.

“It is probably every man’s dream to make such a woman be jealous for him, isn’t it?”

“If she became jealous for me, I would have no regrets even if I were to die immediately!”

“Mn, me too.”

The group of martial practitioners lowered their voices and chatted while they secretly sized up Song Tingyu and Ling Yushi from afar.

Song Tingyu suddenly glanced at them.

Everyone, including Tu Mo, hurriedly bowed their heads and looked straight at their own feet—none of them actually dared to meet her eyes.

“Can you guess what they’re talking about?” Song Tingyu suddenly smiled beautifully and said to Ling Yushi beside her.

“They are saying that we are jealous and fighting for Qin Lie.” Ling Yushi pursed her lips and also smiled lightly. “They even said that your beauty has no equal on the Scarlet Tide Continent, that you are every man’s goddess in their dreams. They also said that if you’re willing to become jealous for them, even if they were to die immediately, they would have no regrets…”

Song Tingyu’s body shuddered slightly as she looked at Ling Yushi with incredible surprise. She asked, “How can you possibly hear what they’re talking about?”

While purple light sparkled intimidatingly in Ling Yushi’s eyes, she looked at Song Tingyu and said softly, “Not only can I hear what they’re speaking, I… can listen to what you’re thinking as well. You’re thinking that this woman is only in the Natal Opening Realm. She has not even formed her own Soul Lake yet, so how can her hearing be this acute? You are thinking that this woman who is engaged to Qin Lie definitely came from the poor and lowly Ling Town. Why is she different from the information you received?”

While Song Tingyu’s expression paled in fright, Ling Yushi frowned and asked again, “Miss Song, you’ve investigated me before? For what reason? Oh, I’ve seen through you again. It is because of Qin Lie. You investigated me while you were investigating Qin Lie. I see now.”

The moment she said this, fear appeared behind Song Tingyu's eyes. She subconsciously retreated and put some distance between her and Ling Yushi. Moreover, she immediately executed a secret art to seal her mind consciousness before saying, "To think that you are able to enter my mind!"

Ling Yushi smiled and said nothing.

"Suddenly, I feel a little bit of regret. I regret helping the Ling Family survive this crisis." Song Tingyu's expression was odd. "Your Ling Family is a little more unique than I had first imagined. If we allow you to continue developing like this, there's no telling if you will become a threat to Profound Heaven Alliance's status in the future."

"Perhaps Ling Family can be like Seven Fiends Valley and Dark Asura Hall, a vassal force under Profound Heaven Alliance who works for them." Ling Yushi said seriously, "The Ling Family cannot threaten Profound Heaven Alliance. Our existence may even add new blood to Profound Heaven Alliance. Miss Song is different from other people in that you should have the courage and vision to strive for the unexpected. Moreover, if Alliance Chief Song could order you to kill off Seven Fiends Valley's men, then he naturally has the heart to accept us as well."

"It was not my father's intent to eliminate Seven Fiends Valley's people. I did not share this with my father." Song Tingyu shook her head at Ling Yushi before suddenly saying, "With my understanding of my father, I believe that he would think of eliminating you the moment he learns that you are not human—just like all the others"

The moment she said this, Ling Yushi, who had been calm all this time, finally lost her color.

She had assumed that Song Tingyu had eliminated Seven Fiends Valley's people under Song Yu's orders. It was also why she was able to stay calm and collected.

However, Song Tingyu had told her the truth. The moment Song Yu realized the true situation, he would still do all he could to eliminate the Ling Family. She finally realized that the Ling Family was still at the risk of destruction at any moment.

"Heh, so you have less confidence than I thought. You sure scared me earlier." Song Tingyu suddenly let out a bright smile. She finally felt that she was in an absolute position of power in the clash against Ling Yushi.

It was at this moment that Qin Lie suddenly awakened beside them.

"What are you talking about?" He looked at the two women and asked.

"Nothing."

"Nothing."

Song Tingyu and Ling Yushi matched each other's gaze and casually moved past their earlier conversation with unspoken understanding.

"Yushi, come with me to the poisonous bog along with the Ling Family clansmen. We will gather at Armament Sect." Qin Lie pondered for a moment before suddenly saying.

"Yes." Ling Yushi nodded slightly.

"Big Brother Tu, Sister Qian, thank you for being willing to extend a helping hand to Ling Family after I 'died,'" Qin Lie yelled loudly at the Dark Asura Hall men.

"Brat, it's bad luck to call yourself dead. You're not allowed to say it in the future!" Zhuo Qian scolded him.

Qin Lie felt relaxed all over despite her scolding. "The people of the Ling Family will soon follow me to the poisonous bog. If you and your people need to forge any spirit artifacts in the future, you may come straight to the poisonous bog."

"Alright! I want to see that bastard Kang Zhi as well!" Zhuo Qian laughed.

"Big Brother Tu, help me thank your father as well. Say that I will remember that he has lent a helping hand during a critical time." Qin Lie said again.

“Alright, alright. The people from Seven Fiends Valley will come soon, quickly be on your way,” Tu Ze yelled.

“Until next time!!”

“Until next time!!”

Chapter 296: Odd Occurrence

In the woods of Seven Fiends Valley.

Shi Jingyun was leading a group of martial practitioners that rushed from Seven Fiends Valley to where Gu Tong and the others had been killed.

They had originally assumed that, with Gu Tong, Shen Meilan, and Jia Songlin personally involved, they would be able to easily capture the Lin Family and then could take them back to the valley for questioning and execution.

Yet, after waiting for a long time, they did not see any of the three return. They also could not get in contact with the trio which ended up worrying the people in the valley.

Consequently, Shi Jingyun was sent out with orders to find out what happened.

Four hours after Qin Lie and the others left, Shi Jingyun finally arrived at the place where the fighting had occurred. Looking at the enormous pits and the corpses that were burnt black, Shi Jingyun's expression changed drastically. "Terminator Profound Bomb! This is the work of the Terminator Profound Bomb!"

He was alarmed and couldn't help but scream due to his deep fear of the Terminator Profound Bomb.

The power of the Terminator Profound Bomb when it exploded at Armament Sect was like a recurring nightmare in his mind.

When he saw the enormous holes, he immediately understood that this was Qin Lie's handiwork!

"Qin Lie has not died. He is still alive. He's the one that rescued the Ling Family!" Shi Jingyun searched around the enormous pits and quickly found the corpses of Gu Tong, Shen Meilan, and Jia Songlin.

When he saw their corpses, Shi Jingyun's limbs felt cold and his expression was as ugly as it could get.

"Elder Shi, should we... keep pursuing?" a subordinate asked from the side.

"Pursue what!" Shi Jingyun glared and then said angrily, "Three valley masters have been killed. Do you think that we are stronger than the three of them combined?"

People murmured and did not dare to answer.

"Return to the valley! Notify Profound Heaven Alliance of what happened here. Just say that Armament Sect's Qin Lie has killed many people of Seven Fiends Valley!" Shi Jingyun's expression was dark. He turned to look at his amputated finger and felt that it was in pain again.

……

“You are coming with me to the poisonous bog?” Qin Lie suddenly stopped. He turned his head to look at Song Tingyu with a puzzled expression.

This was a winding mountain path towards the poisonous bog. Along the path there were dense woods and curving little streams. Qin Lie was rushing with the Ling Family.

Song Tingyu did not ride the Flowing Cloud Rainbow Butterfly and calmly followed behind him.

This puzzled Qin Lie. He had thought that Song Tingyu would be in a hurry to return to Profound Heaven Alliance to report her experience in the Nether Realm rather than waste time on him.

“After we deliver the people of the Ling Family to the poisonous bog, you need to go with me to Profound Heaven City to see my father.” Song Tingyu had changed into a long, white dress at some point in time. This caused her to look clean and elegant and have less of a blinding beauty.

There was a faint smile at the corner of her lips. She glanced at Ling Yushi at the front of the procession and purposefully went closer to Qin Lie. She said in a soft voice, “The problem of the Ling Family has to be resolved. All of the trouble will not just end when they reach the poisonous bog.”

“Qin Lie, she is right. The Ling Family has a major problem,” Ling Yushi inserted from the front of the group. She said a few words to Ling Feng, and then, Ling Feng led the clansmen forward.

She slowed her pace and waited for Qin Lie and Song Tingyu to catch up before looking deeply at Song Tingyu. “Miss Song, what do you think?”

“The bias my father has against foreign races is not one that I can resolve. I need Qin Lie to summon Senior Xue Li and have Senior Xue Li explain to my father.” Song Tingyu did not dare to underestimate Ling Yushi now. Since the matter concerned the Ling Family, she did not avoid Ling Yushi and explained in detail. “Senior Xue Li comes from another continent. Senior Xue Li’s true cultivation realm and strength... is enough for my father to pay attention. His words will be more effective than mine, Qin Lie’s, or yours, Ling Yushi.”

Qin Lie’s eyes brightened slightly. “Miss Song, you have been inspired by Xue Li. You think that Profound Heaven Alliance can be like the other major continents and interact normally with foreign races?”

“Yes, Senior Xue Li’s speech greatly motivated me.” Song Tingyu had an expression of deep thought. “According to Senior Xue Li, there are many little realms around our Spirit Realm which have beings that are different from us. There are races of high intelligence among them, and in their world, they have powers that we do not have in this main world. They also have special materials for cultivation that do not exist here. I feel that, if the two sides can create a relationship, it will be beneficial to both

sides.”

“You have a more open mind than your father,” Qin Lie praised. Then he nodded and said, “I understand what you mean. After I take the Ling Family to Armament Sect, I will go with you to Profound Heaven City.”

“Miss Ling, now that you know what I think… may I ask where your Ling Family comes from? In the future, you… what benefit can you bring to Profound Heaven Alliance?” Song Tingyu asked again.

Qin Lie also looked at Ling Yushi and asked the question he had, “What happened?”

“Actually, we don’t know. I, Xuanxuan, and Ling Feng only changed recently, and it happened very suddenly. Even now, we do not understand.” Ling Yushi pinched a lock of purple hair resting on her left shoulder and looked at the charming color. She said, “The one that knows the most about why the Ling Family experienced such a change… is your grandfather. He once said to Ling Feng…”

Ling Yushi explained what Ling Feng had said.

“My grandfather again.” After Qin Lie heard this, his expression was bitter. He shook his head and said with a sigh, “I have many questions. I also want to find him, but it is a pity that I have no idea where he is.”

“So this means that you do not know who you are?” Song Tingyu had a strange look on her face.

“Regardless of whether you believe it or not, that is the truth. At the very least, we do not know our history,” Ling Yushi said helplessly.

“It seems that you need a period of time to discover yourselves.” Song Tingyu’s brow furrowed slightly. Just as she was going to speak, she felt a ripple from her jade pendant.

She took out her pendant, and in front of Qin Lie and Ling Yushi, she created a mental connection.

A profound ripple spread from her body. The ripple passed through the jade pendant and instantly reached the distant Profound Heaven City.

“It is my father.” After a while, she put away the jade pendant. “He has already learned that Gu Tong, Shen Meilan, and JIa Songlin have been killed and thinks that you are the killer. He asked me about what was going on. I have not said much and told him that I will be taking you to Profound Heaven City in a few days to give him an explanation in person.”

“I will go,” Qin Lie agreed.

Four hours later.

Qin Lie and the Ling Family clansmen arrived at the shore of a curving river. Looking at the Demon Cleansing Orchids in the water and the demonic clouds that shrouded the land behind the river, his expression was one of shock.

"Right now, the evil races have taken over Armament Sect and the area within three hundred miles of that. They are slowly corroding and changing the area ahead with Demon Armor Insects and Spirit Corroding Beasts." Song Tingyu pointed forward with a finger. "In just more than half a year, martial practitioners from Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple have had numerous skirmishes with them. No one has won. We do not dare to stay too long in areas with nether demonic energy. They do not dare to step outside of areas with nether demonic energy to kill us.

"Currently, we have dug long rivers like this around the area they are corrupting and planted Demon Cleansing Orchids. These orchids can refine the nether demonic energy, so this long river is our first line of defense. The expansive rivers filled with Demon Cleansing Orchids surround all of their territory. In the short term, they are unable to increase the range of the nether demonic energy and continue to expand.

"Recently, the evil races have settled down. They have not gathered their strongest to charge at the defense line of Demon Cleansing Orchids, so there has not been any intense fighting between us and them. We are in a stalemate."

Song Tingyu was able to communicate with Profound Heaven Alliance through the jade pendant. Soon after she came out of Purple Mist Sea, she learned the present state of affairs.

Seeing that Qin Lie was slightly shocked at the long river, she proactively explained the present situation to clear up his confusion. Then she said, “The people of Eight Extreme Temple are transporting things that can damage and consume nether demonic energy inside the Nether Battlefield. After a while, once they have been delivered, that will become the second line of defense.”

While Qin Lie and Song Tingyu were talking, Ling Yushi and the Ling Family clansmen suddenly stopped beside the river.

They had planned on going around this river that was filled with Demon Cleansing Orchids to the poisonous bog.

On this side of the river was the spirit energy of the world. The other side of the river was covered in nether demonic energy.

At this time, many Ling Family clansmen were standing next to the river. They looked at the land that was covered in gray nether demonic energy. As they looked at the area that even sunlight was unable to penetrate, many people had strange expressions.

“Qi-Qin Lie...” Ling Feng called lightly.

Hearing this, Qin Lie came over and asked, “What is it?”

“Look at the nether demonic energy on the other shore,” Ling Feng said in a deep voice.

Qin Lie focused and realized that the nether demonic energy, which had originally been thin, was starting to gather and increase in density for some unknown reason.

In the area opposite the Ling Family clansmen, the nether demonic energy quickly turned from gray clouds to black.

Those demonic clouds roiled as though they were being pulled by a certain power and started to head towards the members of the Ling Family.

Yet due to the presence of the numerous Demon Cleansing Orchids, when the demonic energy appeared above the river, it would become thin. After a while, it would be absorbed by the Demon Cleansing Orchids and disappear completely.

The thick demonic clouds gathered into balls and continuously headed towards the Ling Family clansmen.

But no cloud was able to stay in the air above the Demon Cleansing Orchids for long. They would quickly be consumed. When they came to the middle of the river, the energy would completely disappear.

Yet those demon clouds were unusually stubborn. Even though they repeatedly dissipated and were cleansed by the Demon Cleansing Orchids, they still did not give up. They continued to gather and flood over.

There seemed to be a force of attraction coming from the bodies of the Ling Family clansmen. It seemed that the Ling Family had formed a strong magnetic field that was irresistibly attracting the demonic energy.

Chapter 297: Blood Of The Evil God

“Little Hui! Look at Little Hui!”

Ling Xuanxuan pointed at a seven or eight year old boy and cried out.

The young boy’s name was Ling Hui. He was carried on his father’s back, and right now, the short hair on Ling Hui’s head was slowly turning purple!

“Little Qi as well!” Ling Feng exclaimed in a low tone.

The pigtails on a girl who was about ten years old was also turning purple little by little!

This sudden change caused both Qin Lie and Song Tingyu to be extremely shocked. Seeing the thick demonic clouds that constantly rushed towards them and the extraordinary changes happening to the two kids, even the most dull-witted person would realize that the strange circumstances of the Ling Family were related to the nether demonic energy.

“Nether demonic energy. It was the nether demonic energy...” Ling Yushi murmured with a look of surprise. “Back at Armament Sect, I felt my blood boil when the evil nether passageway opened up. My hair had also turned purple at that time, but after returning to Seven Fiends Valley, that purple color faded again. It must be because I was too far away from the nether demonic energy...”

“That’s right. The Ling Family’s changes happened after the evil nether passageway opened,” Ling Xuanxuan also said.

“Does everyone feel their blood boiling inside their body right now?” Ling Yushi looked at them.

Ling Xuanxuan, Ling Feng, Ling Yun, and two other small children nodded towards her.

“I see. So we, the Ling Family, are of the evil races. We actually have the blood of an evil race flowing inside our veins...” Ling Yushi lowered her head and suddenly smiled bitterly.

Song Tingyu frowned deeply and suddenly turned silent. Looking at the Ling Family clansmen and the continuously gathering demonic clouds, her gaze was unbelievably complicated.

“Let’s leave this place first!” Qin Lie exclaimed in a low tone. “Let’s go! We’ll go around this area and head for the poisonous bog! Even if the Ling Family borrows the nether demonic energy to return to the evil races, you can use the route between the poisonous bog and Armament Sect!”

He heard before from Song Tingyu that there would be men from Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple patrolling the area. He was worried that the abnormality of the Ling Family would be discovered by someone else.

The border area around the poisonous bog and Armament Sect did not have any men from Profound Heaven Alliance or Eight Extreme Temple patrolling. Therefore, that place was much safer instead.

“Let’s go!” Ling Yushi promptly decided.

Every Ling Family clansman was currently in great shock. They were shocked by their own backgrounds. Currently, they had all lost their determination and looked completely lost. They followed Ling Yushi’s footsteps and marched somewhat numbly.

“Evil race. We are actually an evil race…”

This was the thought of every Ling Family clansman at the moment. The words “evil race” constantly resonated inside their hearts, causing them to feel a little anxious.

For the longest time, in the eyes of Scarlet Tide Continent’s martial practitioners, an evil race was synonymous with cruelty and malice. Every martial practitioner of the Scarlet Tide Continent viewed the evil races of the Nether Realm as a scourge and took pride in slaughtering them.

The Ling Family clansmen were no exception.

Now, they finally realized that they themselves were a part of an evil race, the enemy they hated all this time. How were they going to accept this so quickly?

Therefore, every Ling Family clansman became silent on the road. Even Ling Yushi, Ling Xuanxuan, and Ling Feng were no exception.

They needed time to digest this fact and stabilize their emotions. They needed to consider the Ling Family's future from an evil race's point of view.

After they left, clumps of demonic clouds on the other side of the river continued to maintain their forms and did not disperse. It just seemed like the demonic clouds lost their objective and were unable to charge across the river at all costs. Instead, they hovered in the sky above the other side of the river, as if looking for something...

A while later, a pair of Horned Demon warriors arrived while riding on Ghost Birds.

These two Horned Demon warriors had three horns and four horns respectively.

Both of the powerful Horned Demon warriors looked at the demonic clouds that refused to disperse with surprised expressions.

The Horned Demon clansman with three horns thought for a while before speaking in the language of the Nether Realm with a doubtful expression, "Why did the nether demonic energy gather unnaturally like this? Judging from the level of concentration, it

was obviously attracted by some kind of power."

"But no one has been in this area." The Horned Demon warrior with four horns was also surprised. "Moreover, judging from the looks of this concentration, it looks a little like it was attracted by the blood of a high rank clansman."

"High rank clansman?" The three horned warrior went blank for a moment before saying, "Brother, what do you mean?"

"I'm obviously talking about individuals with the blood of an Evil God. Only the blood of an Evil God could cause the nether demonic energy to become unnaturally lively and turbulent, causing the nether demonic energy to gather on its own." The Horned Demon warrior with four horns exclaimed in shock.

"How is this possible? Our entire race does not have a single expert with the blood of an Evil God. Could there be other powerful races of the Nether Realm operating nearby? If there were, they should have contacted us already. Why would they leave after arriving?"

"W-wait, that isn't it!" The Horned Demon warrior with four horns abruptly shuddered and exclaimed after looking closely for a moment. "Look! These... these demonic clouds are all clumped up! A single clump of demonic cloud represents the attraction force of a single person with the blood of the Evil God, and these demonic clouds are in several clumps. This means... that several people with the blood of the Evil God passed through this place!"

“Brother, you’re spouting nonsense, aren’t you? How could so many people with the blood of the Evil God have passed by?” The Horned Demon warrior with three horns shook his head with a strange look. “I heard from the uncle in our clan that even the biggest clan in the Nether Realm—even the most powerful race did not have very many people with the blood of the Evil God. This Scarlet Tide Continent is but a small place on Spirit Realm. How can experts with the blood of the Evil God of our clan possibly appear at this place? And several of them no less? That would be absurd!”

“It is absurd. Let’s go. We will return immediately and report this abnormality to Lord Ka Meng!”

“Mn.”

……

Inside the poisonous bog, Qin Lie led the Ling Family clansmen towards the deeper area of the poisonous bog.

The Ling Family clansmen were still quiet along the way, with dark expressions on their faces. They still could not accept reality.

Song Tingyu did not speak either. Her eyebrows were stuck, deeply furrowed, as if pondering how to explain this when she met with her father.

At first, she thought that the Ling Family would be of a different

foreign race. In that case, it would be slightly easier to manage.

However, now that she confirmed that the Ling Family was definitely related to the Nether Realm and was an evil race of the Nether Realm, the problem had become even more complicated.

Profound Heaven Alliance and the Nether Realm had fought each other for many years. Many experts were killed by the evil races. The hatred between the two sides had long ago become unresolvable.

If her father knew that the Ling Family clansmen had come from the Nether Realm... Considering her father's views on evil races, even Xue Li's explanation might not be able to suppress his prejudice.

Not to mention the fact that Profound Heaven Alliance was still at war against the Horned Demon race of the Nether Realm... just how was she going to persuade him?

Song Tingyu felt a terrible headache.

"Hm?!"

Qin Lie exclaimed softly, looking through the poisonous miasma. He saw numerous tall and sturdy wooden buildings at the downside of the poisonous miasma with a wondrous light in his eyes.

There were nearly hundreds of those buildings. Every building was at least three stories tall, and the taller ones reached five or six. They were scattered across the dry land ahead of them.

This scene was infinitely more gorgeous than how it looked when he left half a year ago. He was vaguely able to make out the spectacular sight of Armament Sect prior to evacuating from Flame Volcano.

“Armament Sect truly is Armament Sect. It has only been half a year, but it actually looks like they’ve recovered already.” Song Tingyu stared at the newly built wooden buildings and grew surprised as well. She praised, “These artificers are truly outstanding. It looks like Armament Sect has lived quite well in the poisonous bog during this half year.”

Qin Lie nodded and concentrated on looking ahead of him. He discovered Pan Jueming, who once guarded Icestone City. Then, he understood that the Armament Sect members who were spread out among many large forces had probably returned and gathered here.

These members made up a large number of people in Armament Sect. Their return had instantly replenished Armament Sect’s vitality and caused Armament Sect to once more have an actual scale.

“Qin Lie, your luck is pretty good to be able to become Armament Sect’s sect master. Now it can be said that you have a pretty sizeable force in your hands. As long as this force remains, your importance and right to speak in the Scarlet Tide Continent will be

much heavier than before." Song Tingyu thought for a while before saying seriously, "Gripping this force tightly in your hands is very beneficial to you and the people around you."

Qin Lie had a pondering look before letting out a long howl and striding towards Armament Sect.

"Who are you?" Before he got close, an outer sect disciple suddenly appeared and looked at him with an unfriendly expression. He scolded, "This is Armament Sect. Those who aren't related are not allowed to step inside!"

This outer sect disciple had probably come from an Armament Pavilion in another city. He had never seen Qin Lie and thus did not know him.

"I am Qin Lie."

"Qin Lie?" That person frowned. "Bullshit! Sect M... I mean, everyone knows that Qin Lie and that witch from Profound Heaven Alliance died in the Nether Realm. You couldn't choose a better fake name to use?"

"Hehe, interesting. It's only been half a year and you're already been forgotten." Song Tingyu chuckled, glanced at Qin Lie, and teased in interest.

"Tell Tong Jihua to come see me!" Qin Lie humphed coldly.

“Who do you think you are?” That person laughed coldly. “Do you think that Elder Tong is someone you can meet anytime you want?”

“Impudence!” Lian Rou’s voice suddenly came from inside. She rushed out, mad with joy, and shouted, “Qin Lie! You’re still alive?!”

“Senior Sister Lian Rou, of course I am still alive. However, it would seem that many people assume that I’m dead.” Qin Lie cast a glance at that person.

“So it really was Junior Brother Qin. Forgive my offense, I am outer sect disciple Liu Xiang. I was at the Armament Pavilion in Purple Mist Sea City and I have only recently returned. I really did not recognize Junior Brother Qin.” It was only after he saw Lian Rou had confirm Qin Lie’s identity that he admitted his fault and bowed.

“Let’s go.” Qin Lie could not be bothered by him. He waved his sleeves and got ready to lead his people inside.

“Junior Brother Qin, who are those people?” Liu Xiang suddenly blocked the front again and pointed at the Ling Family. He appeared a bit embarrassed, but his attitude was very firm. “The sect master said that the current situation was too chaotic, and that anyone who isn’t a disciple of the sect… is not allowed to come in. Junior Brother Qin, please don’t make things difficult for me. I am just doing my duty.”

“Senior Sister Lian Rou, what’s going on with the sect right now? Since when could I not even bring someone inside?” Qin Lie did not even look at him. He simply asked Lian Rou with a dark expression.

Lian Rou’s expression was bitter. She sighed softly and said, “Qin Lie, something... something happened in the sect recently. I will explain along the way. The people will be brought over... but for now, they’ll have to wait outside. Once the sect master and the rest have agreed, it won’t be too late to let them in...”

“Hah, half a year ago you were the sect master of Armament Sect. Half a year later, you can’t even bring someone into the sect. It has only been half a year. This change seems to be a bit bigger than I thought.” Song Tingyu might be teasing, but her face was filled with shock.

Even she did not understand exactly what happened in Armament Sect in just half a year’s time to make these people to treat Qin Lie like this.

Chapter 298: Joyful Union Sect

Observing Qin Lie's gloomy face as he walked in side by side with Lian Rou, Song Tingyu slightly furrowed her brows.

She took out her jade pendant and then quickly contacted Profound Heaven Alliance. She hoped to learn of Armament Sect's situation in this manner.

However, Profound Heaven Alliance's receiver at the other end told her that Armament Sect had been extremely peaceful and quiet during this period of time and that nothing abnormal had happened.

"Something's not right..."

Song Tingyu began to feel increasingly puzzled. After pondering for a moment, she suddenly smiled and began to walk towards the entrance.

"Who are you?" The outer sect disciple called Liu Xiang asked. He had constantly paid attention to Song Tingyu, looking at her tempting beauty as his heart began to blaze. Now that Song Tingyu had walked over, he quickly walked up and greeted her. Ecstatically, he stood in front of her and blocked her way as he said, "Our sect master has given the order to not let anyone enter unless they are a disciple of the sect."

"I am the person you were talking about earlier, Profound Heaven Alliance's witch." Song Tingyu sweetly smiled.

Liu Xiang's expression slightly faltered.

A strange light suddenly flashed through Song Tingyu's enchanting eyes as she looked deeply at Liu Xiang. She laughed softly and then said, "Let me enter, okay?"

Liu Xiang's expression immediately went blank as if he were in a daze. He had already forgotten who he was. As if he were stuck deep inside a dream he would never wake up from, he muttered deliriously, "You can enter..."

"Thanks." Song Tingyu chuckled, her laugh like a ringing bell as she casually entered the new sect entrance of Armament Sect

"Sis, wasn't Qin Lie Armament Sect's sect master? How... how come even he was prevented from bringing us in?" Ling Xuanxuan suddenly asked.

Ling Chengzhi, Ling Feng, and the rest were also shocked and confused. They just couldn't tell what had happened to Armament Sect.

"Let us just wait outside for a while." Ling Yushi's expression was indifferent. She didn't take advantage of the time Liu Xiang was dazed. Instead of entering with the Ling Family, she said, "Everyone stay together. Don't walk too far away. Also, don't move carelessly. All we have to do is wait. I believe that it won't be long before Qin Lie can arrange for us to enter with ease."

“If Qin Lie has lost his power and influence over Armament Sect, it might not necessarily be the right choice for us to stay at Armament Sect.” Light flashed through family elder Ling Kangan’s eyes as he said, “Everyone think carefully, think carefully about our future. Sigh. If we truly carry the title of evil race, then just how can our Ling Family remain on the Scarlet Tide Continent in the future?”

The Ling Family members once again fell into a deep silence.

……

“Senior Sister Lian Rou, the changes in this last half a year have been very great. Many new wooden buildings have been built, and the sect feels like a sect again,” Qin Lie said with a calm face as they walked further in.

As he walked along, he saw many new faces. They ought to be the people who had come in from the many Armament Pavilions scattered across the land.

He would see a familiar face every so often. After seeing Qin Lie and feeling a brief moment of shock, those people would then nod to him in greeting. However, emotions flickered through their eyes as they saw him, as if they were ashamed to see him.

This caused Qin Lie to understand that, in this last half year, some unforeseen event must have happened.

“Not long after you left, Sect Master Ying Xingran was revived by Profound Heaven Alliance. When he awoke, his mind was in great condition. He no longer had the aura of a person at death’s door. Under his command, we began to construct these wooden structures. Moreover, with the return of the sect’s personnel from the scattered Armament Pavilions, we also began to gradually expand. Thus, we were able to recover some of our past glory.”

Lian Rou’s steps slowed down as she suddenly said, “Upon hearing the news that you had fallen into the Nether Realm, Sect Master and the three great reverends acted as if you had died. They grieved for a while, but then never really expressed any sadness afterward. All they said was... that it was regrettable you didn’t leave behind the forging methods for the Terminator Profound Bomb...

“When the Ling Family was pressured by Seven Fiends Valley, they symbolically reprimanded Seven Fiends Valley a few times, but clearly didn’t actually want to help the Ling Family for you. Later on, when Seven Fiends Valley forced Ling Yushi and Ling Xuanxuan to be betrothed to Li Zhongzheng and Bu Xiang as concubines, Dark Asura Hall’s Tu Shixiong sent news over in hopes that Armament Sect would be willing to join them in stopping Seven Fiends Valley, but Sect Master and the rest just ignored them.”

Qin Lie’s expression became extremely cold, but he remained silent.

He suddenly began to kind of understand why Yi Yuan had

rebelled against the sect and did the things that he did.

On one hand, it was for Lian Rou. On the other hand, it was because Yi Yuan was extremely disappointed with Ying Xingran and the others.

As Yi Yuan said in the past, when Lian Rou and Tang Siqi had been captured by Blood Shadow, he himself had personally reported the news to Ying Xingran.

However, at the time, Ying Xingran had just acted as if Lian Rou's and Tang Siqi's lives weren't as valuable as Qin Lie's. After calculating the pros and cons, not only had he given up on Lian Rou and Tang Siqi, he had also ordered Yi Yuan to not tell Qin Lie about the matter.

At this moment, as he listened to Lian Rou's words, Qin Lie suddenly began to have a deeper understanding of the feelings that Yi Yuan felt at that time.

"Don't think of it as an accident, Sect Master and the three great reverends have always been like this." Lian Rou bitterly smiled. "In their eyes, it is only worth it to fully support the training of people who will be able to expand the sect and bring it hope. It was because of this philosophy that they sacrificed Tang Siqi and I so easily. It was because of this that, when you still had yet to display your talent in the past, they turned a blind eye to Liang Shaoyang's attempts to murder you..."

Qin Lie's face became grave.

“This instance was the same. They weren’t willing to make such massive movements just because of a ‘dead person.’ They believed that it wasn’t worth it and that it wouldn’t help Armament Sect grow at all.” Lian Rou was extremely direct with her words, continuing, “They don’t do anything that doesn’t benefit the sect.”

“I thank Senior Sister Lian Rou for enlightening me,” Qin Lie said deeply.

“Currently, in the eyes of the Sect Master and three great reverends, Fan Le is their true favorite,” Lian Rou snorted as she suddenly stopped, her brows furrowing.

“Fan Le? Who is he? How come I seem to have never heard of this name before? When did our Armament Sect gain someone like this?” Qin Lie coldly asked.

“I also don’t know who he is.” As Lian Rou mentioned this person, an obvious trace of disgust emerged within her eyes. “He suddenly arrived at Armament Sect a month ago accompanied by… some male and female pets, requesting to meet the sect master. From what I saw, the sect master and three great reverends were doubtful in the beginning, but when they saw the strange token that Fan Le produced, Sect Master and the three great reverends immediately became overjoyed and hurriedly invited him into a room in a respectful manner. There, they privately conversed for quite some time.”

“Male and female pets?” Qin Lie asked, dumbfounded.

Lian Rou laughed bitterly, then said, “Indeed. Male and female pets. This Fan Le... is infatuated with both males and females, and his hobbies are very strange.

Qin Lie was completely speechless.

“The token he took out was engraved and painted with the picture of an orgy between males and females. This Fan Le has recently turned the sect upside down, but the Sect Master and the three great reverends still stand by his side!” Lian Rou ground her teeth. “Siqi was ogled by Fan Le and could only go hide in the depths of the poisonous bog under the pretense of going to pick spirit herbs. As for me, if not for my secret techniques which makes my entire body poisonous, I’m afraid I would have also become entangled with those evil fellows.”

As Lian Rou spoke, she suddenly displayed some kind of secret art. Afterwards, strands of poisonous smoke began to emerge from her entire body. Her skin also became a frightening purple, as if it were highly toxic.

“Only after I displayed this did Fan Le not target me, allowing me to peacefully remain in the sect,” Lian Rou sighed.

“That Fan Le probably came from the Joyful Union Sect.” Song Tingyu’s gentle voice emanated from behind. She had seemingly been secretly listening this entire time as she now suddenly appeared beside Qin Lie and Lian Rou. “The Joyful Union Sect originates from the nearby Heavenly Fate Continent and is a

Copper force like Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple. In the past, the great person who sheltered Armament Sect was a powerful practitioner who came from Joyful Union Sect. We only decided to join hands and attack Armament Sect after we learned that this powerful practitioner had left Joyful Union Sect and his many years of silence."

"How long have you been listening for?" Qin Lie grunted.

"I've been listening since the start." Song Tingyu smiled sweetly, as if she hadn't seen the dissatisfaction on Qin Lie's face, then continued, "Upon seeing the token Fan Le took out and learning that he was a person from the Joyful Union Sect, Ying Xingran and Armament Sect's three great reverends would naturally regard him as a savior. It makes sense that they would definitely take care of him."

"You are saying that he can solve Armament Sect's crisis?" Qin Lie's brows furrowed.

"Let me put it this way. In the past, the only reason Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple didn't move against Armament Sect was due to misgivings about Joyful Union Sect. Joyful Union Sect is a Copper force like my Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple, but its strength is indeed a level higher than both of us. Only if my Profound Heaven Alliance were to work with Eight Extreme Temple would we possibly be able to compete with Joyful Union Sect."

Song Tingyu didn't bother hiding anything from Qin Lie and said frankly, "This Fan Le arrived holding a keepsake of Joyful Union

Sect. Thus, as of right now, Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple no longer dare to move against Armament Sect. For Armament Sect, the symbol of Joyful Union Sect's keepsake is their life-saving talisman. It takes their relationship with Joyful Union Sect to the next level and emboldens Armament Sect. Atop the Scarlet Tide Continent, Armament Sect no longer has to cower before my Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple."

"So they have climbed to a higher branch." Qin Lie's eyes became slightly cold.

"Where's Qin Lie?"

"Is Qin Lie around here?"

At this time, the voices of Ying Xingran, Luo Zhichang, and others echoed over from in front of the newly constructed Procedural Hall. They seemed to have just received the news as they walked out with joyful expressions on their faces.

Qin Lie stood in a corner and watched from a distance. Observing the happy expressions on their faces, he suddenly began to feel some annoyance in his heart.

"Qin Lie? Is he the fellow that pulled out the spirit pattern pillars and opened the evil nether passageway? He still dares to return?" An unfamiliar voice which contained an inexplicable arrogance resonated out from within the Procedural Hall., "The opening of the evil nether passageway caused the entire Scarlet Tide Continent to undergo a calamity. The culprit of all this is Qin Lie!"

The person's words then took a turn as he sneered and said, "From my point of view, Qin Lie must have made a deal with the evil races! Otherwise, after falling into the Nether Realm, how could he have possibly escaped alive with his low level of cultivation? Heh, I'm afraid his falling into the Nether Realm was to go and personally speak of his merits to the evil races and to tell the evil races that he had helped them open the passageway. This is definitely the case!"

Before this Fan Le had even shown himself, he had already relentlessly slandered Qin Lie.

"Th-this..."

Observing Ying Xingran, Luo Zhichang, and the rest, only a look of embarrassment emerged on their faces as they awkwardly chuckled upon hearing Fan Le's words. They actually seemed reluctant to refute his words, as if they were afraid of offending him.

This caused Qin Lie to become increasingly disappointed in them.

Chapter 299: Tranny Fan Le

A young man wearing a transparent robe proudly walked out from within Armament Sect's Procedural Hall while embracing a man and a woman.

This youth's appearance was rather pretty. His figure was tall and slender, and light flashed every time his eyes opened and closed below his slender, willowy eyebrows. He was surrounded with an extraordinary aura.

Atop his well proportioned body were many colorful tattoos which depicted various types of naked girls in various positions and making various gestures.

The girls tattooed onto his skin were making all sorts of obscene, sultry gestures. Some were wrapped around his waist above his thighs, while others had their tongues out and were sucking on his d*ck. Some even had both hands raised as if they were paying tribute to his crotch...

His transparent robe did absolutely nothing to cover up these tattoos of naked girls, and instead made them all seem vaguely present. At a glance, these naked girls seemed unusually alive, making it appear as if Fan Le had countless beautiful girls wrapped around his body like snakes.

His left and right arms were wrapped around a pretty boy and girl respectively, and his hands were stuck deeply within the clothing around their chest areas, touching them brazenly.

“This is Fan Le?” From the corner, Qin Lie felt his skin become numb as he fixedly observed this transvestite.

Qin Lie had no qualms about Fan Le’s strength, but his special interests... the fact that Fan Le was also interested in men caused Qin Lie to instinctively feel a kind of disgust and fear.

“That is him.” Lian Rou’s face became pale, clearly showing that she also found it difficult to accept this transvestite’s preferences. “Just looking at this kind of androgynous fellow makes me feel sick. Qin Lie, go and face him by yourself. I need to take a walk first.” Lian Rou lowered her head and left.

“This person... I’m afraid that he must have also been an exception amongst the people of Joyful Union Sect.” Song Tingyu’s face also became astonished. A light flashed through her beautiful eyes as she stared at Fan Le for a while before saying in a weird voice, “Joyful Union Sect doesn’t forbid relationships between men and women, but promotes it and its couple cultivation methods instead. Although Joyful Union Sect is open like this, I have never heard of a piece of work like this Fan Le who likes both men and women. To be something that is rarely seen even in Joyful Union Sect, this Fan Le is truly...”

Song Tingyu chuckled and nodded. She also felt that this had enriched her knowledge and further expanded her horizons.

“Just where is Qin Lie?” Ying Xingran loudly shouted again.

“To see the sect master act so fiercely is really rare. No wonder Armament Sect was able to recover in this recent period of time.” Qin Lie no longer remained hidden, striding out from the corner into the view of Ying Xingran and the three great reverends.

“Haha! It’s good that you are fine… it’s good.” Ying Xingran laughed exuberantly as he took great strides over to welcome Qin Lie. “When we heard you fell into the Nether Realm, the entire sect fell into a state of depression for quite some time. After all, you are the sect’s hope for the future. All of us have placed our hopes on you to revitalize the sect and prayed that you didn’t encounter any troubles.”

“With your return, Armament Sect’s strength will grow immensely!” Luo Zhichang expressed joyfully.

Fang Qi and Jiang Hao, their faces expressing shock and joy, also nodded their heads again and again as they smiled sincerely at Qin Lie.

Qin Lie sneered in the depths of his heart as he walked over to stand in front of Ying Xingran while insincerely spouting courteous words. Only upon arriving before Ying Xingran, did he finally glance at Fan Le as he discourteously asked, “Who is this tranny who is neither male or female?”

As the words came out from Qin Lie’s mouth, the smiles on the faces of Ying Xingran and the three great reverends suddenly froze.

The expression of Fan Le, who had slandered Qin Lie before he

had even emerged, suddenly became arrogant as he coldly said, “Based on our generational difference, you still need to add a grand junior uncle to my name!”

“You?” Qin Lie smirked as he shook his head. “I would never call you that, even if I had to immediately leave Armament Sect.”

“Junior nephews, what do you all have to say about this?” Irritated, Fan Le’s two hands, which were stuck deeply in the clothes of his male and female lovers, suddenly exerted force. This caused the pretty boy and girl cuddling him to suddenly let out low moans as they expressed their pain—It was clear that Fan Le had hurt them.

“Qin Lie, Fan Le here is the son of Grand Sect Reverend Fan Di. He grew up in Joyful Union Sect. His master... is our Armament Sect’s honored person and benefactor.” Luo Zhichang spoke up to try and smooth things out as he said with a smile, “In terms of seniority, we are technically all the younger generation, so you really still need to call him grand junior uncle. However, since the difference in age between the two of you isn’t that great, there is no reason for you two to speak so formally to each other. Just converse as people of similar positions.”

“Converse as if we were of similar positions?” Fan Le grinned, shaking his head as he spoke with a mocking look on his face, “He’s not worthy.”

“This, this...” Luo Zhichang’s smile became bitter.

Qin Lie's expression was somber. He silently observed Ying Xingran and the three great reverends, watching for their responses.

"Qin Lie, Fan Le... is indeed your senior. Furthermore, he came from Joyful Union Sect, making this trip specifically to help our Armament Sect recover. See?" Ying Xingran looked at Qin Lie imploringly.

Qin Lie's heart became ice cold as he threw away all courtesy and shouted, "When Armament Sect was encircled and besieged by the five great forces, why didn't he come? When the experts of Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple came, how come he still didn't come? Now that the dust has settled, he has suddenly appeared and called himself the sect's senior. Although I don't exactly understand what happened in the past and everything else, if you want me to call someone like this my senior, I give you my apologies, I can't do it."

Hearing Qin Lie's words, Ying Xingran and the three great reverends all became embarrassed as they awkwardly smiled and were unable to think of any persuasive words to say.

"Sect Master, three reverends, I also want to ask one more thing. When the Ling Family was being relentlessly pressured by Seven Fiends Valley, why didn't the sect respond in any manner? You all know the relationship between the Ling Family and I very well!" Qin Lie coldly shouted again.

"That... well, since the Ling Family resided in Seven Fiends Valley, it was a private matter of Seven Fiends Valley... It wouldn't

have been good for us to interfere. At the time, Armament Sect was facing its own difficulties so our words didn't have much weight behind them. Even if we had responded, it most likely wouldn't have done anything…" Luo Zhichang said as he hollowly chuckled.

"Was it because I had "died"? You must have thought that it was no longer worth it for Armament Sect to waste energy to help the Ling Family, right?" Qin Lie sneered.

Ying Xingran and the three great reverends all suddenly went silent.

Qin Lie's words had struck their hearts with pinpoint accuracy and revealed their thoughts at that time. They knew that there was no longer a need to conceal it any longer, and thus had no words left to say.

"Why are you spouting all of this nonsense?" Fan Le's raised his eyebrows as he arrogantly looked at Qin Lie and bluntly said, "You act as if you aren't a person of Armament Sect. No wonder the junior nephews didn't bother helping you with your matters."

"How have I not acted as someone of Armament Sect?" Qin Lie questioned in response.

"If you are truly a member of Armament Sect, why aren't you willing to write out the forging methods for the Terminator Profound Bomb and turn it into the sect's secret?" A strand of light flashed through Fan Le's eyes. "If Armament Sect could mass produce Terminator Profound Bombs during the war against

Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple, would the sect have had to act so passively? If Armament Sect had the Terminator Profound Bomb early on and forged a lot of them beforehand, then the sect's crisis would have long since been averted. There would have been absolutely no need for you to pull out the spirit pattern pillars which resulted in the opening of the evil nether passageway and the collapse of Flame Volcano!"

Ying Xingran and the three great reverends nodded slightly as if they were inclined to agree with Fan Le's words.

The four of them had constantly thought about the Terminator Profound Bomb and its forging method, which Qin Lie had never released to them. This had caused them to brood over it for a long time.

Qin Lie suddenly realized and understood their true intentions. To put it bluntly, the four of them were the same as Profound Heaven Alliance and Eight Extreme Temple. They drooled over the Terminator Profound Bombs, and hoped to be able to control its production.

Everyone knew about the power of the Terminator Profound Bomb, as well as its value. They knew just how important of a role it could play in large scale wars.

Thus, they all hoped to control it.

"Give it to them?" As Qin Lie looked at Ying Xingran and the other three, he only became even more disappointed. He suddenly

rejoiced at the fact that he had listened to Xue Li and not casually given out the refinement method for the Terminator Profound Bomb. “The refinement method of the Terminator Profound Bomb was taught to me by an esteemed elder. It is mine, and has no relation with the sect. Why should I have given it away?”

“Although you are an individual, you are also a disciple of the sect! When the sect encountered trouble, you should have temporarily put aside individual gains and put the sect first!” Fan Le said righteously.

Ying Xingran and the other three once again slightly nodded.

They were clearly in agreement with Fan Le’s words. After all, for the benefit of the sect, the four of them had indeed put down everything and sacrificed everything.

During crucial moments, they hadn’t hesitated to sacrifice anything for Lian Rou, Tang Siqi, Qin Lie, or the other disciples and elders of the sect—as long as they believed it was beneficial for the sect.

Observing the actions and expressions of Ying Xingran, Luo Zhichang, Fang Qi, and Jiang Hao, Qin Lie suddenly felt somewhat powerless. He discovered that he was truly unable to change this ideal which the four of them had always adhered to—every action had to benefit the sect.

He realized that these four didn’t have the slightest bit of humanity. No matter what the situation was like, they would only

act after having calculated the pros of cons.

In their eyes, it didn't matter who was sacrificed. As long as the sect benefited, then it was right.

Qin Lie had ignored the possibility that returning to Armament Sect would be wrong.

Thus, after pondering for a moment, he began to take out the various treasures which belonged to Armament Sect out from within his spatial ring. After making sure they were all out, he threw them onto the stony ground in front of Ying Xingran and the three great reverends.

"Qin Lie, what are you...?" Luo Zhichang exclaimed.

"I am breaking away from Armament Sect." Qin Lie raised his head then looked at the four of them in displeasure, saying, "I am unable to accept the ways in which you all do things, and can no longer continue working with you all. Thus, I have decided to leave."

"Qin Lie! If you have any issues, let us calmly talk them over. Don't be so rash!" Fang Qi shouted.

Jiang Hao also tried to persuade Qin Lie, "We might have not tried enough in the matter with the Ling Family, but we are willing to apologize. Is it worth being so temperamental over such a small matter? QIn Lie, you are the most talented artificer in the history

of Armament Sect. We need you—Armament Sect needs you!”

“Qin Lie is going to leave?”

“Qin Lie wants to break away from the sect?”

“Why would he act like this?”

Upon hearing of this decision, many of the nearby disciples and elders gathered around and looked toward them in shock.

Inner sect elders such as Tong Jihua, Tan Dongling, Wei Qing, and Meng Chen also heard the news and quickly flocked over. They were all shocked beyond belief.

Even several martial practitioners of Blood Spear emerged from their various spots. Light flashed through their eyes as they looked over.

“I apologize, but my mind has already been made up. Today, I am formally leaving Armament Sect.” Qin Lie resolutely said.

“Qin Lie, are you definitely leaving no matter what we say?” Ying Xingran asked helplessly with a look of regret and sighed.

“Correct!” Qin Lie sonorously and forcefully replied.

“Then… I request that you leave behind the twelve spirit pattern pillars—the foundation upon which Armament Sect was built on.”

Chapter 300: Conflict

Armament Sect was established on the twelve spirit pattern pillars. Apart from being the only symbol of the sect, they were also the way Armament Sect picked out disciples with great potential.

In Armament Sect, there was nothing more important than the twelve spirit pattern pillars. When Ying Xingran and the three great reverends found out that Qin Lie dropped into the Nether Realm, they grieved for a period of time. However, what really pained them was knowing that the spirit pattern pillars could no longer be recovered.

From their perspective, Qin Lie wasn't as important as the spirit pattern pillars.

Even though Ying Xingran felt sorry to witness Qin Lie leaving, he still had to keep up a bold front and ask Qin Lie to leave behind the twelve spirit pattern pillars.

"The spirit pattern pillars are the lifeblood of Armament Sect. The pillars are also related to the many varieties of spirit diagrams in Armament Sect." Ying Xingran bowed with his hands cupped in a humble manner while keeping an assertive look. "We can't lose the spirit pattern pillars. Since you insist on leaving, please leave the spirit pattern pillars behind..."

"Qin Lie, think carefully. Do not act rashly in the heat of the moment." Luo Zhichang continued, "Armament Sect still values

you and thinks of you as its future. However, if you have truly decided on leaving the sect, those spirit pattern pillars... you really have to leave them behind."

Jiang Hao and Fang Qi smiled awkwardly and nodded their heads as well.

The four of them shared the same opinion.

Qin Lie's expression was exceptionally sullen. He stared deeply at Ying Xingran, observing the reserved look in his eyes, and he suddenly understood.

In the past, Ying Xingran suffered a heavy blow to his mind and soul.Armament Sect tried to cure him in many ways, but in the end, they still couldn't heal him completely.

Knowing that his own death was inevitable, Ying Xingran lost all hope. This was why he had hastily found his own successor in Liang Yangzu. He had become Ying Xingran's hope, and was the person that Ying Xingran was certain would revive the sect

The three great reverends, Luo Zhichang, Fang Qi, and Jiang Hao had all become old. They were no longer able to stand up and lead Armament Sect.

Which was why the four of them handed over Ying Xingran's coveted role of sect master to him so easily.

However, at Qin Lie's request half a year ago, Xuan Tianmeng intervened and saved Ying Xingran, entirely curing the injury to his mind and soul. As of now, Ying Xingran had recovered to his previous self.

Thinking that he might die during the prime years of his life, Ying Xingran felt demoralized and depressed. Now, having his strength and vigor back, why would he be willing to let Qin Lie have the position of Armament Sect's sect master?

When Armament Sect was facing a crisis, it was Qin Lie who stepped forward bravely and helped them tide through it. Within the sect, he had earned a reputation and accumulated a considerable amount of popularity. If he chose to stay in Armament Sect, wouldn't it threaten Ying Xingran's position?

It was no wonder that Ying Xingran wanted to reassemble his trusted aides that were scattered throughout the land. It was no wonder that, when he declared to leave Armament Sect, Ying Xingran only tried holding him back with a few ceremonious words before immediately demanding the spirit pattern pillars.

Qie Lie suddenly realized that, deep down, Ying Xingran's couldn't wait for him to leave Armament Sect as soon as possible.

Having figured out of all this, Qin Lie couldn't help but laugh scornfully from the bottom of his heart. He looked at Ying Xingran and the three great reverends and said, "The twelve spirit pattern pillars have been refined to be one with my flesh and blood. Forceful extraction of them would cause severe injury to my body and might even destroy my soul."

“This…” Ying Xingran was shocked.

The three great reverends looked at each other in dismay. They realized that Qin Lie was not prepared to hand over the spirit pattern pillars.

“Hehe, something as valuable as the spirit pattern pillars… if I were to possess them, I wouldn’t hand them over even if I died either.” Fan Le laughed incessantly at the side.

“Over there!” There are all over there!”

“Sect Master and Qin Lie are quarreling!”

“Qin Lie wants to leave Armament Sect!”

“Lets go over quickly the take a look!”

The previously scattered disciples and elders of the sect started to gather, causing the area to become crowded.

Tong Jihua, Tan Dongling, Wei Qing, Han Qingrui, Kang Zhi, Lian Rou, and everyone else who knew Qie Lie were in the crowd. They looked at Qin Lie from a distance, each with a different expression.

Song Tingyu hid behind a wall, unwilling to show herself. Her

beautiful, charming face wore a sarcastic expression, as if she were witnessing a joke.

"Qin Lie, you have mastered the arts of the twelve different spirit diagrams through the spirit pattern pillars. In addition, the classified information and confidential laws of Armament Sect have been revealed to you..." with his brows knitted, Ying Xingran said sincerely, "In respect for all you have done for Armament Sect, we don't plan to take any of this back. But the twelve spirit pattern pillars really are the lifeblood of Armament Sect. Please leave them behind. Don't make this difficult for us."

"That's right, Qin Lie. We aren't going to say anything about everything else that you've already taken. If you really plan on leaving the sect, you must leave something as significant as the spirit pattern pillars behind." Luo Zhichang expressed himself.

Fang Qi and Jiang Hao also tried to persuade him diplomatically, saying he would be free to go once he left the spirit pattern pillars behind.

It was as though everyone has completely forgotten about the many times where Qin Lie saved Armament Sect from one dreadful crisis after another.

Qin Lie suddenly remembered what Song Tingyu had said, "I especially hate the hypocritical faces of those artificers!"

At that moment, looking at Ying Xingran and the three great reverends, Qin Lie finally understood why Song Tingyu, Tu

Shixiong, and everyone else disliked artificers. He also understood how Yi Yuan, Pang Feng, and everyone else felt when they left.

"The spirit pattern pillars concern my life. If it's extracted from me, my little life will be gone." Qin Lie said with a solemn face, "Unless you are all thinking of taking my life?"

"Qin Lie, you see, why do you still not understand?" Ying Xingran's expression became increasingly gloomy, "Do you really want to leave with the sect's precious treasure?"

"Heh, it seems that we have to use force." Fan Le drew back the corners of his mouth. Motivated to see chaos ensue, he argued, "It's pointless to talk anymore, I'm afraid this has to be settled by fighting."

"Tong Jihua! Let Lang Xie settle this issue!" Ying Xingran brows remain knitted. He looked for Tong Jihua in the crowd and signalled his intentions with his glance.

Qin Lie also looked toward Tong Jihua.

Tong Jihua smiled bitterly, shook his head, sighed softly, and was prepared to turn around and leave.

At this moment, a path was suddenly created among the crowd.

"Lord Lang Xie!"

“Lord Lang Xie!”

Both sides of the crowd bowed voluntarily and emitted soft cries of surprise.

Emerging from the crowd, Lang Xie and Feng Rong brought a group of Blood Spear martial practitioners with them.

They stopped in between Ying Xingran, Qin Lie, and the others.

The pungent stench of blood oozed from Lang Xie, Feng Rong, and the group of martial practitioners. The stench caused many artificers to withdraw from the scene one after another.

“Lang Xie, make Qin Lie extract the spirit pattern pillars from his body and leave them behind. Bear in mind not to hurt him in the process.” Ying Xingran said hypocritically.

“Yes, Qin Lie has acted in the interest of Armament Sect and helped us avoid many crises. You must be careful, Lang Xie.” Luo Zhichang urged on similarly.

Qin Lie took a glance at Lang Xie. He only took one glance before his expression changed drastically as he shouted, “Congratulations, Lord Lang Xie!”

Since he also cultivated the Blood Spirit Arts, Qin Lie was able to

sense the density of the blood in Lang Xie's body in one glance and figure out that Lang Xie had made another breakthrough.

Lang Xie had entered the Fulfillment Realm!

Lang Xie, who had received the complete Blood Spirit Arts from Xue Li, had finally broken through the bottleneck and entered a brand new realm.

When he was only at the peak of the Netherpassage Realm, Lang Xie was able to kill Tu Xi, a Fulfillment Realm practitioner from Eight Extreme Temple, so just how strong was he right now?

Qin Lie, who possessed the Terminator Profound Bombs in his spatial ring had felt calm a moment ago. He assumed that, as long as he held onto the Terminator Profound Bombs, the situation would be within his control and no one in Armament Sect could stop him from leaving.

Yet, seeing the arrival of Lang Xie who had entered the Fulfillment Realm, Qin Lie began to feel anxious knowing that the situation was no longer under his control.

The arrival of Lang Xie lifted the spirits of Ying Xingran and the three great reverends. Fan Le, who was acting haughtily moments ago, also started to visibly restrain himself. It seemed that he was fearful of Lang Xie as well. The rest of Armament Sect's martial practitioners silently looked at Lang Xie with respectful eyes.

Lang Xie looked at Ying Xingran, then Qin Lie, and said, “One is the old sect master, the other is the new sect master, who should I listen to?”

Once those words left his mouth, a commotion stirred in the crowd.

For the better part of half a year, everyone regarded Ying Xingran as Armament Sect’s sect master and the true policymaker of the sect.

As for Qin Lie, he was just a temporary replacement for Ying Xingran. This was a reality that everyone was well aware of, so why would Lang Xie ask such a question?

“Lang Xie! What do you mean by this?” Ying Xingran’s expression turned sour. “I have always been Armament Sect’s sect master. Qin Lie was only a temporary replacement for me when I was frozen. Now that I’m awake, I am naturally still the sect master. Why should there be any question about that?”

“When we allowed Qin Lie to take command of Armament Sect, it was also mentioned that he was only replacing Ying Xingran temporarily. Qin Lie would only become the sect master if something really bad happened to Ying Xingran Now that Ying Xingran is awake, he would naturally still be the sect master. Qin Lie only has the rank of a disciple, and now that he wants to leave Armament Sect, he shouldn’t even be considered a disciple at all. You obviously have to listen to Xingran.” Luo Zhichang hurriedly explained the situation while ignoring Qin Lie’s feelings.

“Old sect master,, new sect master, this is a dispute of leadership within the sect. Forgive me for not getting involved. We of Blood Spear are only responsible for protecting the sect from external dangers, not internal conflicts.” Lang Xie said indifferently.

“All martial practitioners of Blood Spear, listen up! None of you are allowed to raise a hand against Qin Lie!” Feng Rong exclaimed.

The Blood Spear martial practitioners who were scattered around all showed visible delight upon hearing what was said and responded loudly, one after another.

Having experienced that episode of change within the sect, the Blood Spear martial practitioners had all acknowledged Qin Lie. In their hearts, Qin Lie was the leader who was truly influential to the sect. These bloodthirsty warriors all remembered Qin Lie’s contributions. They respected him and were unwilling to raise a hand against him deep down.

Now that their two commanders, Lang Xie and Feng Rong, had declared their positions, the Blood Spear martial practitioners were all deeply moved.

“You… you!” Ying Xingran clenched his teeth, pointing at both Lang Xie and Feng Rong as his face trembled incessantly.

Lang Xie and Feng Rong ignored him.

“Tong Jihua! Tell the outer sect martial practitioners to take action!” Ying Xingran ordered again.

“Sect Master, I… I am not feeling too well. I’m afraid that I can’t fight.” Tong Jihua started to scowl miserably. Nobody knew how he did it, but his face became deathly white all of a sudden and his forehead dripped with cold sweat.

—He made himself looked as though he was really sick.

“My stomach is hurting, let me use the toilet first!”

“I’ve got a headache, let me rest for a while.”

“I practiced too much recently and received a fiendish backlash. I can’t fight for a while.”

Every outer sect elder and disciple that experienced that hard fought battle knew just how much Qin Lie had done for Armament Sect. One by one, they moaned and groaned about something being wrong with their bodies.

The complexions of Ying Xingran and the three great reverends became ashen.

It was only now that they realized the full extent of Qin Lie’s reputation and popularity within the sect.

“Although some people may have forgotten what you did before, even more did not.” Feng Rong looked at Qin Lie and smiled. “Actually, everyone remembers it in their hearts.”

Qin Lie felt warm inside.